CHRONICLE
OF JHON
HARDYNGE

The MS. Notes and Emendations
in this Edition of Hardyng's Chronicle
are all in the Hand-writing of my
father, the late Sir Henry Ellis.

The Book was given by him to
his old friend Mr. William Davies.

Jane S. Ellis.

May 20th 1872.

¶ The chroni-

cle of Jhon Hardyng in metre, frō the first begynnyng of Englāde, vnto ỳ reigne of Edwarde ỳ fourth where he made an end of his chronicle. And from ỳ tyme is added with a cōtinuacion of the storie in prose to this our tyme, now first emprinted, gathered out of diuerse and sondrie autours of moste certain knowelage & substanciall credit, ỳ either in latin or els in our mother toungue haue writen of ỳ affaires of Eng-lande.

LONDINI.

In officina Richardi Grafioni.

Mense Ianuarii.

1543.

Cum priuilegio ad imprimendum solum.

William Wilson

William molor

¶ The dedicacion of

this present woorke, vnto the right honora-
ble lorde Thomas duke of Norffolke,
by the printer, Richard Grafton.

Lorde Thomas of Norffolke
duke moste gracious
Of noble auncestrie and blood
descended
A captain right woorthie and
auenturous
And frō Scotlād euen newely
retended
Wher Englandes querele ye haue reuenged
In the behalf of our noble kyng Henry
I wyshe you all health, honour, and victorie

¶ And because it hath pleased almightie God
In the right title and quercle of Englande
To vse your stocke as an iron rod
Wherewith to scourge the falsehood of Scotland
In whom is no truthe ne holde of any bande
Jhon Hardynges chronicle, as me thought was
Moste mete to bee dedicated, to your grace

¶ For Hardyng a true herted Englysheman
An esquier valiaunt hardie and bolde
And not vnlearned, as the time was than
Serched out of chronicles, bothe late an olde
All that euer by thesame hath bee told
How frō the begynnyng, Scotlāde dooeth reigne
Vnder kynges of Englande, as their souerain

°Worde, cast. alt.

¶ And Hardynges owne self, hath the partie bee
That from Scotlande, oft tymes hath brought
Their seales of homage and fealtee
Unto the kyng of Englande, as he ought
Unto whom the Scottes then sued and sought
yeldyng to liue in humble subieccion
Of Englandes gouernaunce and protecction

¶ But that people of their propre nature
Hath euen from the first, been so vntowarde
So vnstedfast, inconstaunte and vnsure
That nothyng maie possibly bee moze frowarde
So haue thei continued from thens foozthwarde
Neuer gladde to bee in quiet and rest
But to defeccion, aye readie and prest

¶ Wherefoze Jhon Hardyng, to his lozde & mai-
Whom in his tyme he serued without blame (ster
Edwarde, first duke of yozke, and after
Kyng of this realme, the fourthe of that name
In this chronicle affermeth of thesame
That thei will rebell, till by prouision
The kyng of Englād shall haue made theim both (one

¶ And in deede Englād, hath oft been cōstreigned
The Scottes slackenesse in dooyng their homage
To pricke fozewarde, whē thei would haue refrei-
With ỹ sharpe spurre of marciall fozceage (ned
And to abate their wantonnesse of courage
With the iron rodde, of due cozreccion
As oft as thei attempted defeccion

¶ Foz ỹ Scottes will aye bee bostyng & crakyng
Euer

×that tyme · suit · ait.

Euer sekyng causes of rebellion
Spoyles, booties, and preades euer takyng
Euer sowyng quereles of dissension
To burne and steale is all their intencion
And yet as people, whom God dooeth hate & curse
Thei alwaies begynne, and euer haue the woorse

¶ Englande hitherto hath neuer lacked power
As oft as nede wer, the Scottes to compell
Their duetie to dooe, and menne of honour
Englande hath had, as stories dooe tell
Whiche whensoeuer the Scottes did rebell
Wer hable at all tymes, theim to subdue
And their obedience, to England renue

¶ Emõges ỹ whiche noumbre, your noble father
In the twelfth yere of Henry the seuenths reigne
By aunciente recorde, as I can gather
Beeyng of suche credence as cannot feigne
Yode into Scotlande their pryde to restrein
With sẽbleable power (as bookes dooen auowe)
And like commission as your grace had now

¶ That season he did so valiauntely
The Scottes banquishyng and puttyng to flight
That thei ranne awaye moste shamefully
Not hable of hym tabide the sight
Nor hable to sustein, the brunt of his might
Soondrie castelles, he raced down to the grounde
Whiche to the honour of Englande did redound

¶ Kyng Jamy also, makyng greate braggue and
Hauyng his armie not a myle of that daie (baũte

Your father as a captain valyaunt
Made in a moment, for feare to runne awaye
The Scottish kyng, sēding foorth heraldes twaye
Chalenged your father, w many a proude woorde
Battayle to wage, and trye it by the swoorde.

And choose thou sir Earle, qᵗ kyng Jamy then
Whether we shall fight, armie against armie
Orelles I and thou, trye it manne for manne
For sparyng bloodshed, of either compaignie
That if it chaunce me, to haue the victorie
Nought shall I demaunde, for Englandes losse &
Sauig Barwike toune, for euer to bee mine (thine

Then to the heraldes, saied this noble knight
Shewe to your kyng, that in this place purposely
Battayle for to wage, my tentes haue I pight
I am not come to flee, but to fyght sharpely
Is where he standeth, he maye see with his eye
And fyrst where he would, bloodshed saued to bee
Therof am I no lesse desirous then he.

Secundarily, where it is his likyng
That I a poore Earle, and of meane estate
Maye combattre, with hym beyng a kyng
That our two fightes, may ceasse all debate
He dooeth me honour, after suche highe rate
That I must nedes graūt, my selfe bound in this
Humble thankes to rēdre to his grace (case

Now as for the towne of Barwike, it is knowē
(Which your lorde requireth in case I bee slaine)
Is the kyng my souereins, and not mine owne

So

So that graunte therof, in me dooeth not remain
But thys mate ye bear worde to your lord again
My person and lyfe, aduenture I shall
More precyous to me, then the round worlde all.

¶ When kyng Jamy, by his heraldes twoo
Spedefullye returnyng, had due knowlage
Muche otherwyse, then he loked for thoo
Of the Earles stout aunswer and message
Fled out of hand, and would no battayle wage
So that your father, retourned home victour
With coumfort, laude, praise, ioye and honour.

¶ The same your father, in the fyfth yere
Of our moost noble kyng Henry the eyght
When hys grace and his armie at Turney were
And the same kyng Jamy, of Scotland streyght
Agaynst England, his banner dyspleyght
Vanquished the Scottes, & w̄ your helpyng hād
Slew there king Jamy, and brought him to Eng
(land

¶ Agayne in the. xv. yere of the same reygne
Your selfe in proper personne, full courageous
Set forth against ỹ Scottes, without dysdeygne
Lyke a captayne valyaunt and venturous
Wher ye brēt Jedworth, a toune right populous
Wyth diuers victories, that your grace then had
Whiche made all Englande, to reioyse & be glad

¶ The yere folowyng also, as bookes testify
The Scottes came, with an houge power
Of. lx. thousande men vnder the Duke of Albany
Besiegyng Warke castel, thynkyng it to deuour

But heryng that your grace, dyd approch ỹ hour
The Scottes trembled, and so dyd theyr Duke
And cowardly fled, to their shame and rebuke.

Sembleably, by thys your last viage
Nowe thys last October and Nouember
Made into Scotlande, to their great damage
It dooeth as me semeth, ryght well appere
That when pleaseth our king to send you thether
your house in hys ryght, is appoynted by God
To bee to the Scottes, a sharpe scourge and rod

Wherfore thys chronycle of Jhon Hardyng
I haue thought good, to dedycate to your grace
Because the same in euery maner of thyng
Doothe best set out the nature of that place
With distaunce of tounes, and euery myles space
Besechyng your grace to take in good parte
Myne honest labours and beneuolent harte

Harry watsons is myn name

The preface into the Chronycle of John Hardyng.

EMonges all wryters, that haue put in vre
Their penne and style, thynges to endite
None haue behynd theim, left so greate treasure
Ne to their posteritee, haue dooen suche delite
As thei whiche haue taken peines to wrte
Chronycles and actes, of eche nacion
And haue of thesame, made true relacion.

CBy Chronycles we knowe, thynges auncient
The succession of tymes, and menne
The state of policies, with their regiment
Howe long eche partie hath ruled, and when
And what were all their procedynges then.
Chronicles make reporte of matiers dooen
And passed many thousand yeres gooen

CBy Chronycles we knowe, in eche countree
What men haue been, of prowesse marciall
What persones chiefly in actiuitee
When and betwene whom, warres haue befall
Either ciuile or els externall
Howe thesame haue been, conueighed & wrought
Or els appeaced, and to quiete brought

CChronicles doo recorde and testifye.

Euen

Euen from the worldes first beginninges
And dooe kepe in continuall memorie
The course and processe, of all maner thinges
The liues and maners, of princes and kynges
Aswell Gentiles as Judaicall
Aswell Juste and godly, as tyrannicall

¶ What persones to their prince and countree
Haue been louing true and obedient
And at all times of necessitee
Haue serued thesame, with good entent
And constauntly therin, haue their liues spent
In Chronicles are registred feithfully
To their immortall honoure and glorye

¶ Contrarye wise, who to their souerains
Or to their countrees, haue been wicked traitours
Or by collusion and crafty traines
Haue rebelled against their gouernours
Or the same to helpe, haue been slacke proctours
Are semblеably sette out by name
To their endelesse infamy, reproche, and shame.

¶ These thinges, and others a thousande mo
Wherby realmes, haue decaied or growen
Chaunged in processe, and altered to and fro
Fruitefull and expedient to bee knowen
Are in Chronicles, so plainly showen
That thinges antique, to vs bee as apparent
As yf at their doinges, we had been present.

¶ Wherfore Goddes worde and holy scripture
Whiche abandoneth all maner vanitee

Yet

yet of Chronicles admitteth the lecture
As a thing of greate fruite and vtilitee
And as a lanterne, to the posteritee
For example, what they ought to knowe
What waies to refuse, and what to folowe.

¶ The bible bookes, of Judges and kynges
Although moste full, of high diuine misterie
And farre surmounting all Ethnike dooynges
Yet yf they bee read, and take literally
Hath the fourme and course of a plain history
What kynges serued God, and who trangressed
Whiche thereby prospered, or wer oppressed

¶ The bookes of the kynges euery where
Yf thinges seme touched ouer briefly
To a larger storye, dooeth vs referre
Whiche were Chronicles of eche manne truely
Sette out at length, to our memorie
Albeit those Chronicles (as it is euident)
Are loste, and dooe not remain at this present

¶ The bookes inscribed, Paralipomena
A perfecte membre, and piece of the bible
Is a summarye, of the kynges of Juda
And therfore in Hebrue, it hath the title
And appellacion, of a Chronicle
The Machabees also, by my deming
Is a plaine history, of holy writing

¶ Whiche bookes, if they had neuer been set out
It had been a greate maime to our knowlage
A lamentable lacke, without doubte

A great

A greate cause of blindnesse to our age
And to our faith, inestimable damage.
But the spirite of God, the authour was
That those examples, might bee our glasse.

¶ Chronicles therfore, of true reporte
Whether of Christian realmes or no
Are matier of pleasaunce, fruite, and comforte
And for a thousande causes and mo
Diligently to bee attended vnto
Yea, and all maner writers of the same
Worthie laude, thanke, honoure & immortal fame

¶ Neither is any one to bee reiected
That in this behalfe, hath dooen his endeuoure
For though some bee, such as might bee corrected
yet those that haue, therein bestowed laboure
Haue minded to profyte vs to their power
Neither any is so full, but somwhere dooeth faile
Nor any so bare, but dooeth somthing auaile.

¶ And what an exceding benefite trowe ye
Is it for eche manne, to haue cognicion
Of all actes, bothe of his owne countree
And also of euery forein nacion
As yf he had liued, when eche thing was dooen
And to viewe the actes of antiquitee
As though he did nowe, presentlye theim see

¶ Chronicles therfore, I can highly cõmende
And emonge others, this authour Jhon Harding
Who with all his power, to this point did contẽd
To the vttermost extent of his learning

That

That Englishe men might haue vnderstanding
Of all affaires, touching theirowne countree
Euen to his dayes, from olde antiquitee

And though his cõning, were not so muche
As some others, nor his intelligence
Yet his good minde, entent, and zele was suche
That in hym lacked, no pointe of diligence
After suche bookes, as he thought of credence
Feithfully to describe, suche thinges in rime
As happened to Englande, from tyme to tyme

But in thinges dooen, before his owne dayes
He foloweth his authours, at auenture
Without choice or difference of the true wayes
Nor well assured, who were corrupte or pure
Nor whether they were certaine ozelles vnsure
Whether fabulous, or menne of veritee
Whether vaine, or of good authozitee.

But what soeuer, in his owne time was dooen
That he repozteth with all fidelitee
Right so as eche thing, ended or begonne
Without any spotte of insyncerite
Or dissimulation of the veritee
He founde all meanes, the veray trueth to know
And what he knewe certainly, that did he shewe.

From the beginning of Henry ỹ fourth kyng
Of this realme of Englande, after the conquest
Euen to Edwarde the fourthes reigning
Whiche was thre score yeres and one at the leste
He leaueth nothing vnwriten at the largest

That

That was or semed to bee of importaunce
Touchyng peace and warre, wyth Scotlande or
(Fraunce

Unto the Scottes, he coulde neuer bee frende
Because he sawe theim towardes England
False from the begynnyng, to the last ende
Neuer standyng to anye league ne bande
Homage, fealtee, ne wryting of theyr hande
Neuer so readie to make rebellyon
As when thei promised moost subiection

That if Jhon Hardyng, bee a trew man
And in this behalfe inspyred with prophecie
Thei wyll neuer bee, but as thei were than
False to England, suttle, and craftie
Entendyng myschiefe, when thei shewe contrary
Spoylers and robbers, that amende wyll neuer
Tyll our kyng shall haue made theim Englyshe
(for euer

Neither is there anye, that euer wrote
Which in matiers of Scotland could better skill
Nor which their falshoode and vntrueth to note
Had more affection or better wyll
Or better knew water, woodde, toune, vale & hyll
Or was more feruente the Scottes to persue
Who to England he knew, woulde neuer be true

Neyther anye Chronicler that euer was
Eyther dooth or can, more largly declare
Euen from Brutus, howe it came to passe
That kynges of Englande the soueraines are
And ouer Scotlande oughte rule to beare
Hymselfe is wytnes, of their subiection

And

And homage, vnder Englandes protection

¶ In other thinges, the tymes were suche
That though this werke haue some spice of blind (nesse
Yet is the authour, not to be blamed much
For Popyshe errour, that season doubtlesse
Did all the worlde ouer go and oppresse
Therfore such thinges, we must in good part take
And pardon that faulte, for the tymes sake

¶ yet haue we thought best, the autour to set out
Euen in suche fourme, as hymselfe dyd endite
It wer an vnquod thyng, yf we should go about
To alter and chaunge, that olde men haue wryte
Secondly to vs, it maye bee greate delyte
The blindnesse of those tymes to consider
From whiche hathe pleased God vs to delyuer

¶ Fynally the darkenesse of those dayes to see
To the honoure of our kyng dooeth redound
To whom by goddes helpe geuen it hath bee
All Popyshe trumperye for to confounde
Which thyng, al trew English hertes hath boũd
Incessauntly to praye, for kyng Henrye ỹ eyghte
Whose godly wisedome, hath made all streyghte

And for asmuch as Hardyng, his boke doth ende
With Edward the fourth, whose seruaũt he was
And to whome also, this booke he dyd commende
Considerynge also, the tyme and space
Beyng. lx. yeres and moze, I coulde not let passe
So many goodly statutes and decrees
Battayles, and stozies, not good to lese.

Wherfoze

Wherfore I annexed theim by continuacion
Begynning wyth Edwarde the fourth of ỹ name
Then Edward the fyfth, kyng by generation
Whom Richard the third, to his immortal shame
Cruelly murdered, the story sayeth the same
But plaged he was, to hys greate greuaunce
With a shamefull death, as Goddes vengeaunce

Then Henry the. vii. nexte doothe ensue
Father vnto our moost dred soueraigne lorde
And of Henry the. viii, some thyng that is true
I haue here set forth, as wryters dooe accorde
Not in metre, but obseruyng worde, for worde
Myne authours, that wrote it all in prose
Reportyng the truth, without fraude or glose

¶ Now right gentle reader, thy parte shalbe
My good wyll and zele, my payne and labour
To entrepzete and take in good parte and gre
Geuing to the same, suche good wordes of fauour
As may enforce me with all myne endeuour
The settyng forth of mo werkes to take in hande
To thy solace, and honour of Englande

THe moste substaunce of power and of myght,
Through age distilled, into debilitee
Of me ỹ am this time an aged wight
And greate faute, haue of habilitee
This labour now shuld haue whold fro me
But that my witte would haue some diligence
My ghoost to kepe from synne and insolence.

¶ This werke is great, and lõge to bryng to fyne
So doeth it euer fro tyme to tyme encrease
And long hath dooen, afore Christ dyd enclyne,
In Marie mother and mayden without lease
To chronicle, so men haue theim put in preas
Some in meetre, and some also in prose
Some in Latyn, full wysely dyd it close.

¶ And some in Frenche, they made for intellecte
Of men that could no Latyn vnderstande
More sufficiently endited and protecte
By ferre then I can it nowe take in hande
And some in lynes two, theyr ryme ay bands
But though my witte be not so curious
As theirs by ferre to make it glorious.

¶ Yet wyll I vse, the symple witte I haue
To your pleasaunce and consolacion
Moste noble lorde and prince, so God me saue
That in chronycles hath delectacion
Though it be farre aboue myne estimacion
Into balade I wyll it nowe translate

Ryght in this forme with all myne essymate.

My lorde of Yorke vnto your sapience.
I wyll remember a notabilyte
Of your elders rule and regymence
That had this lande of olde priorite
Which ruled were after their dignitee
In vertue digne by rotall gouernaunce
And in vyce rulyd and misgouernaunce.

By whiche knowledge your discrete sapience
All vyce euermore destroye maye and reproue
By vertuous and blessedfull dilygence
And vertue loue, that maye not ought greue
Howe ye shall rule your subiectes while ye lyue
In lawe and peace and all tranquyllite
Whiche been the floures of all regalyte.

¶ Edward the thyrde that was king of this land
By ryght title, and very iuste discent
And kyng of Fraunce as I can vnderstande
By his mother quene Isabell the gent
Sister and heyre of Charles by hole entent
For Charles dyed without any chylde
The ryght discent vnto his mother mylde

Numer. xxvii. Why shulde ỹ French forbarre you of your right
Sith God of heauen in libro numeri
Gaue to Moises this lawe that nowe is lyght
In the chapiter seuen and twenty
By these wordes the doughter ryghtfully
Salphaat Of Salphaat aske the fathers heritage
Geue them in possessyon amonge the colynage.

This

¶ This kyng Edward reignyng in his dayes
In mercyall actes, tryumphe and victorie
Aboue all prynces famed was alwayes
Fyue sonnes had, the worlde out to crye
Ther wer no mo suche of one patrymonye
Edwarde the prince and eldest sonne of age
Who gat Richarde, that had the heritage.

¶ Leonell next borne, after in Antwerpe
In Brabant lande, that wedded vnto his wyfe
The erles doughter of Ulster as men do karpe
And begatte on her Philip his doughter ryue
And also his heire, whome he loued as his lyue
Whome erle Emonde of Marche the Mortimer
Wedded to his wyfe and begatte the erle Roger.

Edwarde the thyrd had fyue sonnes.
- Edwarde prince.
- Leonell.
- John duke of Lancastre.
- Edmounde duke of Yorke.
- Thomas of Woodstocke duke of Glouceſter.

¶ That erle was after of Marche & of Ulster
With wylde Irishe that slayne wer in Irelande
Who had a sonne, erle Emonde Mortymer
That dyed without yssue I vnderstande
To whom dame Anne, his syster, vnto his land
Was verraye heyre, whō the erle of Cābridge wed
And gatte of her your selfe as I haue red

¶ Why should ye not then be her verraye heyre
Of all her lande and eke of all her right
Sith Jesu Christe of Jude lande so feire

By veray meane of his mother Mary bryght°
To be kyng, claymed tytle and right+
And so dyd name hym selfe kyng of Jewes
So by your mother, the right to you acrewes.

¶ After Lyonell that was duke of Clarence
And of Ulster the erle was, by his wyfe
And of Italie, for his greate excellence
kyng should haue been, without any stryfe
Of all Europe, without comparatyfe=
The royall lande, and to his espousaile
The dukes doughter of Melayn without faile.

Jhō duke of Lācaster born in Gaūt.

¶ John borne in Gaunt, of Flaūders chief cytee
The thyrde soonne was, of good kyng Edwarde
That wedded dame Blaunch, ful of feminytee
Duke Henryes doughter and heire afterwarde
Of Lancastre, by lawe of kynde and forwarde
Who gat and bare the fourth kyng Henry
That kyng Rychard deposed wrongfully.

Henrye ỹ fyfth.

¶ Who gatte Henry the fyfth lyke conqueroure+
Of Normandy, and mykill parte of Fraunce
That excelled bothe kyng and Emperoure
In marcyall actes, by his gouernaunce
Who gatte Henry the sixte at Gods pleasaunce
Of suche symplenesse and disposicion
As menne maye se by his discrecion.

Henrye ỹ fourth.

Henrye ỹ syxte.

¶ For when Henry the fourth first was crouned
Many a wyseman, sayd then full commenly
The third heyre shuld not ioyse but be vncrouned
And deposed of all regalitee

To this

°Light. +Be.
=Espouse. ... This. = Churche.
+Be. ++ And be.

To this reason they dyd there wittes applye,
Of euill gotten good, the third should not enioyse
Of longe agone, it hath bene a commen voyse.

¶ Howe the maker of this booke saieth his aduyse in briefe for the duke of Yorke.

O my lorde of Yorke, God hath prouyde
In this for you, as men sayen commenly
So that no slouth you from his grace deuyde
But take it as he hath it sent manly
And rule well nowe ye haue the remedye
But neretheles, let euery man haue the right
Both frende and foo, it may encrease your might.

Treate well Percy of marchys lyne discended
To helpe your right with might and fortifye
By tender meanes to holde hym well contented
Remembryng hym, by wyttie polycye
Howe by processe of tyme and destenye
Your right might all bene his, as nowe is yours
Through gods might, make thē your successours

Edmoūde was then the .iiij. sonne, at Langlay Edmond duke of yorke.
Borne, as knowen was well in the lande
A noble prince after, as men might say
At battayle of Dray, ye fought sore with his hāde
And John of Gaunt his brother, I vnderstande
That fought ful sore, for Jhō of Mountfort right
Agayne Charles of Bloys a manly knight.

This Edmoūde was after duke of Yorke creat
And had a sonne that Edward had to name
Whom kyng Richarde made to be denominate
In all his wittes exaltyng his fame

a iij Kyng

Kyng of Portyngale, his father yet at hame
Lyuyng in age I trawe of. lxxx. yere
A fayre person, as a man might se any where.

¶ Thomas Woodstoke, the. v. sonne was in dede
Duke of Glouceſter, that tyme made and create
By kyng Richarde murdered whom for his mede
Kyng Henry quyt with death preordinate
By Goddes dome and ſentence appropate
Who ſleeth, ſo ſhall he be ſlayne by his ſentence
Well more murder whiche aſketh ay vengeaunce

Thomas of woodſtoke duke of gloucester.

Mat. xxvii.

¶ Who laye afore Paris, amoneth daye
With hoſte royall without any batell
Of all enemyes moſte dred he was alwaye
And Scottes moſte hym dred without any fayle
For as they trowed by theyr owne reherſaile
Of prophecyes he ſhulde theyr lande conquere
And make the kyng to Englande homegere.

¶ Howe haue I made vnto your owne knowlege
A remembraunce of Edwardes ſonnes fyue
Your exampler to geue you a corage
So noble princes, I trowe were none alyue
After my wytte as I can diſcryue
The eldeſt ſonne, whoſe lyke I haue lefte oute
Who in Fraunce & all landes was moſte doute

Edward prince of Walys the eldeſt ſonne of kynge Edward the. iii.

¶ Of the ryghte and tytles that my Lorde of Yorke hath to ffraunce and Spayne with Portingale & other landes by ponde the ſea, Jeruſalem and other landes.

¶ At batell of Poytiers tooke kynge John
With greate honoure triumphe and victory

By

o I ſawe hym with yen clere. x Aye.
o Their. y Clere.
o Can it. z Actes. a He toke.

By merciall actes, and verteous life aloone
And in Spayne, as made is memorie
The kyng Petro, by knightly victorie
To his kyngdome, he did restore again
By his brother putte out, with muche pain

¶ The appointement bytwixt duke John & duke Emund who should bee kyng of Castle and Lyon, and what the maker of this booke sawe and red at Londõ, to syr Robert Umfrewill then lorde Umfrewill.

¶ This kyng Petro to giue hym to his mede
Had nothyng els but doughters twoo full faire
Whiche he betooke, to that prince in deede
For his wages, for cause thei where his heire
With whome he did, to Englande so repaire
And Constaunce wedde, vnto his brother John
Emund his brother, the younger had anone

¶ Dame Isabell, the younger hight by name
Bytwene these brethren, was appointment
The first heire male, whiche of the sisters came,
The kyng should been, and haue the regiment
To you my lorde of Yorke, this dooeth appent
For your vncle Edwarde, was first heire male
To whome your father, was heire with out faile

Duke of Yorke.

¶ So kyng of Spayne, and also of Portyngall
Ye should nowe bee, by lyne of bloodde discent
By couenaunt also and appointement whole
As I haue seen of it the muniment
Under seale wryten, in all entent
Whiche your vncle, to my lorde Umfrewill
At London shewed, whiche I red that while

°Edmunda. Edit. alt. × The two. MW.

* Repeat this stanza in the margin of the Harleian MS. as it is
"The Appointement betwene Duke John and Duke Edmond, whether
he kyng of Castell ordeine. The Author of this Boke sawe and red at London
it shewed to Sir Robert Umfreville then Lorde Umfreville."

°Ed. MS = Acc.

¶ For Spayne & Portyngale beare the renoume
And commen name as I haue herde expressed
Both to the realmes of Castyll and Lyon.
And so the kynge of Spayne hath aye adressed
His royall style in wrytyng well inpressed
Kyng of Castill and also of Lyon,
Accompted both so for his region.

The tytle of the kinges of Englãde to Scotland and Ireland.

¶ Nowe be ye knowe, of your title to Englande
By consequens to Wales and Scotlande
For they perteyne, as ye maye vnderstande
Of auncient tyme, to the crowne of Englande
By papall bull, ye haue the right to Irelande,
Gascowe, Paitowe and Normandye
Pountyf, Bebuile, Saunzie and Sauntignye.

¶ And all the lande beyonde the charente
Of Dangolesme, Dangolismoys & Luyzezyne
Of Caoure, Caourenõ, Pyzdoz & Pirygũt coũtre
Of Rodis, Ronegeauis, Dagõ, Dagenoyse ẏ tine
Tharbe, Wigoz & Gaure shoulde to you enclyne,
With all the fraunchyses and all soueraynte
As hath the kyng of Fraunce in his degre.

¶ Nõ. that I Jhon Hardyng maker of this booke, delyuered to kyng Henry the syxte the copie of the treatie of this land as kyng Edward the thyrd treated and had them after the battayll of Poytours.

¶ Calys & Marke, Colne, Hãmys, Oye & Wale,
Sandegate & Guysons, with all the whole coũtre
With all the landes and townes betwene thẽ all
With all fraunchyses and royall soueraynte

All

" So. ° Your. × Beluyle.
" Bigore. "" Hade. ⁺ Answerwise. = Guynes.
: Ile Re.

All those of right be yours in propertie
What by treate and what by verape right
As kyng Edwarde them had of mykyll might.

¶ To Jerusalem, I saye ye haue great right
For erle Geffraye, that hight Plantagenet
Of Aungeoy erle, a prince of passyng might
The eldest sonne to Fouke, and first begette
Kyng of Jerusalem by his wife dewly sette
Whose sonne Geffray forsaide gatte on his wyfe
Henry the seconde that knowen was full ryfe.

¶ Yet haue ye more fro Bawdewyn Paraliticus
Kyng afterward, to thesame kyng Henry
The croune sente and his banner precious
As verape heyre of whole auncestrie
Descent of bloode by tytle lynyally
From Godfray Boleyn and" Robert Curthose
That kynges were therof and° chose.

Godfraye Boleyn.
Robert cur those.

¶ He sente hym also the Sepulture°° keyes
Resygnyng wholy vnto hym all his ryght
For to defende the lande from Sarizenes
For he was sicke and had therto no might
And all the lande, destroyed was to sight
By the Soudyan to great lamentacion
Of Goddes people, and all Chrisien nacion.

¶ He sente hym also the keyes of Dauids towre
With Heraclye, that of Jerusalem
Was Patriarke and greatest of honour
And with templers, which brought hym into this
Beseekyng hym ℔ he would thē sustein realme

Full

" And from. " Electe and. °° Sepulcre.
* Theym to.
** Of Engelonde so be his auncien name.

Full humbly asking suppoztacion
Foz the cytiee and chzisten consolacion.

¶ All these titles, the chzonicles can recozde
If they be seen by good deliberacion
Many of theim to these full well accozde
As I haue seen with greate delectacion
By clerkes wzytten foz our infozmacion
As in olde feldes, cozues freshe and grene grewe
So of olde bookes cõmeth our cunnyng newe

Out of old bookes cõmeth newe knowledge

¶ Of this I wyll nowe cease and fozth pzocede
To my mater, wher fyzst I beganne
To chzonicles of this lande foz wozthihed
To remembze in balade as I can
To that entent to please both God and man
And eke to please good feminitie
Of my lady your wife dame Cecely.

The dukes wyfe named Cecely.

¶ That in Latyn hath litell intellect
To vnderstande the great nobilytie
Of this ilke lande of whiche she is electe
Tyme commyng like to haue the soueraynte
Under your rule as shulde feminitee
Whiche if it maye please her ladyshippe
My hert will reioyse of her inward gladshippe.

¶ For well I wote your great intelligence
That in latyn hath good inspeccion
Will pleased bee of your hie sapience
My lady that is vnder your pzoteccion
Your heyze also maye rede at theyz eleccion
Whiche if it may please your nobilitee

Of

*Wole. +Chese. ||The goode. °Whiche.
¶To. ◇ ||Their.

Of my laboure I would reioyſed bee.

¶ Alſo[111] for your heyres and for your ſucceſſours
In tyme commyng to haue a clere knowlege
How of this realme the noble gouernours
Haue kept with helpe of Baronage
In victorye, tryumphe and ſurpluſage
Sith Brute it wanne in his prioritee
It hath been kept in worthy dignitee

¶ But howe this yſle enbraſed with this ſea
Unedefied was knowne firſt and founde
That Albion was named of propertee
Of dame Albione that firſt therein had ground
And after long, how Brute therof was crowned
That of his owne name called it Brytayne
And buylded it, wher all before was playne.

¶ The ende of the Proheme.

[111] Als.

[a] Sent it aye. [x] Myghty. [:] The.

Here begynneth the Chronycle of John Hardynge.

The firste Chapter.

¶ Of the.xxx.susters that first inhabited this lande & named it Albion, that nowe is Englande Wales & Scotlande.

Kyng Diocleſyā and Albyne his wyfe.

THe whyle that Troye was reignyng in his might
In Greece there was a kynge right excellente
That Diocleſiā, some bokes sayeth he hight
And of Surray that had the regimente,
Dame Albyne hight his wife, a lady gente
Who doughters had.xxx. wedded to there degree
To kynges all of greate nobilitee.

Whiche fell in pryde, and hye elacion
Thynkyng to be in no subieccion
Of husbandes more, ne dominacion
But only by a fell conieccion
Toke hole purpose and full affeccion
To kyll there lordes slepyng sodaynly
Soueraynes to be, and lyue all seuerally.

The.ij. Chapter.

¶ Note that wemen desyre of al thynges soueraynte, & to my conceypt more in this land then in any other, for they haue it of the nature of the saied susters.

THe youngest suster, the mater all discured
To her husbande, and to her father gent
For whiche she was of al that dede assured
But they were putte in exile by iudgement

So

°Bookes. *Reygne.

So rightfull were the princes of there entente
They iudged them to be put in the see
In shyppe to passe echeone fro there countree.

As fortune would, to make there auenture
Which by processe, with streames to and fro
And tempestes greate, and sore disauenture
Of sickenes great and mykell other wo
And moste of all, they knewe not whether to go
Tyll at laste they came vnto this yle
That then was waste, as chronicles do compile.

This chronicle is not true.

But I dare saye, this chronicle is not trewe,
For in that ylke tyme, in Surraye was no kyng
Ne afterwarde, to tyme that Saul grewe
Ne no kyng was in Surray euer lyuyng
That had that name, for Saule was ỹ first kyng
Of Surray realme, at the ende of the thyrde age
In Samuels tyme, the prophete wyse and sage.

Saul was the fyrste kyng in the thyrde age.

The.iij.Chapter.

Note that Hughe de Genesis a Romayne historiographier declareth in his chronicle all the kyngdomes of the worlde, and all the names of suche kynges as ruled in theim, from Noes floude vnto the byrthe of Christ. In whiche chronicle the forsayed Hughe writeth, that Danays kyng of ỹ Grekes had.l. doughters and that Egistus his brother kyng of Egypte had as many sonnes that maryed together, which doughters kylled theyr owne husbandes, and for that cause were banysshed, and saylyng on the sea were dryuen vnto a certain yle, which, Albina beyng the eldest suster of theim named accordyng to her name Albiõ, and Brute after that called it accordyng to his name Brytayne.

NE afore Brute, was in no realme ỹ name,
No kyng on liue, that hight ne called so
But of Argiuos the kyng of full hye fame
Had

* Heir. † Take. ‡ [illegible] ‖ That Reame no name. ** Argives.

Had doughters fifty, whose name was Danao
The kyng of Egipte, his brother Egisto
Had soonnes also fifty together wedde
In chronicles of olde as I haue redde

¶ Whiche doughters, slew their husbandes ech-
Long before Brute was of his mother bore (one
So fynde I by these women alone
And by these soonnes thus slain before
The chronicle trewe, in their persones more
Then in the doughters of Diocliſian
Were in no lande that tyme so hight kyng none

¶ So in the yere of Aioth Iudge of Israell
These ladies here landed full weery and sore
Seuenty and twoo as Hugh dooeth tell
Whiche was I saie an hundred yere afore
That Brute came into this lande and more
By fyue yeres trulye, and well accompted
Of yeres ode so muche more amounted

¶ Also in Surray there was no kyng before
Kyng Alexaunder dedde and expired
For Seleucius was the first kyng thore
By all chronicles that I haue enquired
That chronicle should not bee desired
Seyng that it is not trew ne autenticke
By no chronicle vnto the trewth oughte like

This sheweth that our chronicle is false in the bee-

¶ I dare well saie he sawe neuer Hugh Genesis
Ne he redde neuer the chronicles of Surry
Of Israell Iude ne of Egipcis
Of Argiues, of Athenes, ne Thessaly

* I well. ‖ Thusgates. ** Kynges name.
° Full sette. = Sixty and twelue. ∴ Two hundreth.
× Yre, Eair, air. ~~Written in the~~.
mm Als in Syrie.
∴ Died. = Ouer. % Argiues. × Ne of.

Of

Of Macedon, Cesile, ne of Assery, gynnyng,
Of Lacedemon, of Lyde, ne yet of Latyn,
Of Affrique, of Asis, ne yet of Babelyn,

Of Perce, ne Weede, Italye, ne Albany,
Of kyng Alexaunder, ne of his successors
That afore tyme reigned dyuersly
In dyuerse realmes, citees castelles and toures
Of Romany, ne of state of emperours
For had he seene all these and their stories
Of Diocletian, he would make no memories.

The.iiii.Chapiter.

Howe these ladies had this Isle in the yere of Aioth. lxxii. in the third age of the world, and she called it Albion of hir name, and toke seauty & seruice of theim all, as souerayne ladie of this Isle, that nowe is Englande, Scotlande and Walis, as Hugh Genesis wryteth in his Dyaloge.

These ladies so ay dwellyng in this Isle
The yeres of Aioth seuenty & two no lees
Dame Albyne was as mēne can compile
The eldest sister, and thought she would encrees
Hir self aboue theim all apon the dees
Sittyng, she tooke seauty, then of theim all
Trewe to hir to bee, for aught that might bee fall

And then she gaue this Isle a proper name
Of Albion, out of hir name as chiek
And called it so, frome thens forward the same
She ordained then bowes to their reliek
Arowes & boltes and bowstrynges made in briek
To slee the Dere, the Bull, and also the Bore
The Beer, and byrdes, that were therin before,

With

a Th'astate. † Sixty and twelue.

With pitfalles great & trappes thei did begile
The beastes and byrdes to theyr sustenaunce
They gatte eche daye with nettes and other wile
The fyshe in stagnes° and waters sufficiaunce
Eche daye they made wyttye cheuesaunce
To helpe them selfe at their necessitee
For hungre, that they shulde not perished bee.

The.v. Chapter.

Howe spyrites gatte Giauntes vpō the ladies, which gatte other Giaūtes within this lāde. Before Brute came were xii. M. Giauntes, what in this lāde that nowe is Englāde and the north that nowe is Scotland, and the west ỹ nowe is Wales, as the Scotte Marian sayeth in his dialoge.

These ladies with meate & drynke replete
And of nature reuigured corporally
And all there care forgette and vnder fete
Had great desyre to play them womanly
As wemen yet wyll do full louyngly
For to fulfyll the werke of womanhed
And bryng forth frute, the lande to rule and lede.

So wer they tempted with inwarde meditacīō
And vayne glorye within their hertes implyed
To haue comforte of mennes consolacion
And knewe nothyng, howe of them to prouyde
But inwardly theim* they glorifyed
So hote that spyrites in mannes forme
Laye by theim their desyres to performe°

So duryng forth in suche lust and delyte
With nature of theim selfe and feminacion
The spyrites gatte childzen, ỹ were Gyaūtes tyte
Of them through their owne ymaginacion*

By

° Stankes. * In it. ° Reporme.
* In through theire owne generacion.

By feruent hete, moued with temptacion
Thus gatte they then great Giaũtes ful of might
Within shorte tyme that were longe and wight.

The.vi. Chapter.

How the fathers laye by theyr doughters, the brethren by theyr systers, the sonnes by theyr mothers and euery kynde with other, as Hugh Genesis reporteth in his chronicles.

The fathers then by theyr doughters laye
Mother ne syster agayne it not replyed
Of chylder fell sonnes and doughters ay
They gatte eche daye and strongly multiplied
Of theim this ysle then was so fortifyed
So stronge then was this generacion
None durst it noye for theyr malignacion.

Amonge theim fell so great vnkyndnesse
Accordynge ryght well to there lyke inordinate
That echone of theim dyd other oppresse
That none of theim was lefte on lyue of yestate
Of.xij.thousande within a lytell date
Whose pryde fell afore the incarnacion
Twelue hundreth yere, by verraye computacion.

But Bartholomew de proprietatibus rerum
Sayth howe this ysle of Albion had name
Of the see bankes full whyte all or sum
That circuyte the ysle as shyppes came
Fro ferrome sene, as thei through the see faine
Sailed by & by for ryppes and roches whyte
To shipmen were greate gladnesse and delyte.

But Maryan saieth the chronicler to sewe That

b

"Both longe. * All. ⁘ Noughte. ⁖ Many.
// Over all. ‖ Stoutely. % Theire. ‡ ~~Smitten in the~~.
% Eche. ⁖ Slewe other and dide. ‡ Theire.
++ Forne. ⁖ In Scotl. °° Truest Cronycles.

That dame Albion was the first that named it so
Both two myght be together clere and trewe
That shippes so saylinge to and fro
And at her coming they called it so both two
And so both waies maye be right sure & trewe
From whiche there wyll no chronycler it renewe.

Brutus

¶ Of this nowe wyll I sease and saye no more
To time come efte ỹ Brute hath wonne this lande
And slayne them all in batell foughten sore
But nowe of Brutus ye shall well understande
Howe that he did in Greece and tooke on hande
And of what bloude he cam by clere discente
And howe in Greece he had greate regiment.

¶ And howe he gate this yle by his prowesse
And called it by name the yle of Britayne
And of his name for theyr worthynesse
He called his men Britaynes ay furth certayne
That Troyans were afore not to layne
To whiche I praye the holy Trinyte
That is one God in personnes thre.

The oracyon of the authoure for ỹ making of this booke.

¶ Of helpe and spede to bryng this boke to ende
For symple is my wytte of all scyence
Of rethoryke as yet neuer I kende
And symple am of all intellygence
yet wyll I not so hurte my conscyence
On olde goddes to muse or on to call
That false were euer and euer so wyll be fall.

The names of false goddes.

¶ Of Saturnus ne yet of Marcury
Of Iupiter of Mars ne yet of Venus

Of

*Faith †True and clere. ‡To Renewe.
::In verey. =Never it.

Of Pallas ne of Mynerue ne Megary
Ne of Phebus Ceres ne of Geneus
Of Cuppde ne pet of Thisophonus
Dyan Bacchus ne of Cerbery
All these I wyll refuse nowe and defye

¶ And to ỳ god in heauen I praye in magestie
My wytte to enforce with might and sapience
With langage suche as may ought pleasaunt be
To your pleasaunce and noble excellence
For I am bare and naked of eloquence
By insuffycience and all symplicyte
To ende this booke as were necessyte.

The.vii. Chapiter.

¶ How Brute conquered Albyon & called it Britayne of his owne name, ỳ now is England Walis and Scotland, and the armes of Brute in whiche he was clade fyrste when he entred this ỹle after Genesis the Italyane Chronycler were of Gowlys. ii. Lions crowne of golde Rampant and combattaunt. The armis of Brute

AS chronycles telleth & make notificacyō who so them wel shal know & vnderstand Of what kynne blode and generacyon Brutus firste came that conquered all this lande It to remember I haue nowe take on hande Through all olde stories by philosyphers cōpiled In balade thus it shall be made and fyled Brutus

¶ As out of olde feldes newe corne groweth eche
Of olde bokes by clerkes newe approued (yere
Olde knyghtes actes w̄ mynstrelles tonge stere
The newe corage of yonge knightes to be moued

*Lyrnes.

Dute of oldbokes cõmeth new wise dome.

Wherfore me thinketh old thinges shuld be loued
Sith olde bokes maketh young wittes wise
Disposed well with vertues exercyse.

Adam.

At olde Adam therfore I wyll begyn
Who was I fynde, the first olde creatur
Conueyng downe lynyally in kyn
As discent in byrth and in gendur
Next vnto Brute, as mencion maketh scriptur
I shall reporte, as God wyll please to lede
My symple ghoost with language it to fede.

For well I wote, without his supportacion
For to reporte his verave genealogie
Howe he by discent in all generacion
From Adam downe to Troyane Auncetrye
Gotten and borne certeyne in Italye
Full herde it is, although I woulde full fayne
So symple be my spyrites and my brayne.

The generacion of Brute

Adam.
Seth.
Enos.
Canayn
Melaliel
Jareth.
Enoke
Matusale.

Of Adam whiche was the fyrst creature
Came Seth forsothe and Seth gat Enos than
And Enos gatte afterwarde full sure
A sonne that hight and called was Canayn
Who gatte Melaliel, as scripture tell can
Who gatte Jareth of whom Enoke came
That Matusaly gatte of mykill fame.

Lamech.
Noe.
Japheth.
Cichym.
Cipre.
Crete.

Matusale gatte Lameke, who Noe gatte
And Noe Japhet, who gatte Cichym than
That Cipre gatte after whom Cipres hatte
Cipre gatte Crete, that the yle of Crete began
A famouse and a ryght notable man

And

° Cunnynge. × So vertuous. ÷ They distente.
×× Engendrure. ÷÷ Mencioned hath. ÷ Deyne.
§ Wele to reporte this. ×× So that.
°° Wherfore nowe dwelleth mann a man.

And Crete gatte a sonne hight Cely — Cely.
Who gatte Saturne a wyse man and a wittye — Saturne

¶Of whome came then Jubiter of Frigy — Jubiter.
Whiche is Turky wherin Troyes citee
In honoure stode and in great victory
And Jubiter gate Dardanus no lee — Dardanus.
That of Frigy in greate felicitee
So reygned kyng greatly magnifyed
And as a God amonge theim glorifyed.

¶Of whom came so his sonne Eritonus — Eritonus.
Who gatte a sonne that firste Troye edifyed
That Troilus hight of whome came kyng Ilis — Troilus
That Ilyon made a palays of great pryde — Ilis.
Whiche for passyng other was both long & wyde — Ilyon.
Where Hercules slough kynge Lamadone — Hercules Lamadone.
And led awaye the royalles of the towne.

¶Lamedone gatte the kyng Priamus — Priamus.
Who made agayn his palays Ilion
And Troies citee also more glorious
Then they were before their subuercion
And royall without peruercion
In ioye and myrth they stode many a yere
And Achilles with hym his brother dere. — Achilles was Priamus brother.

The.viij.Chapiter.

¶A shorte lamentacõ of the maker, for ỳ kyng Lamedõ lost his life and his estate that might haue stande in peace and suertie, for a litle succour of Jasone in his votage.

O Lamedon of Troye, that bare the crowne
What fortune drove the, to dooe Jasone
vnkyndnesse

o That hight.

Omitted. edit. a.t.

x Troyes. xx Royal wrought with stones full precious
y Als. And kynge of Troie stode longe full joyous.
z The. a Royally. b Fortune. ‡ See the Paper inserted

Bute of oldbokes cõmeth new wise dome.

Wherfoze me thinketh old thinges shuld be loued
Sith olde bokes maketh young wittes wise
Disposed well with vertues exercyse.

Adam.

¶At olde Adam therfoze I wyll begyn
Who was I fynde, the first olde creatur
Conueyng downe lynyally in kyn
As discent in byzth and in gendur
Next vnto Bzute, as mencion maketh scriptur
I shall repozte, as God wyll please to lede
My symple ghoost with language it to fede.

¶Foz well I wote, without his suppoztacion
Foz to repozte his verave genealogie
Howe he by discent in all generacion
From Adam downe to Troyane Auncetrye
Gotten and bozne certeyne in Italye
Full herde it is, although I woulde full fayne
So symple be my spyzites and my bzayne.

The generacion of Bzute

Adam.
Seth.
Enos.
Canayn
Melaliel
Jareth.
Enoke
Matusale.

¶Of Adam whiche was the fyzst creature
Came Seth fozsothe and Seth gat Enos than
And Enos gatte afterwarde full sure
A sonne that hight and called was Canayn
Who gatte Melaliel, as scripture tell can
Who gatte Jareth of whom Enoke came
That Matusaly gatte of mykill fame.

Lamech.
Noe.
Japheth.
Cichym.
Cipze.
Crete.

¶Matusale gatte Lameke, who Noe gatte
And Noe Japhet, who gatte Cichym than
That Cipze gatte after whom Cipzes hatte
Cipze gatte Crete, that the ysle of Crete began
A famouse and a ryght notable man

And

And Crete gatte a sonne hight Cely — Cely.
Who gatte Saturne a wyse man and a wittye — Saturne

¶ Of whome came then Jubiter of Frigy — Jubiter.
Whiche is Turky wherin Troyes citee
In honoure stode and in great victory
And Jubiter gate Dardanus no lee — Dardanus.
That of Frigy in greate felicitee
So reygned kyng greatly magnifyed
And as a God amonge theim glorifyed.

¶ Of whom came so his sonne Eritonus — Eritonus.
Who gatte a sonne that firste Troye edifyed
That Troilus hight of whome came kyng Ilis — Troilus Ilis.
That Ilyon made a palays of great pryde — Ilyon.
Whiche for passyng other was both long & wyde — Hercules Lamadone.
Where Hercules slough kynge Lamadone
And led awaye the royalles of the towne.

¶ Lamedone gatte the kyng Priamus — Priamus.
Who made agayn his palays Ilion
And Troies citee also more glorious
Then they were before their subuercion
And royall without peruercion
In toye and myrth they stode many a yere — Achilles was Priamus brother.
And Achilles with hym his brother dere.

This Ilus gate a sonne Lamedon
Who kynge of Troie was Royall in that tide
Whan that Jason at Troie first euersion
Caste doun Ilion the palays of grete pride
And Troie destroied that was both longe and wide
Where Hercules slewe kynge Lamedon
And ledde awaie the Royals of the Toun.

* Troyes. ** Royally wrought with stonys full precious
And kynge of Troie stode longe full glorious.
a Als. This Ilus Ilyon.
b The. c Royally. d Infortune. † See the Paper watered

Where he to paye, was so readye and bowne
For his vitayle that came in by distresse
Of tempest greate standing in heuinesse
Hym for to dryue oute of the regyon
And not refreshe hym at his requisicyon.

Lamedō shewed to Jason vnkindnesse.

Whiche was the cause after of thy heuynesse
When he the slough and destroyed all thy cytee
And caste downe all thy myght and great nobles"
With lytell thing that sauyd might haue bee
O good lorde, why shouldē thy royal dignytee
To straungers shewē that cruell vnkyndnesse
That to thy lande purposed no distresse.

Hector, Troilus Dephebus Helenus, & Parys, came of Dyamus.

Of Dyamus came Hector and Troylus
Dephebus Helenus and Parys
Of royall bloude and dukes full glorious
Of excellence and greatest of empryse
Whiche were all slayne by fortunes excercyse
All the sege of Troye knyghtly in the defence
In mercyall actes as princes of excellence

Grekes

The palays greate and the noble cytee
By Grekes seeged, longe and many a yere
Was wonne at laste and wast as men yet see
This kyng & quene both two were slayne in feere
Where Anchises and Eneas his sonne dere
And Ascaneus the sonne of Eneas
Escapyd awaye and on the sea dyd passe.

Anchyses, Eneas, Ascaneus.

The.ir. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Eneas expled oute of Troye came to Lecyle and to Affrike to the cytee of Carthage, and fro thence to Italye, & there was made kynge of Tusshayne and of Latene.

And

* Thy. " Noblenes. : Shewed. ∴ So.

† At. edit. alt. MS. †† Their.

AND in Cicile they after did aryue
Where Anchises dyed and was dispent.
Eneas and his sonne to the sea gan dryue
With shippes.xii.to Italy had they mente
But wynde theim droue,again there entent
Into Affrique,where for Eneas sake
They welcome wer and worthely vptake.

Eneas.

CFro thence after he tooke the sea agayn
And landed then in Italia
In Tibre mouth with trauayll & with payne
Where the towne and porte is of hostia
Where by the God he bidden was to ga
To helpe the kyng Euandre in his right
For after hym the God that land hym hight.

Euãdre.

CTo whom he went as hym was prophecied
And welcome was into Italie
Of kyng Euandre greatest magnified
For his wisedome fame and cheualrye
For his worshippe and for his auncetrye
He gaue hym than greate lordshippe and riches
And gold enough right of his worthynes

CKyng Euandre made warre on kyng Latene
In whose defence Turnus kyng of Tuskayn
Came,with greate hoste of Tuskalayns so fyne
Agayn Euandre,wher Turnus then was slayn
Eneas did that dede and that derayn
With mighty strokes courage and cheualrous
He wanne the felde in batell fortunous.

Latens.
Turnus

Betwene Euandre so and the kyng Latene

[a] Worshippe. edit. wtf.

[x] Omitted [illegible] edit. wtf.

The peace he made, reste and concordaunce
And kyng Latens his doughter ỹ hight Labyne
Wedded to his wyfe, by veray good accordaunce
Betwene theim forth was no more discordaunce
And Eneas kyng was made of Tuskayne
Of whiche the kynge Euandre was full fayne.

¶ Sone after then dyed the kyng Latene
Whose realme Eneas had also in peace
In which he made a castell fayre and fyne
Labynyon it hyght wythout leace
His wyues name to worshyppe and encreace
Of whome he gatte a soonne, and dyed afore.
That he was brought into this worlde and bore.

¶ This worthy prince, kyng Eneas mortally
Ended his lyfe that was of hye prowesse
Where so God wyll to reigne eternally
Within the house of fame, where as I gesse
Wer knightes fell of noble worthynesse
That more desyred in armes to haue a fame
Then be the best in dede, and beare no name

The.x. Chapiter.

¶ Of the house of fame where knightes be rewarded after the merites in armes by Mars the God of armes, some translate wich kyrcheues of pleasaunce & some with rynges and ouches, their sepulture in the felde of ptee by heuen gates ỹ haue be verape louers of theyr louers ladyes and neuer papneles but aye graceles.

Siluius. But than hys soonne Siluius Postumus
Newe borne so young and tendre of age
Ascanius. Kyng of this lande was made Ascanius
His brother dere that ruled his heritage
And peaceably kepte out of all seruage.

Twentye

Twenty wynter and eyght full mannely,
And gatte a soonne that called was Syluy.

¶Whiche Siluius gatte and generate — Siluius ꝑ father of Brutus.
His soonne Brutus on Crensa labius nece
All priuelie by hym de birginate
And soze besought by his subtilitees
And sumwhat of hir womanly petees
That tendzed hym of good kempnete
As womanhod would of all humilitee

¶Soo after sone, the fate of death would soo
That passe away muste nede Ascanius
He gaue his brother Siluius posthumus tho
His heritage and riches plentuous
But Brutus waxed echedaye full beauteous — The praise of Brute.
And in mannehod well moze in all vertue
Was none hym like in no place that mẽne knewe

¶Of.xv.yere when he was commen to age
At huntyng as he shotte at a dere — Howe Brutus slewe his father,
He sleugh his father vnto his greate damage
And at his birth as saieth the chronicler
His mother dyed as wzytten is full clere
Anone after as he was of hir boze
Foz whiche.ii.causes his herte was wonder soze

¶Seyng July this fals foztunite
The sozoes greate in hym so multiplied
That there foz shame of his foztunite
In no wyse would he no lenger dwell ne byde
But into Grece his sozowes foz to hide
He went anone where exiles wer of troye

Whose

* Com. * To * Waye
* That.

Whose sorowes great he leched all with ioye.

Helenus. Priamus. Anchises.

¶ Sir Helenus was Priamus sonne of Troye
And Anchises an olde worthy knight
And .vi. M. that of hym had great ioye
Of gentilmen of Troye exiled forth right
That hym besought with instaūce day and night
To helpe theim out of their great heped sorowe
In whiche they lay oppressed euen and morowe.

Pandras.

¶ For whiche he wrote his letter in that tide
To kyng Pandras that kyng was of that lande
Requiryng hym to let hym passe and ride
Frely, where so they would withouten bande
For whiche the kyng with power tooke on hande
To siege Brutus within his castell fayre
To whom Troyans strongly gaū repayre.

Brutus. Anacletus

¶ To Brutus so, to helpe theim at there might
Who then anone sent forth Anacletus.
His prysoner, whom he had taken rycht
Antigon⁹. Unto the hoste, to tell theim how Antigonus
Laye in the wood stollen awaye frō Brutus
Who went to theim, that next the wood then laye
And bad theim come and rescowe hym or daye.

¶ Whiche warde so brake & to ẏ wood can ryde
Brutus with that with all his hole power
There brake in and would no longer abyde
But slough the Grekes and tooke the kyng infer
But than as saith the veray chronicler
No lenger wolde he there abyde ne dwell
But furthermore as chroniclers doeth tell,

With

o Troom. o for, Lait. alt. " Which. ◻ Letters + Thaym. ⁘ Gan to.
⁘ Thym. o for. Lait alt. ¶ For. o Nothynge. o In fere.

¶ With kyng Pandras, he made his appoincte- Pandras,
hym to deliuer, on this condicion (ment
To wedde his doughter, by will and assent
Dame Innogen and shippis of his region
With vitaile and riches, to wynne lande & towne,
For there he woulde, no longer make soiourne
But with Troyans, to their lande attourne

¶ All this promysses and whole apoinctement
Fulfilled and spede, Brute with his wife
So sailed furth, thorowe the Grekish ocyent
To marytayne, and twoo pillers ganne he driue The pil-
That Hercules also with busy liue lers y Her-
To tyme he came to an olde citee cules made
No creature therin, that tyme coulde see of brasse.

¶ But a goddas, menne called Diane Diane the
That coulde declare, and expounde destynie Goddas,
To whome Brute anone went vp alone
And laye afore hir, there full deuoutely
With candell brennyng, and with ceremonie
Besekyng hir, of succour and grace
Where that he might, hir worshyp in sum place

¶ With his Troyanes, therin for to abyde
And inherite, to whome then saied Dyane
By yonde all Gualle, an Ile full long and wide
Enclosed whole, within the occiane
With Giauntes kepte his destyned, the alaan
And thy Troyanes, to haue and enhabite
Therin to dwell, for euermore and enheret

¶ So sailyng furth, by Columpnes of Hercules
Whiche

* These. edit. alt. † premys. Brute. ‡ he went.
‖ Bone. ° callede hir. †† Which. °° al bane
‡ end of. ‖ Gallie. :: To. ‡‡ Pillers.

Whiche been of braſſe, by Hercules their ſetts
For when he came into the ſea no lees
Of Spayne, wher that his meny Troianes mette
Of their lynage as it was to their dette
Thei came with hym echeone by one accorde
Corneus their capitain was and lorde

Corneus capitain of ỳ Troyãs.

The.xi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Brute came frome Grece into Albion, and named it Britaine and howe he arryued at Totneſſe in Deuinſhire

HE ſailed ſo fourth by the ſea Aquitaine
Where ỳ he arriued ỳ nowe is Guyã lãde
And ſleugh the buckes of whiche thei wer full faine,
The bere & the bore and hartes all that thei fande
With out licence or yet any warand
Wherfore Guffor kyng of thé lande full fell
With Troyanes faught, but Goryne [their] bare ỳ (bell

Goryne,

¶ Brute tooke ſhippe and arriued in Albion
Where Diane ſaied, ſhould been his habitacion
And when he came the coaſtes of it vpon
He was full glad and made greate exultacion
Reioyſed highly of his fortunacion
In armes of Troye couered and well arayd
Of whiche Troyanes wer full well apaid

The armes of Brute

He bare of goulis twoo lions of golde
Countre Rampant with golde onely crouned
Whiche kynges of Troie in bataill bare ful bolde
To whiche frõ Troye was diſtroyed & confoũded
Their childzen ſlain, the next heire was he founde
And in tho armes this Ile he did conquere

As

1 was so. 2 see to 3 Reste. 4 That. 5 Coryne
6 roze. 7 hole 8 wer all 9 all of.

As Marian sateth the veray chronicler — Maryan chronicler.

At Totnesse so this Brutus did arriue
Corneus also and all their coumpaignie — Corneus
The giauntes also he sleugh doune beeliue
Through all the lande in battaile mannely
And left no moo but Gogmagog onely — Gogmagog.
In all this Isle, so had he theim destroyed
Whom in prisone he kepte and anoyed

The.xii.Chapiter.

Howe Corneus wrastilled with Gogmagog the giaunt of the Isle, and sleugh hym.

But for he would knowe all his resistens
What he might dooe more then Corneus
He made theim bothe dooe their sufficiēce
In all wrastleyng whiche was mooste rigorous
And to defende or sawte mooste curious
On the sea banke, afore Brutus thei mette
Where by accorde the daye and place was sette

This Gogmagog so thraste Corneus
That rybbes three were broken in his side
Corneus then of might full laborous
Thought he would sone reuenge that tide
With that he stode and sette his leggues wyde
And gatte hym vp betwene his armes faste
And ouer the roche into the sea hym caste

Whiche place hight yet Gogmagoges sawte
By cause he leped their frome Corneus
All if it wer nothyng in his defaute

1 Brute. 2 Corynæus. 3 [illegible]. 4 [illegible].
5 Rigorous. 6 More. 7 Thraste. 8 Revenge it.

Corin. But by the might of Corin, full bigorous
Who was alway in batail fortunous
For whiche Brutus had him in greate deynte
And gaue him aye worship and dignite

¶ This Brutus, thus was kyng in regalite
This Isle Brityne. And after his name, he called this Isle Brityn,
And all his menne, by that saine egalite
He called Britynes, as chronicles all saine
Of whiche thei all were full[2] glad and faine
To Corneus[3] he gaue to his availe
Corneus. The duchie whole, and lande of Cornwayle.

The.xiij. Chapiter.

¶ Howe he buylded the citee of Troynouaunt, that nowe is called London.

London. SO was the name, of this ilke Albyon
All sette on side, in kalandes of achaunge
And putte awaye with greate confusion
Brityne. And Brityn hight, so furth by newe eschaunge
After Brutus, that slewe these Giauntes straunge
And wanne this Isle, by his magnyficence
In whiche he dwelled long tyme in excellence

¶ The citee greate, of Troynouaunt so faire
He buylded then on Thamis for his delite
Unto the north, for his dwellyng & for his moost.
Whiche is to saie in our lāguage perfect, (repeter
Newe Troye, in bookes as I canne nowe endicte
And nouell Troye, in frenche incomperable
Of Brēteyne, a citee moost p[ro]fytable

¶ This Brityne is in length eyght. C. myle

Fro

[1] Brute. [2] Than full. [3] Corneus. [4] By alle.
[5] Thamys side. [6] By alle Britayn.

Fro Monsehole, that is in Cornewayle right
Unto the northend of Catenes, to compile,
And also in bredeth, frome sainct Dauid ỹ hight
To Yarmoth, that in Northfolke, is by sight.
Two hundred myle, accounpted well and clene,
As autours saie, this Isle dooeth whole contein.

The leȝth and bredth of ỹ Isle of Brytayne.

The.xiiij. Chapiter.

How Brute sette his lawes & peace of Troye in this Isle, without whiche a kyng is no better then his subiecte, or his leege manne.

In which through out, his peace & lawe he
Whiche been ỹ floures of all regalite, (set,
With out whiche, but if thei two bee met,
There maie no prince holde principalite,
Ne endure long in worthy dignite;
For if those two, bee nought by holden than
What is a kyng, more worth then his liege mãne.

This kyng Brute, kepte well this Isle in peace
And sette his lawes of Troye, with ordre, rites,
And consuetudes, that might the lande encreace
Suche as in Troye, he knew was most profittes
Unto the folke and the common profettes
He made theim writen, for long rememory
To rule the Isle, by theim perpetually

This menne he did rewarde full royally
With landes and rentes, ỹ with hym suffred pain
And Troynouaunt, he made full specially
In Archflaume, his sea Cathedrall certain
A temple therof, Apolyne to opteyne
By Troyane lawe, of all suche dignite

As

1 Mons Hoel. 2 Brede. 3 Role. 4 Cuten.
5 Brutus. 6 Ether. 7 partiter. 8 To 9 Be
10 Archeflammyna.

As archbyshop hath nowe in his degree.

The.xv. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Bzute departed Bzitaine in thze partes to his thze sonnes, the two ponger to holde of the elder, so that Wales and Scotlande shulde do homage to Englande by hys ordynaunce by the lawe of Troye.

Howe Bzutus deuided this ysle.

THis kyng Bzutus this ysle deuided in.iii
A lytell afore out of this ysle[2] he dyed,
To his thze sonnes ẏ were full faire to se
After his dayes to ioyse he signifyed
And when he had the Isle all tripertyed
He called the chyefe Logres[3] after Locryne
That doth extende fro Monsehole[4] to Hũber fine.

Thze sonnes of Bzute.

Locryne Cambir Albanacte.

¶ Fro Humbar nozth vntõ[5] the Nozthwest sea
Of all Bzitaine which he called Albanye
Foz Albanacte the kyng therof to be
His second sonne, that was both good and manly
To holde it of Locryne perpetually
And of his heyzes by homage and feaute
As to chiefe lozde longeth the suffraintie.

¶ And fro the water of Waage right in ẏ southe
And Strigell castell to Seuerne all by and by
And so to Dee at Chester as it is full couth
Ryght in the Nozth cambze he called foz thy
Foz Cambze[6] shulde it haue all plenerly
And on[7] Locryne it should euer be homage
And of his heyzes euermoze in herytage.

The.xvi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe by lawe Troyane the soueraynte belongeth to the eldest bzother oz syster.

As

[1] As an. [2] Worlde. [3] Logers. [4] Mons hoole.
[5] So to. [6] Camberte [7] Of.

AS after the lawes of Troye ỹ soueraintie
And all resorte of ryght doth apertayne
To the eldest bzother in pzopertie
The eldest syster ryghte, so by ryght shulde bene
Souerayne lady and ouer thiem all quene
By equytie of that ylke lawe and ryghte
In place where it is holden lawe perfyghte.

THis kyng Brutus made people faste to tylle
The lande aboute, in places both farre and nere
And sowe with sede and get theim corne full wele
To lyue vpon, and haue the sustynaunce clere.
And so in feldes both farre and nere.
By his wysdome and his sapience
He sette the lande in all suffycience.

Brutus ordered ỹ people to sowe corne.

And as the fate of death doth assygne
That nedes he muste his ghoost awaye relees
To his goddas Dyane he dyd resygne
His corps to be buryed withouten lees
In the temple of Apolyne, to encreace
His soule amonge the goddes euerychone
After his merytes trononized highe in trone.

Fro beginnyng of the worlde to Brutus
Into this isle entred fyrste at Totnesse
Foure thousande yere. lxxx. and. iiii. were thus
As the chronycles therof beareth witnesse
And after the incarnacion to expresse
A thousande hole, a hundreth and fyftene
And of Hely Judge in Jury was eyghtene.

In the thyrde age he came into this ysle

1 The ... 2 Rule. 3 Were
4 And his people he seuerde here and there. 5 Thus by
6 his high. 7 It dide. 8 mere 9 introonized
10 The begynnynge. 11 Afore. 12 Jude.

And in the yere as it is afore expressed
But howe longe ỹ he reygned or shorte whyle
Walter of Oxforde hath confessed
Foure and twenty yere, as he hath inpressed
And other sayne he reigned thre and fourty yere
But Marian saith thre score he reygned here

¶ Whiche is moste lyke to be verifyed
By all his worckes and greate operacions
Whiche in shorte tyme myght not been edifyed
Ne performed with shorte occupacyons
But in longe tyme by good consyderacyons
Rather it is lyke he reigned thre score yere,
By his greate worckes and beginninges ỹ appere

The.xvii. Chapiter.

¶ Kyng Locryne the soueravne lorde of all Britayne had Logres to his parte, to whom his.ii.brethren dyd homage for Albyne and for Cambyr.

THis[3] eldest sone was king ỹ hight Locrine
Of all Britayne hauing ỹ souerante
Hauing Logres as Brute dyd determine
To whome Cambre and Albanacte the free
Obeying both vnto his royalte
There homage made as to ỹ lorde soueravne
Locryne And Emperoure of that lande[4] of Britayne.

¶ There[5] homage made and to Cambre went
Albanactus then rode to Albyne[c]
And reigned so by lyfe in one assente
Eche one other to helpe and fortifye
And thus in peace holding their regalite[7]

1. Perfourmyshed. 2 Beeldynges. Albanye. MS.
c Albeny. 2 alt. alt. 3. His 4 the Ile. 5 Theire.
6 In love by. 7. As brotherne shuld of theire fraternytie.

But

But as they satte so beste in peace and reste
Kyng Humbar arose in Albyne full pyeste

The.xviii.Chapiter.

Howe kyng Humbar slewe Albanactus, wherfore Locryne and Cambre gathered a great power and discomfyted king Humbar, & ceased Albany by excheter vnto Logres againe for defaute of an heyre.

AT the ryuer that called is Humbar nowe
Where Albanact anon did wt hym fyght
And in batel stroke Humbar on the browe
And felde hym were he neuer so wight
But Humbar arose agayne wt all his myght
And in that stoure was Albanacte slayne
Kyng Humbar had the felde wt mikyll payne.

*The death of Albanact

KIng Locryne then & Cambre elles his brother
With hoostes great vpon king Humbar faughte
That of Humbarlande was king wt many other
In Albany that mikyll sorowe wrought
And with hym met where he before had fought
Where sore for fyght he fledde to the ryuer
And there was drowned in that water clere.

The ryuer of Humbar wherof it tooke ye name.

A greate parte of his hooste was drowned also
As they dyd flee in that water clere
And many slayne that myght no further go
And many other taken for prysonere
Locryne the felde had, and his brother dere
And to the shyppes where they had all rychesse
Theyr men to helpe that suffred there distresse

1 rose. 2 Albany. 3 smote. 4 Humbre. 5 Londe. 6 Right muche. 7 before had sought. 8 For sore 9 therin. 10 Within 11 River 12. Not.

¶All Albayne into his hande he seased
And helde hole to Logres ioyned then agayne
As it was firste and that lande well pleased
Of the resorte the people were full fayne
But in the shyppes a lytell from Almayne
He fande the kynges daughter of Germanye
Dame Estrylde that was full womanly.

¶Whome for his wyfe he helde at his plesaunce
For whiche the duke Corneus was wroth
But frendes then by noble gouernaunce
The playne trouth to saye in soth
Made hym to wed, all yf it were full loth
The doughter so of Duke Corneus
With all frendeshyppe they were accorded thus

¶Dame Gwendolyne ỳ hight by proper name
Of whome he gate a sonne ỳ hight Madan
And in the meane whyle in preuy wyse at hame
He helde Estrylde as his loue and leman
Therof his wyfe vnwetyng, or any other man
And of her gate a doughter full femynyne
That Sabren hyght as chronycles do deuyne.

¶In this meane tyme Corneus so dyed
To whome the quene Gwendolyne was heire
Whome kyng Locryne forsoke and replyed
And Estrylde wedded agayne ỳ was full fayre
But Gwendolyn to Cornewayle dyd repayre
With her power, and faught w̄ kyng Locrine
Where he was slayne and had none other fyne.

How Locryn was slaine in battayle by hys wyfe Gwendolyne.

¶She drowned Estrilde and her doughter dere

In

2ª Corynę.

In a ryuer whiche that tyme had no name
But fro thens forth for Sauer farre and nere
That ryuer that was plentuous of name
Was called then Seuerne ỹ hath greate fame
Thus Seuerne firste had name in propertee
Of that lady that drowned was in specyaltee

The ryuer of Seuerne, wherof it tooke the name.

The.xix.Chapiter.

¶ Gwendolena quene of Britaine had Logres and Albayne in peace and reste.xv.yere.

Guendolena.

GWendolyne so after fro kyng Locryne
Had reigned hole.v.yere and was slayne
The quene was of all Logres lãdes so fine
And of all Albanie also through out incertayne
Crowned quene and so reigned with mayne
And seruyce tooke of Cambre for his lande
Who gouerned well her tyme, I vnderstande

CFyftene yere and then her sonne she crowned
That Maddan hyght & into Cornewalle went
And then she dyed with sycknesse sore confounded
And to her goddes her wokull herte she sent
And thus this quene in her beste entente
To set amonge the goddesse euerychone
Euer to complayne her wedowhed alone

The.xx.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Maddan kynge of Britayne reygned after Gwendolena his mother, and reygned.xl.yeres.

MAddan her sõne was king of Britain then
Hauyng Logres and also Albany
That fourty yere there reygned as a man

1 Sabren 2 There

a Albany. edit. alt. 3 So of. 4 Conducte. 5 But after

6 Her. 7 confound. 8 Gone forth.

Wadda kyng of Britain that is Englād & Scotlande.

Kepyng the lande in peace from tyrannye
In whose tyme was none in his monarchye
Durste ought vary or any thing displease
So was he dred, and set the realme in ease:

Throughe all Britayne durste none another dys-
So wel the lawe and peace he dyd conserue (plese
That euery man was gladde other to please
So dred they hym they durst no thing ouer terue
Againe his lawe, nor peace but theim conserue[2]
So was he dred through his great sapience
Both in, and oute by all intellygence.

Howe ỹ one brother slew tyother to be kynge.

The dyed so, and to his father yede
His sonnes two Maulyne and eke Wempryse
A daye then sette whiche of theim shoulde precede
To the croune but then by couetyse
And[3] that ylke daye the yonger[4] Wempryse
Slewe his brother Maulyne elder of age
To that entent to haue the[5] herytage.

Wempryse kyng of Britaine

Wempryse thus[6] kyng destroied, his men all oute
Their landes their[7] goddes or elles their liues cer
He tooke from theim all his lande aboute (tayne
Fulfylled all with[8] pryde and great disdayne
His comoines all with taxes did distrayne
So[9] straunterly, he lefte theim nought to spende
By consequent, thryfteles he was at ende.

The wretched end of Wempryse.

His wyfe he dyd refuse and foule forsake
Vsynge the synne of horribilyte
With beastes ofte in stede right of his make
Whiche by all ryght and equytee

1 And. 2 Observe. 3 At. 4 Yonger brother. Wenge-
5 ~~Omitted in the second edition~~ 6 The hole. 7 His.
7 And. 8 Of. 9 He did. And by all

Uengeaunce aſked by fell beſtialitee
And ſo hym fell, as to the wood he wente
A route of wolffes hym ſlough and all to rent.

The.xxi.Chapiter.

¶ Ebzanke kyng of Bzitayne had Logres and Albany. Alſo he had.xx.wyues. xx. ſonnes and.xxx. doughters, he made Yozke, Bamburgh, Edenburgh, Dumbzitayne and Aclude. Alſo he made an archeflaume at Yozke & his temple that nowe is an archebiſhoppe.

EBzanke his ſõne thẽ crowned was anone
Who ſhippes great made on ỹ ſea to ſayle
Withhelde[1] his knightes w̃ hym ſo fozthe to gone
Upon warre he went without fayle
Then into Gaule with a full manly tayle
Wher that he had riches innumerable
To holde eſtate royall incomparable.

Ebzanke regned ix. yeres.

CXX.wyues he had[2] as chzonicles ſaith
And.xx.ſonnes of his owne generacion
And doughters fayze .xxx.[3] that wer not laith
Whiche doughters ſo foz theyz releuacion
Into Italie with great ſuppoztacion
There to be wedded[4] in Troyan bloodde & maried
Foz ladies theyz with Troyans wer[5] alyed.

¶ In Albany he made and edified[6]
The caſtell of Aclude whiche Dumbzitayne
And ſome autours by chzonycle hath applied
And ſome ſayen on the pigȝt[7] wall certayne

The Caſtell of Dũbzytayne in Scotlãd.

At

[1] which holde. edit. alt. [2] The cronycle is soth. [3] Loth. [4] Wedde. [5] Were all. [6] Fame. [7] Pict. [8] without a.

At the west ende it stode that nowe is playne
And some menne sayen it is Yozke cytee
Thus stande menne nowe in ambyguytee

But sooth it is, he made this Dunbzytayne
A castell stronge that standeth in Albany
Upon a roche of stone, hard to optayne
About the whiche the sea floweth dayly
And resloweth again nocturnally
Twyse in his course and to the sea again
In the whiche no hozsse maye dunge certain.

The castel of Edinburgh.

He made also the mayden castell stronge
That men now calleth the castell of Edenburgh
That on a roche standeth full hye out of thzong
On mounte Agwet wher mē may see out thzough
Full many a towne, castell and bozoughe
In the shire aboute, it is so hye in sight
Who wyll it scale he shall not fynde it light.

The castell of Bamburgh.

He made also vpon mounte Dolozous
A castell strong that this daye Bamburgh hight
That on a roche is sette full hye and noyous
Full hard to gette, by any mannes might
The castell is so stronge and so well dight
If menne therin haue stuke sufficient
Oz it be wonne many one muste bee shent.

This sonnes all he sent to Germanye
To wynne the same lande by labour and conquest
Under the rule of their bzother Analye
Duke Assarake that was the eldest
A wozthy knight pzoued with the best

All

1. Whiche Castell. 2 Agrewat
3 On hight. 4 On. 5. Crag. 6 Theym. 7 Oonlye.
8 Outetake Brute Grene held the eldeste truelye.

All Germanye they gatte at theyr entent
And lordes wer made their as there father ment.

¶Sixty yere whole he stoode and bare ỹ crowne
Reignyng fully in all prosperytee
No enemyes durst again hym vp ne downe
Warre, ne do [in] no wyse again his royaltee
He made a temple in *Ebranke citee
Of Dyane, where an archeflame he sette
To rule temples as that tyme was his dette.

That is yorke.

The.xxii.Chapiter.

¶Howe after the death of Ebranke reygned Brutus grenechilde.

BRutus Grenechilde then by his name full ryght.
Both good & trewe, and easy of all porte
His people all, that came into his syght
With all his might euermore he recomforte
Of all there sorowe that they to hym reporte
And why he hight Grenechilde to his surname
Because he bare on grene, ay wher he became.

Brutus grenechilde reigned.xii yeres.

¶xii.yere he stoode reignyng full well in peace
And dyed so and by his father buryed
In Ebranke afore Dyane no lees
With Britons hole thyther accompanyed
With all honours that might bee multiplyed
In any wyse with all seruyse funerall
As longed to the fate of death ouer all.

The.xxiii.Chapiter.

¶Leyle kyng of Brytayn had Logres & Brytayne, he made at Carlele a temple flamyne, and a flaume to rule it.

That

1 Verrie. 2 It. 3 Fore.

Leyle kyng of Britain reygned. xxv. yeres.

THe Leyle his sone was kyng of Britain so
That Carleele made that tyme in Albany
That now Carleile is called by frend & foo
Whiche in Englysche is to say kynally
The cytie of Leyle, for in brytayn tongue playnly
Cair is to saye a citee in theyr languag
As yet in Wales is there commen vsage.

The cytee of Carleile by who it was buylded.

¶ This ilke kyng Leyle made then in that citee
A temple greate, called a temple flaumyne
In whiche he sette a flaume in propertee
To gouerne it by their lawes dyuyne
Of Jupiter, Saturne and Appolyne
That then wer of all suche in dignitee
After theyr lawes, as nowe our byshoppes bee.

¶ When he had reigned hole xx. yere and fyue
In youth full well, and kepte lawe and peace
But in his age his people beganne to stryue
Failyng his lawes, cyties wold not warre cease
Cyuill warres greately beganne to encreace
And he dyed then settyng no remedy
Buried at Carleyle in his citee royally.

The. xxiiij. Chapiter.

¶ Rudhudebras kyng of Brytayne had Logres and Albany he made Caunterbury, Wyncheſter and Shaftesbury, and three temples and three flaumes of theim.

Rudhudebras kynge reygned xxxix. yeres.

RUdhudebras his sonne was kyng anone
Cair kent he made, ye now is Cauterbury
Cair went also & buylded of lyme & stone
That Wyncheſter is nowe, a towne full mery

Caire

1. With. 2 Same. 3 Of. 4 Had kepte both.
5 He beelde.

Caire Paladoure, that nowe is Shaftesbury
Where an Engel spake sytyng on the wall
Whyle it was in wozkyng ouer all

¶ In whiche citees, he made then temples thzee
And flaumes also as nowe these bishoppes been
To kepe the rites after their mozalytee
Of there goddes, as in there bookes was seen
Of their fals lawes as thei dyd meen
Whyen he had reigned by thyztye yere and nyne
The dulful death made hym to earth enclyne

The.xxb.Chapiter.

¶ Bladud kynge of Bzitayne had Logres and Albany. he made an vniuersitee and a study at Stamfozde & a flaume and his temple at Bathe his citee, whiche vniuersitee dured to the commyng of sayne Augustyne, and the bysshoppe of Roome enterdited it foz heresyes that fell emong the Sazons and the Bzitons together mixte.

Bladud his sõne, sone after hym did succede
And reigned after then full.xx.yere
Cair Bladud so that now is Bath I rede
He made anone ỹ hote bathes there infere
Whyen at Athenes he had studied clere
He bzought with hym.iiii.philosophiers wise
Schole to holde in Bzytayne and exercyse.

Bladud reigned.xx. yeres.

¶ Stãfozde he made ỹ Sãfozde hight this daye
In whiche he made an vniuersitee
His philosophiers as Merlyn doth saye
Had scolers fele of greate habilitee
Studyng euer alwaye in vnitee
In all the seuen liberall science

Stãfozde.

Foz

[a] Angeli. edit. ult. Egle. MS. [2] were.
[3] In theyr beleue though it than were vnclene.
[4] Fully. [5] Bladud which is none] [6] Staumford. [7] at
[8] madyn. [9] It say. [10] In bookes.

For to purchace wysedome and sapience

¶ In cair Bladin he made a temple right
And sette a flampyne theirin to gouerne
A manne decked in fethers, And afterward a* Fetherham he dight
To flye with wynges as he could beest descerne
[Aboue the aire nothyng hym to werne]
He flyed on high to the temple Apolyne
[And ther brake his necke for al his great doctrine

The.xxvi.Chapiter.

¶ Kyng Leyr of Brytaine gaue away with his doughter all his lande and had it all again, and dyed kyng possessid.

Leyr kyng, HIs soone was kyng high sette in royaltee
Of all Brytaynes by name hight kyng Leyr
Who Laiceter made after hym called to bee
Cair Leyr his citee that buylded was full faire
He had doughters three to been his heire
The first of theim was called Gonorelle
The next Ragan and the youngest Cordelle

¶ Emonges theim, as Leyr satte on a daye
He asked theim, howe muche thei hym loued
Gonorell saied more then my self ay
And Ragan saied, more then was after prouid
[For ioye of whiche, the kyng was greately moued]
I loue you more then all this worlde so fayre
[He graũted theim twoo, of thre partes to bee heire]

¶ Cordell [the] youngest, then saied full soberly
Father as muche as ye been in value
So muche I loue you, and shall sikirly

At

1 Bladun. 2 A fedre de flavyn. 3 Couth. 4 Howe
2 5 Ther broke. 6 Ak. 7 Upon. 8 That they. 9 Selman.
10 He graunte theym two departe and so tobe his heire.
11 Of.

At all my might and all my herte full trewe
With that he greuid at hir and chaunged hewe
Senne thou me loues, lesse then thy sisters twain
The leest porcion shalt thou haue of Bryteine

¶With that Maglayn duke of Albanie
Gonorell weddid, and had the lande all out
Euin of Walis, and of Cornwayle ther by
That duke was of those twoo landes stoute
Ragan weddid, to whiche twoo dukes no doubte
Kyng Leyr gaue rule and gouernaunce
Of all Bryteine, for age and none puissaunce

The.xxvii.Chapiter.

¶Howe Leyr made a temple, and a flampne to rule at all Laiceter.

A Temple that in his citee of Kaireleir
A flampne also, as he a bishop were
In name of Janus the folke into repere
And then he wente, Gonorell to requier
Of the greate loue, that she aught hym so dere
That of hir promyse she failed vnkyndly
Wherfore he wente, vnto Ragan in hye

¶She failed also for all hir greate promyse
And to Cordell that weddid was into Fraunce
Long after that he wente in greate distres
To helpe to wynne hym his inheritaunce
She succurred hym, anon with all plesaunce
Bothe with gold & syluer of right greate quãtitee
To gette his lande again in all suertee

¶Aganippe hir lorde, was kyng of Fraunce That

1 That. 2 Hare mons. 3 And all the. 4 Yet.
5 Yere. 6 Him also. 7 So. 8 For. 9 Fast.

That graunt hym menne, and goud[o] sufficient
And sent his wife with hym, with greate puisaũce
With all aray, that to hir wer[e] apent
His heire to been, by their bothes assent
For he was olde, and might not well trauell
In his persone, the warres to[3] preuaile

¶ Kyng Leyr thus wãne his lande, w[i]th all might
And reigned well there after full thre yere, (again
And died so, buried at Kairleir menne sayn
In Janus temple, in whiche tyme for age clere
The kyng of Fraunce, Aganype in fere
Dyed, wherfore Cordell his ayre[4] was soo
To rule Brytaine alone with outen moo

The. xxviii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Cordell quene of Fraunce and doughter of kyng Leyr, reigned after the death of hir father.

Cordell quene of fraunce

Cordell quene[5] of Fraũce, and doughter to kyng Leyr,
Quene of Englãde[6] after hir fathers daye
Fiue yeres reigned, as for hir fathers heyre,
And gouerned well the realme, all menne to paye
His sister soonne, then Morgan of Albanie[8]
And Condage also of Cambre and Cornewaile
In battaill greate, hir tooke and putte in baill[10]

¶ For sorow then, she sleugh hir selfe for tene
And buried was, by side hir father right
In Janus tẽple, whiche kyng Leyr made I wene
At Kairleyr, so that nowe Laicester hight
Thus died this quene, that was of muche might

Hir

[o] good. edit. alt. gold. MS. [2] The Werre. [3] For to.
[4] Heire. [5] The Quene. [6] Britayne. [7] Her sisters sonnes
[8] Albany so feyr. [9] Gundage. [10] ...

Hir soule went to Janus, whome she serued
And to Mynerue, whose loue she had deserued

The. xxix. Chapiter.

¶ Morgan kyng of Albante, that claimyd all Britteyne, but this Isle of Britayne was departed, for this kyng had but Albany.

Morgan.

MOrgan [ỳ] eldest soõne of Dame Gonorell,
Claimed Brytein, as for his heritage
Warred [sone of Condage] as I spell
That kyng was of Cambre, in younge age
Duke of Cornewaile also for his homage
But this [kyng] Morgan was kyng of Albany
Soonne and heire of the eldest soonne barelie

Cõdage was kyng of [Cãbre, ỳ Walis is nowe]
And duke of Cornewaile his patrimonye,
Claymed Logres as soonne and heire to Regawe
The myddill sister for his mothers prorete
As she that aught to haue hir partourye
At Glomorgane, with Morgan did he meete
In bataill sleugh hym, there casten vnder fete

Cõdage is that which we nowe call Walis

The. xxx. Chapiter.

¶ Condage kyng of Logres Cambre, and duke of Cornewatle, gatte all Bryteine againe, and made a temple vñ a flamyne at Bangor,

Condage reigned xxviii. yeres.

COndage was kyng of all greate Britaine
And in his hande, he seased all Albanie
For his eschete, that ought to hym againe
Resorte of right, and returne verelye
He made a Flamyne, a temple also in hye,
Of Mars at Perth, ỳ nowe his .s. Johns towne

In

In Albany that now is Scotlande region

The made another temple of Mynerue
In Cambze, which now is named bangour
The thyzde he made in Cozнwayle foz to serue
Of Mercury, in place where he was boze
Foz his people to serue the goddes there
Wherby he reygned.xxx.yere and thzee
In rest and peace and all tranquilitee.

Ryueall reygned xxii. yeres.

Ryueall his sonne that was pacificall
Crowned was than easye of gouernalle
In whose tyme the greate tempest dyd befall
That dayes thze the flyes did hym assayle
Enuenoned foule vnto the death no faile
And rayned bloodde thesame.iii.dayes also
Greate people dyed, the lande to mykell woo.

Gurgustius reygned xv. yeres.

Gurgustyus his sonne so reygned then
In mykill ioye and wozldly selynesse
Keppng his landes from enemyes as a manne
But dzunken he was echedaye exprsse
Unaccozdynge to a pzince of wozthynesse
Out of dzunkennesse succedeth euery vice
Whiche all men shuld eschewe if thei wer wise.

Scicilius reygned viii. yeres.

Scicilius his sonne then did succede
In whose tyme echeman did other oppzesse
The lawe and peace was exiled so in dede
That ciuill warres and slaughter of men exprsse
Was, in euery parte of the lande without redzesse
And murderers foule thzough all his lande dayly
Without redzes oz any other remedy.

Jago

1 Scotlande by the region. 2 So wher. 3 Ryuelle. 4 So. 5 Men. 6 Enuenomed. 7 Blame. 8 Right greate. 9 Londe. 10 Drunkenesse. 11 Unaccordaunce. 12 To. 13 So eschewe. 14 Murder.

¶Jago succeded, and kyng was of this lande
As ciuill as was the kyng of Scicilus
The same vices, as I vnderstand
Dzels wourse, and moze malicious
Wherfoze our lozde, toke vengeaũce of hym thus
He smote theim bothe, in suche a letargie
That sone thei dyed, foz marrid with freneſie

Kyng Jago reigned x. yere.

¶Kymar his soonne had then the diademe
And kyng then was, with all kyndes of royalte
Kepyng his lande, as well did so hym seme
In lawe and peace, with greate felicite
The common weale and their vtilite
He did pzefer euer in vniuersall
Whiche to a pzince is a vertu pzincipall

Kyng Kimar reigned. xx. & viii. yere.

¶First if he kepe not lawe noz peace certein
His people will nothyng dzed ne doubt
Than stande he moost in parell to bee slaine
Dzels putte doune right by his vnderlout
No better is he bee he neuer so stout
Then is his subiect, oz another wight
That with rebell, vnlawfull kill hym might

¶Gozbonyan that was his soonne and heire
Was kyng, who had that tyme but soonnes twoo
The eldze hight Ferrex that was full faire
The younger hight Pozrex whiche disco3did so
That either of theim was alwaye others foo
Foz that the father sent Ferrex into Fraunce
To kyng Syward, that was of greate puisaunce

Gozbonia reigned. xi. yere.

¶But after long, when he had reigned. xi. yeres

Dyed awaye frome all royalte
Leuyng his lande by his good rule inclere
In sufficiente and all prosperite
Ferrex heryng of his mortalite
With power strong came to this lande againe
And with Porrex faught sore wher he was slaine.

¶ For sorow of whiche ther mother ỹ Indō hight
To Ferrex came with hir maydens all in ire
Slepyng in bed slew hym vpon the night
And smote hym all on peces sette a fyre
Loo this cruell mother sett on fyre
With suche rancor that she could not ceas
Whiche for passyng ire was mercyles.

The.xxxj.Chapiter.

¶ Clotane, Pynner, Ruddan & Stater reigned with barōs warres .xl. yere, howe this Isle of Brytaine was departed in foure parties & stood departed .xl. yere in barōs warres.

Clotane with his fiues reigned .x. yeres.

CLotane that then was duke of Cornwaile
Next heire then was by all succession
But Pinner thē had Logres i gouernaile
And kyng ther of was by wrong ingression
Ruddan had Cambre in his possession
And Stater was then kyng of Albany
Thus was this Isle then lede by tirannye

¶ Thus Brytain was to foure kynges deuided
Echeon of theim warryng on other
The barons also on warre were so prouided
That all the people to wast father and mother
Thei spared none, all wer thei sister or brother
And eche citee on other bothe towne and tour

And

And eche tyrànne was a conquerour

¶ And lordes faine subiectes then to been,
The poore menne that afore ꝑ warre wer desolate
Of all honour and worship that was seen
Through their manhode with people congregate
Lordeship conquered and roose to high astate
Laddes and boyes, the ladeis tho did wedde
Their kynne afore, nether lande ne hous hadde

¶ Fourty wynter thus duryng barons warre
This Isle so stoode in sorowe and in strife
In faute of might, the weaker had the wer
And suffered wrong that was then their life
For who that might, aught gette ẅ spere or knife
He helde it furth, as for his heritage
And waxid a lorde that a fore was a page

¶ Defaute of peace ⁊ lawe, sette theim on hight
To ouer runne lordes, and bee victorious
As worthy was for of their wrongfull might
The lordes were cause that thei were rygurous
That would not so their wronges malicious
At first withstande and punishe trespassoures
But sufferd theim endure in their errooures

The.xxx.Chapiter.

¶ The conseipt of the maker of this booke touchyng barrons warres, in defaute of peace and lawe.

Defaut of lawe, was cause of this mischief
Wronges sustened by mastry ⁊ by might
And peace laied downe that should haue been the chief,

[illegible] Tyrant. [illegible]. [illegible] a. [illegible].
Lord [illegible]. [illegible]. [illegible] [illegible]
[illegible] a Lord [illegible] [illegible]. [illegible].

Through whiche debates folowed all vnright
Wherfore vnto a prince, accordeth right
The peace and lawe euen with equite
Within his realme, to saue his dignite

What is a kyng without lawe and peace
Within his realme sufficiently conserued
The power of his, maye so encrease
By iniury and force, of menne preserued
Till he his kyng, so w strēgth haue ouerthrowed
And sette hym self in royall maieste
As tratour Cade made suche an iuoperte

O ye my lorde of yorke and verate heire
Of Englande, so this matter well impresse
Deipe in your breste, lette it synke softe and feire
And suche defautes, sette you aye to represse
At the begynnyng, lette your high noblenes
The trespassoures to chastes, and to restreine
And lette theim not, lawe, ne peace, disobeine

O ye lordes, that been in high estate
Kepe well the lawe, with peace and gouernaunce
Lest your hurtes you hurte, and depreciate
Whiche been as able with wrongfull ordynaunce
To reigne as ye, and haue also greate puisaunce
For lawe and iustices, in lordes vnpreserued
Causeth many of theim to bee ouerthrowed

The.xxxi.Chapiter.

Dunwallo Moluncyus kyng of Cornewayle conquerid Logers, Cambry, and Albanie as right heire of Brytayne he gaue fraunchises to the temple, plough, merkettes, feyres and hie wayes, so that none should disturbe by lawe nor by wrong

wrong, he made fyre temples in Logers Cambre & Albanie and also many ffläynes to rule theim of estate as bishoppes nowe dooen.

Kyng Clotein died, reigned in Cornewaile
Wherfore his soõne Dũwallo Molũcius
Was kyng of all his realme without faile
A mannly prince in armes full cuorageous
Assembled his hoost, and came full vigorous
Of kyng Pynner in Logres intrusour
And sleugh hym ther as wrongfull gouernour

Dũwallo reigned .xl. yeres.

Kyng Ruddan and kyng Stater
Of Albanie with hoostes strong and wyght
Gaue hym battaill with mighty power
Where Ruddan & Stater wer slain downe right,
With all their hoostes and their greate might
And Dunwallo had the victory
With muche ioye and manhod mightely

Dunwallo so called Moluncius
At Troynouaunt with royall diademe
Of gold crouned moost riche and precious
Upon his hede as did hym well besene
The first he was as chronicles expreme
That in this Isle of Brytein had croune of golde
For all afore, copre and gilt was to beholde

Dũwallo was ꝑ first kyng of Brytein that was croned with golde.

He graunted pardon vnto all trespasoures
Of whiche thei were full glad and ioyus
Amendyng all their faultes and errours
With all their hertes full beneuolous
He eked then by his witte full curious
With his lawe called lawe Moluntyne

1 Clotayne. 2 Can faile. 3 Br. 4 K.
5 Rudda of Cantre. 6 Full wyght. 7 Slo. 8. Sleu
9 Wight. 10 Bore 11 Here. 12 Vnuente 13. Forgeth
14 Was encreate 15 Laws.

Chargyng all menne to theim fully to enclyne

The graunted vnto the temples euery one
And to the plough and all commen wayes
To markettes & faires wher mēne should gonne
Fraunchelies so greate and liberties alwais
That all menne beeyng in theim night or dayes
Should not betaken ne troubled in any wyse
Neither by lawe nor by no maistries

Sire temples he made in Cābze & Logres als
And in the lande also of Albany
Of Flampneg as fele, to serue their goddes fals
This te ple was. s Poules churche in Lōdon A temple also in troynouaunt sothely
Of peace and concorde he made verely
In whiche when there fell any discorde
Emong his lordes, there were thei made accorde

When he had stond so kyng by fourty yere
He dyed awaye, and buryed was full fayze
In his temple then of concord full clere
At troynouaunt with greate repeir
To whome Belyn was eldest soonne and heire
And Brenny next was borne of younger age
Wherfore Belyn had all the whole heritage

The.xxxi. Chapiter.

Belyne kyng of Brytain who gaue to Brenny his brother, Albany that made hym homage for it, and sone after made hym greate warre and was false to hym and after frendes againe in other landes, but not in Englande ne in Scotlande.

Powes. 2 Full. 3 Marketts all.
4 Fraunchise 5 Right, and. 6 in.
7 Flamm 8 all. 9 Hell. 10 for Concorde than.
11 with people. 12 Troynouaunt.

BElyn was kyng and sat in royall trone
Crowned with all maner of royaltee
To Brenny his brother he gaue the lande
Of Albany, for whiche homage & feautee (anone
He made forthwith as to the soueraynte
His man became and kyng of Albany
Confirmed was and made full honorably.

But after sone, his men hym sette to warre
Upon Belyn, that fought in batayll sore
But Brenny fled and his men discomfite wer
For then he went vnto Norwaye therfore
And in that he dwelled thore
Wher he wedded the kynges doughter fayre
That taken wer by sea homewarde in repayre.

By the kyng of Denmarke, ỹ Cuthelake hight
Who by tempest into Logres wer drine
And brought vnto Belyn mykell of might
Wher he bande hym, as chronycles doth brieke
Denmark to holde, of Belyn to haue leife
Home with his wyfe to passe so anone
Whom Belyn graunted home agayn so to gone

Brenne anone great hoste of Belyne brought
Wher in the forest that tyme of Colatre
In batayll strong, kyng Brenny all forfought
Discomfite, fled in Burgoyn for feare
To duke Segwyn, to whom he gan hym beare
So manfully and wisely in all thyng
That he hym wedded vnto his doughter ying.

Sone afterwarde this duke Segwyn dyed

1 Brenne. 2 His 3 His name become the. 4 So.
5 Fene. 6 So fyne for Leife to gete That a made one.
7 Bn. 8 Strekyn Brenne all for. empht.

So Brenny than was duke by his wyfe
That to his brother alwaye full sore anoyed
Came with great hoste to fight with hym ful ryfe
Conwen their mother by her prerogatyfe
Betwyxte theim treated & made there wel accorde
On her blissyng nomore for to discorde.

With wordes peteous, and mothers natureſſe
Shewyng her pappes and wõbe w̃ great beautie
Lo here the wombe that bare you with syckeneſſe
As womanhode would and fempnitee
Lo here the pappes, as was neceſſitee
That fed you ofte in your tendre age
For my loue nowe let be all this outrage.

The.xxxij. Chapter.

¶ Theſe.ij.brethren wanne all ffraunce & all Italie to Rome and beſieged Rome, gatte it and wer Emperours of it.

So made she theim at one and well accorde
And made theim kiſſe & coũcelled theim to
To their lãdes leſt thei after discord (gone
Whiche thei did with hoſtes greate anone
With manly men of armes full greate wonne
All Fraunce, thei wanne Sauoye and Lunberdy
Tuſkayne alſo and all great Italye.

Thei sieged Rome, wherfore their coũcellours
Galbo and Pozcenna came it to reſcue
With hoſtes greate, wher then theſe Emperours
Slewe syr Galbo and Pozcenna the trewe
And Rome thei wanne that alway was vntrewe
Italye throughout obeyed theyr dominacion
Without

1 Brenne. 2 There by. 3 Envied. 4 Of
5 four more 6 Other. 7 Lefte afterwarde they. 8 And ſo.
9 Moone. 10 Sodeynly toke ship both herts ſett in one.
11 Lombardie. 12 Galbo.

Without moze stryfe oz altercacion.

¶ Kynge Belyne there no lenger would abyde
But lefte Brenny alone with all that lande
And home he came with mykill ioye and pryde
And Albyon he sealed in his owne hand
And so kyng and lozde of all Bzytayn lande
A citee fayze he made that kaire blke hight
Whiche mē nowe callē Carlyō by name ful right.

The.xxxiii. Chapter.

¶ He made the hye wayes throughout Britayn, and he founded three archeflampnes, at London one foz Logzes, another at Yozke foz Albany that nowe is Scotlande foz that tyme fro Humbze nozth that was that tyme Scotlande, & the thyzde at Caerlion in Wales, foz all Wales.

IN Bzytayn then he made frō Cozнwel sea
Of lyme and stone throughout all Bzytayn
That men might ryde and go in al suertee
Unto the sea by nozthe Catenes certayne
Whiche vnto all men was bzode and playne
Another he made in bzedth fro saint Dauid towne
Unto the sea flowynge at Southamptone.

¶ Thze archeflampnes he made throughout al Bzytayn
As archebyshoppes now in our lawes been
There temples all to gouerne and domayne
At Troynouaunt on Logres to ouer seen
Her fals goddes to serue and to queme
At Ebzanke another foz Albany
And at Karleō foz Cambze on souetaynly.

¶ A towne he made ful hie that hight Belyngate At

1 Orany. 2 dete. 3 Brenne. 4 Grete. 5 Albany. 6 Sate his.
7 Logzes and Britayne nowe called Englonde.
8 Carlion. Edit. alt. 8 A strete thorowe. 9 Gone and ride.
10 Catnesse. 11 [illegible] cornewaile it liethe full playne.
12 Archeflamines. 13 Lawe so. 14 Nowe Engelonde called in alle cauteres
Iwaen. 15 Bromwiz. 16 [illegible]. 17 called Baldyn

At Troynouaunt his citee moste royall
Thyrtene flamynes of bishoppes high estate
And temples as many, in citees all
So that there were in his tyme ouer all
With other so afore edificate
xxviii. flamynes in temples ordynate.

And at his death, he bad his corps to be brent
Into powder all in a barell of golde
To put, and sete vpon his toure to represent
His body hole, who that seen it wolde
His triumphes all, that enemyes might beholde
Well wrought about, in ymagerie and scripture
Full royally wrought for to refigure.

He reigned had then one and forty yere
When he thus died and to his God had sent
His woofull ghoost out of his corps full clere
Emong the goddes, euermore to bee present
For whiche his people of wepyng coulde not stent
There sorowes great in teares bitter they did stepe
Whiche in streames rane & fro their eye did wepe.

The. xxxiiii. Chapiter.

Gurgwyn reigned xxx. yeres.

Gurgwyn his sone was crowned after him
Of Britayn bare then the diademe
Who made his lawe, vpon lyfe & lymme
His peace also he kepte, as he did deme
As his iudges coulde it full well exprime
Into Denmarke he went for his truage
Whiche kyng Cuthelake graunt him in heritage

The

1 Caumes. 2 Hole. 3 Als. 4 Ther ouer.
5 His corps he bode be brent. 6 Putte be. 7 His toure on.
8 So it seen that. 9 Corps not. 10 Couthe. 11 Dide they. 12 Gurdwyn.
13 Than do. 14 Or peyne of. 15 Ba. 16 Couthe. 17 Had graunte in.

The slewe ỹ kyng, and Danes great multitude
His seruise had, and made the lande to enclyne
To his lordshyppe and to his altitude
There truage paye, forthwarde nomore declyne
And as he came by sea then homewarde fyne
He founde shippes thyrty full of myghty men
Accordyng well as many fayre women

At whose request, of his speciall grace
He gaue to theim the land, that nowe is Irelande
Wher they did wone & make their dwellyng place
There gouernaunte, so then I vnderstande
Was Partheleyn to holde it then hym bande
Of kyng Gurgwyn and all his lynage
Perpetually by feautee and homage.

Howe Irelande was holde of this kyng & his heires.

Neuertheless some chronicles reporte
That Irelamall their capitayn had to name
By whome it was so bigged and supporte
That out of Spayn wer exiled and thither came
And some sayth that Hiberus of great fame
There duke was than and there gouernour
That of Spayne afore had been the floure

This king Gurgwyn his surname was Batr[ẽ]
Came home agayn after the voyage sore
All forbeten, so was he corageus
That from his corps his ghoste departed thore
Reigned that had .xxx. yere afore
In Carlion after his high degre
Was buried so with full greate royaltee.

The.xxxv. Chapiter.

Howe

[1] Especiall. [2] Called now. [3] Parthotoxym. [4] Beldad [5] Seyn. [6] Luberus. [7] Hispayne. [8] That. [9] Core. [10] wryter before. [11] Caierlion.

¶ Howe Guytelyn kyng of Britayne wedded Marcian to wife, that Mercian lawes made by her great wisedome.

Guytelyn reygned. x. yere.

GUytelyn his sonne gan reigne as heyre
Of all Brytayn aboute, vnto the sea
Who wedded was to Marcyan full fayre
That was so wyse in her kempnitee
That lawes made of her syngularytee
That called wer the lawes Marcyane
In Britayne tongue of her owne witte alane.

¶ This Guytelyn was good of his estate
Full iuste he was in all his iudgement
Wise and manly of porte erly and late
Right meke and good euer in his entente
Although of state he was right excellent,
With eche poore man that came to his presence
Through whiche he wared of moste hie sapience.

¶ When he had reigned ful peacebly x. yere
He lefte the realme to his sonne and heire
And to his wife to be his counceller
For his sonne then was. vii. yere olde full fayre
Whom at her death she sent for all repayre
Of Barons all their she delyuered hym
To kepe, in payne of losse life and lymme.

Sicilius reygned. xviii. yeres

¶ Sicilius his sonne reygned. xviii. yere
And crowned was and dyed in iuuentude
That gouerned wel the realme full well and clere
At Karlyon buryed after consuetude
As kynges afore in all simplitude
With all repayre of all his Baronage

As

1 Guithelyne kinge of Britayne. 2 Vnto. 3 fayre. 4 Which. 5 Euermore. 6 Heyre. 7 Possibly full. 8 Vnto. 9 She there. 10 On. 11 Of life. 12 Londe and Lawe full. 13 Caerlyon.

As well accozded vnto his hye parage

¶Kymar his sonne the barons dyd crowne
With honoure suche as fell to his degree
Who twenty yere and one so bare the crowne
And kepte lawe and all tranquilytee
And peteous was euer as a king shulde be
In ryghtwesnesse accozdyng with his lawe
Hauyng pytee and mercy where hym sawe

*Kymar kynge.

¶Danius kyng his bzother dyd succede
Duryng .x. yere in warre and greate payne
Withouten reste he was alwaye in dede
The lawe vnkepte, was cause there of certayne
As myne authour it lyste nothyng to layne
I wyll it nowe wzyte and in this boke expzesse
That men may knowe his foly and lewdenesse

*Danius kynge.

The.xxxvi.Chapiter.

¶Howe Mozulle kyng of Bzitaine was slayne by his owne immoderate Ire, withoute knowledge of eny man with a fysshe bestyall of the sea.

¶Mozuyle his sonne a baste goten and boze
On Tangusta his specyall paramour
Was crowned then after faught full soze
with the kyng of Mozians as a conqueroure
Where he hym kylled and had the felde ỹ houre
And lefte no man on lyue and bzente theim all
His Ire exceded his wytte and gouernall

Mozuyle reygned. xvii.yere.

¶Sone after then came fro the yrishe sea A bea-

1 Doth accorde. 2 Awe. 3 Than. 4 Than ten. 5 In grete
6 Auctour liste it. 7 Wolle. 8 Morwide. 9 Of baaste 10 That after.
11 But.

hostnous kynde. a monstre sume dyd it call

Part. fol. xxxi. b at ✕ is a Note

Here the following Stanza is added in the Manuscript.

That they made her to other doo to wonge
Tyll yere eighteen she with her mayde
Was of nature of life by ways to longe
Wordes vnder hande sente by some worthiede
That she to his grace with in shorte space
Into Scotland for euer shee shulde passe
Of Angus vnder shade to her comforte.

Gozbonya reygned. x. yere.

¶ Gozbonian his eldest sonne of kyue
Was after kyng and helde the maieste
Ryghtwesse and trewe to euery creature
In peace his realme and all tranquillyte
And to his people he helde all equyte
Tyllers of lande with golde he dyd comforte
And soudiours all, with goodes he dyd suppozte

Arthegall

¶ Arthegall his brother signed with Diadene
The kyng was then with all solempnytee

1 Beestiall. 2 It dide. 3 Were. 4 So. 5 So. 6 Rat. 7 Couthe. By
8 And yre ymmoderate. 9 That then were. 10 And full. 11 Right wise.
12 Men or. liue. Diademe. Edit. alt. 13 His reame in peas. 14 Ouerpasse.
15 Foode.

By natyfe byrth nexte brother as men deme
Who good men [hated] of his iniquyte
Oppreſſyng them by greate ſubtylyte
And all falſ folke with ryches dyd auaunce
His Barons all depoſed hym for that chaunce

The.xxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe this kyng was crowned in defaute of his elder brother, and after of pure pytee crowned his brother agayne.

ELydoure then the thirde brother generate
Was kyne create by all ſucceſſyon
And bare the crowne with all royal eſtate
By [lordes wyll and there] conceſſyon
That ruled well withoute oppreſſyon
When he had reigned ſo fully fyue yere
Arthegall he founde that was his brother dere

*Eledoure kyng reygned v. yeres

¶As he was gone on huntyng for [his] diſporte
In the foreſt and woode of collatre
That ſought had frendes and found had no com (forte
But heuy was and of full ſimple chere
Whome Eledoure toke in his armes clere
And brought hym to his cytee of Alclude
That then was of great myght and fortytude.

¶In Albany [then] was [it] the greateſt citee tho
Beſyde the woode that tyme of collatre
Where his Barons and many other moo
At his biddyng were come and preſente there
Whome ſyngulerly he made them for to ſwere
Unto Arthegall his brother to be trewe
So purpoſed he, to crowne hym all newe.

*Arthegall reygned. x. yere.

And

[1] After, omitted in the [illegible] edition

[2] Eledour. edit. alt. [3] By ayll of Londes. [4] Theire. [5] Which. [6] By fyue. [7] Calatre. [8] Calether.

A beestyous tyche, a monstre sume dyd it call
Wherof afrayde was all the comontye
For it deuoured the folke both great and smalle
Wherfore the kyng his yre myght not apall
Ne cesse, afore he foughten with it had
All sodaynly alone as a man ryght mad

Where both were dead or any man it knewe
His yre full fell was and vntemperate
His discrecyon out of his brayne flewe
But he coulde not by reason ordynate
Proroge his wyll ne yre inordynate
By other meanes with people multytude
It to haue slayne by wytte and fortytude.

He reigned had that tyme but seuentene yere
When he thus dyed and fondly dyd expire
Unsemingly of any prynce to heare
That he with suche a monstre shoulde desyre
To fyghte alone so preuely of yre
But sonnes he had full fayre then fyue
Of manly men also substantyfe.

Gorbonya reygned .x. yere.

Gorbonian his eldest sonne of fyue
Was after kyng and helde the maieste
Ryghtwesse and trewe to euery creature
In peace his realme and all tranquillyte
And to his people he helde all equyte
Tyllers of lande with golde he dyd comforte
And soudiours all, with goodes he dyd suppoyte

Arthegall

Arthegall his brother signed with Diadene
The kyng was then with all solempnytee

1 Beestiish. 2 It dide. 3 Were. 4 So. 5 So. 6 That. 7 Couthe. 8 And yre ymmoderate. 9 That then were. 10 And full. 11 Right wise. 12 Men or. Cita. 13 His reame in peas. 14 Ouer payde. Diademe. Edit. alt. 15 Foole.

By

By natyfe byzth nexte bzother as men deme
Who good men [hated] of his iniquyte
Oppzeſſyng them by greate ſubtylyte
And all fals folke with ryches dyd auaunce
His Barons all depoſed hym foz that chaunce

The.xxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe this kyng was crowned in defaute of his elder bzother, and after of pure pytee crowned his bzother agayne.

ELydoure[a] then the thirde bzother generate
Was kyng create by all ſucceſſyon
And bare the crowne with all royal eſtate
By [lozdes wyll] and there[3] conceſſyon
That ruled well withoute oppzeſſyon
When he had reigned ſo fully fyue[4] yere
Arthegall he founde that was his bzother dere

*Eledoure kyng reygned v. yeres

¶As he was gone on huntyng foz [his] diſpozte
In the fozeſt and woode of collatre[7]
That ſought had frendes and found had no com (fozte
But heuy was and of full ſimple chere
Whome Eledoure toke in his armes clere
And bzought hym to his cytee of Alclude
That then was of great myght and foztytude.

¶In Albany [then] was [it] the greateſt citee tho
Beſyde the woode that tyme of collatre[8]
Where his Barons and many other moo
At his biddyng were come and pzeſente there
Whome ſyngulerly he made them foz to ſwere
Unto Arthegall his bzother to be trewe
So purpoſed he, to crowne hym all newe.

*Arthegall reygned. x. yere.

And

[a] After, omitted in the xxxvi edition.

[3] By wyll of Lordes. [4] Theire. [5] Which. [6] By fyue. [7] Calatre. [8] Calether.

And then anon in haste so forth they rode
To Ebzanke and helde then his parlyament
Where of good loue and tender brotherhod
The crowne he set with very trewe entente
On Arthegalles hede & thought it was wel spent
By hole decree and iudgement of his mouth
And made hym kyng agayne by north and south

Arthegall kyng crowned so all newe agayne
Full well his lordes after dyd loue all perlees
Forsoke all vyces and tooke to vertue playne
And set his lande and people in all kyne and ease
Reigning .r. yere, he fell in greate disease
In maladye of dyuerse great syckenesse
Dead and buried at Carleyle as I gesse.

The .xxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Eledoure was ỹ seconde tyme crowned king of Bzitayne for his good rule.

Eledoure reigned xiii yere

The Bziteines all crowned Eledoure
That reygned after .xiii. yere in dignytee
So well theim payde to haue hym gouernoure
For his goodnesse and his benignyte
And for he was so full of all pytee
That in all thynge mercy he dyd preserue
Well better euer then men coulde it deserue.

Jugen and Peredoure reigned .vii. yere togyther.

Jugen with force and eke syr Peredoure
His brethren two on hym rose traytorously
Deposed hym oute of his hye honoure
And prisoned hym full sore and wrongfully
All in the towre of Troynouaunt for thy
And parted the realme betwixte theim two
Together reignyng .vii. yere and no mo

And

1 Ebranke. 2 There. 3 Degre. 4 So kynge now crowned. 5 Dide after love & pleasr. 6 Maner. 7 And. 8 Diuers. 9 Diede. 10 Kinge Eledoure 11 Couth. 12 Vigen. 13 Rose on hym. 14 That they dide part the realme betwene. 15 By iewen.

¶Paredour then had all the lande full clere
And crouned was, reignyng after worthely
His lawe and peace, keppng full well foure yere
And dyed then, and to his goddes full hye
He passed so, and buryed full royally
After their rites and their olde vsage
With greate honour by all the baronage.

Paradour reigned by hym self viii. yeres

The.xxxix.Chapiter.

¶ Eledour kyng of Brytein thrise crouned, for his good rule and good condicions.

ELedour was kyng all newe made againe
Thrise crouned ẏ kepte his olde cõdicion
Of whome the lordes & cõmons wer full (faine
And sory for his wrongfull deposicion
He reigned so fro losse and all perdicion
Reignyng after full peacebly tenne yere
Buried full faire, at Alclude his citee clere,

Eledour reigned. x. yeres.

¶Gorbonian that was Gorbonian his soonne
The croune after his vncle in all thynges
That ruled well fro tyme that he begonne
Full well beloued with olde and also with young
He reigned tenne yere of Brytein kyng
And dyed then with worshyp whole enterred
As to suche a prince of right should bee required

Gorbonã kyng of Brytaine.

¶Morgan ẏ was the soonne of kyng Arthegall,
Was crowned then and held the royalte
Full fourten yere he ruled the realme ouer all
The lawe and peace with all tranquillite
He kepte full well in all prosperite
For whiche he was full greately magnified

Morgan reigned. xiiii. yere

In

1 Brenmune. 2 Full. 3 Be. 4 The. 5 Eldoure.
6 All newe made kyng. 7 Decepcion. 8 Gorbonianus 9 Als.
10 Hole ten. 11 Arthegalle. 12 With all equite.

In all his realme with people landefyed[1]

Emnan kyng reigned.vii. yere.

[2]Emnan his brother so was crouned kyng
Seuen yere reigned[3] in all kynd of[4] tiranny
For whiche he was deposed as an vnderlyng
When he had reigned seuen yere fully[5]
That to god and manne was euer contrarie[6]
Till all his lordes and commons euerione
Whiche[7] wer full glad awaye[8] that he was gonne.

Kyng Juall reigned, xx. yere.

Juall the soonne of kyng Ingen did reigne
Louyng alwaye to kepe all rightwesnese
Hatyng all vices, and of good menne was faine
All vicious menne, he helde in sore distres
Helpyng poore menne fallyng in feblenes
When he had reigned full well by twenty yere
He dyed awaye as saieth the chronicler

Kyng Kymo reigned xvi. yere.

Kymo the soonne that of kyng Paradour[9]
Crouned was then, louyng all gentilnes
All vertue euer he louid and all honour
And in his tyme was plenty and larges
Of his people full well beloud[10] I gese
And dyed so[11] in all felicite on hye
Sixten yere whole reigned when he ganne dye

Kyng Gerēnes reigned, xx. yere.

Gerennes[12] then the soonne of Eledour
To reigne beganne and ruled well this daye
And sone the deathe hym toke and dyd deuour
If I the treuth of hym shall saye
That twenty yere he reigned all menne[15] to paye
The lawe and peace full well aye[16] conserued
Kyng Catellus Of his commons the loue aye deserued,[17]

Catellus

1 Lawdefyed.

2 Emman. edit. alt. Enman. MS. 3 Reignyng. 4 Maner. 5 Ere yere full contrarye. 6 Unto the Lawe of the Britayne countre. 7 Whiche. 8 Awaye. edit. alt. 9 Rivall. 10 Fallen. 11 Verridoure. 12 Whiche followeth Lawe guydad by Sadnesse. 13 Right so. 14 Reigned, omitted in the Common Edition. 15 Gerennes. 16 His. 17 To his. 18 Him. 19 Alway well. 20 He deserved.

Catellus his soonne then ganne succede — reigned, x. yere.
Kepyng the lawe and peace as he had hight
Oppressours all, that poore menne did ouer lede
He hanged euer on trees full hie to sight
That ensample of theim euery manne take might
Tenne yere reigned full of felicite
And dyed so vnder his vnsure deite

Coile his soonne after hym succede — Kyng Coile reigned, xx yere.
And crouned was, reignyng so twenty yere
In lawe and peace as to his worthihede
Accordyng was for lawe and peace cõserued clere
As euery manne maye se bothe farre and nere
The floures been of royall dignyte
In whiche he reigned twenty yere ere he did dye

Porrex his soonne was crouned in his astate — Kyng Porrex,
Elye of porte to speake with euery wight
Their comonnyng to hym was delicate
Who reson spake he fauoured as was right
Who viceous spake or did in his sight
He chasticed theim after the cause required
Reignyng fiue yere, of no lande had he fered

Cheryn his soonne norished in dronkenness — Kyng Cheryn.
Customably, to whiche followed all kynde of vyce
It exiled witte out of his brayn doubteles
And reason after that, made hym full vnwyse
He was of all his gouernaunce so nyce
And reigned so in Brytein but one yere
When he dyed, laied, was on the bere

This soonne Fulgen reigned but one yere — Fulgen,

1 So his. 2 And drewa Justice he kept with all his myght.
3 Reignyng. 4 Did succede. 5 Dignite without an yere. The M.S. also here adds this line, And grete riches and love also he drawe vnto him. &c.
7 To 8 Vicously. 9 Case. 10 Was. 11 Where to. 12 Manner. 13 And Cacia.

Fulgēce, Eldred & Androge

Eldred his brother and Androge hight the thirde
Kynges after hym echeone were synguler
A yere reignyng whose good rules are hid
For why, vnto no manne was it kyde
Thei dyed sone, for long that might not dure
In suche drōkennes, full weake was their nature

Uryan.

Uryan the soonne of kyng Androge
Three yere reigned, that was full lecherous
A mayden young, wher he did ride or goo
He had euery daye, he was so vicyous
But yet he was gentill and bounteous
All if he had maydens in suche charte
Wedowes and wikes, he had in greate plentie

Elynde.

Elynde was kyng, & fiue yere bare the croune,
Full well ruled the realme in all kynd of thyng
In Astronompye, full redy aye and bowne

Dedancius.

Dedancius also reigned fiue yere full young
Who the realme ruled in all maner thyng
Full peseably frome that Elynde was dedde,

Detonꝰ. Gurgūcius.

Bothe twoo dyed in their flowreshed youthede

Meryan Bledudo Cappe. Owen & Sicilins all these reigned eche of theim. ii. yeres.

Detonus then was kyng reignyng twoo yere,
Gurguncius so twoo yere bare also the croune
And Meryan twoo yere by wytyng clere
Bledudo then full ready bowne
Twoo yere also bare the croune
Cappe and Owen and then Sicilyus
Eche after other by twoo yere reigned thus

Bledud. Gabred. cantor.

Bledud Gabred reigned, expert in song
And in all musike instrumentes

Farre

*Grabred. edit. alt.

Farre passyng was all other and had been long
Suche was his cunnyng and his sentementes
That for a god in all folkes ententes
In myrth and ioye and maner of melodye
Thei honoured hym tenne yere onely

Archtuall.
Eldoll.
Redon
Redrike,
Samuel
Pirry.
Peneysell
& Capre.
eche of
these reig
ned two
yeres.

¶Archtuall, then his brother reigned so
And Eldoll after his soonne, succeded anone
And Redon then his soonne, came nexte hym thoo
Redrike his soonne, when his father was gonne
Croune and septer receiued, hath anone
Samuell, Pirre, Peneysell and Capre
Seuerally echeone reigned twoo yere

The.xl.Chapiter.

¶Elynguellus kyng of Brytein had greate will to here all mēne whē thei came to hym, whiche is a vertue. ffor greate cunnyng maketh a manne wyse and to knowe muche, and for mischefes to fynde remedies, as my lorde Umfrewill commended neuer a manne, that putteth a mischief and canne fynde no remedie therfore.

Elynguellus whiche was Capre his sōne
Bothe wyse and sadde, and in his realme
helde right,
He herd all menne what counsaill that thei conne
For oftymes a symple manne to sight
Wore wysedome hath in his insight
And better reason canne in his braynes fynde
Then canne a lorde, though he maye beres bynde,

¶Who in his lande did wrong or any vnright,
He prisoned hym in sore and greate distresse
He gaue his menne ỹ souldyours were full wight
Lyuelode to liue vpon, frome all destres

Sicke folke and pooze caste into febleneſſe
He viſited aye, and reigned had ſeuen yere
When that he dyed and left his realme full clere

Howe Hely the ſoonne of Elyngwellus made the Iſle of Hely.

THely his ſoonne, in all thyng good and wiſe
Succeded then, the Iſle of Hely made
His palais gaye that might right well ſuffice
He buylded ther that was bothe long and bzade
Wherin he dwelled muche, and mooſt abaide
The lawe and peace he kepte and conſerued
Which himbpheld that he was neuer ouer terued

Kyng Hely reigned .xl. yere.

THzee ſoonnes he gatte, Lud and Caſſibalain
The third was called that tyme ſir Nennynus
When he had reigned ſixty yere in certaine
The death cruell to menne that is aye noyeous
In his commyng that is alwaye douteous
Hym fleugh a waye, who was at Hely buryed
Afoze his god that ther was edified

The.xli.Chapiter.

LLud kyng of Bzytain buylded frome London ſtone to Lud gate & called that parte Luds toune, & after by proceſſe, was called London by turnyng of tongues.

Kyng Lud reigned .xl. yere.

HIs ſoonne and heire was Lud of muche
Thē crouned by all the baronage (might
His citees all eke his heritage, caſtelles
He did repeire that were his heritage (wight
And where was wozthy his ſeruelle and homage
To hym was doone, in landes al aboute
Was none withſtode ſo was he dzed and doubte

With walles faire, and towzes freſhe about

1 Lud was of mighyll 2 wrought. 3 And eke his. 4 Due.

His

His citee great of Troynouaunt full fayze
Full well he made and batelled throughout
And palays fayze, for royalles to appeare
Amendyng other defectyfe and vnfayze
From London stone to his * palays royall
That nowe Ludgate is knowen ouer all.

This palays is nowe the bishop of Londōs palays beside Boulcs.

¶ Betwene Londonstone & Ludgate forth right
That called was then for his name Ludstone
He made men buyld, that London so then hight
His Palays fayze then made he there anone
With toures high, bothe of lyme and stone
Besyde Ludgate, and his temple nere thereby
His God to serue and hym to glorifye.

¶ When he had reigned by fourty yere all out
He died so, and in his temple fayze
Entoumbed was, with stories all about
Androgeus was then his sonne and heyze
Passyng of sight and July fayze
Tenancius his yonger sonne of age
Which wer to young to rule the heritage.

¶ Cassibalayn there vncle then was kyng
And founde his neuewes full honestly and well
And nourtred theim while thei wer chylder ying
And at there age when they could reason fele
He theim auaunced right worshipfully and well
Androge he made and created duke of Kent
Of Troynouaunt also by whole entent.

Cassibalayn reigned. xxxvi. yere.

The.xlii.Chapiter.

Howe

1 Batailed wele. 2 Riallee and repaire. 3 Full wide. 4 And town than so. 5 For his astate thane to be kept one. 6 At goodely childe full manerly and feir. 7 Remanencio. 8 Their. 9 Governed. 10 whiles. 11 Childerne. 12 youth. 13 Vocate 14 His hee.

¶ How Julius Caesar came to Bzitayn, that nowe is Englande, and arryued in Thamis, and fled to ffraunce for newe succour.

HE made also then Tenancius
Duke of Cornwail ỹ time of mikel might
In whiche tyme so came Caesar Julius
Into the lande of Fraunce that nowe so hight
And on a daye walkyng vp and downe full right
On the sea syde, wher he this lande did see
Delyzyng soze of it the soueraynte.

This naupe greate with many soudyoures
To sayle anone into this Bzitayn made
In Thamis aroue, wher he had ful sharpe shozes
And countred was with Bzytons that abade
With Cassibalayn the kyng of Bzytons bzade
Wher after battayll smytten and forfought
Julius fled and then pzeuayled nought.

To Fraunce agayn and there he did sojozne
The Frenche wer fayn of his discomfiture
And trowed to make hym so fro theim retozne
But the Bzitons full besely did there cure
In this batell as came them of nature
The dukes of kent and eke of Cornewayle
And Nempnus theyz Eme did moste pzeuayle.

Crudan the kyng that tyme of Albany
Gnechet the kyng also of Uenedose
That northwales nowe is called specially
And kyng Bzetayle that was full vertuous
A manne in armes passyngly curious
Of Denycye, southwales that nowe hight

He

He asked helpe of Fraunce that kayled hym right.

Then sent he to all landes there about
To poore menne all, he gaue full great ryches
And eryled men of warre that wer full stoute
He gaue liuelode and felons all douteles
He delyuered quyte, fre of all distres
All outlawed menne, he graunted full perdon
The bondemen also of euery region.

The.xliii.Chapiter.

Howe, whan Julius Caesar failed power, he gatte newe power by wily polycy, to haue his purpose, and came again to Bytayn and fled the seconde tyme.

In whiche meane tyme, whē he was redy so
With his nauy came to bytayn again
Into Thamis where Cassibalayn tho
Great pyles of tree and yron sette hym again
His shippes to perysh and so he did certain
Throughe whiche, greate parte of hys nauy was
And some other in batayl wer cōfoūded (drowned

Then fled he eft with shippes that he had
Into the lande of Fraunce wher he was ere
Hym purposyng to Rome, full wo by stad
Of his rebuke with sorowe and with care,
But then the kyng full glad of his euell fare
A feaste royall at Troynouaunt he made
Where great discorde, with his neuewes he had

The.xliiii.Chapiter.

Howe Julius Caesar came agayne to Britayne the thyrde tyme & accorded with the kyng and had truage of hym.

Purposed

1 Axed. 2 As. 3 To Britayne come. 4 In Tenmyse.
5 Pese. 6 Other som. 7 Ere. 8 Nedyre. 9 In.

Purposed fully on theim to bee auenged
For whiche thei sent anone to Julius (ged
And prayed to come his right ỳ he had chalé
To clayme it hole thei wrote hym right thus
Thei shoulde hym helpe with people plenteous
Through whose councell, ful gladly then he came
At Douer arryued with myckell ioye and game.

Where then the kyng Cassybalayn he met
And fought full sore, where that Androgeus
Out of a woode on Cassibalayn set
And to a mounte hym droaue, where that Julius
And he hym sieged again full coragious
He fought full sore with all manly defence
All nyght afore, by myghty resistence.

But some for drede of kampshement
He treated with the duke Androgeus
To paye his tribute to Roome in good entent
And to amende all thynges greuous
With all his might and hertes beneuolence
Androgeus to all this did assente
And made Julius to this fully consent.

This truage was .iii. M. li. well payde
Eche yere to Rome of siluer good and fyne
These princes thus accorded wer and daied
In peace and reste and Julius went fro heyne
To warre vpon Pompey, ỳ nought wold enclyne
To Romys Senate after that Julius
Hym had conquered by warre full fortuous.

With whome then went the duke Androgeus
And

1 Pray. Praise hym. 2 Vnto hym 3 Sore. 4 from decessed.
5 Assaute he. 6 Resistence. 7 After by watche and greate defence.
8 Yer some. 9 Herte benevolow. 10 Some.
11 Afore. 12 Werre fortunous. Fortunous. edit. alt.

And in Bzitayne no lenger wolde abyde
He lefte his bzother duke Tennancius
In Bzitayne with Cassybalyn that tyde
And so to Rome with Julius dyd ryde
But Neminus bzother of Cassybalayne
Full manly fought on Julius tymes tweyne.

¶ With strokes soze, ayther on other bette
But at the laste this pzynce syz Julius
Crosea moz, his swerde in shelde sette
Of the manly wozthy sir Neminus
Whiche of manly foze and myght bigozous
The swearde he bzought away oute of the felde
As Julius it set faste in his shelde.

¶ Thzough which stroke, sir Neminus then died
And buried was at the nozth gate certayne
Of London then, where nowe is Scotlande edifi
London cytee royall of all Bzitayne (ed
Thus this wozthy knyght in his graue bekayne
Crosea moz, his swearde layde by his syde
Whiche he bzought from Julius that tyde.

¶ After whiche accozded this kyng Cassybalayn
Reigned fully in Bzitayne then. vii. yere
Payeng trybute to Rome alwaye certayne
Rulyng his lande in lawe and peace full clere
And reygued had in all, full thyztye yere
And foure aboue vnto his god so yede
Buryed at Ebzanke w all knygghtly wozthihede.

The.xlv.Chapiter.

Ennan=

Tenancius reygned. xvii. yere.

TEmancius his neuewe then full faire
Kyng Luds sonne ỹ duke was of Cornewaile
With Diademe was crowned as (wayle
Of all Britayne had the gouernaille (ryght heire
Who kepte the lande in his tyme by good gouer-
Full.xvii.yere to his god then wente (naille
Buryed full fayre as to suche a prynce appente.

Kymbelyne.

CKymbalyne so was his sonne and heyre
Norysshed at Rome instructe with cheualre
That knyght was made with honour great & fayer
By Octauyan reigning then enterly (er
Emperour then of Romes great monerchy
In whose tyme was both peace and all concorde
Through all ỹ worlde, and borne was chryst oure (lorde

This Kinbelyne reigned fully.x. yere
And ruled this lande in lawe and peace full well
And dyed then as sayth the chronycler
That ilke same yere that chryste was borne w̃ zele
Of his mother a mayden fayre and wele
For christen folke by grace then to redeme
From payne of hell to blysse as clerkes deme

CFrom tyme ỹ worlde firste was begoonne and made
Unto the tyme of Chrystes natiuytee (made
Accompted ere through christendom full brade
Fyue.M.yere.ix.score and.xix.bee
Or goddes sonne cam man for to bee
As Crosius the dyscyple of Austyne
In this writyng so as he coulde determyne.

Guyder

CGuyder his sonne and heyre full corageous That

1 Son of Lunge Lud. 2 At the. 3 Courage. 4 in. 5 Borne the myght. 6 Bore with vele. 7 In Bethleem of Marie the maiden so clere.
8 Them. 9 The payne. 10 Were. rait. nit. been. Ms.
10 In bokes wretyn of olde antiquyte. 11 Couth it. 12 Gwider.

That crowned was and kyng of excellence
The trybute which the Romayns had of bs
Denied then and made greate relystens
With great trouble and manly violence
Unto the tyme that he had reygned clere
In Bzetayne by.iiii.and fourty yere.

reigned. xl iiii. yere.

¶ In whiche yere then the Emperour Claudius
At Caire peers that nowe pozchestre hight
Arrpued a lande with people full cozageous
He closed the gates afoze with mykyll myght
And the cytee assauted both daye and nyght
The cytezens to kampshe and conquer
His name in armes and honour to proffer.

¶ But king Guider fought there w̄ themperour
And slewe men on euery syde aboute
Rescowyd the towne as very pzotectour
And made hym to fle, were he neuer so stoute
But one Hamon rode faste into the route
Hauyng on him the Bzitains sygne of warre
Who in the pzees slewe the kyng Guyder.

The.xlvi.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Aruiragus kynge of Bzitayne reygned.xliiii.yere. And howe in his tyme Cladeus Emperour had truage of this lande, and maryed his doughter to the kynge.

ARuiragus ỹ sawe his bzother slayne
His bzothers armis vpon hym selfe he cast
And king was then of all ỹ great Bzitain
Upon Hamon pursued tyll at the laste
He dzoue hym into the hauen full faste
And dzowned him there, after hight Hamō towne

Aruiragus reigned. xl. iiii. yere.

That

1 Raymed. 2 He denied. 3 His Britons and theire mayn aideed.
x Caier Peris. 4 Drofe to. 5 Assawte that town. 6 With fute.
7 It seged both ba 8 To conquer. 9 Prefere. 10 Guider.
11 His men. 12 Caused. 13 Guidarre. 14 To. 15 After kyng.

That men nowe call shorte speche Southhāpton

To winchester kyng Aruiragus rode
Whether Claudi⁹ came w̄ Romans ful of pryde
Where Aruiragus with Britayns him abode
But as they should haue fought in that tyde
By both theyr councelles they were drawē on side
Claudius doughter to wed they were accorde
And truage to paye eche yere withoute discorde.

Then Claudius sente for daine Gennyse
His doughter fayre full womanly to see
She came in haste as then it myght suffyse
To come oute frome so farre lande and countre
And in a mede with floures of greate beaute
Wedded they were, where Claudius then made
A cytee fayre Cayre glowe to name it had

*Wherof Glouceſter was ſo named.

Of his name it was so denominate
Nowe Glouceſter standynge on seuerne syde
The maryage after Christe was incarnate
Was in the yere fourtye and syxe that tyde
So in Britayne two yere he dyd abyde
Dycades ylles in the meane tyme he conquered
In whiche he enkeffid the kyng & hym preferred.

And home to Rome he passed so agayne
But after agayne, the kyng truage denyed
And none wolde paye, wherefore Vaspasyan
Hyther was sent with Romains fortifyed
At Ruteporte that nowe Sandwiche is notifyed
The kyng hym met and put hym frome the lande
To Totenesse went and notwithstandyng sande.

1 Nowe men call for. 2 foughten.

So

3 Counsailers. 4 The doughter of Claudius.
5 of. 6 Fresh 7 Clau. 8 The. 9 This. 10 Festfied. 11 Este. 12 Fro his
13 No withstondyng.

So went he forth to Exceter his waye
Caire Penelgorte then hight and it assaide
Where then the kyng hym met the seuentene day
With hoste full stronge, but then the king preuay
But Gennyse the quene greatly auayled (led
By her treaty made them full well accorde
That with Rome he dyd no more discorde.

The. xlvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Joseph Aramathie came vnto Britayne with Uaspasyan, and chrystened a parte of this lande.

Waspasyan wintered then in Britayne
At the prayer of quene Gennyse
And had truage then fully payde agayne
To Uaspasyan, as before was the gyse
With whome Joseph full holy and full wyse
Of Aramathie with his felowes fourtene
Into this lande then came and gaue contene.

For whome so then Uaspasyan praid the kyng
The quene also to hym to be good lorde Uaspasian
And good ladie, which they graunted in all thing
Declaring then, and fully dyd recorde
This worthy Uaspasyan by his owne worde
Howe he hym tooke oute of Cayphas prysone
Preserued by god and not by mannes reasone.

For fourty yere and two he in prisone laye
Fro Christes death to tyme that he hym fande
Without meate or drynke by any manet waye

But

1 Spralad. 2 Seventh 3 Tholy tysyons full vertuous and herfite,
Into this londe Ro with grete delite.
4 Graunte. 5 By no. 6 Poisoned.
7 Fro death of Criste to tyme he hade hym founde.

fol. xl 5. add to Ms Note 14. ⊙24

"Agrestes kinge of Walis he dide converte,
And feithe crete but soone that kynge can made
He drowned that rode and falsly was perverte
Into the se he sente it as hym badde
The devels whome afore he served hadde
For the which in hym gode loke full high ven
That in an yron he brent for that offence."

Agrestes.

Agrestes reygned by. iiii. and lyxty yere
When he was dead & in caire glawe was buryed
In a temple entoumbed fayze and clere
Of his goddes that there were deikyed
Aboute whyche tyme so oure ladye Mary dyed
Or elles assumpte in body and soule on lyue
Unto the blysse after her ioyes fyue.

But Vaspasyan with his hoste full royall
And Joseph also came into Bzitayne
The yere of Chzyste was then accompte in all
Seuenty and syxe the sooth foz to sayne

When

1 Comforte. 2 Ama of Criste bloode he founde in Joseph honde. 3 He tomars. 4 He. 5 Lewdenesse 6 And Than 7 He in gaue. 8 Insew tayne 9 Where. 10 Their conuersion 11 Vere Payns. 12 Cristen. 13 Of his. 14 At ceir Tyrum a Crucifixe he made Full like to Criste that after ther abade. ⊙26 15. Thise 16 At Caire Clau 17 He tomars 18 Ms 30.

laspasiã to Roome retourned home again
ng enduyd Joseph in meutryne

The.xlviij.Chapiter.

ve Joseph conuerted this kyng Arutragus & gaue hym
lde of ỹ armes that wee call sainct George his armes
he armes he bare euer after, & thus became that armes
e ỹ kynges armes of this lãde, lõg afore sainct George
gotten or borne, and as Maryan the profounde chro-
r sateth, he bare of siluer in token of clennes, a crosse of
es signification of the bloodde that Chriſte bleedde on
sse, and for it muſte nedes of reaſon by called a crosse.

Joseph conuerted this kyng Arutragus

[illegible] xli. add to Mr. Rote ✳

[illegible] made That ingle in [illegible]
[illegible] Upon the crosse at his expiracion
[illegible] Joseph exhortacion
[illegible] And in his banere and cote-armour gaue.

The.xlix.Chapiter.

¶ Marius the kyng of Brytain reigned sixty yere and three, howe the peightes inhabited firſte in Albany ỹ is Scotlãde nowe in theſe dayes, in Catenes & thei wer the North peightes, and a parte of theim inhabited ſone after betwyxt the Scottes ſea and tweid that were called South peightes.

To whome was borne a sunne [illegible] Marius
The 1 yere he rowed peaseably
That he in was called after syne.
Converta.
ba. Edit. alt.

8 Nennius. edit. alt. Newinus. Mſ.
And shewed hym a figure of crosses syne. 4. Ab. 4 x After this Senga
Museum Mſ. has the following [illegible] 5 The. 6 In. 7 Newyns.

But only was conforted by goddes sonde
And howe he hym brought oute of Jerusalē lond
All this he tolde, the king and eke the quene
And prayde theim his supporters to been.

After the wynter nexte in somer tyed
Uaspasyan to Rome then went agayne
Joseph abode and fully landifyed
The lawe of Chriſte, to whiche he was full fayne
And the kyng gaue the sothe to sayne
Twelue hydes of lande ȳ then Newtryn hight
Whiche Glastenbury is nowe named full right

Unto the blysse after her ioyes tyue.

But Uaspasyan with his hoste full royall
And Joseph also came into Britayne
The yere of Chryste was then accompte in all
Seuenty and syxe the sooth for to sayne

When

1 Comforte. 2 Ana of Criste blode he founde in Joseph howse.
3 The tomers. 4 He. 5 Lowe place 6 And than 7 Him gaue.
8 Insewtryne 9 Where. 10 Their cauciō 11 were Paynīs.
12 Cristes. 13 Of his. 14 At Caier Lyoun a Crucifixe he made.
Full like to Criste that after ther abade.
15. This. 16 At Caier Clau
17 Sewthon 18 Als 19.

Whē Valpasiā to Roome retourned home again
The kyng enduyd Joseph in meutryne

The.xlviij.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Joseph conuerted this kyng Aruiragus & gaue hym a shelde of ꝑ armes that wee call sainct George his armes whiche armes he bare euer after, & thus became that armes to bee ꝑ kynges armes of this lāde, lōg afore sainct George was gotten or borne, and as Marian the profounde chronicler sateth, he bare of siluer in token of clennes, a crosse of goules signification of the bloodde that Christe bleedde on ꝑ crosse, and for it muste nedes of reason by called a crosse.

Joseph conuerted this kyng Aruigarus
By his prechyng to knowe ꝑ lawe deuine
And baptized hym as writē hath Nenin⁹
The chronicler in Bretain tongue full kyne
And to Christe lawe, made hym enclyne
And gaue hym then a shelde of siluer white
A crosse endlong and ouer twhart full perfect

These armes were vsed through all Brytain
For a cōmon signe eche māne to knowe his naciō
Frome enemies whiche nowe we call certain
Sainct Georges armes by Nenyus enformaciō
And thus this armes, by Josephes creacion
Full long afore sainct George was generate
Were worshipt heir of mykell elder date

The.xlix.Chapiter.

¶ Marius the kyng of Brytain reigned sixty yere and three, howe the peightes inhabited firste in Albany ꝑ is Scotlāde nowe in these dayes, in Catenes & thei wer the North peightes, and a parte of theim inhabited sone after bytwyxt the Scottes sea and tweid that were called South peightes.

Marius

---

1. To whome were geuyn a nombre lawe and [illegible]
The kynge crowned Seuenthyne
That he [illegible] was called after kyng.
2. Conuerte.
3. be. edit. act.

9 Nenius. edit. act. Newinus. MS.
And shewed hym a figure of Christes passyon. - 4. b. - 4* After this stanza Museum MS. has the following [illegible] 5 The. 6 In. 7 Newyno.

MAryus his soonne was then introuizate
And sette on high in trone of maiestie
With croune of golde full royally coro-
As worthy was vnto his royalte (nats
Who nourished was at Rome in his iuuente
With his mothers kynne the beest of the empire
With Claudius also, that was his oune graūdsir

¶ In whose tyme a peight hight Rodrike
With power greate by sea came fro Sythy
As proude and byme as lyon marmerike
Arreued so vp in Albanye
Distroiyng whole the lande all sodainly
With whome ỹ kyng thē faught in greate battell
And sleugh hym with oute any faile

¶ Wher then in signe of his high victorye
He sette there vp a stone in remembraunce
Of his triumph, of his aduersatie
Titled on it his fame for to auaunce
Howe the peightes, there brought to vttraunce
Wher the redde crosse is nowe in Westmerlande
In Stanys more, as I canne vnderstande

¶ Then to ỹ peightes left a liue, he gaue catenese
To dwell vpon and haue in heritage
Whiche weddid wher, with Irish as I gesse
Of whiche after Scottes came on that linage
For Scottes bee to saie their langage
A collecciō of many into one
Of whiche the Scottes were called so anone

The.I. Chapiter.

Howe

Maurius. Edit. alt. 1 Moder. 2 Best. 3 Picta 4 Marmorike.
5 Up so than. 6 Right Fier wt hontes. 7 Orit.
8 In their. 9 Marius hath slayne Rodrike here with a launce. 9 Here. 10 In
11 Pictes. 12 In Lyne 13 Some Scottes 14 their.

Hardyng fol. xlii. MS. Note 6.

"For Gadolus of scheues was well teched
Into a londe he went as he was teched,
And it ynhabite for his abidynge ay
And of his name he called it Gadelway.

Which by shortenes of newe mens langage
Nowe is named and called is Galaway
This Scota was as Mewyn saith the sage
Doughter bastarde of kynge Pharao that dayes
Whome Gadell wed and brought with hym away
And with the Rites come into Albany
The yere of Criste aforeside openly."

[This Scota was, as Mewyn saieth the sage
Doughter and bastarde of kyng Pharao ye daye
Whome Gadele wedded, and in his olde age
Unto a lande he went, where he inhabited ay
Whiche yet of his name is calle Gadelway
And with the peightes he came into Albanie
The yere of Christ aforesaid openlye]

Howe Galway had fyrst the name of kyng Gadelus

And at hir death she left a precious stone
[In Albany, on whiche Moses did preache][5]
And buryed there she was by hir [self] alone.
[Whiche stone was holy, as some menne then did
And did miracles, so was ye cõmon speache (teache
In honour it was had, bothe of greate and small
And holden for a relique moost speciall][6]

This stone was called the regall of Scotlãde
On whiche ye Scottish kynges wer brecheleſſe set
At their coronomente as I canne understande

The regall of scotlande

[1] Gadolus. [2] Sixty and fifteene 7. [3] Scone. [4] Florende.
[5] At that same place on whiche Moyses preached.
[6] Instead of these four last lines the Museum MS. has the following, with an additional Stanza

MAryus his soonne was then intronizate
And sette on high in trone of maiestie
With croune of golde full royally coro-
As worthy was vnto his royalte (nats
Who nourished was at Rome in his iuuente
With his mothers kynne the beest of the empire
With Claudius also, that was his oune graūdsir

¶ In whose tyme a peight hight Rodrike
With power greate by sea came fro Sythy
As proude and byrne as lyon marmerike
Arreued so vp in Albanye
Distroiyng whole the lande all sodainly
With whome ỹ kyng thē faught in greate battell
And sleugh hym with oute any faile

¶ Wher then in signe of his high victorye
He sette there vp a stone in remembraunce
Of his triumph, of his aduersatie
Titled on it his fame for to auaunce
Howe the peightes, there brought to vttraunce
Wher the redde crosse is nowe in Westmerlande
In Stanys more, as I canne vnderstande

¶ Then to ỹ peightes left a liue, he gaue catenese
To dwell vpon and haue in heritage
Whiche weddid wher, with Irish as I gesse
Of whiche after Scottes came on that linage
For Scottes bee to saie their langage
A collecciō of many into one
Of whiche the Scottes were called so anone

The. l. Chapiter.

Howe

Maurius. Edit. alt. 1 Moder. 2 Best. 3 Picte 4 Marmorike.
5 Up so than. 6 Right ther withoutten. 7 Out.
8 In their. 9 Marius hath Hanna Rodrike here with a Launce. 9 Here. 10 On
11 Pictes. 12 In Lyne 13 Some Scottes of their.

¶ Howe Scottes came of Scota kyng Pharois doughter ꝑ came after many daye into Albanye so ꝑ of peighres Irish & of Pharois people collect to gethers wer Scottes named ffor at the tauerne or at a gatheryng of people or of mony is called a scotte and so came first ꝑ name of Scottes which Scottes inhabited theim by twixt eatnes & ꝑ Scottish sea.

BUt Mewynus the Bryton chronicler,
Saieth in his chronicles orther wise
That Gadelus and Scota in the yere
Of Christe seuenty and fiue, by assise
At stone inhabitte as might suffise
And of hir name that countre there aboute
Scotlande she called that tyme with outen doubt

¶ This Scota was, as Mewyn saieth the sage
Doughter and bastarde of kyng Pharao ꝑ daye
Whome Gadele wedded, and in his olde age
Unto a lande he went, where he inhabited ay
Whiche yet of his name is calle Gadelway
And with the peighres he came into Albanie
The yere of Christ aforsaid openlye

Howe Galway had fyrst the name of kyng Gadelus

¶ And at hir death she left a precious stone
In Albany, on whiche Moses did preache [5]
And buryed there she was by hir selfe alone
Whiche stone was holy, as some menne then did
And did miracles, so was ꝑ cõmon speache (teache
In honour it was had, bothe of greate and small
And holden for a relique mooste speciall [6]

¶ This stone was called the regall of Scotlãde
On whiche ꝑ Scottish kynges wer brecheleſſe set
At their coronomente as I canne vnderstande

The regall of scotlande

[1] Gadolus. [2] Sixty and fifteene of. [3] Scone. [4] Rounde.
At that same place on whiche Moyses preached.
Instead of these four last lines the Museum MS. has the following, as an additional stanza

For holynes of it so did thei of debte
All their kynges vpon this stone was sette
Unto the tyme kyng Edward with long shankes
Brought it awaye again the Scottes vnthākes.

At Westmonestery it offered to sainct Edward
Where it is kepte and conserued
To tyme that kynges of Englande afterward
Should corōned bee, vnder their fete obserued
To this entent kept and reserued
In remembraunce of kynges of Scottes alway
Subiectes should bee, to kynges of Englāde ay

The subiection of Scotlād.

Also afore the fifte kyng Henryes daye
Their siluer coigne was as it ought to bee
The kynges face loked on side all waye
To his soueraigne lorde of Englande as I see
Whiche to been hetherwarde of egalite
Unto their lorde thei haue of newe presumed
To looke euen furth, whiche would nowe bee consumed

Kyng Marpus kepte ye realme in lawe & peace
Full of riches and of prosperyte
And dyed so at Sarum buryed dowteles
When he had reigned sixty yere and three
His tribute payed, full well to Roome citee
Of Christes faith sumwhat he was enformid
But muche more he neded to haue been reformid

Coylus reigned viii. yere.

Coylus his soonne was kyng then crouned so
Who mutryed was at Roome in greate vertue
Held well his lawes egall to frende and foo
And in his dooynges full iuste he was and trewe,

His

1 Theydide. 2 Whiche custome so amonges theym was not lett. 3 Westmynstre.
4 The. 5 As soueregne lorde ouer Scottys to be preserued. 6 Shewed.
7 Hiderwarde tobe. 8 Well the lorde is. 9 Yeres. 10 Nede. 11 Domes.

His like alwaye and rule in vertue grewe
That full great name of hym was notifyed
And in all landes of honoure multiplied.

¶ The lordes, gentiles, yemen, and commontee
He cherished well, and in no wise oppressed
And to theim gaue, wher was necessitee
And tribute payde to Rome vndistressed
And at his death with sickenesse impressed
He buried was at Glowchiche then full clere
When he reigned had fully. xiii. yere.

¶ Somewhat in fayth of Christ, he was instruct
But not fully, as was necessitee
Like as he was in Rome with hym inducte
So helde he forth in all stabilitee
And as he harde in all symplitee
Howe Joseph had his graundser enformed
With benyng herte and wil, he hym confyrmed.

The. li. Chapter.

¶ Lucius kyng of Britayn reigned. xiiii. yere, and was the seconde Christened kyng of Britayn by ffaggan & Dubyan that baptized all this lande, and for thesame cause bare the same armes after he was baptized. Also he made of. iiii. archeflampnes in Britayn three archebyshoppes at London, Yorke and Carlion.

Lucyus kyng.

After kyng Coile, his sonne then Lucius
So crowned was with royall diademe
In all vertue folowed his father Coilus
To compare hym in all that myght beseme
He put his will after as his witte could deme

1 And. 2 Fame. 3 Honoures. 4 ore impressed. 5 At Rome he was in it inducte. 6 Graundesire. 7 confourmed.

In so farre forth, that of Chrystentee
He contynued so a Chrysten man to bee.

And in the yere of Chrystes incarnacion
An. C. foure score and tenne
Eleutherye the first, at supplicacion
Of Lucyus, sente hym twoo holy menne
That called wer Faggan and Duuyen
That baptized hym, & all his realme throughoute
With hertes glad and laboure deuoute.

Thei taught ỹ folke, ỹ lawe of Chryst eche daye
And halowed all the temples in Chrystes name
All mawmentes and Idols caste awaye
Through all Brytayn, of al false goddes thesame
The temples flampynes the Idols for to shame
They halowed eke and made bishoppes sees
Twenty and. viii. at dyuers great citees.

Of. iii. archeflampynes thei made archbishopri-
One at London, Troynouaunt that hight (kes
For all Logres with lawes full autentikes
To rule the churche & chrystentee in right
Another at Carlyon a towne of might
For all Cambre, at Ebrauke the thirde
From Trent north, for Albany is kyde.

All these workes Eugeny then confirmed
The kyng then gaue to Faggan and Duuyen
The yle of Analoon and by cherter affirmed
That was called otherwyse Newtryen
Also frely as Joseph and his holy men
Had it afore, then forth for theyr dispence

Wherof

1 The Cristenie. 2. Cowrie. 3 And therto fourtie score.
4. Fore Eulatherye. 5 Phagane and Dimyan. 6 And the Mawmets
7 Temple-flaumes. 8 Made theym. 9 The Archeflaumes.
10 That Troynouant hight. 11 Eboranke. 12 Third.
13 The Pope gladly. 14 Inwalleyn. 15 As. 16 Thenceforth.

Wherof thei wer glad, and thought it sufficience.

[But whē this kyng had reygned in cotēplaciō
Fyftie and .iiii. yere in all prosperitee

Hardyng Pt. 1. fol. xliiii

Is a Note

Instead of this Verse the Museum MS has

"The yere of Crist an hundreth four score and sixtene
The Crucifixe whiche Joseph made and sett
At Caierliō euermore to haue honoured bene
In Themmys come up withoute any lette
Wher Poules qwarfe is now with flodes bett
Whiche Lucius with Troynouaunte cite
With processiō brought with solempnyte,

And sett it up at Poules with reuerence
At the north dore by inspiracion
Wher long it stode whiles Britons had regence
But whan the kyng had reigned in contemplacion
Fifty and four yere in grete prosperacion
He passed to gode whome he had always serued
To haue the blisse that he had euer deserued."

I wolde that ther was Britons warre .viii. yere after the death of Lucius.

Seuerus kyng.

Seuerus thus the worthy senatour
Descēded downe, right heire to Androge[8]
The eldest soonne of Lud that with the Emperoure

Therof. [illegible] f iiii Out

[illegible]. 2 Caier [illegible]. 3 His. 4 Of.
5 As saith the Britons called Hewgynes. 6 Couth conforde. 7 Then come
8 The

In so farre forth, that of Christentee[1]
He contynued so a Christen man to bee.

And in the yere of Christes incarnacion
An. C. foure score[2] and tenne
Eleuthery [the] first, at supplicacion
Of Lucyus, sente hym twoo holy menne
That called wer [Faggan and Duuyen][5]
That baptized hym, & all his realme throughoute
With hertes glad and laboure deuoute.

Thei taught ỹ folke, ỹ lawe of Christ eche daye
And halowed all the temples in Christes name
[All mawmentes][6] and Idols caste awaye
Through all Britayn, of al false goddes thesame
The [temples flampnes][7] the Idols for to shame
They halowed eke and made bischoppes sees[8]
Twenty and. viii. at dyuers great citees.

Of [iii. archeflampnes][9] thei made archbischoppri-
One at London, [Troynouaunt that][10] hight (kes
For all Logres with lawes full autentikes
To rule the churche & christentee in right
Another at Carlyon a towne of might
For all Cambre, at Ebranke[11] the thirde[12]
From Trent north, for Albany is kyde.

All these worke[s] [Eugeny then][13] confirmed
The kyng then gaue to [Faggan and Duuyen][5]
The yle of Analoon and by charter affirmed
That was called otherwyse Newtryen[14]
Also[15] frely as Joseph and his holy men
Had it afore, then forth[16] for they[r] dispence

Wherof

1 The Cristente. 2 Cousin. 3 And therto fourty score.
4 The Eulethere. 5 Fagane and Dirvyan. 6 And the Mawmets
7 Temple-flaumes. 8 Made theym. 9 The Archeflaumes.
10 That Troynouant that. 11 Eborancke. 12 Third.
13 The Pope gladly. 14 Indwelling. 15 As. 16 Thenceforth.

Wherof [thei] wer glad, and thought it sufficience.

[But whē this kyng had reygned in cotēplaciō
Fyftie and .iiii. yere in all prosperitee
He departed to God, desyryng his saluacion
In heauen to dwell, with all felycytee
Where the Aungelles synge incessauntely
Glory, honoure and euerlastyng prayse
Be to the lambe of God, nowe and alwayes.]

At Cairglowe buried, after his dignitee
For whom all men made great lamentacion
Who bare before thē baptyme of propertee
His Auncestres armes, and after with consolaciō
He bare the armes, by his baptizacion
Whiche Joseph gaue vnto Aruigarus
[As the Briton saith, that hight Mewynus.]

For cause he had none [heire] to kepe the lande
Through all Britayn the barons gan discorde
Unto the tyme that Romayns toke on hande
To chese a prince by there stedfaste accorde
But .iiii. yere wer gone or [then] they could accorde
In whiche tyme then Seuer the senatour
Hether came to be theyr gouernoure.

The .lii. Chapiter.

Howe that ther was Britons warre .iiii. yere after the death of Lucius.

Seuerus kyng.

Seuerus thus the worthy senatour
Descēded downe, right heire to Androge
The eldest soonne of Lud that with the
Emperoure

Out of Bzitayn that went with Julius
Whiche Senatoure afore sayd Seuerus
To Bzitayn came and was intromizate
And with a crowne of golde was corzonate.

The bzought with hym frō Rome two legion
With whom great part of Bzitons helde ful sore
And other parte of the noxthzen Bzitons
With Fulgen stode was kyng of Scotlande boxe
Gathered great people euer more and more
With whom ỹ Pightes & fugitiues. viii. esenable
Destroyed the lande by warre full violable

The. liij. Chapter.

Howe Seuer made a dike with a wall on it, of turues and soddes to kepe the Pightes and the Scottes from the Bzitons, ouertwharte the land frō the east sea vnto ỹ west sea.

But kyng Seuer hym dzoue w batayl sore
Farre noxth vntō the Scottishe sea
Wher thei abode & dwelled forth euermore
Betwene the Scottishe sea and twede no lee
But some bookes sayen to Tyne in certayn
And so is like, for Seuer there did make
A dike, and wall for the Scottes & Pightes sake.

From Tymnouth to Alclud his fayre citee
With turues & soddes & wer theim to againstand
Where the water myght not the Enemytee
Kepe of warre from his trewe Bzitayn lande
By fyfty myles accompted I vnderstande
To the weste sea, that was of greate Bzytayn
This wal w dikes Pightes & Scottes did refrein

But

1 Legiouns. 2 Britayne. 3 Pictes.
* [illegible] Unreasonable. 4 Beyonde. 5 Scottys so.
6 certaynte. 7 A dyche a Wall. 8 Tynmouth. 9 Agayn stode.
10 Blode. 11 Understode. 12 The Walles-dyche Pictes and Scottys dide re:
: Brayne.

¶But kyng Fulgē of Pightes & Scottes again
With hoste full great [1]sieged Ebzanke citee
Whiche Seuer rescowed, and was [2]slayn
And Fulgen also foz beten there did dye
[Receaued his guerdon foz his tyzannye] [3]
At Ebzanke the kyng Seuer was buried
With victozie and honours glozified.

Getā king of Bzitain chosen by ỳ Romayns.

¶Getan his sonne, a Romayne generate
The Romaynes then, hastely did crowne
And Bzitons bloodde together congregate
By hole assente, and playne eleccion
Bassyan chase without collucion [7]
Foz bozne he was of the femynytee
Of Bzitayn bloodde and consanguitee.

¶This Bassian with Getan then did fight
In great batayll wher Getan so was slayn
To Bassian so discended all the right
Of whiche the Bzytons all were full fayn
Within .iiii. wekes was all this done full playn
But Bassian then his bzother buried
And Romayns all on hepes moztifyed.

Bassian reygned vii. yere.

Bassian then was crouned kyng of Bzytayn
Full well he helde the realme .vii. yere in peace
To tyme Caransē confedered hym agayn
With Scottes & Pightes vpō hym gon encrease
All fugitiues, outlawes to hym [came prease] [11]
Foz long he had a robber [been] by the sea
And richer was, then any kyng myght bee.

By his manhode set all on roberye

Of

[1] Besieged Eboranke. [2] Ther was.
[3] And Scottes and Pictes to Scotlonde faste dide flee. [4] Eboranke.
[5] Bolde. [6] Entente. [7] With shorte conclusioune. [8] Than full. [9] Stille.
[10] Gan. [11] Gan preese. [12] By grete.

Of lowe bloodde came, rysen by insolence
To soudyours he gaue wages full greatly
For to betraye the kyng by diligence
He to the kyng so made by violence
Whiche promyse kepte, he slewe the kyng anone
In place wher as thei wer with hym alone.

The.liiii.Chapiter.

¶ Carense kyng of Britayne reigned.iiii.yere by treason, borne of lowe bloodde and rose vp of robery by the sea.

Caranse reigned iiii.yeres.

THrough treason of Carense Scottes & the
Assented so by fals cõfederaciõ (Pightes
Through his giftes & his subtyll slightes
Betwene theim wrought in councell priuatly
This false Carense so gatte the monarchie
Of all Britayn within the sea aboute
Foure yere he reigned, of porte that was ful stoute

¶ The Barons were so with gold englayned
By this Carense and by his language swete
Semyng like truth in maner as he proclayned
As nothyng is more redy for to mete
Then coueteous and falshode as men lete
So wer they all with his giftes enfecte
The kynge was slayne and he was electe.

¶ But whẽ to Rome was knowne ỹ false disceyt
Of this Caranse and his wronge intrucion
The Senate sent a letter by theyr conceyte
Hym to distroye by dewe execution
Who for his faute gaue hym absolucion

In

1 Be 2 3, theim. 3 So of Caranse Scottes & Pictes.
4 Priuely. 5 Caranse. 6 with golde so en....
Florelyse. 7 [caransius] 8 King elected. 9 Of. 10 Allected.

In batell stronge slewe hym and had the felde
And Scottes all and pyeghtes ẏ with hym helde

The.lv.Chapiter.

¶ The wordes of the maker of this booke vnto my Lorde of yorke touchynge gouernaunce of this lande, by exampie of this kyng Caranse through robbery resen of poore bloude to royall estate.

O Worthy lorde and duke of Yorke ẏ been
Consyder well this case full lamentable
The righwes kig wel gouerned as [it] was
Thus murdred was, of him ẏ was vnhable (sene
And set hym selfe in trone moste honourable
Of all Britayne, yet came he vp of nought
And of lowe bloude, and it were wysely sought.

¶ Good lorde when ye be set well vnder crowne
With treytours and mistruled tyatours
Dispence right so, with all suche absolucyon
And lette hym seke no other correctours
But mayntayne [them, your lawes gouernours]
And ouer all thyng, be ye the chefe Justyce
To kepe the peace, that no false you suppryse

The.lvi.Chapiter.

A Lecto then crowned and made kyng
Of all Britayne reigning fully yeres thre
And well he ruled in all maner werkyng
By power of the Romans greate postee
That brought with him from Rome legions thre
But Britayns then dyd set a parlyament
And chase a kyng by theyr hole assent

*Allectus kyng reygned.iii.yere

Asclipiade

1 Pictes. 2 If. 3 Theym 4 Wain of lawes the gouernours. 5 Do you. 6 Allecte. 7 Was crowned. 8 Britons 9 Of theyr 10 All theyr.

¶Asclipiade that was duke of Cornewayle
Who with Brytons to troynouaunt came[2]
Whyleſt[3] Romans were by theyr hole gouernalle
At ſacrifyce[4] of their goddes kaynte and laine
Agaynſte whome Alecto[5] of greate fame
Full mightly then kaught tyll[6] he was ſlayne
But Gallus drewe all Romans in[7] agayne.

And kepte the wallys for whiche Asclepiadote
The ſeege aboute the cytee ſtrongly layde
In which meane while Britõs brake in, god wote
And ſlewe Gallus and Romains ſore affrayde
[All out of araye and ſore diſmayde][8]
Beſyde a broke that walbroke men nowe call
That Galbroke then was called there ouer all

Of Gallus name that ſlayne was in that place
And ſome[9] ſayne of walſhemen afterwarde
Walbroke it called for a ſodaine caſe
That then[10] befell vpon a daye full harde
[Of the Brytons that with theim ſo miſcaryed][11]
[Ouer that ylke][12] brooke full ſore & harde diſtreſſed
By Cornyſhmen ſlayne downe ther, & oppreſſed

The.lvii.Chapiter.

¶Asclepiadote kynge of Britayne reygned.x. yere, in whoſe tyme was great perſecucyon in Britayne, ſayncte Albons ſlayne and many thouſandes ſlayne for Chryſtes ſake.

* Asclepiadote reygned.x.yere.

[13]ASclepiadote was crowned king agayne
In royall[14] wyſe with all ſolempnyte
The lawes well he helde and put [in] great payne
Ouer treſpaſſours, for their peruerſite Theues

[1] Asclepiadotus. [2] Than came. [3] While. [4] The ſacrifice. [5] Alecto. [6] To. [7] Therin.
[8] And for Gallus deth & the grounde was laide. [9] Som men
[10] Therin. [11] Where they were slayne myschevously and marde.
[12] On that same. [13] Certayne. [14] All. [15] Of.

Theuys and robbers on galowis hanged to be
But in his tyme the Emperoure Diocleſyan
Into Bꝛitayne then ſente Maximian.

¶ This Maximian to ſurname Hercelyus
A tyꝛaunte falſe that chꝛiſtente anoyed
Thꝛough all Bꝛitayne of werke malycious
The chꝛiſtoned folke kelly and ſoꝛe deſtroyed
And thus the people with hym foule accloyed
Religyous men the pꝛeſtes and clerkes all
Wemen with chylde and bedꝛed folkes all

¶ Chyldꝛē ſoukyng vpon the mothers pappis
The mothers alſo withouten any pytee
And chyldꝛen all in theyꝛ mothers lappys
The creppls eke and all the chꝛiſtentee
He kylled and ſlewe with full great cruelte
The churches bꝛent all bokes oꝛ ornamentes
Bellys, relyquys that to the churche appendes

The.lviii. Chapter.

¶ This perſecucion was in ỳ yere of Chꝛiſtes birth a.C.lxxx and.viii.yere, and the.x.yere of kyng Aſclepiadote.

HE ſlew that time a martyꝛed ſaint Albone
And with him alſo Julus and Araon
And Amphimabal ỳ wolde not dye alone
But offered hym to dye with him anone
Foꝛ Chꝛiſtes loue as faſte as he myght gone
Foꝛ thouſandes ſele were martered in thoſe daies
Whoſe ſoules be nowe in blyſſe and ſhal alwaies

¶ Aſclepiadote reygned fully but.x.yere.

Who

He. 2 Herculeus. 3 Cristenned. 4 Cristen people. 5 He.
In cursed doyrge as a Tiraunte he enyoied. 7 Folke. 8 Ouer all.
9 Theyr. 10 Crisomes. 11 Knewe. 12 Churches. 13 Als Julius and Aron.
14 Amphibale. 15 Lyne. 16 Them. 17 Als.

Who for great feare suffred all this payne
And durste nothyng agayne this tyraunt steare
But him withdrewe to hyde hym was full fayne
This persecucyon as some chronycleres sayne
The.x.yere was of Asclepiadote
For whiche duke Coyle agayne him rose ful hote

¶ The duke Caire colun[that hight]Coylus
Whiche cytee[nowe]this daye Colchester hight
Then crowned was[that slewe]Asclepiadotus
[For cause he came not fourth wᵗ all his might][3]
The tyraunt fell to agaynstande as he hight
Wherfore Britayns were all full gladde & fayne
Of kynge Coylus ꝑ succured all theyr payne.

The.lix.Chapiter.

¶ Kyng Coyle of Briteyne reygned.xi.yere, that was father to sayncte Elyne.

Kyng Coylus reygned.xi.yere

HE ruled the realme in lawe and peace ful
That for his wyt and vertuosyte (wel
Able he was as chronycles couldé[4] tele
To haue ruled all the emperalyte[5]
For ryghtwelnesse, manhode, and moralytee
A doughter had he and none other heire
Elyne that hyght farre passyng good and fayre.

¶ That afterwarde she was and is canonyzed
In shryne at Rome that is sayncte Elyne
Her father Coyle set her to be exercysed
In philosophye and other scyence clene
[In whiche she coulde her selfe ryght wel demeane][8]
That she was able by wytte and sapience

The

[1] Called. [2] Because.
[3] Come not fourth to shewe all his power and might
[4] Couthe. [5] Temporalitee [6] Nowe is. [7] In other.
[8] Lettred she wase knowinge the Science seuene.

The realme to rule and haue therof the regence

The.lx. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Constancius Senatoure and Emperour of Rome wedded sayne Elyne, and by her was kyng of this lande.

THe Romans sét to Bzitayne Constancius
That Spayne had put in hole subiectyon
Unto Rome, as chronicles haue wrytē thus
Who landed here withoute reiectyon
To whome kyng Coyle by good directyon
His message sente, offeryng hym his truage
And he to stande kyng, and holde his herytage.

¶ Of whiche Constance was glad of his entente
And here abode at prayer of the kynge
His doughter wed by their whole assente [2]
Elyne his heyze ẏ was both good and ponge
Of hyȩ wysdome and womanly conning
And there with all the faireſt that men knewe
Moze Angelyke then womannyſhe of hewe

¶ Within fyue wekes after her father dyed
Buryed at Care Colune his owne cytee
Greatly cōmended, well famed and laudifyed,
Both on this syde and beyonde the sea
Eleuen yere reigned in greate dignyte
And ouer all thyng alway [3] comon publyke
Of his realme wrought not many kiges hym lyke

The.lxi. Chapiter.

COnstance was kig crowned wᵗ Diademe
And Elin quene thzough al great [4] bzitain
On whom he gate a sonne ẏ had bapteme
That

Constatice kyng reygned.xv yere

1 Wher.f. 2 Both consent. 3 The 4 The grete.

⁂ He high. saet. ait.

That Constantyne called was then in certayne
But kyng Constaũce of Rome was hye cheftaine
By the senate fyrste made the Emperoure
And after kyng of Bzitayne and gouernoure.

Whiles he laboured foz Romes publyke pzofete
With his felowe that hyght Galerius
That Emperoure of Rome by greate delyte
Whiche of marence of pozte malicyous
Werryd full foze with werke full cheualrous
And all the weste this constaunce had and hylde
Galerius had the Este there into bylde.

And after when this Constaunce of Bzitayne
Was crowned kyng the comon wele pzeferryd
Of all his realme not lettyng foz disdayne
He wzought it aye and no tyme it differed
As cbzonyc̃es of hym sayde and referred
And when he had reygned hole xb. yere
At Ebzanke was he bury full clere.

The. lxii. Chapiter.

¶ Constantyne kyng of Bzitayne sonne of Constaunce and of saynte Elyn, by. xxviii, yere, was fyrst kynge of Bzytayne, and afterwarde Emperoure of Rome.

Constantyne reygned. xxviii. yere.

His sonne ful yonge Constantyne his heire
Then crowned was by all the baronage
Who lykely was, semely and ryght feire
Of. xb. yeres, so in his tender age
Great manhode had to rule his heritage
Of greate wysdome was and of sapience
By discrecyon had he intellygence.

1 Comyne. 2 Emperours. 3 Bon Maxencius. He

4 Warred. Edit. alt. 4 Vengeable.

5 Therein to. Edit. alt. Theryn hym to. Mss.

5 He preferred. 6 Ete was. 7 Also. 8 And high.

¶ He had also a lambiſhe pacience
To here all pleyntes mekely with ſobernes
A lyons chere in felde with good regence
Diſcrecion good to chaſtyſh wickednes
The welfare of his realme with buſines
Preſerued euer and kepte in regyment
And wher nede was, he made ſuppowelment

¶ The Senatours of Roome by letters well en=
Prayed hym to come to Roome as emperour (dite
For to deſtroye Maxence and diſherit
Of Chriſten folke the cruell turmentour
Of Chriſten[2] ſaieth, the curſed confoundour
For of his birth thei ſaied it ſette hym ſo
Maxence to ſtroye that was his fathers fo

¶ For whiche[3] he went to Roome w̄ greate power
Of Britons ſtrong, w̄ flemynges and Barbayns[4]
Henauldes, Gelders[5], Burgonians[6] & Frenche full
Duchemēne, Lūbardes alſo many Almains (clere[7]
The yere of Chriſt three. C. and ten w̄ Romains
Mette with Maxence and with Dioclesian
And their feloe that hight Maximian

¶ Sumwhat afraid of their multitude
Conſtantyne[8] then he held vp to[9] heuen
And ſawe a croſſe in[10] whiche was enclude
This reaſon good in hoc vinces. full euine
His ferdnes ſo anone then did hym leuen
In ſigne of whiche, a croſſe of goules[11] he bare
In his baner[12] white, & with hym[13] taught[he] there

¶ He had the felde and putte theim to the flight

g Wher

[1] Chaunge [2] Criſtes [3] Wherfor [4] Brabans [5] Gellers.
[6] Burgoynes [7] infera [8] Behelde vp vnto [9] In the [10] Vnde.
[11] Golde [12] Bane [13] Theym.

Wherfore euer after he bare twoo armes clere
In all likenes to euery mannes sight
As Englishemenne in this lande bare theim here
Sainct Georges armes nowe called wouté wer
Thus hath the kyng of englande, to theim right
Throughe eldres goottē, [by god his] verey might

The senate whole, hym mette and magnified
His high tryumphe, and mighty victorye
With laude and honour fully glorified
As vsage was, that tyme of Romanye
At certain gates sette vp for memory
And crouned hym in imperiall trone
That so manly had quit theim of their foone

The. lxiii. Chapiter.

Thanswere of Constantyne whā he was a leper & should haue been heled with the bloodde of innocentes, and howe he sent his mother sainct Elyn to seke the holy crosse. And howe he gaue his palis and dignite empertall of Roome to Silvester. And howe he went to Besauce and builded it all newe, & called it Constantyne & destroyed all the Arpanes heresies and dyed there at sainct Mychomede whose daye is halowed with the Grekes in the twenty and one daye of Maye.

But howe that he a leaper after grewe
And by his leches, vtterly informed
Many innocentes whiche ther were borne
For his health should slain beē & dismembred (newe
[By theim into heale again returned]
In whose bloodde bathed, he should haue been
His leprous swaines, to haue welshed of clene

But

1. Furth. 2 the. 3 By his. 4 Thorough godes.
* In. edit. alt. 5 In the. 6 Feele. 7 Then. 8 Heele.
9 Trustynge that he ~~should haue~~ therto wolde haue conformed.
° ~~Squamys~~ Squamys.

¶ But howe their death of emperiall pitee
He then released, rather to haue his pain
Then to recouer by tyranne crueltee
His health and life so to gette again
For whō these innocentes should haue been slain
And howe he was, by Siluester made clene
With holy water that yet in Roome is seen

Horerit

¶ Nor howe he sente his mother sainct Elin
To seke the holy crosse, whiche she hym brought
Ne howe she brought the clerkes with hir again
Of Jewes lawe, it to approue for nought
With Christen clerkes, by reason well out sought
Ne when our lawe by Siluester for trewe
Was best approued, that other lawe vntrewe

¶ Howe then he gaue his awne palais royall
With Roome all whole, and all the dignite
Through out Romany, with sea emperiall
To Siluester that had the papall sea
He gaue it to hym all quite and free
And to his successours perpetually
Ne howe he distroyed the aryans heresy

Constātine first grāted to the .b. of Rome ỹ primacye.

¶ Nor howe he went frome Roome to Besaunce
And of his name, then called it Constantyne
Nowe menne it call, by all rememorraunce
Constantyne noble, wher to dwell he did enclyne
There his lawes to kepe and to determyne
And there he sette his throne emperiall
And for his domes, his sea iudiciall

¶ Nor howe he dyed, after that Nichomeyd

1 And. 2 His imperiall. 3 Thanke. 4 well tiraunte. 5 Feele 6 For to 7 in no wise wolde suffre no childe slayn. 8 And. 9 Seche 10 reasouns. 11 And. 12 The grete. 13 See. 14 una, than 15 Towarde 16 remembraunce. 17 And Emperoure was there as Auctours de memore. 18 It.

Maximian reigned in all xxxiiii. yere.

And warred sore on Logres so anone
Wherfore the kyng, full faste with hoost gan gon
And countred hym with bataile fell and strong
The kyng preuayled, that other so did emong

Till on a daye, their fredes made theim accorde
The kyng ruled the lande, full well in peace
Fiue yere fully, without any discorde
In whiche tyme, he gatte full greate riches
Thought in hym self, ouer the sea to passe
Hauyng no will, in Bryton long to abide
But into Fraunce, he was so sette in pryde

With hoost full greate he landed in Armorike
A duchy that was longyng vnto Fraunce
The lesse Bryttain, nowe of Gaule kyngrike
And conquered it by marciall gouernaunce
To Conan then, it gaue hym to auaunce
To holde of hym, and called it lesse Bryttain
And stuffed it then with Brytons, soth to sain

And furth he went & wan the realme of Fraūce
And so by procesle, Almaigny hym obeyed
So did a greate parte of Italy, by accordaunce
He putte to flight Gracyan, that hym desobeyed
And Valentynyan, with hym conueighed
And sleugh by battaile, Fulgen mightely
And Emperour was made of Romany

Conan the kyng, then of litle Brytayn
To Dyanote the duke of Cornewaile sent
For Vrsula his doughter, letters plain
His wife to bee, in verey good entent

With

1 Dide. 2 Se he.
3 Whiche he wolde spende to gete hym some honour. 4 Langer.
5 wolde. 6 Or. 7 Londe. 8 Right of. 9 Almayne. 10 Hym so. 11 He.
12 And fightyng. 13 Of all grete.

With her also of maydens, that wer gente
xi. thousande, in his land to bee wed
For frenchewemen, they would haue none to bed

The. xi. M. vyrgins.

¶ This Dianote, custos was of Bzitayn
His doughters w̄ those birgyns then forth sente
In Thamis shipped, and cast in Almayne
By tempest greate, there shippes all to rente
Many of theim wer dead, and many shente
In sykenes, frayde in stormes, and sore tempest
That ful fayn th̄e there, wold haue had there rest.

¶ Gwaines was then kyng of Houndelande
And Malgā kyng of Pightes, paynymes hatous
In whose landes they arryued, I vnderstande
Unto theim then, they wer full odyous
Passyng yrefull, and full malicious
And for they would not, be deuirgynate
They slewe theim all, through crueltee and hate.

¶ Whiche now bee saynts, & marters euerychone
In nonnes mynster, conserued in Coleyn
That noumbred been, both with frend and foone
xi. thousand virgins, of greate Bzitayn
Maximian the emperoure of Romayn
When he had reigned. xxxiiii. yere
By Gracyās frendes was buried, & layd on bere.

The. lxiiii. Chapiter.

¶ Gracian kyng of Bzitayne, in whose tyme kyng Malga & Gwaymes distroyed all Bzitayne

GRacian, when Maximian was slayne
To Bzitayn sent then, by the Senatours
In whose time kig Malga & kig Gwayne

Gracian kyng.

1 In. 2 Regent

* He sente. 2 edit. alt. 3 Her doughter with alleuye thousande fourth sente.
4 Into. 5 Sawe. 6 With. 7 Greate. 8 Kynge of Hunes so hight that londe.
00 xxxiii. Edit. alt.
10 rose. 11 were these kynges. 12 And theym to ravish they were full cautelous.
13 And called. 14 Sawne.

This lande ouer road, standyng in all honoures
That mortall fooes, and cruell tormentours
To Christen[2] fayth wer and malicious
All mercyleſſe and paſſyng rigorous.

Whiche kynges two, roote of all crueltee
Full falſe paynemes replete of felony
The churches brent, and ſlewe the commontee
Wyues nor childre, ne yet the clargye
Ne religious ne yet the prelacye
Thei ſpared not, but mercyleſſe theim kylled
Of wickednes ſo foule, thei wer fulfylled.

But Gracian that crowned was and kyng
In domps falſe, and in his iudgementes
Fell diſpiteous great tallages takyng
Both of the lordes there[6] landes and rentes
And of gentilles agayn all there ententes
So did he alſo[6] of all the commontee
For whiche thei ſlewe hym[6] without pitee

Gwames and alſo Malga[7] the kynges two
Deſtroyng Britayn without any reſte
The Senate ſent[8] a legion[8] of knightes tho
Into this lande, of eche region the beſte
Choſen out of all the worthieſte
The whiche putte Gwames and Malga[7] to[9] flight
That ſhipped home vnto there lande[10] full right.

The.lxv. Chapiter.

¶ The Senate of Rome ſente a legion of knyghtes into Britayn, who made the Britons to make a walle of lyme and ſtone from the eaſte ſea vnto the weſte ſea and called it the peighe wall.

This

[1] Errours. [2] Cristes. [3] Prestes ne. [4] And of their. [5] Als.
[6] Than. [7] Melga. [8] Two legiouns. [9] To the. [10] Londes.

THis legion and Bytons hole assembled
That made a wall well wrought of lyme and stone
Where Seuer made of turues & soddes sembled
With castelles strong and towres for the nones
At eche myles ende to agaynstande all the soonyse
From sea to sea as yet it is well seen
In dyuers places, where it was wonte to been.

This legion home returned then agayn
For Bytayn then suffred great disease (payn
The Scottes & Pightes ther did theim ful great
Syre yere then next, of whiche to haue some ease
To kyng Aldrye there sorowes to apease
Of lesser Bytayn, then sent theim Constantyne
To be there head and also there medecyne.

This Constantyn kyng Aldries brothers wife
Was crowned then with royall diademe
At Caircester as Bytons could deuyse
That with his hoste royall as did hym seme
Gwayne and Malga, as chronicles do expryeme
The Scottes and Peightes he vnder & ouercam
That Bytayne wrought afore full mykel shame.

Constãtyne reigned. x. yere.

Thre sonnes he had full fayre by his wife
Constance then was the eldest sonne of all
That was not wise, wherfore then in his life
He made hym monke, he was so bestiall
To gette the life aboue celestiall
His secounde sonne that hight Aurelius
His surname was called Ambrosius.

The

The yonngest sonne hight Uterpendragon
These two were wyse, but young they wer of age
To there vncle sent, to be at his direction
Nurture to learne, and all maner languag[e] [2]
By whiche after they maye haue knowelage
With discrecion and all good ordinaunce
To rule and haue the realme by gouernaunce

When Constantyne had reigned well.x.yere[s] [3]
Upon a daye, as he in his garden went
[A Peight that was in his house, hym full nere] [4]
Hym slewe anone, by treason and consent
Of Uortiger, that euer in his entent
Conspyred had, to haue the regaltee
Of greate Britayn, the kyng so to bee. [6]

The. lxvi. Chapiter.

Constaunce kyng of Britayne reigned but one yere, that was monke first and after made kyng, and was not wyse but an ideote, whome Uortiger crowned to that entent to make hymselfe kyng by false cõtrypyng, seyng the kyng full symple to rule the lande.

Constaūce kyng.

Constaunce his sonne ỹ mõke was in Cairgwente.
Uortiger duke of westser, was that daye
In haste crowned, by barons hole assente
Knowyng he shulde, be but a foole alwaye
The realme to saue, and kepe out of disraye [7]
He waged Peightes, on hundreth to serue ỹ kyng
Alwaye vpon his body abydyng

The made the kyng, full certenly beleue
Thei shuld espie emong the enemyte[e]

By

[1] here. [2] the Scotte knowlage. [3] Yere. [4] A Picte that in his house was hym full nere. [5] By. [6] For to be. [7] And so he thought the rule to haue for ay. [8] Pictes. [9] An

By their frendes, ỹ no Peightes shuld hym greue
Ne Scottes of theyr greate peruersitee
But thei of it, afore in certayntee
Shuld let hym witte, there malice to vnderstande
Such subtyll meane, to fage the kyng he fande.

And vnder that, a while he payed theyr wage
Full well with chere, full good & all pleasaunce
Unto a daye he sayd, to theyr knowlage
The kyng nomore would haue theyr attendaunce
But, wer he kyng, he shuld them well auaunce
Whiche thyng, and euer came to preeke
About his plone, they shuld be cherished as cheeke

There wages also, full well shuld be payde
For whiche behest, anone they slewe the kyng
And brought his head to hym full foule arayde
Of which he made hym wroth, in all semyng
But to London, by his subtyll wrytynge
He gaue charge, the Peightes all to kyll
And none escape, nether for good ne yll.

This Vortiger, protectour was that yere
And in his handes, the kynges castels all
He had, and sawe he might the crowne full clere
Haue at his wyll, so dred the lordes temperall
And prelates hie, that were spirituall
His heuynesse and indignacion
That they assented to his coronacion.

Whē Cōstaūce thus, ỹ kyng had been one yere
And could nothyng, of rule ne gouernaunce
The commons sawe, he was an idcote clere

Their

B

[1] cles. [2] Gaynstonde. [3] meane [4] Fade
And geue theym yftes with chere and herte benyng
And thus he seide be treason tobe slynge. [6] As. [7] Shulde.
[8] charge. [9] To escape. [10] Fonde [11] Couth.

Theyr voyces all gaue, with all theyr obeisaunce
To Uoztiger with theyr hole attendaunce
As comons would euer yet of olde and newe
Eche yere their kyng to chaunge and renewe.

The. lxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Uoztiger kynge of Bzitayne reigned .xviii. yere through his falshed and treason cõspired with Peightes, to slea his kyng. And howe Engist and Hozsus paiens landed in Kent and were beloued with Uoztiger, and howe wednisdaye and frydaye had name, and what goddes and goddisses they honoured. Howe and when Engist and Hozsus lãded in Kẽte, & made Thoncastre & hozne castre in the cõtre of Lyncolne, & howe Engist sent foz his doughter & maried her to kyng Uoztiger, and bzought in with her greate multitude of paiens, that accombzed all the realme both of warre & of Chzisten fayth, wherfoze the Bzitons crowned the kynges sonne.

Uoztiger kynge of Bzitayn reygned. xviii. yeres

THis Uoztiger thẽ crowned kyng of might
The Peightes and Scottes foz he there kyng so kylled
They sclaundzed hym, that mikell good he hight
Unto Peightes, the kyng haue slayn and spilled
By suche treason his will they so fulfilled
And after by his pzeuy ozdinaunce
He made thesame be slayne, foz thesame chaunce

¶ Foz whiche they aroose on hym to been auẽged
With ful great hoste destroyed both cozn & towne
And bzent his lande, and felly reuenged
In whiche tyme caine into this region
Engist and Hozsus dukes of great renoune
By sozt sent out all voyde of Saxonye
With menne of warre also of Germanye.

¶ In

1 Chaungen. 2 Pictes. 3 Kyn. 4 Right grete goodes. 5 His Pictes. 6 That Constaunce slew and. 7 Rose 8 Destroyinge. 9 The. 10 Yreuenged. 11 Horne.

¶ In shyppes thre arryued so then in Kent
When Uortyger at Caunterbury laye
Whiche he withheldе anon, and sarre him sent
To warre on the Scottes and Pyeghtes aye
That brent his lande and noyed day by daye
Peynemis they were and trowyd of Mercury
And on Uenus theyr goddes of Payanie.

¶ That Mercurie woden, in their languagе
Was called so by his propre name
For whome they honoured of olde and age
The fourth daye in euery weke at hame
And so of Mercury geuing it a name
And of wodē called it wednisdaye
Of olde custome as they haue vsed alwaye

* Wednysdaye, wherof it was named.

¶ And Uenus also, was theyr hygh goddesse
For whome alwaye they halowed the sixte daye
Of euery weke in prayer and holynesse
Who in theyr tonge frydaye was called alwaye
For whose honoure, that named was frydaye
The Sonne the Woone, Jubiter and Saturne
And Mars the God of armes, they dyd adorne

¶ The yere after of Christes incarnacyon
Foure hundreth full fourty and syxe also
Was when Engyst into this regyon
Firste came, and hauen wt thre shippes and no mo
As sayntе Bede sayeth in gestis anglorum so
With scottes & Pieghtes they faught ful mightely
And droue theim oute and had the victorye.

¶ This Engist had then none habitacyon

Delyring

[a] There. Edit. alt. [1] Arrone. [2] Whome.

[3] For. Edit. alt. Mſ. [3] To warre with him on. [4] Peeters, [5] Noyed. [6] On. [7] Goddesse. [8] Wyfe. [9] Home. [10] In Germanye frome whens that they come. They called it. [12] Wod called. [13] Fry. [14] Saturne. [15] Honoure. [16] July sixte. [17] Rome. [18] Bede. [19] They made none habitacion.

Delyzinge so a castell in to dwell
Hym and his men, to kepe frome all aduersacyon
Of Scottes & peyghtes ẏ enemyes were then fell
As all olde Chronyclers canne you tell [2]
Alked as much ground, as a bulleis skyn thonge
Wyght fyzcuyte fully of bzede and longe [3]

Whiche the king hym graunted then anone
He made a thonge then of a bullys skyn
So small and longe, that rounde about dyd gone
A stony grounde to set his castell in
And thus by subtelte and his sleyghty gyn [6]
Where then he made Thongcastre as men tolde
In Lyndesey, that nowe is Castre of the wolde.

Engyst then sent foz his doughter Rowan [9]
That came anone, with shyppes eyghtene [10]
Well stuffed of men, foz they were of Bzitayne
Agayne the Scottes and Peightes to opteyne
Whome Uoztiger then, thought ful longe to sene
She pzoferred him a dzynke and sayde wassayle
As he was learned, he sayde to her dzynke hayle

Which wozdes fyzst came vp so into this land [12]
With that he set his herte her foz to loue
That he her wed by all kyndes of lawfull bonde
As then the church could best hym learne & moue
And thus the Sarons by Uoztiger set aboue [16]
Foz whiche his sonnes, and all the Baronage
Hym hated soze, ryght foz his maryage

Of Paynimes bloodde, foz to their ydolatrye [18]
Greate people were then, turned and peruerte

And

1 Pictes 2 And for that he the enemyse dide so quelle.
3 Wyght fully compasse as it was brode and longe. 4 Which so. 5 Engista then
thong. 6 So stronge it was that no man myght it vyvne. 7 Thongcastell.
8 The castell on. 9 Rowayn. 10 Whiche com. a vone with Shippes were eighteene
11 The Werre. 12 Than in. 13 So. 14 Manner. 15 Hym dide avide.
16 Hir to forsake his lawfull wife to Come. 17 For that wronge. 18 Payans.

And greate also in Pilagien herelye
Were accombred, and hole to it aduerte
Wherfore his sonne, the people to conuerte
For Lupus sent, and his felowe Germayne
Christen fayth to preache, in all Britayne.

Which bishoppes.ii, the folke conuert did againe
By processe so, and home agayne then went
This Engyst then, to please the kyng full fayne
For his sonne Occa, to Germany sent
For Ebissa and Cherdryk by consent
Of Uoztiger, that.iii.C. shyppes brought
Of men of warre, the best that might be sought.

Of whiche his sonne, that then hight Uoztimer
Of his fyrste wyfe, and also the barons all
Of suche multytude of people, affrayed were
And to the kyng, as then it did befall
Compleyned had, without helpe in generall
Wherfore anone, together they dyd consent
This Uoztymer to crowne by hole assent.

The.lxviii. Chapiter.

How Uoztymer the sonne of kynge Uoztyger, kynge of Britayne to withstande the power of Engyste, and of Saxons was twyes crowned. How this Engyst vnder treaty slewe all the Baronage of Britons on ỳ playne of Salysburye.

THen Uoztimer they crowned anon ryght
With royalte, that might to it appende
That was ful wise apryued, lyke a knight
In all courage, that to knighthode did extende

Uoztymer kynge of Britayne.

For

Crete partie. 2 Octa. 3 Than sent. 4 Assent. 5 With. 6 Als.
sent. 8 consent. 9 Anoone they crowned.

For to assayle or elles [for] to defende
Who with myscreauntes faught sore vpon Der-
So did he elles[2] at all place where he went (went

At Abirforth[3] he fought with theim also
The better ay he had where as he yede
But Catigerne his brother was kylled tho
And horne also was slayne by greate manhode
[And thus Uoztimer victorius where so he yede][4]
In other tyme vpon the north sea bankes
He faught with them, in batayle their vnthankes

They fled vnto the yle then of Tenecte
Where he theim syeged fearfully and assayled
And slewe theym doune on hepes ay as they met
That theyr power almoste then was fayled
All forefoughten and full sore batayled
Besought the kyng they myght haue his lycence
To Germany to make their reuerence.

So wente they home, with [lytell folke alyke][5]
That in his tyme, they came no more agayne
But cytees all, and churches amended[6] full ryke
The chrystentee to mainteyne was full fayn
But then anone the subtell quene Rowayne
Made hym [to] be poysoned, of whiche he dyed
With her venymes thus was he mortifyed.

In a pyller of brasse [he layde][9] on hyght
At the gate where Saxons, had landed[10] afore
He bad his men for also[11] farre as he[12] myght
Hym se, he truste they wolde not[13] nerre come thore
But neuertheless[14], they letted not therfore

[1] Offende. [2] Als. [3] Abirforde. [4] Eche of these two slewe other in that stede. [5] People feare on lyue. [6] Than. [7] He mende. [8] Poisounde wherof anoone. [9] Hym caye. [10] Londe. [11] As. [12] They. [13] No. [14] Nathelesse.

But

But buryed hym at Troynouaunt citee
As he them bade, with all solempnite

¶ Kyng Uortiger was crouned then again
For Engest sent and bade hym come anone
For Uortimer his soonne was deade and slain
Who w̄ thzee hūdzed shippis full of mēne echone
In Bzytain landed, and to the kyng ganne gone
Of whome he was full glad and well reioysed
And of his folke that were of greate power noised

¶ But Bzytons all, and also the baronage
To fight with hym, arose by whole consent
For whiche he sent to theim by message
That to the realme, none eiuill he ment
But for to helpe the lande in his entent
And if thei were of his hoost, displeased
As thei could best deuise, thei should been eased

¶ And bad theim set a daye wher thei might mete
By their auise his power home to sende
Or all to hold, for their common quiet
Fro their enemies, the realme for to defende
All his defaute by their auise tamende
The Bzytons thought his pzofer reasonable
And to the realme also full pzofitable

¶ Thei sent hym woozde to mete the first daye of
With foure hundzed soon euery side (Maye
Upon the plain of Sarum in meeke araye
That Caire Cradok was called so that tyde
Bylide Alwmesbury full fair edefied
Again whiche daye, this Engist bad his menne

The craft & pollicye of Engist

h With

Londe. 2 Dide. 3 Ther way. 4 Wherfor 5 Ike 6 Assent.
By hoole. 8 Way. 9 Couthe. 10 Olde. 11 Barouns.
Of eyther. 13 Salisbury. 14 Amesbury.

Within their hoses a long knif to haue then

¶ And when he saied Nemyth,[2] your seres then
Eche manne then slee, a Bryton with his knife
For so I shall, vs marshall as I can
A foze a Bryton, a Saxon sette full rife
So shall wee reue theim soneſt of their life
And sette vs ay in rest and mooſt quiete
At a daye lymete, together when wee mete

¶ A daye assigned, as was his ordinaunce
The watche wooꝛde saied, eche panyme[3] a Bryton
Foure. C. lordes, of Chriſtes holy[4] creaunce (slewe
Betrayed were, by Engist so vntrewe
[The death of whome, many a Bryton did rewe][5]
[Whose corps all, were buryed at Alwnisbury[6]
Whiche after that daye, was made a Nonnorye[7]

[¶ With the hooſt of panymes came full fast][8]
And toke the kyng, held hym at[9] Troynouaunt
For marred sore and greately was agast
What so thei asked[10], anone he did theim graunt
The citees all and castels sufficiaunt
To lette hym passe awaye without[11] troublaunce
Whiche Engist graunted[12], because of aliaunce

The. lxix. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Engist caused Logres to bee called then Engeſtlande, of whiche the commons putte geſt awaye in their common speache, and calle it England for shortenes of speache.

1 A large. 2 Nymeth. 3 Paian. 4 Oun
5 But yit with stones the Britons of theym shewe. 6 Alle Britons cors. Engist
7 This day is a full deuoute Nonry. 8 Engist the Paian hean come on full fast.
9 In. 10 dred. 11 with suche. 12 Graunte.

ENgist with his hoost had all thorient
The South & North, in all ỹ greate Bri-
In his kepyng, except thoccident (tain
Whiche Brytons held of warre and muche pain
By olde chronicles, as I haue herd saine
And then anone, he called it Engelles lande
Whiche after was shorted, and called England

Englãde wherof it was so named.

¶ Through the cõmons, ỹ thought it long to say
And muche lighter, in tongue to saie Englande
Then with their mouth, ouer long to name it aye
By long producyng, to call it Engistislande
And thus came first in, as I vnderstande
As I conceiue, thus came first Englandes name
For short speach, corrupt per sincopene

¶ But Engist then, gaue all the lande about
To Saxons all, and kyng was so of Kent
But Vortiger in Cambre sought through out
To buylde vpon, a castell to his entent
To holde hym in, fro the panymes violent
Whiche in Cambre, the castell of Genoren
He made full strong, in the lande of Hergigyen

¶ Upon the ryuer of Ewey, on Cloarte hill
But of dragons and of the water vnder
That Merlyn saied, that castell did so spill
Ne of his birth that many menne on wounder
Of that werke, bothe aboue and vnder
That no father had, ne of his prophecye
I cannot wryte of suche affirmably

¶ Notwithstandyng, that philophiers wise

h ii Alfyrme

1 Althe. 2 Meskell. 3 Engist. 4 so. 5 Engistlonde. 6 The name of Britayne longe was. 7 Shorter. 8 Payens. 9 Where. 10 Galoarte. 11 By whos. 12 Affirmandlya. 13 Not gaynstondynge the Philosophers wise.

Affirme well, that spyrites suche there been
Bitwene the moone and therth called Incubice
That haue gotten chyldren of wemen vnseene
As in stories diuerse I haue so seen
Howe the philosophier, wise Magancius[3]
Affirmeth it also, and Apuleyus

The.lxx. Chapiter.

¶ Aurelius Ambrose kyng of Bryttain the seconde soonne of Constantyne,

AUrelius Ambrose brother of Constaunce[4]
Into Britain with strong & greate power
And segid then Voytiger by ordinaunce
In his castell of Genoren full clere
Whiche with wild fire hé brent, and hym[7] in keere
And crouned was by all the baronage
To reioyse Britain that was his heritage

THe sought Engist that panyme[10] was full grym
With hoostes thei faught, but Aurele had ȳ better
The Saxons fled, before that were full byme
For in their quarel, it might bee no better
Duke Eldoll toke Engist and did hym fetter
In Kent as he hym mette awaye fleyng
At Conanburgh hym brought to the kyng

WHere he was heded with swerd, and decollate
And Occa[12] then and his soonne Ebissa
His coulins dere at yorke came, in ful late
And with hym Saxons full many one moo[15]
Wher then the kyng, hym segid with muche woo
But Occa[12] then, and al his compaignie
Came to the kyng to whome he gaue mercye

1 Hermen. 2 Full wise. 3 Maganeyus 4 To. 5 Generon. 6 was. 7 Therye. 8 Enjoye. 9 His Trees. 10 Payen. 11 Conynges burgh 12 Octa 13 his son, and. 14 Ofyn. 15 And kepte the Town with Auantwarde una cum. 16 Them segid in Kaence ye.

The

¶ The kyng then made a worthy sepulture
With ỹ stone hengles,[1] by Merlins whole aduise
For all the lordes Brytons hye nature
That there were slain in false and cruell wise
By false Engest and his feloes vnwise
In remembraunce of his forecasten treason
Without cause, or any els enchelon

¶ But Pascencius the soonne of Vortiger
With hoost of Irish, Cambre he destroyed
With whome the kyng faught with his power
And droue hym out, to Irelande sore anoyed
Of his people many slain and foule acloyed [6]
But Eopa then clad in monkes clothyng
With his poysonis, then poysoned had the kyng

¶ But then the kyng of Irelande and Pascence
In Cambre brent, the kyng full sicke then laye
He sent Uterpendragon for defence
With hoost royall and mighty greate araye
He faught wt hym, for whiche thei fled that daye [7]
With shame and hurt to Irelande home again
Uterpendragon the felde so had full plain [8]

¶ Then Uter sawe a starrye beame [10] full bright.
And asked[11] Merlyn, what that it might meane
He said it is Stella Cometa[12] righte
It signifieth the kyng his death to been
That nowe is gonne to the blisse I ween
The dragon also,[13] thy self dooeth signifye
With beames twoo extendyng seuerally
(tende
¶ The beame southward, to Fraũce ỹ dooeth ex=

[1] Wythyn Stonehenge. [2] Of Inglish. [3] Houtyn. [4] or Lo [illegible] [5] And many of his hoostes were thus destroied. & I. with them and made them [illegible] away. [6] Cartayne. [7] This. [10] Blasynge starre. [11] Axtes. [12] Comata. [13] Als.

Thy soonne that thou shalt haue dooeth signifie
That shall conquere, all Fraunce vnto thend[1]
Almaignie also and[2] all Germanie
And so to Roome, throughout al Romanie
Aboue all princes, in his tyme moost famed
Through Christente moost dred and best named[3]

That other beame to Irelande extendyng
Thy doughters eke[4] dooeth also signifie
Their children also,[5] that of theim shalbe[6] comynge
[The realme to haue with all the regalie[7]]
Thus Merlyn to hym dooeth specifie
So went he furth anone to[8] Cairgwente
Where he had wroght of his brothers enterremēt

Within [the] Giaūtes carole that so then hight
The stone hengles,[9] that nowe so named been
Where prelates & dukes, erles & lordes of might[10]
His sepulture to worship there were seen
[Thus this worthy kyng, was buryed by dene][11]
That reigned had, that tyme but thirten yere
When he was dedde and laied [so on][12] beere

The. lxxi. Chapiter.

¶ Uter Pendragō kyng of Brytain and of his armes that he bare.

Uter Pendragō kyng of Brytain.

His brother Uter,[13] at Cairgwēt was croūd
In trone royall thē fully was admit
Twoo dragons made of gold royall that (stound
[That one][14] offred of his[15] deuout wit
In the mynster there as he [had] promit
That other before hym, euer[16] in battaile bare
Of gold in goulis, wher so he gan to fare

Charmes

[1] The ende. [2] And eke. [3] Banamed. [4] So. [5] Als. [6] Beth.
[7] This is tokenynge that thy bride frulie
This Reame shall haue with all the Regalie. [8] Vnto. [9] Stonehenges
[10] All. [11] And Comons many whome he defende fro teene.
[12] Was on his. [13] Other. [14] Bon he. [15] his owne. [16] Aye.

¶ Tharmes alſo of Troye, that Brutus bare
Tharmes alſo, of good kyng Lucius
Whiche after baptyme, his armes alwaye ware
Theſame armes that kyng Conſtantynus
At his batayll againſt Maxencius
So bare alwaye, ye ſaynt George armes we call
Whiche Englyſchemen nowe worſhippe ouer all.

¶ And for he bare, the dragon ſo in warre
The people all, hym called then Pendragon
For his ſurname, in landes nere and farre
Whiche is to ſaye, in Britayn region
In theyr language, the head of the dragon
And in the north, as he a caſtell made
Pendragon hight, wher he his dwellyng had.

¶ But Occa ſonne then, of that falſe Engiſt
And Oyſa alſo, the ſonne of Occa with
That northlande brent, of which when Uter wyſt
He faught with theim, there ſaued theim no grith
[Nor none of the people, that came theim with]
He tooke Occa and Oyſa, in batayll
Beſide Dane hill, wher [they did hym] aſſayle.

¶ The Saxones alſo he ſlewe, ye with hym came
And had the felde, with [all the] victorie
For ioye of whiche, he made [great ioye] and game
Proclayned his feaſt, of Paſche ſolemply
To holde at London, wher then he made his crye
That euery lorde, his wife with hym ſhuld bryng
For [worſhippe of] that feaſt, and [of] the kyng.

The.lxxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe

1 The armes als 2 He 3 Britouns. 4 Occa. 5 The. 6 Cosa. 7 The 8 Uther.
9 And slewe theym doun with grete myght and pith. 10 Lalles
11 Ha side Theym. 12 Alls. 13 Theym. 14 Joya and. 15 Muche myrth
16 Full solempliche. 17 To worshipe

¶ Howe the kyng was an amoured of the duke of Gozloys wyfe, and how he gatte on her kyng Arthure.

GMonges other, Gozloys duke of Cozne=
wayle
His wife did bzing Igrene[1] fayze of figure
Whole beautee their, all others made to faile
So well and hole auised was nature
Her womanhede exceded [euery][2] creature
That though nature, her beautee woulde [haue] a=
Hir cõnyng might therto in no wise extẽde. (mẽde

¶ Of whiche beautee, and of her goodlyhede
The kyng with loue, so greatly was oppzessed
It chaunged all his cozage and manhede
In kalendes[3] of eschaunge, he was [so] impzessed
Foz whiche the duke with hir then home adzessed
Perceaupnge well, the kynges fykelnesse[4]
Was set foz loue, on[5] her womanlyneſſe

¶ In Tyntagell his castel strong, [he] her set
Hymselfe then laye, in castell Dympoke
Wher then the kyng hym sieged her to get
But Merlyne then, from it hym did reuoke
[And by his councell subtelly dyd pzouoke][6]
Knowyng his loue, he had to dame Igrene[7]
By coniurisons[8] made in haste full yerne.

¶ He made the kyng, vnto duke Gozloys like
Hymselfe like [to] Bzethel in all semblaunce
That [then was] the dukes pzeuy myke
And Ulfyn lyke, by all [kyns gouernaunce][10]
Unto Jozdan[11] in all maner conysaunce[12]
That moste knewe of the dukes pzeuytee

By

[1] Igerne [2] Euch [3] Kalenders. [4] Sekelynesse.
[5] Of. [6] And made the kynge the sage that he forsoke. [7] Congeasiouns.
[8] Arete haste. [9] Was then so. [10] Maner conysaunce. [11] Surdayne.
[12] Gouernaunce.

By whiche he brought to Igrene all three.

¶ Thus laye the kyng hir by, euer whē he would
She trustyng then, that he had been hir lorde
But euer his siege he made sadly to been holde
His people assautyng the castell by one accorde
But Gerloys men, then pleynly did recorde
Theyr lorde was slayn and Uter had the felde
Of which she merueyled, & then fast hym beheldē.

¶ There gatte he then, on hir a sonne full fayre
And fro hir went, vnto his hooste agayn
The duke was slayne, with all his moste repayre
Of whiche the kyng, glad is not to layne
To Tyntagell with all his hoste full fayne
He came anone, and had it at his wyll
He comforted hir, and bad her holde it styll

¶ But then betwene theim two he did discure
The priuetee in all, as it was wrought
And sette his daye to wed hir and to cure
Of heupnes, that she was then in brought
Her lordes death so muche was in hir thought
For hir so slayne, hir wyfehode also defouled
Afore that tyme, that euer was kept vnfouled.

¶ And at the daye, he wedded hir and cround
And she forforth with childe was then begonne
To comforte her, he sette the table rounde
At Wynchester, of worthiest knightes alone
Approued best in knighthode of their foone
Whiche table rounde Joseph of Arimathie
For brether made of the seynt Grall onely.

In

Igerne. 2 Lye. 3 Euer. 4 Other. 5 The MS. adds Two Symyche they
re remeued certaynes. 6 His. 7 Undefouled. 8 Hir wed. 9 Vn.
Seyngrale.

¶ In whiche he made, the seege pereleous
Where none shulde sytte, without great mischiefe
But one that shuld be moste religious
Of knightes all, & of the rounde table chiefe
The saynt Graal, that shuld recouer and acheue[2]
By aduenture of his fortunitee
And at his death, a virgyne shulde bee.[4]

¶ But at hir tyme, the quene had borne a soonne
That Arthure hight, and was of statur fayre
More large of lymme, and wyser vnder sunne
Of his age then, to bee his fathers heyre
[Of all his lymmes, right comly, stronge & fayre][6]
But Occa then and Oysa, that afore
Stale home, were come & warred [in Britayn] sore.

¶ The kyng sent forth, syr Loth of Lowthian[10]
A worthy prince, hardy and bounteous
His doughter had wedded, y hight the dame Anne
[A manly manne, and right cheualrous]
The first knight, that was electe right fortunous[11]
Of the table round, that ofte with theim did fight
That ofte preuayled, and sometyme put to flight.

¶ For whiche the kyng, ordeyned a horse litter
To beare hym so then, vnto the verolame
Wher Occa laye, and Oysa also in feer
That saynt Albones, nowe hight of noble fame
Bet downe the walles, but to hym forth they came
Wher in battayll, Occa and Oysa were slayne
The felde he had, and therof was full fayne.

¶ There was a well, whiche his enemyes espied
That

1 Seyntgrale. 2 Echief. 3 And. 4 He be. 5 That. 6 Vnto this kyngs the Britons dide repeire. 7 Octa. 8 Eosa. 9 Were escaped. 10 Lothyanne. 11 The Mss. addes In marciall actes full aduenterous. 12 And 13 Was put. 14 Than so to

That he vsed [the water ofte] to alaye
His drynkes, all his sores to be medifyed[2]
Whiche they venomyd, with poyson on a daye
Of whiche he dyed, and went to blisse for aye
In the carole, besyde his brother dere
As to suche a prynce, it dyd ryght well affere.

The reygned had then.ix, and thyrtye yere
And in the yere of Chrystes natiuyte
Fyue hundreth and syxtene, then was full clere
The realme he lefte, in good felicyte
Arthure his sonne, to haue the royalte
To reygne and rule the realme, ỹ then was able
That of his age, was none so cõmendable.

The.lxxiii. Chapiter.

¶ Arthure kyng of Britayne, reygned. xxvi.yere. Howe the kynge bare syxe banners in his warre, and howe he renewed and increased the table rounde, and helde vp royally the rule of it, and howe he conquered Irelande and Denmarke with all the ysles of theim.

ARthure his sõne vp growen, then peerlesse
Throughout ỹ world approued of his age
Of wyt and strength, beawte and[4] largesse
Of persone hye, aboue his Baronage
And other all, of Brytons vasselage
By his shoulders, exceded in longitude.
Of all membres, full fayre in latytude,

Kynge Arthure.

At Circestre then of.xv.yere of age
When Dubryk[5] archbishoppe of Carilyon
With

[1] With that water. [2] Modyfied. [3] Or. [4] And also. [5] Dubricius.

With all estates within his herytage
Assembled there Duke, earle, lorde, and baron
And commentye of all the regyon
Upon his hedde did sett the dyademe
In royall wyse, as wele hym dyd beseme.

¶The yere of Chrystes byrth. v.C. and syxtene
Was whan he was crowned all with golde
Where than he made, a bowe for to sustene.
The chrysten fayth, the churche also to vpholde
The peace and lawes, mawgre who so other wold
The Sarons also, to warre and destroye
That of longe tyme, had done vs greate anoy

¶king Arthure sought ỹ Sarons in Scotland
His chiefe baner of goules was to see
In ymage of our Lady of golde enthronde
Crowned of golde, as freshe as it mygt be
His other banner was of the Trynite
Of golde and goulis of saynt george was ỹ third[6]
The .iiii. was Brutus armes knowen and kyd[7]

¶The fyfte baner of goulis, iii. crownes of gold
The syxte of Goulis, a dragon of golde fyne
With hoost full great, of Britons ỹ were bolde
On Douglas water the Sarons he did vntwine
Colgrim ỹ was their capitayne fled fro thyne
To Yorke anon, and it with people helde
His men then slayne, the kyng had so the felde.

¶Cheldrik & Baldoffe,[8] two dukes of Germanie
With hostes great, then landed in Britayne
To Colgrym came, and brent that lande in hye[10]

1 His. 2 It. 3 Als. 4 Werre on. 5 Hath doone this lande. 6 Third. 7 Inuix. 8 Baldulfe 9 The. 10 Thorby.

But

But to Arthure kyng Howell came full fayne
With hoost great, his systers sonne certayne
Of lesse Britayne, that with his vncle went
Against Colgrym to fyght in his entent.

¶ Cador the duke, that tyme of Cornewayle
The kynges brother of his mothers syde
Came to the kyng, with people ẏ might auayle
So dyd all other, of all Britayne full wyde
With their enemies then met of mikell pryde
And vaynquesshed theim at Lyncolne then seging
For whiche they fled full faste ẏ siege leauing

¶ To Calidon wood nere vnto the sea
Where the kynges two, theim seged sore about
That for famishment & fought, they swore to be
The kynges men and their lande throughoute
For to voide their people, of all the land out & out
Colgrym, Baldolffe, and also duke Cheldryk
That chiestayns were w dughty duke Cordzik

¶ And leyde hym hostage, all this to spede
And when they were vpon the sea agayne
They landed eft at Totnesse so in dede
And seged Bathe where Arthure was full faine
Their hostages honged in their syght ful plaine
And with them fought Colgrym & Baldof slewe
To Cordzyk gaue westsex to be his man trewe.

¶ Duke Cador then folowed vpon the chace
And slewe Cheldzyk, and his of Saxonie
And to the kyng agayne came for this case
That kyng beseged was in Albanye

Wherfore

1 Hoele. 2 Full grete. 3 So. 4 With full grete.
Nygh to the cite. 6 Famyshte and fayntе 7 Baldulphe.
Whiche Capetayns 9 Cerdike. 10 Saxonry. 11 Hoele was seged.

Wherfore they went, with hoste full manly
To Aclud, where Scottes & peightes[1] laye about
Theim discomfyted[2], and hym delyuered oute.[3]

The Scottes & peightes, he droue into oute yles[3]
Of Scotland then, & there became his men
To lyue in peace, that euer were full of wyles.
[But Gwillomare, the kyng of Irelande then
Ouer kyng Arthure, full harde warre beganne
With hoste full greate, of Iryshe and Saxonye][4]
In Scotlande brent, and also[5] in Albanye.

¶ But then ỹ kyng hym met, & with hym faught
Discomfyted hym, and put hym to the flygt
Unto Irelande, with batayle sore vnsaught
Of Scotlande, then [of Lowthyan] by ryght
The kyng was then, that [loth of Lowthian hight][8]
The fyrste knyghte, was so of the table rounde
To Arthure true, & also his lyegeman founde

¶ His syster Anne, vnto his wyfe had wed
On whome he gate the curteous knyght Gawen[9]
In Dunbar castell, his lyfe [there] he ledde
And Aguzell[10] was kyng, that tyme certayne
Of Albanye, and Uryan, of Murref[11] playne
The kyng was then,[12] to kyng Arthure full trewe
His lyegeman aye, [and chaunged not of][13] newe.

¶ The[14] kyng Arthure, then wedded to his wyfe
Gwaynore faiereste of any creature
That tyme accompted, [for passyng birth natyfe][15]
So Iuly[16] fayre, she was of her fygure
More aungelyk, then womannyshe [of] nature

In

[1] Pictes. [2] Discomfite. [3] The out.
[4] And of disceite they sent by their fals giles
To Gillomaure the kyng of Irelonde then
Whiche with greate hoste of Irish and Saxony.
[5] Als. [6] Into
[7] Loth of Lothian. [8] Was of full greate myght. [9] Gawayne. [10] Aguisell
[11] Murefe. [12] That. [13] That were of olde and. [14] This. [15] Any life. [16] Gyly.

In so ferfurth, mē thought them selues wel eased
Her to beholde, so well al folke she pleased.

¶ The table rounde, of knightes honourable
That tyme were voyde, by great defycience
For many were, through actes marcyable
Dispended then, by warres violence
Wherfore the kyng, then of his sapience
The worthyest of euery realme aboute
In the table rounde, then sent without doute.

¶ The thre kynges foresayde of Scotlande
Two kynges also of Walys, full chyualrous
Howell the kyng of lesse Bryteyne lande
And duke Cador, of Cornewayle corageous
[And worthy Gawen, gentyll and amarous]
And other fel, theyr rule was wronges to oppresse
With their bodyes, where lawe myght not redresse

The fayth, ỹ church, Maydens, & widowes clene
Chyldren also, that were in tender age
The cōmon profyte, euer more to sustene
Agayne enchauntmentes, his body for to wage
[Agayne whiche crafte, of the deuelles rage
Theim to destroye, and all kinde of sorcerye
Of whiche were many, that tyme in Brytaynye.]

¶ On whitsonday, alwaye euery yere
They shoulde eche one at the feaste bē w̄ the king
In anye place, where euer so that he were
But yf he were in prysone, or harde lettyng
By dede of armes, death, or elles sycke lyeng
In whiche cases, one of the table rounde

Shulde

1 Nygh. 2 Aforesayde. 3 Hoell
4. Knyghtes of the Rounde Table were made Auntyrous.
5 sette. edit. alt. MS. 6 Suany. 6 Represse. 7 Inpressa.
8 Theym to destroy and Sorcery outrage),
Of which was that tyme in Britayne
Grete wonte and custume yf I shuld be playne. 9 Been.
10 Hade.

Shulde seke hym all ye yere, tyll here were found.

¶ Also their rule was eche one should tell
His owne actes of warrys auenture
Afore the kyng at meate howe hym bytell
In his trauayle or of his misauenture
The Secretorye, should put it in scrypture
For none auaunt, it should not then betake
But for his rule to holde, ye king then dyd it make

¶ Also to steare & moue, yonge knightes corage
To seche armes and warrys of worthynesse
And of dyuerse landes, to learne the language
That elles wolde lyue at home in ydylnesse
For honoure & ease, abideth not together doutlesse
Also it moueth these poore & yonge knighthode
To be auaunced, by theyr ladies lyuelode.

¶ For doute it not, Ladies ne gentylwemen
No cowardes loue, in manet that is abusyon
And shamefull also reprzeuable amonges men
His cowardyse doth him greate confusyon
A man to withdrawe him, by feynt collusyon
For better is, with honour for to dye
Then with lyfe, ay ashamed for to be

¶ The somer nexte, Arthure went to Irzeland
With batayle sore forfoughten yt conquered
And of the kyng had homage of that lande
To holde of hym, so was he of hym feared
And also gate as chronycles haue vs lered
Denmarke, Friselande, Gotelande, & Norway
Islelande, Grzeneland, Thille of Man & Orkynay

1. Aboute all to that He. MS. He. editall. 2 euerech 3 He. He
4 For. 5. To the 6 Been. 7 Man. 8 Ills.
9 And in Armethode it is the grettest honour. 10 The life.
11 And of the Kynge homage for that londe
He tohe gyrde porto swere be the crosse of his swerde
To holde of hym, so was he of hym ferde.

The conquered these, to hold of hym euermoze
He made kyng Loth that was of Lowthian
Of Nozway kyng, wher he had fought full soze
And Lowthyan he made his soonne Gawayne
The kyng to hold of hym by homage then[2]
Foz Nozway was his veray heritage
Discent of bloodde of kyng Sechelynes[3] lynage

The kyng Arthure then, thzough Chzistētie moost
And conquerour aboue all kynges royall (famed
Was thē moost doubted of māhode & best named
But kynges and pzinces of Septentrionall
His to pzesent moost high emperiall
Eche daye came newe, that then moze like it semid
An heuenly life, then erthely as menne demid

He held his houshold, and the rounde table
Some time at Edenburgh, some tyme at Striue
Of kynges renomed, and mooste honourable (line
At Carleile sumwhile, at Alclud his citee fyne
Emōg all his knightes and ladies full femenine
At Bamburgh also and Ebzauk citee
At London at Wynchester, with greate royalte

At Carlion, Cardif, and Aualyne[13] ---
In Cozniwaile also Douer and Eatrelegion[14] ---
And in Scotlande at Perthe[15] and Dunbzytain
At Dunbar, Dumfrise and sainct Johns towne
All of wozthy knightes, moo then a legion
At Donydoure also in Murith region
And in many other places, bothe citee and towne

But euer as nexte, the valey is the hill

After

1 Of Lothiane. 2 In certayne. 3 Sienēmes. 4 to 5 All maner.
at. 7 To his presence. 8 Tryualyne. 9 Knyghtes famouse.
ere the MS. addr Thorough oute the Worlde named moste noble. 10 &c.
13 Auallon. 14 Caerlegion clere. 15 Perch
16 Donydour in Murreis Region in Scota
and in many other Citees fayre and newe
The cause required for rayseyng of the peple

At witsondaye to se, his knightes faine
He sette his feast royall, the sooth to sayne
By fourty dayes, for all that there woulde been
Moost for his knightes, that he desired to seen

At whiche feast he, and the quene also
Crouned were, with royall diademe
By Dubrice, that tharchibishop was tho
At Carlion as the churche did deme
With all rialtie as well did beseme
Tharchebishopes of London and Ebrank
Came to that feast, and had full muche thanke

At the Enoyntyng of this mooste noble kyng
Tharchebishop of London the right arme
Tharchbishop of Yorke by all wityng
The left held vp, without any harme
While the people to see that sight, did swarme
This was their charge and verey dewe seruise
Of anonycion tyme, to dooe and exercise

Kyng Agurell that was of Albanye
The kyng Posses of Southwalis that hight
And of Northwalis Ewayn the kyng manly
And duke Cader of Cornwaile by right
A fore the kyng bare foure sweordes full bright
Whiche was seruice of greate antiquite
For their landes dewe, to his souerente

A fore ỹ quene Gwaynour, the queenes caine
Of Southwalis, Northwalis and Albanye
And the duches of Cornwaile, of greate fame
Right well bee seen of chere benyngly

Eche

1 Wrote. 2 Saint Dubrice. 3 The Prelacye full well dide hym beseme.
4 Eborank. 5 Deserved. 6 At thanoyntment. 7 Without. 8 Their mytres on their heades in copes arraied warme. 9 Annuicion
10 Pelles. 11 Ewayne. 12 Cador. 13 Upright. 14 Olde. 15 Orke. 16 Of Albanye.

Eche of theim bare on her hande on hie
A turteldoue, that was of coloure white
To please the queene, so was her moste delite.

¶ Syr Kay was then the duke of Aungeoy
At Parys made by Arthur and create
His stewarde was that had with mekell ioye
A thousande knightes, [to serue early and late]
[Ententyfly not feynt, wery ne mate]
Duryng the feast, clothed [all] in Ermyn
For best araye, that he [could best] ymagyn.

¶ Sir Bedwer then at that feast was Boteler
A thousande knightes with hym consociate
The feast to serue, of wynes good and clere
Clad all in graye, of pelury preordinate
That was full riche, accordyng to there estate
Thetis goddesse of waters ther had no might
For Bacchus god of wynes, shed his power right

¶ Thoulādes many, of lordes & knightes honorable
Eche daye duryng the feast imperiall
Afore the kyng and quene incomperable
To masse and meate, went in especiall
A thousande ladies of estate temporall
Besyde thousandes that were of lesse degree
Wyues and wydowes with other virginitee.

The. lxxv. Chapiter.

¶ A good cause to make knightes worthy and coragious, and ladies and gentilwomen to lyue in great clennes.

[1 Upon. 2 Theire ... 3 With hym consociate
4 Thanlie, jauntile, Conynge no debate..
5 Couth then. 6 That.]

THer was no knight, accompted of honoure
But if he wer, in warre approued thrise
Nor with ladies, beloued as paramoure
Whiche caused knightes, armes to exercyse
To be vertuous, and clene of life and wise
It comforte also ladies, and theyr femynitee
To lyue the more, in perfite chastitee.

AND when this feast royall was dissolued
The kyng rewarded so highly, eche estate
And in his mynde, ymagened and inuolued
Howe sone and when, at tyme preordinate
They might agayn bee consociate
And commaunded theim, at the nexte Pentecost
There for to bee with him, both least and moste.

DUbricyus, then archebyshop of Cairlyon
Wekely ceased, and hole forsoke his cure
Purposyng so of good religion
An heremytes lyke, thence forwarde to endure
In whose steade, Dauid of life full pure
Was set to rule the churches dignitee
To Gods pleasaunce with all libertee.

TO Wangauero, the sea Pontificall
Of Chichester he gaue withouten lette
Of Wynchester with the cõmoditees all
To Duuyan he gaue, and hym in sette
To God and the churche, as fell of dewe dette
Thylle of alclud also Pontificall
To Eledoure, he graunted, as might befall.

AS then befell, the feast of Whytsondaye

1 Recompte 2 Neither 3 Been 4 Comforted 5 Honeste. That
6 To been 7 Beer 8 Ermyte 9 All the 10 See 11 Circestre 12 Eledenne.

That all his knightes, of the table rounde
To his presence, were commen in good araye
And euery knight, his auenture that stounde
Had tolde the kyng, as his order was founde
Whiche aduentures, the kyng made all be writte
In his register, euer to be knowen and weten.

The.lxxvii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Galaad came to kyng Arthure and atcheued ỹ seege perelous in the rosid table, & howe the saynt Graal apered at supper in ỹ hal, wherfore he made a vowe, neuer to abide two nightes in one place, to tyme he knewe what it was, and that he might se it agayne.

GAlaad that tyme, was.xb.yere of age
The goodlyest afore, that men had seen
Whō Lañcelot gat in very clene spousage
On Pelles doughter, ỹ kyng full longe had been
Of Uenedose, that northwales is nowe, men wene
Clene armed, came at meate & obeyed the kyng
The quene also, and estates there syttyng.

And sate hym[3] downe, in the siege perelous
Of the table rounde, where none durst sitte afore
But Joseph, that was full religious
That made it so, ere[4] Galaad was bore
And kyng Arthure, that satte therin therfore[6]
And neuer moo, that it had ought presumed
But they were brent therin, shamed & consumed.

Whiche Joseph sayd, afore that tyme ful long
In Newyns booke, the Britayn chronicler
As writen is, the Britons iestes emong

Not forgetyn. [2]That men afore. [3]Right. [4]Or. [5]Were. [6]To fore.

That Galaad the knight and virgyne clere
Shuld it acheue and auentures in all fere
Of the seyntgraale and of the great Briteyn
And afterwarde a virgyne, dye certeyne

¶But the knightes all then of the round table
Conceyued well and fully then beleued
He was thesame persone incomperable
Of whō Merlyn sayd euer shuld been wel cheued
Moste fortunate of all knightes that then lyued
For whiche they all anone to hym attende
In all thynges that to knighthode appende.

¶At supper as he sate agayn at euen
In thesame seege with full knightly constaunce
That proued well, whiche made theim al beleuen
That by his rule and noble gouernaunce
To all knightes he shuld do great pleasaunce
In speciall to all of that order
Ful greate worshyp and all knightly honoure

¶So sodenly, doores and wyndowes al clapped
With hydeous noyce, farre passyng meruelous
Opened and sperred, al by theim selfs fast rapped
For whiche thei trust of some cause meruelous
As with that noyse the saynt Graall precious
Flowe thyse about, within the hall full ofte
Flytteryng ful fast, aboue theim high on lofte.

¶And as it came sodenly vnknowen
Right so it went awaye withouten lees
The knightes all that tyme that had it sawen
Amerueled were, of it douteles

Wherfore

1 Schieve. 2 till in. 3 Fane. 4 Speciall. 5 Fast 6 Shett.
7 Some care auent[ure] rouse. 8 And. 9 Flewe. 10 Fletheryng
11 Whiche had it seen. 12 So douteles

Wherfore they all with wepens gan to preſſe
To ſee and wete, what thyng it myght bee
But whether it went, they could nomore it ſee..

The.lxxvii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Galaad and the knightes of the rounde table made theyr auowes to ſeke the ſaynt Graal, ſome tyll thei found it, and ſome for a yere.

BUt on ỹ morowe, Galaad & other knightes
Afore the kyng by one aſſent compered
Where Galaad made his auowes & high-
Neuer to lye but he were preſoned (tes
In one place in no maner of grounde
Two nightes together, no where tyll he it ſee
Beſought the kyng his knight that he might bee.

¶ The kyng hym made a knight of ỹ table roũd
And armes wolde haue geue hi, but he wold none
Afore that he gatte theim in a ſtronge grounde
By auenture, or els vpon his foone
And tooke his leaue to paſſe ſo forth anone
The knightes all, then of the rounde table
Graunt hym ſeruice a yere, then perdurable.

The.lxxviii.Chapiter.

¶ The lamentacion of kyng Arthure for his knightes vpon theyr departyng from hym, & of the rule whiche Galaad made emõg the knightes in the queeſt of the ſaynt Graal, and howe at Auelon he found a childe of theſame armes, a ſpeare & a ſweorde that Joſeph leſte there for hym, which armes, Arutragus, Lucyus and Conſtantyne bare of ſiluer a croſſe of Goules.

For

1 Preas. 2 Writ. 3 That it. 4 Couth. 5 For tobe.
6 Or els so seke that he myght not courneia. 7 Vna Strange.

FOr whiche the kyng w heuy & dulful chere
Thus sayd: O God what shall I do or say
That my knightes al, which I had i quere[2]
Thus sodenly fro me, that passe awaye
They[3] my blisse, my hertes hele eche[4] daye
My landes helpe, custodyes[5] of my crowne
And membres of my corps, to kepe my region.

O God, y[6] deth wold brest myne hert on twayne
Who shall mayntayne, my crowne & my ryghtes
I trowe nomore, to see you eft agayne
Thus hole together, and so goodly knightes
Would God, I might make myne auowe & high-
To passe with you, in what land so ye go (tes
And take my parte with you, both in well and wo.

This Galaad then, rode forth, with[8] his route
At euery waye, he made a knight for to departe
To tyme they were, all seuerally[9] gone oute
And none with hym, so had echone[10] theyr parte
And yf any[11] met, another at any arcte[12]
His rule was so, he shuld his felowe tell
His auentures, what so that hym befell.

And also sone, as theyr waye laye on sūdry wise
They shulde departe, and mete nomore agayn
But aduenture, it made of[13] exercyse
Of diuers stretes, that together layne
Of this mater, is nomore to seyne.[13]
But when he had, his felowes all conueyed
He tooke his waye, full like a knight arayed.

Of auenture he came to Auelon

Where

1 Herte. 2 Iuerte. 3 They were. 4 Every. 5 And kepers. 6 If
7 That. 8 So with. 9 Severably. 10 Sone. 11 Ane Arte. 12 By.
13 Ende as it seide thus. to departe agayne. 4 And.

Where that he fouȳd a ſhylde, that was ful white
A croſſe therin of Gowlys, by it one
A ſpeare alſo, a ſweard of great delyte
The whiche with hym, he bare awaye full tyte
He gyrde hym with the ſwerde, anon full ryght
The ſhylde he hunge, vpon his ſhoulder lyght.

The ſpere he toke on hande, ful lyke a knyght
But there he founde in bokes clerely wryten
Howe Joſeph loſte that ſhylde, therin forth ryght
When he there dyed, as then it was well weten
And alſo in ſcrypture, lefte there wryten
That no man ſhould it beare, without miſcheue
But one that ſhould, ȳ doughteous liege acheue.

That ſame was wryten, ryght there of ȳ ſwerd
Whiche Nacyan lefte there, when he dyed
And of the ſpeare, he was nothyng a ferde
All, yf the ſame parell of it was notifyed
Lyke as to fore of it was ſpecifyed
But when that he had, laboured ſo foure yere
He founde in walys, the Saintgraal full clere.

Then rode he forth, vnto the holy lande
Through god and holy inſpiracyon
To god he gaue his ſeruyce, and hym bonde
To chaſtyte, and greate contemplacyon
And kyng was made, by hole coronacyon
Of Garras then, and duke of Orborȳk
Of whome the people, full well dyd theym lyke.

Syr Boers with hym went, and syr Percyuall
And other moo of the table rounde.

Whome.

* in. Edit. alt. 2 Furth. 3 Full.
4 For a token that Criſte ſhuld not be forgetyn. 5 Atchieve.
6 The ſame Wrytynge. 7 Nacian 8 Thus went he furth as it is.
9 And. 10 Sank greall. 11 Creacioun. 12 Farras. 13 Than dide.
14 Boos.

Whome knyghtes he made of the [seynt Graall]
Whiche order so he ordeyned then, and founde
At Sarras, that to Egypt lande doth bounde
To lyue chaste, and maynteyne chrystentye
Lyke as Joseph dyd of Armathye.

But longe after vpon the whitsondaye
Sir Boers and Percyuall came to the kyng
With knyghtes all, that lyuyng were that day
At Carlyon, but Percyuall dyd bryng
[Unto that courte full dolorous tidyng]
Syr Galaad his herte closed all with golde
Unto the kyng full openly and tolde.

Howe Galaad had acheued the auenture
In kyng Pellis householde with great honoure
That called was ỹ saint Graall by scrypture
And kyng was made, by his worthy laboure
[As he that was of knyghthode a worthy floure]
Of Sarras so and duke of Orborik
Beside Egypte, where there was none hym lyke

Where thenne he made .xii. knyghtes of the order
Of [saynt Graall] in full signifycacyon
Of the table, whiche Joseph was the founder
At Aualon, as Mewyn made relacyon.
In token of the table refyguracyon
Of the brotherhede of Chrystes souper & maundie
Afore his death of hyghest dignytee.

The saynt Graall what it is.

And howe Galaad [then] at his deth you prayed
His herte to bury, beside kyng Eualake
And duke Saraphe, in golde thus arayed

Where

1 Sanke riale. 2 So. 3 Forto. 4 Bors.
5 Out of Sarras without any lettynge. 6 Ha. 7 Eschewed 8 Sanke riall.
9 Than. 10 The Sanke Roiall. 11 Maketh. 12 And refiguracion. 13 At.
14 Ewalake. 15 Seraph.

Where they be buryed, beside Joseph their make
And thus muche he prayed you to do, for his sake
In the chapell of our Lady, Chrystes mother,
At Glastenbury, with dyuers sayntes other

¶ This kyng Arthure with Princes & barons al
And all knyghtes of the rounde table
To Glastenbury then rode as myght befall
And there enterred the hert of Galaad honorable
With all seruyce for the death accordable
And ouer it he hanged his shylde that he bare
The whiche afore, saint George armes were.

¶ And when this feaste, was come vnto an ende
The kyng Arthure also and quene Gwaynour
To all estates, greate gyftes gaue and sende
As they were wonte eche yere afore
For his great honoure encreased more and more
Of hyghe knyghthode, houshold and all largesse
Aboue all princes moste famous he was doutlesse

¶ These were knightes then of the table rounde
Norued the Earle that tyme of Gloucestre
Of shrewisbury, therle Heralde that stounde
Therle Mawren also of Worcestre
Therle Ingence that was of Leycestre
Arthegall therle of Warwyke full corageous
Therle Curson of Chestre full bounteons

¶ Kymar then Earle of Caunterbury
When the Earle of Bathe, and Jonathall
Thearle of Dorcestre, Gallus erle of Salisbury
The earle Gurgen, of Herforde knowen ouer all
Beyse

1 Thus he you praied for oure lade sake,
Wher they be buried beside Joseph their make. 2 The. 3 With
4 Als of. 5 Longe. 6 He bore. 7 Wore. 8 By. 9 Alwaye eche
10 At that same feste ayre house euermore. 11 Kyghtode. 12 He lete.
13 The knyghtes. 14 Harolde. 15 And Erle. 16 Kymare the Erle Thau
17 Dorcen 18 Gallok 19 Erle Gurgoyne.

Beuyse, Earle of Oxenforde, that men dyd call
Gwerande[2] earle, that was of Excestre
And Paradoure[3], the earle of wynchester

Cador the duke, that then was of Cornewayle
The kynges brother was, on the syster syde
Dame Igrene[4] was their mother, without fayle
Gwytelene[5] earle of Carlele, was that tyde
Waldeue[6] the duke, cõmended and landifyed
Of Northumberlande, a lorde of greate power
Fro Humbar north, to Twede then was full clere

Kynge Aguzell, that was of Albany
Kyng Uriayn, of Murref, with Ewayne[7]
His sonne, that was corageous and manly
And the noble and curteous knyght Gawayne
That kyng was then, of all fayre Lowthyan[9]
And syster sonne, vnto the kyng Arthure
Mordred his brother, was of the same ordoure.

Loth of Lowthian[9], that kyng was of Norway
Of Lowthyan[9], that kyng afore had been
Father to Gawayne, and murdred[10] was that daye
Kyng Uryan of South walys I wene
The kyng Pellis[11], of Northwalis full clene
The kyng Howell[12] also[13] of lytell Britayne
Boers[14] and Hester[15], Degionaunt[16] and Ewayn[17].

Syr Percyuall, Launcelot, Delake and kaye
Sir Colingraunt[18] Bedewer, and syr Degarye
Geryn of Charters, ỹ douzepers of Fraunce gaye
The kynges of man, Orkeney, Irelande all thre
Of Islande, Gotlande, and dukes of dignyte

Of

[1] Beaufitz. [2] Emerade. [3] Peridure. [4] Of the sester. [5] Eugerne.
[6] Gusthelyne. [7] Waldin. [8] Ewayne. [9] Lothiane. [10] Mordred. [11] Ewes.
[12] Hoell. [13] Als. [14] Bors. [15] Hestor. [16] Degrevaunte. [17] Ewayne.
[18] Colgrevaunt

Of Poztyngale, Nauerne, and Cateloyne
Of Spayne the kinges, & the duke of Burgoyne

Syr Lyonell Gryffith, Kynkar Olenius
Donalde Macoyle, Cynmarke, & Gozbonian
Kynbalyn Rydzan, Eualake, and Carthelius
Crade, and Cradok, Dunwallon, and Mozgan
Gadwaloure, Eneas, and Ternuan
And many mo, ỹ were full longe to wzyte
Whiche with my style, I canne not nowe endyte.

The.lxxix.Chapiter.

Howe the embassade of the Emperoure Lucius was receyued solemplye, and presented the Emperours letters vnto kynge Arthure, and also of the tenoure of the same letters, the whiche Lucius sent to hym.

But whyles the kyng sate in his trone royal
His pzynces all, and knyghtes of dignite
Aboute him there thambassadé imperyall
Were fayze bzought vnto his royall dignite
That Pzynces were of authozyte
Of moste rype age, and reuerende chere
With Olliffe Bzaunchies, in their landes clere

Otokyn of message, and legacye
A stately pase, vnto his hye pzesence
Where they offered, of Lucius Heberye
The letters then, on knees with reuerence
Of whiche this, the wozdes and compzehence
As foloweth nowe, when they were reed and sene
As chzonyclers wzyten, thus do contene.

Lucius

1 Kyncure. 2 Clenyus. 3 Napcoile.
3 Cimmarke. 2 edit. alt. Aymmarde Ms. 4 Cathelyus.
5 Cadwalowre 7 The Imbassiate. 8 Brought yane 9 Royalte. 10 Whiche.
11 and of. 12 Londes
1 At token. 2 edit. alt. In tokyn. Ms. 13 Paase.
15 Cronycles so wretyn doth.

¶Lucius of Rome, the Emperoure
Procurator for all the hole senate
Of the Publyke prokyte, chiefe gouernoure
By hole Senate made and denominate
To Arthure kyng of Britayne procreate
Sendeth gretyng, lyke as thou hast deserued
Nowe in Fraunce, which was to vs preserued.

¶Amerueled much, of wronges that ÿ hast done
Within our lande of Fraunce by great rygour
Without ryght, that better had bene vndone
But yf thy wytte amende, thy foule erroure
That syth of Fraunce, then were the gouernour
No trybute payde, but as thyne owne conquest
Haste holde it aye, vnder thyne areste.

¶And for thou haste no wyll, it to amende
And were so prowde, to do so cruell a dede
kyng Froyle to sle, to vs that dyd apende.
And mekell more, for cause thou takest nó hede
Of the gate imperyall, that we lede
To whiche all landes obey, and paye truage
Saue thou alone, gaynstandest of thyne outrage

¶Wherfore we byd straygthly and cõmaunde
That from August nowe, nexte within a yere
Thou come to Rome, and pay that we demaunde
The truage, which thou haste of thy power
Of Britayne longe withholde, so in feare
And thy defautes, amende thou did in Fraunce
By sentence of the Senates ordynaunce.

¶And elles, we shall approche to thy countre

1 Late in. 2 Mervailynge. 3 Wythoutyn. 4 Thou. 5 Holden yt it. And
6 Thine own. 7 was. 8 Such trusle. 8a muche. 9 Norne.
Greate. edit. adt. Abate. 10 Whiche. 11 Sause.
12 W. Rotlyn.

And what so thy foly hath vs be reste
With sweordes, wee shall it make restored bee
Till our senate, as first it was infeste
The liuelode, that thy father so the leste
Thou art els like for thine intrusion
To lose and be brought into confusion

Wrytten at Roome in the consistorye
By whole auise, of all the wise senate
At Pasche last past, to byde in memorie
Their regestred and determinate
Lest thy youthed, our letters and the date
Would couer, with feyned forgetfulnesse
Trustyng in vs, the same defaute I gesse

With that the kyng, went to the Giaũtes toure
With princes all that were of his counsaile
By their aduise, to wryte to the themperour
For his honour, and for his gouernall,
Of whiche so wise, would not for gette ne faill
So well were made to Lucius and endite
Whiche saied right thus, as in my stile I wryte

The.lxxx. Chapiter.

¶ The letter that kyng Arthure sent again to Lucius themperour of Roome.

ARthure kyng of all the greate Brytain
And Emperour of Rome, by title of right
Whiche deforced by Lucius Romain
Pretendyng hym for Emperour of might
Unto the same Lucius, for thyne vnright
Usurper of the sea emperiall
Sendeth gretyng, as enemie moost mortall

1 To. 2 Bryng. 3 Forgete. 4 With. 5 The. 6 With wronge-doe.
Lucius. 8 Of. 9 Cee.

¶ To the senate of Roome it is well knowen
Howe Julyus Ceaser with iniurye
The truage had, Brytain was brought so lowe
By helpe of erle Androgeus, and his traytorye
That brought hym in, by his false policye
Without right or title of discent
Or any right, that to the senate appent

¶ And what so he had, then by iniurye
Leefull to vs, nowe is it to withstande
For what euer thyng, is take vniustly
Maye neuer be had, as I can vnderstande
By any other, to hold it with strong hand
Frome hym that had it, well and rightfully
By none other maye bee had lawfully

¶ By whiche reason, the wrong we shall defende
And hold our realme so, in our first astate
Of seruage free, as it to Brute apende
Who held it free, afore that Roome bare date
Whose right to vs, is nowe determinate
And by suche right, as thou dooest nowe pretende
We maye clayme Roome, & to thempire ascende

¶ For kyng Belyn, that was our auncetour
And Brenny also, the kyng of Albanye
All Roomain did wyn, by conquest there
Of Roome thei had, and all greate Italie
And slough themperour, by their great maistrie
And crouned were in the sea empiriall
Wher no prince was, that tyme to theim egall

¶ But yet we haue, a better title of right

1 Duke. 2 The Senate 3 So nowe forth. 4 Maner. 5 Vnjustfullie
6 Thy. 7 His. 8 The Empere. 9 Als. 10 Theire Conquestre. 11 And.
12 In their power by their grete victory 13 See.

To

To thempire[1] whiche nowe we will pretende
For Constantyne, sainct Elyn soonne of right[2]
By right of bloodde, of Constaūce downe discēde
Emperour was, that Roome did well defende
Agaīn Marence, and his feloes tweyn[3]
Whiche there made, muche Chriſtē people [to dien][4]

Martinian kyng of greate[6] Brytain
By whole decre, and will of the senate
Was emperour of Roome, and ruled almaigne
Whose rightes we haue, and al their [whole] astate
And heire of bloodde, borne and generate
Wherfore we clayme, the throne empirial
Frome hens furth, by lawe Judicial

As to the daye, whiche[8] thou hast vs sette
To paye to Roome, the tribute and truage
We shall bee their, to chalenge of dewe debte
Truage of Roome, with all [their rerage][9]
And to enioyse and hold our heritage
Of Roome citee, to kepe the souereigne sea[10]
With all that longeth to themperalite[11]

And if thou wilt me sonner haue or seeke
Bryng Romanye with the, wher so thou will
With me I shall bryng, Brytain eke
And whiche of vs, that daye maye other kyll
Bere Roome with hym, and Brytain also[13] their till
Wryten at our citee of Cairlion
By whole aduise of all our region

The.lxxxi. Chapiter

The gaue to thambassatours royall giftes, and sent his

k ii letters

[1] The Empere. [2] Myght. [3] Tweyn. [4] There. [5] Deye.
[6] greate. [7] As. [8] The whiche. [9] The arerage. [10] See. [11] The Imperialte.
[12] all so than. [13] Als.

letters with his ambassatis to passe to Roome with theim
in cõpaignie & he with his hoost folowed sone after theim.

The kyng then gaue vnto ỹ hie ambassate
Full riche giftes & golde enough to spend
And bad theim giue their lordes in whole
His letters so, whiche he then to hym send (senate
And bad theim saie, that soner then he wend
He should hym se, before the daye assigned
In trust of whiche, theim with his seale assigned

This noble kyng Arthure, his princes prayed
And barons all, and knightes honorable
To passe with hym, at wagis to bee payed
With their power, and their retenue able
For to directe, his right full resonable
Marciall actes, thempire to obtein
To whome thei all [consented, whole and clene]

And with the kyng, thei passed forth anone
Into Brytain, wher Howell then was kyng
Wher then he hard, ỹ countre make greate mone
For a Gyaunt, horrible in all thyng
That rauished had, by his cruell werkyng
Kyng Howell sister, Elein without pere
Bytwene his armes, was slain and layed on bere

For whiche ỹ kyng, to [mount Michell thẽ wẽt
With that Gyaunt, that faught a bataile sore
With Caliborne his sweord, or that he stint
He sleugh hym there, to death for euermore
And charged Kay, for his victorie thore
To smyte his hedde of, then for memorye

In

1 To. 2 horse. 3 He signed 4 By marciall. 5 Consente the rest to repre
6 Rock. 7 Michelle mounte 8 Ther.

In worshipp of his worthy victorye

¶ In whiche mount,[2] kyng Howell[3] hir tõbe made
A chapell faire, theron[4] edefied
Sith that tyme hether, vpon that place abade
Wher that Gyaunt, and she were hompyed
But all his hoost, and people hym magnified
[And all the landes about, wholy enioyed][5]
[Of] that Gyauntes death, [6]so felly anoyed

¶ The kynges all, of Portyngale and Spain
Of Nauerne also, and eke of Catheloyne
Unto hym came, and dukes of Almaigne
The dukes of Sauoy, and of Burgoyne
Douze peres of Fraunce, and the duke of Lorain
The kynges also, of Denmarke and Irelande
Of Norwey, [Islande and of] Gotelande

¶ Through Fraũce, Burgoyn[9], Sauoye & Lum
Into Italy, and so through all Tuskayn (bardie
Fro Tuskayn, then so into Romany
To Awbe ryuer, kyng Arthure came so than
And [loged on that water as] manne
Wher with Lucius, he faught, in[11] battaile strong
Either other proued, with strokes sore emong

¶ But kyng Arthure, and the[12] princes all
His knightes also there, of the round table
So manfully theim bare, that daye ouer all
That neuer their better were seen, nor more able
So were Romaynes,[14] that daye full[15] cõmendable
[Ne none][16] night dooe better in any wise
So worthely thei faught without feyntise

 And

1 For. 2 Mount so. 3 Hoell. 4 Therouer he.
5 The londes aboute also highly enyoied 6 That theyr sore. 7 Als
8 And of Iselande and. 9 Burboyne. 10 On that water hym loged as a
11 2. 12 Ethe his 13 Alle. 14 The Romayns als. 15 Were. 16 No man

And at the last the Brytons bare the bell
And had the felde, and all the victorye
Wher Arthure sleugh, as chronicles dooeth tell
[Themperour Lucius Hibery][1]
And [toke his feloe][2] [contributorye][3]
But Lucyus [hedde, to][4] Roome for his truage
He sent [his corps][5] also, for their [arerage][6]

The. lxxxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the senate and the citee of Roome, mette hym in seuen processions, and crouned hym and there wintred hym by all the whole winter.

The senate sent vnto the kyng Arthure
And prayed hym, thempire to admit
Whiche became hym, & semed hym of nature
As Constantyne did in the honour sitte
And al truage forthward[8], thei would remitte
Of greate Brytain, neuer to aske it more
But make it free, as [it was euer before][7]

¶ To whiche prayer, kyng Arthure did consent
And came to Roome, in royall high astate
Wher the citee, by good and whole assent
Full richely hym mette, and the senate[9]
With greatest laude, that might been estimate[10]
And euery gate, his triumphe and his glorie
Full curyously was wrought, in greate storie

¶ The seuen orders in procession
Full solemplye, at Peters churche hym mette
The wifes whole by good discrecion
The wydowes after full deuoutly sette

[1] The Procuratour of the Comonte Lucius Hiberie. [2] Made Leone the Emperoure. [3] Had [4] To Roma his corps for the. [5] Praysinge. [6] Thens forwarde [7] Euer it was. [8] W.K. [9] Roially [10] B2. [11] At

In ordre came then, nexte as was there dette
The virgyns then, of pure virgynitee
And then thynnocentes of tender iuuentee

¶ Thorders all of good religion
The preastes, and clerkes seculer
The byshop and cardinalles in vnyon
With the sacrement, and lightes clere
And Belles ryngyng, therewith in fere
Euery ordre with laude and reuerence
Reioysed greatly of his magnificence.

¶ At the Capytole, in the sea imperiall
They crowned hym, with crownes thre of golde
As Emperoure, moste principall
And conquerour, that daye moste worthy holde
Wher then he feested, the citee manyfolde
Of Rome the byshop, and all his cardinals
The senatours, with other estates als.

The.lxxiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe that tydynges came to the kynge at Roome, that Mordred had wedded his wyfe, and vsurped the crowne of Englande, for the whiche he came home agayne, and gaue Mordred batayll at Douer, where Arthure preuayled, and after again at Wynchester, wher the round table began and fell for euer.

All that wynter, at Rome he did sojourne
In palays of Nayns palacium
The somer cā, ẏ home he might retourne
At whiche somer, so when it was come
Tydynges came to Arthure, hole and some

Their. 2 Maydens. 3 The Innocentes.
Enyoied. 5 See. 6 Feeste. 7 The Pope and all his worthy Cardynalles.
Nayns. 9 To. 10 All.

That duke Mordred, was kyng of all Britayn
And wedded Gwaynour, to his wyfe certayn

For whiche at Rome, he made his ordenaunce
To rule that lande, and all the hole Empire
And home in hast, with full great purueyaunce
To Britayne came, to venge hym on that fire
That trayterously, agayn hym did conspire
To rauyshe his wife, by stronge and mighty hãde.
And also for vsurpyng the crowne of his lande.

At porte Rupyn, whiche nowe Douer hight
He landed then, where duke Mordred hym met
And fought full sore, by all a daye to night
Wher syr Gawen & Anguzell, were sore bet
And slayne both two, so sore they were ouer set
But Arthure had the felde, and Mordred fled
To Wynchester that night, full fast hym sped.

The kyng folowed fast, vpon the chace
And there he fought agayn, with hym full sore
Where many prynces and lordes in that case
Were slayn on bothe sydes, for euermore
Of the round table, that longe had been afore
Many worthy knightes, there were spended
For Arthures loue, that might not been amended.

The rounde table, at Wynchester beganne
And there it ended, and there it hangeth yet
For there were slayn, at this ylke battayl than
The knightes all, that euer did at it sitte
Of Britayne borne, saue Launcelot yode quyte
And with the kyng, folowed on the chase

when

1 Ere. 2 Lefte. 3 That. 4 Towarde. 5 Whyche.
6 With all his hoost that thedir with hym went.
Thesyn outakyn that there were dede and spent. 7 Thre daye.
8 Agayngele. 9 Be. 10 Ende. 11 Of that Rounde Table. 12 Upon.

When Mordred fled to Cornwayle, for ỹ case.

The. lxxxiiii. Chapiter.

¶ The battayll of Camblayn, where Arthure preuayled and slewe Mordred, and Arthure had his deathes wounde, and howe Arthure died and was buried in the Blacke chapel of Glastenbury.

WHer on the water, ỹ called was Camblayne
Mordred abode, w̃ mightie hoste & stronge
With Arthur fought, ỹ day of hie disdayne
Full oft alone, euer as they met amonge
But Arthure slewe Mordred, with his knyfe long
That Calibourne was called, of suche vertue
That whomsoeuer he smote therwith he slewe.

¶ But this Mordred, gaue Arthure deaths woũd
For whiche he yode, his woundes to medifie
Into thyle of Aualon, that stound
And gaue Britayne, that was full solitarie
To Constantyne, duke Cader sonne on hye
His neuewe was, for Cader was his brother
As well was knowen, they had but one mother.

¶ kyng Arthure then, in Aualon so died
Wher he was buried, in a chapell fayre
Whiche nowe is made, and fully edified
The mynster churche, this daye of great repayre
Of Glastenbury, where nowe he hath his leyre
But then it was called the blacke chapell
Of our Lady, as chronycles can tell.

The death of kyng Arthure.

¶ Wher Geryn erle of Charters then abode Besyde

1 With greta. 2 Sharde 3 Medicyne. 4 When he liede stroke. 5 Traitor. 6 In. 7 Beside. 8 Waste fro the Mynster Churche.

Beſyde his toumbe, for whole deuocion
Whether Launcelot delake, came as he rode
Upon the chace, with trompette and clarion
And Geryn tolde hym, ther all vp and downe
Howe Arthure was, there layde in ſepulture
For whiche with hym to byde, he hight full ſure

And ſo they abode, together in contemplacion
And preaſtes were, aboute his toumbe alwaye
In prayers greate, and holy meditacion
With heare, the fleſhe repreſſyng night and daye
Three dayes eche weke, at breade and water aye
They faſted & lyued in great ſorowe and penaũce
To ſoules helth and Goddes hye pleaſaunce.

But whē the quene Gwaynour had perceyued
Howe Mordred was fled awaye then thyſe
Frō yorke then yode, leſt ſhe were deceyued
On fote by night, with a mayden full wiſe
To Carlion to lyue, in Goddes ſeruice
In the mynſter of ſaynt July, with Nonnes
In prayers whole, and greate deuocions.

This kyng Arthure, to whō none was cōdigne
Through all the world, ſo was he then pereleſſe
His life and ſoule, to God he dyd reſigne
The yere of Chriſt, as chronicles expreſſe
Fyue hundreth and two, in ſothefaſtneſſe
And fourtye alſo, accompted hole and clere
At his endyng, without any were.

The.lxxxb. Chapiter.

¶ The commendacion of Arthure, after the conceipte of the maker of this booke in fewe wooꝛdes, and alſo the compleynte and lamentacion of the ſayde maker foꝛ the death of Arthure

REigned he had then, ſixe and twenty yere
Moſte redoubted in erth & moſte famous
The wooꝛthieſt, and wyſeſt without pere
The hardyeſt man, and moſte coꝛagious
In actes marciall, moſte victoꝛious
In hym was neuer, a dꝛope of cowardiſe
Noꝛ in his herte a poynte of couetyſe.

¶ There was neuer pꝛince of giftes moꝛe liberal
Of landes geuyng, ne of meate ſo plenteous
Agayn his fooen, was moſte imperiall
And with his owne ſubiectes moſte bounteous
As a Lyon in felde, was moſte douteous
In houſe a lambe, of mercy euer replete
And in iudgement euer eguall was and diſcrete.

¶ O good loꝛde God, ſuche treaſon & vnrightes
Why ſuffred thy deuyne omnipotente
That of theim had pꝛecience and koꝛſightes
That myght haue lette, that curſed violence
Of Moꝛdꝛedes pꝛyde, and all his inſolence
That noble kyng koꝛpaſſyng conqueroure
So to deſtroye, by treaſon and errouꝛe.

¶ Foꝛtune falſe, executryſe of weerdes
That euermoꝛe, ſo with thy ſubtilitee
To all debates, thou ſtrongly ſo enherdes
That where men euer, would lyue in charitee
Thou doeſt perturbe, with mutabilitee

Why

Why stretchest thou so thy whele vpon Mordred
Agayne his eme, to do so cruel dede

Wherthrough that high, & noble conqueroure
Without[1] cause, shuld algates[2] perysshed bee
With so many kynges, and princes of honour
In all the worlde, might none there[3] better bee
O fals Fallas, of Mordredes propertee
Howe might ȳ so, in Gwynoure haue[4] such might
That she the death caused of so many[5] knightes

O false beautie, of Gwaynour predestinate
What vnhappe made the, false[6] to thy lorde
So good a prince, and so fortunate[7]
Was neuer yet seen, as all men can recorde
The whiche betwene you made so greate discorde
That he and all his princes, wer there slayne
Thy chaungeable hert, to venge he was so layne

But O Mordred toforne[8], so good a knight
In greate manhode, proudly aye approued[10]
In whom thyne eme, the noblest prince of might
Put all his trust, so greately he the loued
What vnhappe, thy manly ghost hath moued
Unto so foule, and cruell hardynesse
So many to be slayn, through thyn vnhappynes

The highnesse of thyne honoure, had a fall
When thou began, to do that iniurie
That great falshode, thy prowesse did appall
As soone as in the entred[12] periurie
By consequens, treason and traitourie
Thy lorde and eme, and also[13] thy kyng soverayn

So

1 Without. 2 Algates. 3 Togates. 4 Goode knyghtes.
5 There no. 6 Gonne. 7 Falsen. 8 Well fortunate. 9 Before.
10 Ever thou. wroued. 11 To thy. 12 Thou entred into. 13 Als.

So to betraye thy felowes eke certayne.

The.lxxxvi.Chapter.

¶ Constantyne, kynge of Britayne, sonne of duke Cador of Cornewayle reygned foure yere.

CONstantine his brother sõne was crowned
Duke Cador, sõne of Cornwaile boũteous
Whoze had been, one of the table rounde
In Arthures tyme, a knight was ful auenturous
In trone royall was set, full precyous
With Diademe on his hed signifyed
At Troynouaunt, where no wight it replyed.

¶ Who then anone, with Saxons soze did fight
And also with Mozdzed sonnes two
Their capitaynes were, & put theim to the flyght
That one fled to wynchester, and hyd hym so
That other to London, with mykyll woo
Where Constãtyne theim bothe in churches slew
At the autres, where they were hyd in mewe.

¶ This constantyne set all his lande in peace
And reygned well foure yere, in greate noblesse
And dyed then, buryed at Caroll no lesse
Besyde Uterpendzagon full expzesse
Arthures father, of greate wozthynesse
Whiche called is the stone, Hengles certayne
Besyde Salysbury vpon the playne.

¶ Aurelius Conan, his cosyn kayze
The sea royall then helde, and ganne succede
To hym, as nexte then of bloude and heyze

* Aurelius Conan, kig of Britayne, reygned thre yere.

His

1 Both to. 2 Uther Pendragon. 3 Stonehenge.
4 Ammesbury. 5 That grete. 6 Iran, eire
7 ea. 8 Ke 9 His blonde.

His vncle, and his sonnes two in dede
In prysone slewe, to crowne hym selfe I rede
That should haue been, kynges of all Britayne
Afore hym so, yf they had not be slayne.

The mayntayned aye ciuyle warre and debate
Bytwene Cytees, Castelles, and countees[a]
Through al his realme, w̄ mysruled mē associate
Whiche was greatly agaynst his royaltees
And but thre yere, he reygned in dignitees
As God so wolde, of his hye ordynaunce
For wronge lawes, maketh shorte gouernaunce.

*Uortiper king of Britayne reygned. vtipere

Then Uortyper,[2] succeded after hym
Crowned was then, with all the royalte
Agaynste whome, the Saxons stronge & grym
Made full greate warre, destroyed the comente[3]
But in batayle, by greate humanyte
He them ouercame, and set his lande in peace
Unto the tyme, that death made him decease.

Seuen yere he reigned, and his people pleased
And tender was he, of his compnalte[4]
Aboue all thyng, he sawe that they were eased
The publyke cause, afore the syngulerte
Preserued also, as it of ryght should be
For cōmons fyrst, for prynces supportacion
Were set, and nought been waste by dominacion

Malgo kig of Britayn reygned. xxii. yere.

Malgo nexte hym, to the crowne attayned
Feyrest of other, that euer was in his daye
All tyranny, fully he restreyned
And conquered holy, thyrse of Orkenay
Irelande

[a] Countrees. Edit. alt. Mb. [2] Vortipere. [3] Comynalte.
[4] comente. [5] comon Welth [6] Preserued aye. [7] Not tobe wasted.
[8] He conquered hole the Iles

Irelonde, Denmarke, Islonde, and eke Norway
And Gotlande also, obeyed his royalte
He was so wyse, full of fortunyte.

Within his realme, was none so large ne strong
Ne none that was, in feacte of warre so wise
With swerde or axe, to fyght in the thronge
Nor with his speare, that had suche exercyse
For to assayle hys foes, and them suppryse
And defence also, he had great keenyng
As any prynce euer had, or any kyng.

But one defaute he had, of greate offence
Of Sodome synne, he wolde it not amende
He haunted it euer, withoute any defence
Whiche greued god, and brought hym to an end
Two and twenty yere, as dyd appende
His lande he helde, in peace and vnyte
Without suppryse of any enmytee.

Carreys was then crowned kyng anone
That loued well in all cytees debate
Betwene townes and citees euery chone
And in suche wyse, maynteyned early and late
Imagened of his wyll preordinate
So muche in warre, that cytees and countrees
Full comen were, of his malicyousnesse.

*Carreys, kyg of Britayne, reygned thre yere.

For which Britons, made hym full mykel war
And Sarons also, vnto kyng Gurmound sent
Of affrycans, that then in Irelande were
Who with his fleete to perfourme his entent
To Britayne came, by all theyr hole assent
But Sarons then, and he were full accorde

And

1 Scotlonde als 2 and full. 3 Feate. 4 he 5 fyghten. 6 2.
Foone. 8 And in. 9 also cunnynge. 10 afore euer [illegible]. 11 Cunt
With croun as. 13 Careys 14 To be kyng 15 Countrees 16 Cele. 17 That 18 he
was throwh his. 20 Right muche. 21 als. 22 Which to. 23 Their 24 with

And Bzitons also, that had cluyle discozde

The.lxxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Gurmounde kynge of Affrycans, conquered Bzytayne, and departed it in seuen kyngdomes, to Saxons, & Englyshe, and went to wynne moo landes, & made Gurmonde Chester.

GUrmoũde, ỹ then was mighty cõquerour
King of Affricãs, most dzed in euery lond
with helpe of Bzitõs & theyz great socour
And of Englishe & Saxons had made thẽ bonde
That dwelled that tyme in Nozthumberlande
And other places in Bzitayne, vnder truage
Rose with hym whole, agayne ỹ kynges outrage

¶ And fought with him, and put hym to ỹ flight
To Circestre went, and strongly helde the towne
But kyng Gurmound, ỹ towne then seeged right
And gate it so, with myght & greate renowne
Wherfoze he fled to wales, foz his pzotecc̃yon
what came of him, myne authour nought erp̃sed
But with the death, I trowe he was oppzessed

¶ But Gurmound then, Bzitaine hole destroied
Bothe churche and towne, & eke the chzisten faith
Foz he a Paynym was, and soze anoyed
The chzystentye, as Gyldas wzote and seyth
Thzough Logres ỹ whole was lost, w̃ payni leyeth
The pzelates, all curates, and religyous
With reliques all fledde awaye, full dolozous.

¶ And hid them then in hilles, woodes and caues
The

Charchbishops, the one of London then
And Tadyok of Yorke, that fled fro Knauis
With sainctes bones, to wilderues fast ranne
And hid hym there, and Gurmond sore did banne
With crosse and bell, & with greate candill light
Thei cursed hym, as ferre as the churches might

Cursyng

This kyng Gurmõd gaue all Northũberland
Frome Trent North, ỹthen hight Berun & deyre
Northfolke, Southfolke and Cãbrydge shire at
Whiche Estãgle, Bede calleth in his storie (hãde
And all fro Trent to Themis, for memorye
Mers he called, all to English gaue
That dwelled ther, for euer to reioyse and haue

The gaue all these, to Englische menne in deede
Whiche came out of a lande, hight angulo
In Germany that was, and with woodes J rede
Replenished of wild bestes, buck and doo
Sith that tyme hether, hathe been and yet is so
Wherfore thei were, of it called Englishemenne
All Logres & Northumberlande, Anglande then

The gaue Suffex then to the Sarons
Esser, Midelser, with Surry whole and Kent
But then Hamshire, Barkeshire, toures & townes
And Shropshire whole, & Glouceſter as thē apēt
All these were called, Westsex as Bede ment
Thus dalt he the lande, to theim therin dwellyng
Whiche long afore, paied truage to the kyng

Thē went he home, through Fraūce & it distroi
And many other landes and regions (ed

1 But

Theō. 2 Charlicke 3 For. 4 I. Lida thym there also gouerned this. 5 church. 6 Berne & Deery. 7 North. 8 All Kent. 9 For to call euer it so to joye. 10 English menne. 11 Angulonde 12 Were then.

But Bytons then, to ỹ Weſt parties ſore anoyed
[Droue theim of Logres, with all religions][2]
To liue in peace, for dred of rebelions
For after Carreis was fled, thei had no kyng
To tyme Cadwan, was made by their choſyng

Howe ỹ Britons were kyngleſſe xx. yere.

So ſtode thei then, kyngles by twenty yere
Fro the yere of Chriſt, fiue hundred and four ſcore
And therto three, as clerly dooeth apere
Unto the yere after that Chriſt was bore
Sixe hundreth and three, without any more
When Cadwan was of Bytons, kyng elect
And crouned was, to rule theim and protect

A lamentacion of ỹ maker of this booke to ỹ lordes.

O kyng Carreis,[4] vnhappieſt[5] creature
That in Bytain reigned euer afore
What infortune made the flee from thy cure
What cauſed the to maintene ſo euermore
Cyuile diſcord within thy realme ſo ſore
That might haue reigned, ouer many a lande
Through whiche, thyne owne is loſt I vnderſtād

Mat xii.

Thou vnderſtandeſt[6] full[7] itill theuangilye[8]
That euery realme, within it ſelfe deuide
Shall deſolate bee[9] made, as clerkes tell
And euery hous on other, ſhall fall and flyde
Thy wycked will, that nowe is knowen[10] wyde
That ſuffred ſo debate, bytwyne lorde and lorde
Bytwyne citees and landes,[11] cyuyle diſcord

The cauſe was[12] of thy diſheriteſon
And of thy realmes[13] deſolacion
That with lawe and peaceble conſtitucion

[1] Nored. [2] Drewe theym fro Logres and fro their mansions. Wight
[3] Fro. [4] Carris. [5] The vnhappiest. [6] Vnderstode [7] The Euangelz. [8] Doone bible.
[9] vnone full. [10] Townes. [11] So was [12] Reame).

Might haue been saued, with greate consolacion
And the churche preserued, in greate prosperacion
The Christen faith, in thy lande distroyed
That with the peace, shuld haue be kept vnnoyed

O woful Carreis, thyne heires & thy Bytons
Their children all, the widdowes and their wifes
The commonalte in citees and in townes
The churche also may bane, full sore those striues
By thy suppoꝛte, that rest so many their liues
Wher lawe and peace, if thou had well conserued
All had been saued, with thanke of god deserued

Defaute of lawe, was cause of this mischiefes
Wꝛonges sustened, by maistry and by might
And peace layed downe, that should haue been the chief
Foꝛ whiche debate folowed and vnright
Wherfoꝛe vnto a pꝛince accoꝛdeth right
To kepe the peace, with al tranquillite
Within his realme, to saue his royalte

What is a kyng, without lawe and peace
Within his realme sufficiently conserued
The poꝛest of his realme, maye so encrease
By iniury and foꝛce, to bee pꝛeferred
Till he his kyng, with strength haue ouerterned
And sette hym self in royall maieste
If that he bee, in suche a ieopardie

The counsel of the maker to duke Richard of Yoꝛke.

O ye loꝛdes and pꝛinces of high astate
Kepe well the lawe and peace in gouernaunce
Lest your subiectes defoule you and depꝛeciate
Whiche been as able, with wꝛongfull gouernaūce

1 Careys. 2 Comonte. 3 Curse. 4 The. 5 The. 6 best. 7 shou wyght haue. 8 And saued all. 9 Or. 10 With 11 Ordynaunce.

To reigne as ye, and haue as greate puysaunce
If peace and lawe been voyed, and vnytee

fol. lxxxii b. ⊠ as a Note

Nota quod legitur in libro Gilde sapientissimi Britonꝝ et in libro primo Willielmi de Malmesbury de gestis Regꝝ Anglorum quod Britones propter auariciam et rapinam Regum et Principum, propter iniquitatem et injusticias Judicum, propter desidiam predicacionis Episcoporum pessimorum virorum ecclesiasticorum, et propter luxuriam & malos mores populi, regnum et patriam perdiderunt. Illi vero Saxones et Angli regnantes in diuersis Insulæ partibus successerunt, nam post decessum Gurmundi Africani, de quo jam supradiximus, inceperant Saxones et Angli regnare de clare in Anglia qui prius non regnabant sed dominabantur quia, Hengistus non fuit Rex neque Regulus sed Dux; licet ita scriptum sit quod tanto tempore regnavit et sic de aliis ducibus usque ad annum certum postquam Gurmundus Carecium Regem Britonum devicit et a regno fugavit; quia post Vortigernum fuerunt plures Monarche videlicet octo.

Kēt
w Dame within let by Gregory ye B. bishop
Landed in Tenet, with clerkes of his assēt
And

1 Been. 2 Reue. 3 Fede muche. 4 Reseth. 5 Heir. 6 Idoues. 7 Alliance. 8 Iuiseys. 9 Eg. 10 Victes. 11 Ffro. 12 Loegres. 13 Kyngdomes. 14 Men
15 Cantreed. 16 Rome. Edit. alt. 17 The Pope. 18 Intent.
19 Townes and cities. Here the MS. has the following Capay
in prose. (see the Paper marked ⊠)

And many monkes, to teache the faith I hope
That clothed were, echeone vnder a blacke cope
Whiche in procession, with crosse and belles came
The latinies syngyng in Jesus his name

¶ In the yere of Christ his incarnacion
Fiue hundreth foure score and sixtene
Kyng Ethelbert, had in his dominacion
All Kent throughout, with greate ioy as was seen
Were baptized then, in holy water clene
To whome Gregory sent Mellito and Justo
With other clerkes, and doctours many mo

¶ Gregory hym made, archebishop of Caũterbu-
Of all Englande, hiest then primate (ry
And had the paule with hyest legacye
By Gregorye, sent to hym and ordinate
Fro London then, thus was that tyme translate
To Caunterbury, the sea Metropolitan
And London sette, as for his suffrigan.

¶ Saynt Augustyne then, w helpe of Ethelbert
Saynt Augustyns made, & Christes churche also
That Christes churche hight, as it was aduerte
And sacred so by hym, and halowed tho
For the chiefe sea, Metropolitan so
Of all Englande, by Gregory ordinate
And saynt Augustyne, of all Englande primate.

¶ Then Augustyne made Peter a clerke deuoute
Of saynt Augustyns thabbot religious
And made Mellito, as Bede clerly hath note
Of London then by shoppe full vertuous

A clerke

1 Of holy. 2 Latenye. 3 Syngyng deuoutely. 4 Thesu 5 And. 6 He. 7 The. 8 Is. 9 The chiefe. 10 Palle. 11 See. 12 Austen 13 Austens 14 Crichurche that.

To reigne as ye, and haue as greate puysaunce
If peace and lawe been voyed, and vnytee
The floures are lost, of all your souereintee

O woythy pyince, O duke of Yoyke I meane
Discendid downe of higheſt bloodde royall
Se to ſuche ryotes, that none ſuſtene
And ſpecially, that alyens none at all
Inhabite not with power, greate ne ſmall
That maye this lande, ought trouble oy ouer ride
Foy twies it was ſo wonne, with muche pyide

Through Voytiger, by Engiſt and Hoyſus
Whome he receiued, whiche after hym diſtroyed
And with his helpe full falſe and noyous
The woythy bloodde of Bytain, ſoye anoyed
At the Caroll murdyed, and all accloyed
And nowe again, when Carreis was exiled
The kyng Gurmõd, & the Saxons hym beguiled

Foy Saxons, Peightes, and Engliſhemenne
Reigned then thyough all the Logres lande
Deuided in ſeuen realmes fully then
Weſtſex Suſſex, and Kente I vnderſtande
Eſtſex and Mers, Eſtangle, & Noythumberlande
That dyoue Bytons, into the Weſt countre
To Walis and Coynwaile, fro towne and citee

The. lxxxviii. Chapiter.

Ethelbert kyng of Saxons.

Hils Ethelberte was reignyng kyng of Kẽt
Saincte Auſtin ſẽt by Gyegoyy of R. biſſhop
Landed in Tenet, with clerkes of his aſſẽt And

1 Been. 2 Ye. 3 Full muche. 4 Reſett. 5 Their. 6 Odyous.
7 Ile and. 8 Layes. 9 By. 10 Victes. 11 Ye. 12 Loegres. 13 Kyngdomes. 14 Mers.
15 Kent. 16 Rome. Edit. alt. 18 The Pope. 19 Intent.
20 Cornwaile. 17 Townes and citees. Here the MS. has the following Papay in proose. (In the Paper marked ⊠)

And many monkes, to teache the faith I hope
That clothed were, echeone vnder a blacke cope
Whiche in procession, with crosse and belles came
The latinies syngyng in Jesus his name

¶ In the yere of Christ his incarnacion
Fiue hundreth foure score and sixtene
Kyng Ethelbert, had in his dominacion
All Kent throughout, with greate ioy as was seen
Were baptized then, in holy water clene
To whome Gregory sent Mellito and Justo
With other clerkes, and doctours many mo

¶ Gregory hym made, archebishop of Caũterbu-
Of all Englande, hiest then primate (ry
And had the paule with hyest legacye
By Gregorye, sent to hym and ordinate
Fro London then, thus was that tyme translate
To Caunterbury, the sea Metropolitan
And London sette, as for his suffrigan.

¶ Saynt Augustyne then, w helpe of Ethelbert
Saynt Augustyns made, a Christes churche also
That Christes churche hight, as it was aduerte
And sacred so by hym, and halowed tho
For the chiefe sea, Metropolitan so
Of all Englande, by Gregory ordinate
And saynt Augustyne, of all Englande primate.

¶ Then Augustyne made Peter a clerke deuoute
Of saynt Augustyns thabbot religious
And made Mellito, as Bede clerly hath note
Of London then by shoppe full vertuous
A clerke

Fought with Aydan, the kyng of Scottes fell.

The.lxxxix.Chapiter.

¶ Howe kynge Ethelfryde of Northumberlande had seruyce of Aydan kyng of Scottes, the yere of Christ. vi. hundreth and three, after saynt Bede.

Homage of the Scottes.

AT Degfastan, wher Ethelfryde preuayled
And sette Aydan, in his subiection
To Bedes dayes, ỹ Scottes nomore assayled
England, but aye obeyed his ediccion
And was his man, without contradiccion
And held of hym, his lande as was accorde
By many yeres, thens forth nomore discorde.

¶ This battayl was, of Christes incarnacion
Syxe hundreth yere & three, as sayth saynt Bede
And of his reygne, by Bedes computacion
The eleuenth yere it was then, as I rede
That twenty yere and. iiii. reygned there in dede
In all his tyme, to whom the Peightes obeyed
And Iryshe also, and nomore hym disobeyed.

¶ In that same yere, of Christes incarnacion
The Britons all, did sette theyr parliamente
At Cairlion, by good informacion
Cairlegeocestre hight, as some men ment
That Westchester is become of entente
Where they did chose, Cadwan vnto there kyng
Theim to defende, fro theyr fooes warryng.

The.xc. Chapiter.

Cadwan

1 Degsaston. 2 Aidon. 3 Subdicion. 4 As it. 5 Pictes. 6 Als. 7 Cuerlegis that Chestra hight. 8 Be comon

¶ Cadwan kynge of Britayne, that firste was prince of Northwales. This Cadwan was crowned in the yere of Christ syxe hundreth and thre, and after Bede by.xiii yere reigned ouer the Britons, in the west parties of all Wales and Cornwayll.

THis kyng Cadwan, at wyncheſter crownd
Was made ỹ kyng, of Britayne & Brytõs
Agayn whom kyng Ethelfrede, ỹ ſtound
Warred full ſore, all the regions[1]
Where Brytons were, ſo did he all religions[2]
Who weſtcheſter ſieged, with violence
Wher Brochewall[3] therle, made greate defence.

¶ But there he ſlewe, Brochewall[4] in batayll
And gatte the towne of weſtcheſter, in that tyde
Where.xii.C. monkes, without[5] fayle
He ſlewe downe, right a lytle there beſyde
That came to praye for peace, without[6] pride
Fro Banger there, in holé[7] proceſſion
That matters wer there, by his oppreſſion.

A murder of Mõkes.

¶ Whõ kyng Cadwan, wỹ mighty hoſte & ſtrõge
Met in feldé, full ready for to fight
But both theyr frendes treated, ſo theim emong
That good accorde betwene thẽ, was made righte
Duryng theyr lyues, well kepte as they hight
With all frendſhippe, great loue and bnytee
That both theyr realmes, ſtoode in great dignitee

¶ But Ethelfrides wyfe, with chylde farre gone
Violently exiled and repudiate
And wedded another, full wrongfully anone
Wherfore ſhe went, to recouer his eſtate

To

1. Religiouns. 2 Regiouns. 3 Brochivale. 4 Wilkoutyn. 5 Whit
ly. 7 the feide. 8 Kir.

To kyng Cadwan,full sycke and desolate
Whom he receyued, with noble reuerence
And sory was,for her wofull offence.

¶But the his wife as great was gone w̄ childe
For whiche he kept hir in house to abyde
To tyme he might, hym haue reconsyled
Her to receyue,and set the other on syde
But in the meane tyme,they might no lēger abide
Both quenes delyuered wer of sonnes two
That one Edwyn,that other hight Cadwallo.

¶The chylder two,together norysched were
In tender age,to tyme that they were men
At whiche tyme,there rose full cruell warre
Betwene Redwald,kyng of Estangle then
And Ethelfride,that fought as folke did kenne
Wher Ethelfryde on Idell,was downe slayne
And Redwald the feld,ther had with payn.

¶Kyng Cadwan then,out of this worlde so died
The same yere,so dyd Austyne also
And Laurens made fully,and glorifyed
Archebyshop of Caunterbury tho
And Ethelbert of kent,to heauen dyd go
Thus chaunged they theyr habitacion
Some to payne,and some to saluacion.

Cadwall lyi.yeres. reigned

¶Cadwall then,the sonne of kyng Cadwan
After his father had reigned.xiii.yere
Was crowned at Westchester as a man
Of Brytons all,as clerely dyd appeare
The yere of Christ.vi.C.and.xvi.cleare

That

That reygned well, full syxtye yere and one
Aboue all kynges, as souerayne [of echeone.][1]

¶ But kyng Edwyn then, of Northumberlande
The sonne and heyre, vnto kyng Ethelfryde
Was crowned kyng at Yorke, I vnderstande
For whiche, the kyng Cadwall hym defyed
And made hym warre, with Britons fortifyed
And sente hym worde, no crowne for to were[3]
And elles he should[4] vnder it, his hed of there

Which Edwyn then accompted, at nyght nought
But kepte estate full royall, and condigne
with crowne of gold, at yorke ful freshly wrought
Elfrydes[5] sonnes, of his wronge wyfe vndigne
Goten and borne, he felly dyd repugne[6]
[Hym dyd exyle,[7] in Scotlande dyd[8] abyde
For his mother [was exyled,][9] by Ethelfryde.

¶ And[10] Ethelfryde hym[11] gate, on his wrong wyfe
And had exyled, his owne wyfe truely wed
Edwyns mother, as knowen was full ryfe
Full great w̄ chylde, with hym, as Bede hath red
Then made he welles, in dyuerse countrees spred
By the hye wayes, in[12] cuppes of copper clene
For trauelyng folke, faste chayned as it was sene

¶ And euery daye, he rode withouten reste
With trompettes lowde, afore him where he rode
That euery wyght, myght suerly in hym truste
That he wolde then, of his[13] ryghtwyshode
[Do euery man ryght, without more abode][14]
[All complayntes here,[15] as lawe wolde reforme

[1] Ouer echone. [2] Cadwallo. [3] Bere. [4] Wolde. [5] Ethelfride son. Do
[6] wynne. [7] Hem he exiled [8] To [9] exiled was. [10] For. [11] Theyre [12] With
[13] righ rightwishode. [14] That same waie cume as Han Comed to Kynge Rhode.
[15] Compleyntes to.

So all his lyfe to rule, he did confirme.

The sente vnto Ethilbalde, kyng of kent
His syster for to haue, and wed her to wyfe
Dame Ethelburge, that was full fayre and gent
But Ethelbalde, then sent hym worde by lyfe
It was not good, but lykely to make stryfe
That a chrisṫē woman, to a Paynim shuld be wed
And elles he sayde, his message had be sped.

Edwyne then sent his message so agayne
He wolde well, she kepte her owne creaunce
And bade hym sende, with her a chapelayne
And clerkes wyse, without any baryaunce
To kepe her in her fayth, and in all suraunce
And yf her fayth be better then is myne
When it is knowen, I wyll therto enclyne.

The kyng Ethelbald, her sent with Paulyne
That sacred was byshop of Yorke that tyme
By Justo archbyshop, that was full fyne
Of Caunterbury to kepe her true Bapteme
And her beleue, that none her kethers lyme
With heresye, to foule his owne creaunce
Thus wedded he her, at Yorke in all suraunce.

The yere of our Lorde. vi. hundreth .xx. tho
And fyue therto, as Bede hath clerely writen
And in the yere. vi. hundreth and twenty so
And syxe therto, kyng Edwyn as is weten
To westsex went, where batayle sore was smyten
Betwene hym, and byshop Quychelyne
King Kinigils sonne, of westsex then so fyne.

Where

1 Ethbalde. 2 To. 3 To his. 4 Cristen women. 5 Forth
6 Withoutyn. 7 Knowe to it I wolde. 8 Than hir. 9 Justus so
10 voide hir 11 Criste. 12 Was. 13 Kynegils

¶Where then he slewe, this manly Quichelyne
For cause he had, compassyd his death afore
By pryuey wyse, as he couldé ymagyne
He put the lande then vnder trybute sore
And Kynygell, the kyng of westsex thore
Became his man, and helde of hym his lande
At his byddyng to ryde with hym, and stande.

The.xci. Chapiter.

¶Howe Cadwall fled, and was dryuen from his realme by kynge Edwyn, and helde it in subiecction, and was baptyzed by sayné Dawlyn archbyshop of Yorke.

KYng Cadwallo then, of all Brytons[3]
The yere of Chryste. vi. C. and eyghtene
By wronge councell, on Edwyns regions
Great warres made, but Edwyn then full kene
Faught with hym there, full sore as it was sene
And to the flyght hym droue, out of the felde
All Britayne lande he conquered so, and helde

¶Cadwallo[4] fled, vnto[5] lytell Brytayne
And dwelled there, in heuynesse and in payne
By dyuers yeres, and durste not come agayne
For power none he myght, not yet obteyne
The Brytaynes durste hym not obeyne
For kyng Edwyn, had hole dominacyon
Of theim and Saxons, & of the Scottyshe[8] nacio̅

The subiec ction of the Scottes.

¶And in the yere of Chryste. vi. C. xx. and. vi.
Edwyns doughter that named was Eufled
At Yorke was borne, to whome men dyd compler
Maydens twelue, to take the chrystenhede

That

[2] Kyngegils. [3] The Britonns. [4] Cadwalleyn. [5] Into. [7] And of [8] Scottys.

That lordes doughters wer, of great worthihede
Whiche saynt Paulyn archbyshop dyd baptyse
In Yorke mynster, in full holy wyse.

And in the yere of Chryste. vi. C[xx] & seuen
The chrysten lawe, disputed amonge his lordes
Was founde beste, to wynne the blysse of heuen
Wherfore Edwyn, by good and hole concordes
Both of his comons, and also of his lordes
With all his realme, baptime toke as goddes mē
Of saint Paulin, that archbishop was then

In that same yere, byshoppe Honorius
To Paulyn sent, the palle of dignyte
The kyng Edwin, and this ylke Paulins
Yorke mynster made newe, of greate beaute
And comons all, full well so baptized he
In Northumberlande, in Swale, Owse, & Trent
And other ryuers in countrees, where he went.

By thyrty dayes, and sixe labored he thus
And then he came, to Lyncolne with Edwyn
Where he conuerted Blecca, as Bede sayth to vs
The Mayre, and all the cōmons by his doctryne
And Lyndsey hole, vnto the fayth deuyne
And made the mynstre of Lincolne, at his costage
Of kyng Edwyn, and also the colage.

And in the yere. vi. hundreth and thyrty moo
Iustō dyed, to whome Honoure dyd succede
Of Caunterbury, archbishop made was tho
Whome saint Paulin, as wryten hath sent Bede
Dyd sacre then at Lyncolne, so in dede

In

1 Fiue wekes in. 2 Dispute. 3 Foundon. 4 Fynes.
5 His Prayers cause in whose was they accorde
wherfore Edwyn by goode and holy concordes.
Paulinus last. a S. Paulinus. 7 Blecta. 8 Than called the kynges.
9 Yere of Christe. 10 Iustus the vi.

In the mynster that he and Edwyn founde
The kynges colage, named that ylke stounde.

And in the yere.vi.hundreth thyrty and two
Kynge Edwyne, by holy doctryne,
Of saynt Felyx, an holye preste that was tho
And preachyng of the holy archbyshop Paulyn
Of Chrystes worde, and verteous discyplyne [3]
Conuerted Eodredwolde, of Estangle the kyng
And all the realme, where Felyx was dwellyng

At Dõmok then, was Felyx fyrste byshop
Of Estangle, and taught the chrysten layth
That is full hye, in heauen I hope
But then the kyng Edwyn, as Bede sayth
Had made the people stable in the chrysten layth
To Yorke went home, with hym also Paulyn
To rule the lande, after the lawe deuyne.

The.xcii. Chapiter.

How Cadwall and Penda slewe kyng Edwyn, and reigned ouer Brytons agayne.

But in the yere.vi.hundreth thyrty & thre
Kyng Cadwall, of Britaine that had been
With king Penda, of Merces great coũ-
Assembled stronge, with hostes fell and kene (tre
And Northumberlande brent, as then was sene
And slewe both wyfe, and chylde olde and yinge
Prestes and clerkes, they spared there no thyng.

The churches all, they brente and foule destroied
Whome Edwyn met, with power that he might

At

[3] That name was that. [4] The holy.
Whome Reawalde here lately the same reigne
And the preachynge of Bischop Paulyne.
[4] Conuerted Redwalde. [5] the. [6] Which name is in heuen full high. Hope
Among the sayntes that in that place were placed.
Egypt Bede [10] That. Reawalde. [12] Merck. [13] The Prestes.

At Hatfelde towne, in herte full sore anoyed
All redy so, in batayle for to fyght
within yorkeshyre, where Edwin was slaine right
And all his realme, was wasted and subuerte
By kyng Penda, that a Paynym was peruerte.

¶ The same yere then, for cause of warre & stryfe
Saint Paulyn went to Kent there to dwell
With Ethelburge, that was kyng Edwyns wyfe
That welcome were, as Bede surely doth tell
At Rochester, as that tyme befell
Saint Paulyn was, vnto the sea translate
And byshop therof, then denominate.

¶ kyng Cadwall reygned full hole agayne
In Britayne lande, as prynce without pere
Aboue Englyshe, as lorde souerayne
Subiectiõ of Scottes Ouer Saxons, Scottes, & peightes, clere
And Englyshe also, as clere did appere
And Eufryde then, and Oslryk paynimes fell
Northumberlande then helde, as Bede doth tell

¶ Whome Cadwall and Penda, felly slewe
From tyme they two, had reygned but a yere
Oswolde theyr colyn, as knowen was full trewe
That in Scotlande norysshed was full clere
To Englande came, with mighty greate power
And gate his ryght, and all his herytage
With helpe and socoure, of his Baronage

The. xciii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Oswolde kynge of Englande reygned ouer Brytons, Scottes, and Peightes, Iryshe, and ouer all Logres and Cambre.

Thus

1 Wasted was. 2 Payen. 3 For to. 4 Wil couth dwelle
5 and than as it 6 That ye 7 Cadwallo 8 Without. 9 Picter and Pictes
10 Saith also. 11 Eufryde. 12 Fryke 13 Payens. 14 Sum of Northumberlonde 15
16 Younge. 17 At whiche tyme he was but yonge of age. -

THis kyng Oſwolde, in Englãde gan luc= Oſwold.
The yere of Chriſt, vi.c. was thẽ clere (cede
Thirty and fiue, replete of all manhed
And afterwarde, full clerely did apere
As to ſuche a prince, of nature ſhould affere
That yorke minſter, repaired then all newe
Of lyme and ſtone as Chriſten prince and trewe

¶ Who for aydẽ then, into Scotlande ſent
In holy monke he was and religious
And biſhop ſacred, after Chriſtes entent
In Chriſtes doctrine, he was full laborous
Whome for teachyng and preachyng vertuous
He made hym biſhop of all Northumberlande
Whoſe ſea was chief then, at the holy Ile lande

¶ In that ſame yere, Oſwold to Weſtſex rode
For Chriſt his loue, at prayer of ſainct Biryne
Wher thei the kyng Kynygill, of paynymhode
Baptized, and made a Chriſten manne full fyne
And ſette Weſtſex vnder tribute ſyne
For to bee payed to hym and his heires
Perpetually by yere, at certeine feires

¶ Sainct Biryne biſhop, thei made furth right
Of all Weſtſex, at Dorcheſter was his ſea
Frome Orenforde, but litill waye to ſight
Kyng Oſwold wedded Beblam his wife to bee
Kyng Kynygilles doughter, full faire to ſee
And on hir he gatte, a ſoonne hight Cidilwold
In Deyre reigned, vnder his father Oſwold

¶ And in the yere ſixe hundrith thyrty and ſixe

Kyng Penda sleugh Ordewold of Estanglande[2]
In batayle strong, and mighty gan to bere[3]
That wastid sore about hym euery lande
As tyraunt fell, wher he the Christen fonde
He sleugh theim downe, and cruelly ouer ran
Sparyng nother wife, childe, ne manne

The kyng Oswold, so mighty was in deede
That ouer Scottes, Peightes, and Brytaines
Irish, Westler, and English Irede
And ouer Logres and all the Saxons
None so mighty aboue all regions
As Florez and Bede hath wrytten[6] thus
Whose wrytynges are full vertuous

As he at meate, did sitte vpon a daye
At Bamburgh, a palmer came tō his gate
Asked some good, for Christ his loue alwaye
To whome he sent his dishe of syluer plate
For cause he had not els for his astate
The poore manne to refresh and comforte
Sainct Bede of hym, thus clerely dooeth reporte

An holy manne, within his hermitage[9]
Desired sore in his meditacion
If any better, of any maner age
Wer in the lande of any nacion
To whome was said by reuelacion
That kyng Oswold, more holy was of life
Notwithstandyng, he had weddid a wife

The .xciiii. Chapiter.

Howe an hermite proued sainct Oswold his wife at his

[1] Oswalde. [2] Northumberlonde. [3] Were. [4] No wife widowe. [5] Petes. [6] Writynge is full trewe and vertuous. [7] So a. [8] Gate. [9] Heritage. Edit. alt. [10] Nought. [11] So to. [12] Lever of any. [13] Sent.

his desire by biddyng of sainct Oswold

Herfore he came, vnto the kyng Oswold
And prayed hym, he might knowe his life
And of his reuelacion then hym told
Wherfore he toke to hym, his ryng by life
And bade hym saye, the quene that was his wife
To dooe with hym, on nightes twoo or three
As she was wonte, at home to dooe with me

This token had he, he satte with hir at meate
His meate & drynke, when he would haue the best
But water and brede, he might none other gette
And then at night, she leide hym for to rest
Right with hir self, so well hir self she trest
And when he was, ought sette to dooe amisse
In water he was cast, his flesshe to keele and lisse

But when the daye came, he was full fain
And of the quene, full soone he toke his leue
Unto the kyng, he went anone again
And prayed hym fast, he might passe home at eue
For of his life, he would no more preue
Whiche more holy, was one daye and night
Then all his life, he euer been might

But Cadwall the kyng of Brytons sent
The kyng Penda, to warre on kyng Oswold
Whome Oswold mette, with greate assemblement
In battaile strong, at Heuenfeld as God would
Wher people fled, with people manyfold
To kyng Cadwall, who with Penda anone
Assembled an hoost, on Oswold for to gon

1 Here. 2 He. 3 So than his. 4 Into. 5 Take and lesse. 6 More than 7 or 8. he said. 9 Cadwalles 10 Supp. owelment. 12 Penda.

¶ Oſwold thei mette, on Marfeld that tyde
Wher he was ſlain the yere of Chriſt was than
Sixe hundred whole, and fourty and twoo beſide
His hedde and armes, as Bede the holy manne
In his chronicle hath writte, who ſo rede it can
Upon a tre was hong many a daye
That rotted not, nor in this world neuer maye

Oſwy kyng of Northũberlande

¶ Oſwy then in all Northumberlande
The croune had, and all the royalte
With Cadwallo he hight, allwaye to ſtande
As ſouereigne lorde of Bryton, then was he
And ouer all other, had then the mageſte
But this Oſwy made Humwald for to kyll
The kyng Oſwyn, that feloe was hym tyll

¶ For cauſe he roſe, on hym with multitude
And nought for thy, when thei together mette
All his people of full greate fortitude
He withdrewe then, and with Humwald ſette
In pryue wiſe, without any lette
But falſe Humwald, priuely hym ſlewe
On whome he truſted, and trowed had bee trewe

¶ Quene Eufled that was kyng Oſwys wife
Kyng Edwyn his doughter full of goodneſſe
For Oſwyns ſoule, a minſter in hir life
Made at Tynmouth, and for Oſwy cauſeles
That hym ſo bee ſlain, and killed helpeles
For ſhe was kyn to Oſwy and Oſwyn
As Bede in chronicle dooeth determyn

¶ This Oſwyn nowe is canonized in ſhryne

Sainct

1 Theyn. 2 Maſerfelde 3 Arma 4 Longeth. 5 Nes.
6 So. Edit. alt. 6 Of 7 Than kade he. 8 Therle Rumwald 9 Withoutten.
10 Truſte. 11 Went he kade be. 12 Goodelynes. 13 made hym.

Saynt Oswyn called,at Tynmouth gloriously
But kyng Oswy,to Cadwall did enclyne
And Oswalde his hed,and arme had leue to burye
Whiche he betoke to quene Bebla in hye
Who closed theim in siluer,kayre and clene
And theim betooke,to saynt Aydan I wene.

¶This kyng Cadwall,his feast at Londō made Kynge Cadwal
To hym all kynges,as souerayne lorde obeyed
Saue kyng Oswy,at home that tyme abade
For whiche he trowed,that he hym disobeyed
Wherfore he sent to Penda, and hym prayed
To warre on Oswy,without delaye
And make hym,to his souerayne lorde obey.

¶In which meane tyme,this Penda slewe Anne
Of Estangle,that long had ben kyng
A Christen prince,and a full manly manne
And so came on kyng Oswy fast rydyng
Wher on the felde,they met fore fyghtynge
Whom Oswy slewe,and.xxx.dukes also
That with hym came,and.xxx.M.moo.

The.xcv.Chapiter.

¶In the yere of oure lorde God.vi.hundreth and.lv.Penda slewe the kyng of Estangles,and the yere of our Lord God.vi.hundreth and.vi.Oswyne slewe Penda kynge of Marchelande,and the forsayde kynge Oswyne condiscended to holde and kepe his Easter accordyng to the vse of Roome and Caunterburye, the yere of oure Lorde vi.hūdreth and.lxiii.whiche before was celebrated accordyng to the Judeicall custome.

m iii These

1 Frothe 2 Bebba. 3 As men. 4 any delaye. 5 Made slaine.
Englonde 7 The kynge. 8 Worthy. 9 Than. 10 Menad.

THose battayls two, after thincarnacion
Syxe hundreth yere, fyfty wer[1] also fyue
In the yere after, by[2] computacion,
That kyng Oswy, made Penda kyng belyue
Of Marces lande, and to conuerte his lyue
By teachyng of Dwyma, made byshop thare
And all his lande, by vertue of his lare.[4]

The kyng Oswy made houses. xii. of religion
Syxe in Deyry, and sixe in Berū to bee
With his doughter Elfled[6] for deuocion
Whom he auowed, in clene virginitee
To sacre so, and lyue in chastitee
For his triumphe, and for his victorie
Of kyng Penda, and his panymerye.[8]

The kyng Oswy, of Christes incarnacion
The yere. vi. C. lx. and also three
Had all the clerkes, of his dominacion
With many other clerkes, of farre countree
For to dispute the Pasche, when it should bee
The whiche afore, was held[9] diuersly
One vse at Yorke, another at Caunterbury

But this seynt Oswy, [then] held[e] [it] at Whitby
Where then saynt Hilde, in all deuinitee
Was hole instructe, amonge all the clergie
Where Wilfride, with Egilbert[10] and she
Concluded[11] all the clerkes of the[12] countree
And fro thens forth, thei held it in certeyne[13]
As Caunterbury vsed, and did obeyne[14]

This kyng Oswyn, then died [in] the yere[15]

Syxe

1 Twa. 2 And owre thertō by dewe. 3 Nine thar
4 Of Marcia son of Penda full ryve
who wedded Fade Effleda doughter of kynge Oswy
Upon covenaunt ovsden feith not to deny. 5 Berne. 6 Effleda.
7 Ayayn. 8 Paiery. 9 Holdyn. 10 Egilberte. 11 conclwynge. 12 That.
13 certaynte. 14 They obeica playnte. 15 The yere of yore.

Sixe hundreth hole, lixti and also ten
At Whytby then, wher Hild was abbas clere[1]
At Streyneshaigh, named was so then[2]
Emonge the couente, of this holy woman[3]
And in Hildes schole. vi. byschops wer enfourmed[4]
In holy wryte, as she theim had confourmed.

These were the names of the byschoppes right
Bosa, Oskford[6], Etla and also Tatfryde[7]
John of Beuerley the fyfte, that then so hight
The sixte then, was the holy man Wilfryde
All in the lawe of Chryst enfourmed that tyde[8]
With this virgyne clene, of royall discent
Of kyng Edwyn and Oswalde bloode full gent.

Whiche virgyne clene, died so in the yere
Of Chryst. vi. C. and foure score also[10]
About whiche tyme, saynt Awdry ỹ virgyne clere
At Hely[11] died, emonge hir floures tho
Of holy virgyns, and wydowes also[11]
Whiche she had gathered, & kept in cloyster clene
Whyle she there was thabbasse, as was sene.

Who wyfe was twyse, in westsex first espoused
The secounde tyme, vnto the kyng Egfryde
Of Northũberlande, her maydenhed euer houssed[12]
I dar well saye, it was neuer set asyde
There might no man, hir herte frõ Chryste deuide
So hole it was sette vnto chastitee
Inuiolate she kepte her virginitee.

For good ne gold nor any great rychesse
With her housebandes to been deuirginate

Her

[1] Than Abbesse. [2] That. [3] Inst. fyne a place of Worshipe wch was [illegible]
[4] Were. [5] Wyfsa [6] Oshetore. [7] Catfryde. [8] In verita lerned information any pryde.
~~Ely. obiit~~ [9] Royall blode. [10] Than was. [11] Ely.
[12] of vertuouse lyfe whiche kepte her frome all wo. [13] [illegible] [14] [illegible].
[15] Her lure.

Hetherto [1]might neuer eschaunge her sekirnesse
So sad it was,it [2]was neuer violate
[But euer clene,as in her fyrst estate]
By her housbãdes,for ought they could [3]her hight
But virgyne died,through grace of God almight

¶[4]Thus Awdry then,[5]frõ Egfride was deuorced
For [6]cause,she would not lese hir maydenhede
[To tyme hir soule,wer lowsed and vncursed
In hely abode,where then she made in dede][7]
An house of Nunnes,as writtẽ hath saynt Bede
To serue the God,aboue celestiall
In prayers good,and matens nocturnall.

¶Wylfride from Yorke,exiled and expelled
The kyng of Susser,and all his lande
Conuerte all hole, and mawmetrye downe felled
Wher, so three yere afore, I vnderstande
Suche vengeaunce reigned,in that kynges land
That ther grewe no grasse,nor no maner [8]of corne
Thẽ people died,for hunger all for lorne.

¶And that same daye,when they were conuerte
The grasse and corne,that welked [9]were afore
By three yere passed,waxed grene and gan reuert
Through prayer of Wylfryde,ẏ prayed therfore
For whiche the kyng,made hym bishoppe thore
That fyue yere hole,there so occuppyed
The byshoppes cure,and Christes fayth edefied.

¶And in the yere.vi.hundreth.lxxx.and fyue
Kyng Egfride rode with hoste into Scotlande
And warred on pightes [10]& Scottes w̃ mekel striue whome

[1] Hir right. [2] Ne [3] Ne of vertue neuer repudiate. [4] Youth.
[5] Fro Ethelwerde. [6] By. [7] In Ely bode she than maide in dede
To tyme hir soule were lesed and vnworsede.
[8] For theire presomptuouse life lesued and fonde. [9] Be yet. [10] To the.
[11] Followed. [12] Upon Pictes

Whō then they slewe, as Bede could vnderstande
With many worthy knightes, of Northūberland
At Nettanslmore, in an hye mynstre buryed
A worthy place, in Scotlande edified.

TEche kyng of seuen, on other warred sore
But kyng Cadwas, that then was souerayn lorde
Accorded theim, as myster was ay where
By his good rule, he made euer good accorde
Wher any strife or warre was, and discorde
And all the realmes, in Britayn hole baptized
And bishoppes in theim sette, and autorised.

TKyng Ethelride of Mors, and quene Ostride
His wyfe, doughter of Oswy Berdnaye
Buried Oswalde, with myracles glorified
Where many yere, full styll there after he laye
Unto the tyme the suster, as bookes saye
Of kyng Edward thelder, hym translate
To Glouceſter abbey, to his estate.

TCadwallo kyng of Britons, in the yere
Of Christe goddes sonne. vi. C. sixty and sixtene
So died awaye, who reigned had full clere
Full sixty yere and one, as well was sene
That souerayne lorde, of all Britayn had been
After the decease, of the good kyng Edwyn
And made all seuen kynges, to hym enclyne.

THe made his ymage, of laton full clene
In whiche he put his body balsomate
Upon an horse of laton, fayre to sene
With a sweorde in hande, crowned like his estate

Ful

1 Can. 2 In batell stronge with myght of theire londe
and at Nectansmersh in theire Mynstre buried.
3 Cadwall. 4 war. 5 Alway concorde. 6 Kingdomes. 7 Mercia. 8 At Bardenaye.
9 other Oswalde. 10 yere after. 11 yt translate. 12 Britayne. 13 Seuentene.
14 All the. 15 Clere. 16 Balsamere. 17 Impere.

Full hye sette hy, to light on Ludgate
His battayles all, and his greate victorie
Aboute hym wrought, was made for memorye

The.xcvi.Chapiter.

¶ Cadwalader kyng of Brytayn, and lorde of all.vii. kynges in Britayne.

Cadwalader kyng.

Cadwaladrus, after hym gan succede
Both young and fayre, in florishyng iuuēt
That Cadwalader was called as I rede
Who of Britayn, had all the soueraynte
Of Englyshe and Sarons, in eche countree
Of Pyghtes, Iryshe & Scottes his vndyr regēce
As soueravne lorde, and moste of excellence.

Subiectiō of ỹ Scottes.

Kentwyne the kyng, of westsexe then died
The yere of Chryst sixe hundreth. lxxx. and sixe
The mekill warre, had made and fortifyed
Upon Britons, and felly did hym were
So combrous he was and cruell gan to were
Whose realme the kyng Cadwalader conquered
And Sussex also, and slewe ỹ kynge w̄ his swerde

In whiche yere then, Gatta bysshop died
Whose sea was then, at Herham vpon tyne
That bysshop was, of Yorke notified
For Wilfryde was, hold out with mekyll pyne
And exiled from his benefice that tyme
From Yorke that tyme, by the kynge Alfride
Of Northumberland, whose cure Gatta occupied

After whose decease then John of Beuerlay
Was

1 Cyprus. 2 Cadwalladre. 3 Cadwalladrus. 4 Als. 5 Pictes.
6 hundreth lxx. 7 Full mekill 8 Thaym vexe. 9 Eke. 10 Gata. 11 Cee. 12 Holayn.
13 much.

Was made byshop of Yorke, and had the sea
Then the Cathedrall at Herham so alwaye
For wylfryde was in Dusser farre countre
But then certayne Alfryde of crueltie
Cõmaunded John, to vexe and noye wylfryde
But tender loue, they helde on eyther syde

The.xcviii.Chapiter.

¶ How Cadwalader fel in greate impotencye, that he might not gouerne the lande, wherfore in defaute of lawe & peace fell Barons warre and ciuyle discorde in all the realmes.

THe kyng Cadwaladre beyng impotent
So euery daye, & helde no gouernaunce
Nether lawe ne peace win his regiment
Wherfore Britons, dred none ordynaunce
But eche one toke on other great vengeaunce
Fro that time forth, eche countre on other warred
And euery cytee agaynste other marred.

¶ Thus in defauee of lawe and peace conserued
Cõmon prokyte, was wasted and deuoured
Percyall prokyte, was sped and obserued
And Venus also, was cõmonly honoured
For lechery and aduoutry, was moste adoured
Amonge them was cõmon, as the carte waye
Ryot, robbery, oppressyon, nyght and daye

Of which came then, manslaughter, & homicide
And cyuyle stryfe, with sore contencyons
Through Britons land, euery where, on eche syde
With batayles greate, and fell dissencions As

1 His cõe. 2 And. 3 Fill in Impotence 4 Of other here. 5 Lorde. Ech. 7 Was mevad. 8 ill comonly wase. 9 Bribowry. 10 Ly.

As Bede wryteth amonge his mencyons
They dred nother the kyng, ne god almyght
Wherfore he sent vengeaunce on them [full] ryght

*A greate plage.

That thrugh the warre, ỹ tylth was all destroied
Churches all, and husbandrye vnoccupyed
That with hunger, the people were sore anoyed
That people great, in stretes and feldes dyed
And muche folke, as Bede hath specifyed
The fayth of Chryste, for hunger then forsoke
And drowned thē selues, so sore [ỹ] payne thē [toke].

Their catell dyed, for faute of fode eche daye
Without meate, or any sustenaunce
In townes and feldes, and the cōmon waye
Thrugh which their enfecte, was w that chaūce
That multitude of folke, in greate substaunce
On heppys laye, full lyke vnto mountaynes
That horryble was of sight, aboue the playns.

Unburyed hole, withoute Sacrament
By pestylence also, many one dyed
Some woode, some raynage went
And some were in lytargie implyed
An other some, with batayle mortifyed
With murther also, amonge themselues dispent
Full many were, that none an other lament.

Thrugh which defautes, not amēded nor correct
The bishoppes fled, the prestees & clerkes anoyed
To Walys went, there to be protecte
In caues hyd, accombred and accloyed
Full heuely desealed, and full greatly anoyed

With

1 Folke. 2 Corse. 3 They the peyne. 4 Withoutyn.
5 In common & alwayes. 6 The aier 7 By. 8 And. 9 sight. 10 Full many.
11 Ramage so. 12 A Letargy. 13 Mo 14 Batels. 15 Of. 16 Full heuy went
to Walys. 17 Piteously

With saynctes bones, and relyques many one
Morning full sore, and makyng there their mone

¶ Then fel a yere of pardone, and of grace
At Rome, where the kyng Cadwaladrus
All desolate, and sory for that case
In pylgrymage thyther, purposed thus
With herte deuoute, and wyll beneuelous
With his Brytons together consociate
Of worthy bloude so borne and generate.

¶ To haue pardone, and playne remissyon
Of their trespasse, synnes, and neglygence
That they put nought, reddour ne punissyon
By lawe, payne, and discrete prouidence
On trespassours, that dyd violence (ued
Through which their land, & they were so mische-
That w lawe kept, might wel haue bene acheued

To Rome they came, of whom ỹ bishop was glad
Sergio that hyght, who them graunt remissyon
Of all their synnes, with herte and wyll glad
Saue onely then, of their omissyon
And neglygence, of hole punissyon
That they put nought vpon the trespassoures
Of cõmon people, that were destroyours

Whiche was not in his power to relese
Without amendes made, and restitucyon
To common weale, and their due encrease
As they were hurte, in faute of due punissyon
He charged them, for their playne remissyon
The cõmonte to supporte and amende

Of

1 Wherfore. 2 Full. 3 Not. 4 Lawfull.
5 No vice punnishte in noone offence. 6 Pope. Pergius 8 Full glad.
9 Not 10 Wele. 11 Of. 12 cõmons Welt. 13 To their

Of as greate good, as they [were so][2] offende.

In [3]ye meane whyle, whyls they[4] at Rome so were
The Saxons hole, and Englyshe consociate
Toke all theyr lande, liuelod, and other gere
To Saxon they sente ambassyate
To Angulo, to be associate
With many mo [of theyr countree men][5]
For Britons all, at Rome were [bidyng then][6]

And bad them come in haste, and tary nought[7]
For theyr owne helpe, and for their waryson[8]
[The whiche they dyd,][9] and hither fast they sought
The Brytons lande, they toke in possessyon
And kepte it forth, with [many a][10] garyson
For Brytons came no more therto[11] agayne
For [king] Cadwallader, thē dyed at Rome certain

His Brytous also[12] dyed homewarde by the waye
In dyuerse places,[13] and some went to Britayne
Other some to Fraunce, there to abyde for aye
And some also to Normandy,[14] and to Spayne
That to theyr owne, they came no more agayne
But Saxons hole, and Englyshe it occupyed
Euer more after, and strongly edifyed.

Some chronyclers saye, he had by vysyon
No more to come into Britayne the more
But to the [bishop of Rome][15] with great contricion
Confesse hym, and take his penaunce thore
And absolucyon for his[16] synnes sore
And howe [ye] bishop of Rome buryed him royally
And on[17] his tombe, set[18] his Epitaphye

In

1 And 2 Bede theim 3 This. 4 as they. 5 in that countree beynge,
6 bidynge. 7 Not. 8 Mencion. 9 Which they owned. 10 many. 11 Ither.
12 Als. 13 Place. 14 Naverne. 15 Pope. 16 Iouicion of his. 17 In 18 Made

¶ In laten letters, in marble stone well graue
Declared hole his conuersacyon
Forsakyng all the worlde, heuen to haue
And howe ỹ bysshop of Rome, by his conkyrmacid
Called hym Peter, whome Bede by relacyon
Calleth a saynt in blysse, hole disposed
Fro whiche he may in no wyse be deposed.

¶ This Cadwalader of Britons was ỹ kyng
That reygned full, as souereygne lorde. xii. yere
And in the yere. vi. hundreth and nynte beyng
And dyed so, as sayeth the chronyclere
That of westsex, then had be kyng two yere
Of whome walshemen holden opinyon
Of Englande yet to haue the reuercyon

¶ When ỹ his bones be brought fro rome again
Amonge them all, haue suche a prophecye
And Englande then, fette synce called Britayne
Thus stande they yet, in suche londe matesye
In truste of whiche vayne fantasye
They haue full ofte, Englande sore anoyed
And yet they wyll proue, yf it maye be destroyed.

The. xcviii. Chapiter.

¶ The lamentacyon of the maker of this booke, and his counsayle to my Lorde of Yorke, for good rule in the realme of Englande.

O Gracyous lorde, O very heyre in ryght
Of great Britayne, enclosed with a sea
O very heyre of Logres, ỹ now England
Of wales also, of scotland, which all thre (hyght
Britayne

1 For b. 2 Pope. 3 Sloomys &c. 4 Veynly. 5 Rome.
6 Als. 7 Pale.

Bzitayne so hyght, of olde antiquyte
O very heyze of Poztyngale and Spayne
Whiche castell is, and Lyons soth to sayne.

CO very heyze, of Fraunce and Nozmandye
Of Guyan, Peytowe, Bayen, Man, & Angeoy
Wembzys of Fraunce, of olde warre openly
O very heyze of Jerusalem, and Surry
All this meane, I by you that should enioye
Ye oz your heyzes, my lozde of Yozke certayne
That wzongefully haue bene holde out to seyne

CBut O good lozde, take hede of this mischieue
Howe Cadwaladoze, not kepyng lawe ne peace
Sufferyng debates, and cõmon warrys acheue
And fully reygne, and put hym nought in pzeace
By lawe noz myght, to make it foz to ceale
Foz whiche there fell so great diuysyon
That he was put vnto deherytelon.

CNot he alone, but all his nacyon
Deuolued were, and from theyz ryght expelled
Full fayne to flee, with greate lamentacyon
From greate Bzitayne, in which they had excelled
In which their aũcetour, afoze lõg time had dwel
And knew their foes moztal, shuld it occupy (led
Foz euermoze without remedye.

CWhich is the payne, most fell aboue all payne
A man to haue bene in hye felycite
And to fall downe, by infoztune agayne
In mysery and fell aduersyte
Mat.xii. Howe maye a man haue a thyng moze contraye

Then

Crete. Lyon. Aeype & Cen. Which And.
Foulen out certayne. And. Felle. Diuersion.
Vowred. Myght. Thus then were expelled.
By the doome of God whos Lawes they had defiled. Doone.
Withoutyn. Of any. Hatte. Fallon. Many. More contrayosite.

Then to haue been well, and after woo begone
Incomperable to it, bee paynes echone.

Wherfore good lord, the peace euermore main
And ryottes all, chastyce by prouisyon (teine
And lawe vpholde ryghtfully, and sustene
And ouer all thyng, se there bee no deuisyon
But reste and peace, without discencyon
For where a realme, or a cytee is deuyded
It maye not stand, as late was verified

In Fraunce as fell, full greate diuision
Through whiche, ỹ first Henry kyng of Englãde
Ouer rode their lande, by greate prouision
And conquered theim, thei might not hym wstãde
All their citees, were yeld into his hande
For cause of their cruell descencion
Emong theim sustened by contencion

Roome, Carthage, and many other citees
And many realmes, as clerkes haue specified
Haue been subuert, and also many countrees
By diuision, emong theim fortified
Wher vnite and loue, had been edified
Might theim haue saued in all prosperite
Frome all hurt, and all aduersite

Wherfore good lord, thynke on this lesso nowe
And teache it to my lorde of Marche your heire
While he is young, it maye bee for his prowe
To thynke on it, whẽ that the wether wareth faire
And his people, vnto hym dooeth repaire
And litill hath, theim to releue and pease

n Then

1 That hath be 2 Been 3 Energyon.
4 Amonge the lordes but se that thei bee in con. 5 Fyght. 6 Thei.
7 Freym selfe. 8 Subuerted. 9 The. 10 well. 11 Manes hurte. 12 Newe.
13 Ware. 14 Pease.

Then maye it hap, with it his people ease

¶ For what sauour a newe shell is taken with
When it is olde, it tasteth of the same
Or what kynd of ympe, in gardein or in frith
Ymped is in stocke, fro whence it came
It sauourith euer, and it nothyng to blame
For of his rote, frome whiche he dooth out spryng
He must euer tast, and sauour in eatyng

¶ While he is young, in wisedome hym endowe
Whiche is full hard to gette, without labour
Whiche labour maye not bee, with ease nowe
For of labour came kyng and emperour
Let hym not bee idill, that shall bee your successor
For honour and ease, together maye not been
Wherfore with nowe the wand, while it is grene

¶ Endowe hym nowe, with noble sapience
By whiche he maye the wolf, werre frome the gate
For wisedome is more worth in all defence
Then any gold, or riches congregate
For who wanteth witte, is alwaye desolate
Of all good rule and manly gouernaunce
And euer enfect, by his contrariaunce

¶ Endowe hym also in humilitee
And wrath deferre, by humble pacience
Through whiche he shall, increace in dignitee
And catch alway, full greate intelligence
Of all good rule and noble regymence
And to conclude, wrath will euer sette a side (uide
All maner of thyng, whiche wisedome would pro=

¶ Behold Bochas, what prices haue through pride

Be

1 To ease. 2 Finde what maner. 3 Ay. 4 So 5 Bide. 6 Come.
7 Grafte. 8 While the Empire. 9 In. 10 The whiche. 11 Bete. 12 Want it
13 Wyth. 14 Also in all 15 Werre. 16 alway

Be cast downe frome all their dignitee
Wher sapience and meekenes had bee guyde
Full suerly might haue saued bee
And haue stand alwaye in might & greate suertee
If in their hartes, meekenes had bee ground
And wisedome also, thei had not be confound

¶ Nowe foloweth of the Englysshe kynges and Saxones. The.xcix. Chapiter.

THis Cadwalader, nowe laide in sepulture
That some tyme was ỹ kyng of great Bry
And of Westsex also therw̃ full sure (tain
To whome succedid Iuore his soonne certain
Reignyng ouer Brytons that did remain
In Wales then, without any socour
But onely he became their gouernour

¶ With whome Iue, his cousin was at nede
That warred sore the Englishe and Saxonye
Many winters, and nought preuayled in deede
Sauyng thei reigned, vpon the Vasselry
That wer out castes, of all Brytany
But Ingils and Iue his brother dere
In westsex reigned, which cõrede his sonnes were

¶ Whom Englishe then, and all the Saxonye
Theim chose and made, to bee their protectours
Again Iuor and his cousin Iuy
That were that tyme, the Brytons gouernours
To Wales fled, for helpe and greate socours
But Ingils and Iue of Englishe bloodde discent
Then kept Englande, full well by one assent

¶A yere all whole, and then this Ingils dyed
And Iue was kyng, of Westsex fully cround
That reigned then, full greately magnified
Eyght and thyrty wynter, full well and sounde
With his brother, and what alloen that stoũde
In whose tyme, Theodore then dyed
Of Cauntorbury archebishop signified

¶Whiche Ingile & Iue, did call this lande En-
After Inglis, as thei had harde afore (glande
After Engest, it called was Engestes lande
By corrupt speach, Englande it hight therfore
And afterwarde, so that name it hath euer bore
As Gurmound also, afore it had so named
Whiche sith ẏ tyme, hath been ful hougely famed

¶kyng Iue and Ingils, in Westsex[1] first began
The yere sixe hundred foure score, & therto nyne
So did Iuo[2] and Iue[3] in Wales then
Ouer the Walshe, that were of Brytons line
In muche trouble and woo as full that tyme
kyng Alfride in all Northumberlande
Wittred[4] and Welbard,[5] in Kent I vnderstande

¶In Englande yet, were kynges seuen[6]
Under kyng Iue,[7] that twenty battailes smote
Upon Iuor and Iue,[8] accompted euen[9]
But in the yere, as Bede hath saied and wryte[10]
That euery manne his debte, to kynd paye mote
kyng Iue dyed at Roome, then was the yere
Seuen hundred and seuen and twenty clere

¶And at his death, he gaue to Roome eche yere

The

1 Ina in Westsaxe to reigne 2 Iuor 3 Iua 4 Withtrida 5 Webbard
6 Alway seuen 8 Ina. 9 Here the Add. Harl. MS. addes And other kynges that he subdued I wote. 10 Bede 2.

The Roome pence throughe Westsex all about
Perpetually to bee well payed and clere
For vnto Roome he went without doubt
And with theim,lordes and gentils a greate route
In pilgrymage,for Eld and impotence
When he might not the lande well defence

Roome pence,

The.C.Chapiter.

¶ Etheldred kyng of Westsex protector of Englande that reigned thyrty yere.

ETheldred in Westsex,to hym gan succede
And kyng was then,and held the royalte
Protector was of Englãde their in deede
And helde his tyme,euer furth the souereingtee
In heritage and perpetualitee
That thyrten yere reigned in good astate
Whiche cherished peace,and chastised all debate

Ethel dred.

¶ Wher any wrath was,growyng in his lande
Emong prelates or lordes temporall
In citees or in cuntrees wher he fande
Accordid theim,in euery place ouer all
And in his tyme the kynges inspeciall
Under his rule and sure protection
He kept in peace,by lawfull direction

¶ Who dyed so,of Christ his incarnacion
The yere sixe hundreth & fourty accompted tho
Entombed at Bathe,with sore lamentacion
Of all Englande,as well of frende as foo
Which Bathe citee,some tyme was called soo
Achamany,in Brytain languague
By Achaman that had it in heritage

1 Petro. 2 After this line the Harleian MS. adds Which yit in Englonde of antiquyte be praised. 3 in Londen & Age. 5 Wall the Londe. 7 Etheland & kynn in Westsex. 8 That. 9 Ran. 10 Aga. 11 Fro his Auncestry. 12 And kept the Reame in peace without debate. 13 Enerith. 14 In all. 15 Counted. 16 Eyte. 17 Ac. 18 Ke Britons. &c.

¶ In his tyme was Oswyk in Northumberlād
And dyed then, to whome Colwolphe did succed
Edbertpzen in Kent I vnderstand
And Ethelbald in Wers was thē I rede
In Esser also, was then reignyng Selrede
And Ethelrede in Estangle that daye
All these wer kynges, and vnder hym alwaye

¶ So fro that tyme furth, & fro the Scottish sea
To Sulwath floud, and to the water of Tyne
The Peightes had and kept without lee
Wher kyng Edwin, their kyng was by right line
Rulyng that lande in peace and lawe full fine
That chaunged then mayden castell name
To Edenbzough a towne of greate fame

The. C.j. Chapiter.

¶ Cuthred kyng of Westsex protectour of England and reigned sixtene yere,

Kyng Cuthred.

CUthred was kyng, crouned of al Westsex
And protectour of all Englād that daye
His kynges vnder hym, ỹ then wer full
Did hym homage anone withouten delaye (sixe
Saue Ethelbald of Wers, that saied hym naye
For whiche he warred on hym then full sore
That bothe their landes, troubled were therfore

¶ Full oft thei mette, & faught with great power
Some that one, some tyme that other had
Victorie in felde, with strokes bought full dere
But when that kyng Ethelbald was moste glad
This kyng Cuthred, that was nothyng a drad
At Berford with hym mette in strong battaill And

* 1 Borithe. 2 Edwarde thean. 3 Estenglonde 4 That tyme fro Forth
5 Pictes. 6 Without 7 With greate defence of swerde and armoure fyne
Wher kynge Eden their kynge was by be right line
ame. 8 He. 10 Finally. 11 The felde. 12 Bedforde.

And slewe hym then, as Bede maketh rehersall

¶ Which Ethelbald in Wers, one a fourtye yere
Had reigned hole, and diuerse abbeys founded
In Wers lande, at Crouland one full clere
Of Monkes blacke, within the fennes grouñded
To whiche Turketyll his chaunceler founded
Gaue sixe maniers, to theyr foundacion
And abbot there was made by installacion

¶ This Battayl was, of Chrystes natiuitee
Seuen hundreth and fyue and fyftye yere
Wher Ethelbalde of Wers, the kyng did dye
To whom Bozrede, there was the kyng full clere
But this Cuthrede of Westsex layed on bere
Was in the yere of Chrystes birth to weten
Seuen hundreth hole, and syxe and fyfty written.

¶ To whome Segbert, in all regalitee — Segbert. kyng.
His cousyn next of bloode by all recorde
Was kyng crowned, and had the dignitee
But full he was, of malice and discorde
That with his kynges, could no tyme wel accorde
Wherfore they would, no lenger of hym holde
But droaue hym out, of all his lande full bolde

¶ For lawe ne peace, he did not well conserue
But chaunged lawe, euer after his deuise
From good to euell, eche other to ouerterue
To spoyle and robbe, his commons to suppryse
Thus in the lande, he made full great partyes
Wherfore the kynges, and lordes did hym expell
That but one yere, he dyd in it excell.

1 Maners. 2 Bernrede. 3 Cuthred. 4 Wrecan. 5 Fifty one winter.
6 The. 7 Cuthred. 8 From. 9 Thirtie foure. 10 by. 11 Before.

¶And afterwarde exiled, as he hym hyd
Within a wood, a swynherd made his ende
Then with his staffe, he slewe hym so betyd
For all his hye estate, thus was he spend
A prouerbe is of olde, was wysemen kend
That wronge lawes, make euer shorte lordes
Whiche wysemen yet remembre, and recordes.

The. C. ii. Chapiter.

¶Kynulphe kyng of Westsex protectoure of Englande, the whiche reigned. xxvi. yere.

Kynulph kyng.

Kynulphe succeded & had the gouernaunce
Of Westsex then, with all to it appente
Protectour was by all thordinaunce
Of kynges all, and the lordes assent
As his elders afore had regimente
The yere of Christ. vii. hundreth fyfty and seuen
As Bede hath written, and accompted full euen.

¶Of all the kynges, and lordes of Englande
He tooke feautee and royall hole homage
As souerayn lorde, honoured in all the lande
And mightly mayntened his heritage
His kynges all, and all his baronage
The peace and lawe, he kepte by diligence
Was none that would displease his excellence.

¶He reigned hole, in all kyndes suffisaunce
Sixe and twentye yere fully accoumpted
In greate honoure and myghty great puysaunce
Was none hym like, nor none hym surmounted

But

[a] Which. exit. alt No. MS. [b] Maketh. [3] Whereto.
[4] Maner. [5] High.

But death alone to his corps amounted
Dryuyng his soule, out fro the worldly nest
To heauens blisse, eternally there to rest.

At wynchester he was full fayre buryed
The yere. bii. hundreth foure score and also thre
Emong the people, highly magnifyed
As to suche a prince, longeth of royaltee
Right well beloued, of his lordes and cõmontee
In whose tyme Offa of Mers kyng
Unto the B. of Roome, sent his letters prayeng.

To depriue Lambert of Cauntorbury
Of primacy, and also of the palle
Whiche the byshop Adrian, anone hastely
Graunted hym then, by bulles writen papall
Lambert depriuyng, of his sea primall
By whiche Aldulphe, byshop then of Lychfelde
Hye primate was, and the state there helde.

The pall he had, and all the dignitee
Lambert depryued, without any delay
Of primacie, and of all soueraynte
Of all the churche of Englande hole that day
From Humber south, to Aldulphe did obeye
And Lychfeld then for metropolitan sea
Was set aboue, and had the dignitee.

But Egfryde then, the sonne of Offa kyng
Of Mers, the pall and all the primacie
Did well restore, to Christes hye plealyng
To Award then byshop of Caunterburye
Wher it abode, euer after worthyly

Unto

1 at his corse. 2 Princes ther.
3 with seruice deuoute the soule to remyde. 4 Merces. 5 Popa. &c.
6 to. 7 dambarde. 8 vde the Pope Adrian.
9 wherby dambarde deprined was ouer alle. 10 Find. 11 And alle. 12 Eccl.
13 Ac. 14 Athelarde. 15 by.

Unto this daye, with all the dignitee
As of olde right, it should haue soueraynte

¶ This tyme Kynot, of Pyghtes was the kyng
Fro forth to Carleile, and from the Scottishe sea
To Tyne that tyme his lordshyp was a dwellyng
The whiche he helde, by homage and feautee
Of the kyng then of Northumberlande in fee
And was his man also, in warre and peace
As his elders had doen, without leace.

¶ In whose dayes, tharchbyshop Egbert
Of Yorke, brother was as I can vnderstande
To the kyng of Northumberlande Edbert
The primacye and pall, brought to Yorkes lande
By the B. of Rome graunted, without gaynstand
Whiche from the death, of the good kyng Edwyn
Had ceased long, from the tyme of saynt Paulyn

¶ About this tyme, as well is expressed
Unguste the kyng of Pyghtes, rode in Englande
On warre, wher then he was full sore distressed
By the manly kyng of Northumberlande
Where he auoiwed, yf he came to his lande
A churche to make of full great dignitee
In worshyp of saynt Andrewe should it bee

¶ And at his home commyng one Regalo
Fro Constantyne by reuelacion
Brought certayn bones of saynt Andrewe tho
To kyng Ungust, where by his relacion
He founded then, a mynster of his fundacion
Of saynt Andrewe, wher his bones shrynned been

Ignorance in those dayes.

Peter. 2 And als. 3 Sacerd. 4 Tho. 5 Rome. 6 And by the Pope
8. Sti. 9. K
7 And from 1° Auowed. ~~did make~~. 11 Regulo.

As

As there in dede I was, and haue it seen.

The.C.iii.Chapiter.

¶ Brightryke kyng of Westsex protectour of Englande reigned.xvi.yere, that began to reigne in the yere of our Lorde vii.hundreth.iiii.score and three, and died in the yere. vii.C. foure score and nynetene.

BRightrike coulyn, ye was nexte of bloode
To kyng Kenulphe, by hole intelligence
Of Westsex, was kyng full wise & good
And protectour of Englande in regence
Whiche gouerned right well, with great sapience
The yere of Christ. vii. hundreth. iiii. score & three
When that he tooke on hym the dignitee

The wedded Edburge kyng Offa his doughter
Of Wers, for loue & peace & good accorde (kayre
Betwene theyr landes, with all theyr hole repayre
The kyng Albert, also of good accorde
Only of purpose, to make concorde
Of Eastlande came, to Offa for peace
Betwene theyr lande, the warres for to ceasse

And his doughter to wed, vnto his wyfe
For more suertee of loue, and good accorde
Whom quene Eburge, of Wers because of strife
Afore had be, betwene hym and hir lorde
And for she would not vnto the mariage accorde
Made hym to bee slayn, in full priue wise
Within his bed, afore that he myght ryse.

For whiche Offa, greatly was agreued

And

1 Than wrote. 2 Whiche ye loued peace and thought it the beste defence.
& wedde Ethelburge 4 Merse. 5 For. 6 Concorde. 7 Hir to.
8 Ethelburge. 9 Beene. 10 Priue, hatefull. 11 Full stomacke.

And buried hym, at Harforde his citee
And Offa then and Humbert, as is breued
Bishop of Lychefelde, wher then was his see[2]
Whiche kyng and byshop, with great royaltee
Translate that tyme, saynt Albone in shryne[3]
Of siluer gylt, with stones fayre and fyne.

Whiche Offa died, the yere of Christ full clere[4]
Seuen hundreth. iiii. score and thereto seuentene
When he had reigned so, ix. and thyrty yere
At Offa aye buried, that tyme as well is sene[5]
With all honoure, as to suche a kyng beseme
To whom Egfride his sonne, then gan succede[7]
And after hym, Kynuphe reigned in dede.

(peny

Whiche Offa gaue through Mers, the Rome
Unto the churche of Rome, full longe afore
Tharchebyshoprych from Cauntorburye
Unto Lychefeld, translated for euermore
By his will, euer to abyde thore[9]
So stode it then, for certeyn all his lyue
As Flores sayth, and doeth it so subscriue.

This Adulphe,[11] kyng of Northumberlande
Slew Wade his duke, that again hym was rebel
Besyde Mulgreue, where as men vnderstande
His graue is yet men saye, vpon the fell
For his falshed and treason, as bookes tell[12]
Betwene Gysburgh and Whitby, sothe to saye
Where for treason, he was layd in the hie waye.

In his fourth yere, w duke Kylrike[13] he fought
And droaue hym to his shippes then agayn

In

1 Was cc. 2 cc. 3 Fro Cauntorbury chaunged was the dignite
Who translate that saynt Albon in a shryne.
4 Was. 5 Fully 6 Was. 7 And in his life he crowned Egfride
His son so that after gan succede
8 Kynuphe. 9 That to abide the Pope had writte therfore.
10 And. to the Rode. 11 Tyme Alfwolde
12 [illegible] 13 Brichtrike.

In Humbar,so that he had not to his fraught
But fewe persones,were lefte alyue vnslayne
And in his yere eleuen,with mykell payne
With Danes he fought,againe yorkeshyre right
where many thousādes he slewe,ꝑ were ful wight

And on a daye,as he from huntyng came
All hote chased,his men bottelles founde
In his chaumber,in which was wyne of name
Wenne called ꝑ tyme, Vernage of straunge land
Whiche wine was poysoned,as I vnderstande
Of whiche he dranke,and poysoned was anon
Unto the death,and might no ferther gone.

The dyed the yere.vii.C.lxxx.and nyntene
At Tewkisbury, buryed in sepulture
Of whose death,Edburge that was quene
Was blamed then,for that mysauenture
For she dyd make that drynke,men sayde ful sure
Certayne persones by venym to haue slayne
That loued her nought,and was her euer agayn

But what for feare,and what for speche she fled
With great rychesse,of passyng great measure
In Fraunce vnto the kyng,full fast she sped
But of her rule,thence forth I set no cure
It was so lewde to reporte in scrypture
I wyll not breake my brayne,it to reporte
For wemens wele,the which I wolde comforte

The.C.iiii.Chapiter.

¶ Egbert kyng of Westsex,protectour of England that reigned,xxxv.yere,s dyed in the yere of Chryste, viii.hundreth thyrty

1 Nought for. 2 That were on lyue 3 Full great.
4 Thousandes slain. 5 Drank. 6 Remembred. 7 That sounde
8 The Harleian mb adds For whome hir men take sorrow and grete
sore. 9 Tokbury. 10 Entred 11 Straunge. 12 Nine. 13 Fyue. 14 C. 15 Fyue.

thyrtye and thre, as after shall appere.

Kyng Egberte.

EGberte, cosyn to the sayde Segberte
kyng of Westser, was royally accepte
with all honour, ỹ the lordes could aduert
And eche man glad, no creature excepte
So graciously fortune, then had hym kepte
That all people ioyed, his coronacyon
For cause he was, of Britons generacyon.

For downe he was, krom Asserake discent
Kyng Ebrank, sonne of consanguinytee
Syth Cadwalader dyed, and was dispent
Was none ryght heyre, of Brytons bloud but he
As Chronycles tell, lyke as a man maye se
For systers sonne, he was to kyng Sygbert
Of Westser hole, as Flores coulde aduerte.

Also men sayde, he came of Ingils bloude
And very heyre he was, to hym and Iue
For whiche Englysh & Sarons, with him stode
And helde with hym, as for theyr bloude natyke
Protectour was he made, there so belyue
Of all Englande and Wales, hole conquered
And Cornewayle also, as it is chronicled.

Then toke he, of all kynges leege homage
Excepte Bernulphe, ỹ kyng of Wers was tho
Woulde do hym none then, for his herytage
Wherfore he brent his lande, & did him mikyl wo
And so they gathred great hoost, on both sides tho
Where Bernulphe, then at Glenden hym met
In Wers lande, trowyng hym to ouerset.

But

1 kynge. 2 lordes coulde more. 3 che man waye. 4 Royalle.
5 Coulde aduerte. 6 saxons. 7 to kynge. 8 In peace and che in str.
9 So was. 10 Ille. 11 high. 12 Seege. 14. with.
15. Wer Bernulph at Glyngadon hym mett soo
In chere londes trowynge him to ouerset

¶But kyng Egberte had then the victory
And slewe Bernulphe, for all his boste and pryde
To Ludican, he gaue that lande in hye
To holde of hym, as other dyd on euery syde
Through all Englande, ỹ was both longe & wide
Then droue he kyng Balrede, out from all Kent
And all his realme destroyed sore and brent

¶But Ludican was false, by foule treason
Whome kyng Egbert then slewe in batayle sore
For his falshode, and his rebellyon
And to Wylaffe, he gaue that lande ryght thore
Was Bernulphs sonne, to haue for euermore
To holde of hym, of ryght and herytage
By seruyce dewe, of feaute and homage.

¶Then in his tyme, the Danes sore destroyed
The ysles of shepey, and Tenet also
And to the sea, they went agayne bnanoyed
And after sone, in Northumberlande tho
They dyd aryue, and wrought full mekell woo
With whome Egbert, there faught w̄ smal meny
That oute of the felde, they made hym to flye.

¶Kyng Egbert drewe south, then into the lande
And helde the felde, to tyme his sonnes two
Athylwolfe and Ethylbert, I bnderstande
With hoste full greate, came ridyng to hym tho
Where then he bare, the crosse of golde ay so
In his lefte hande, and in his ryght a swerd
With which he made, his foes therwith al aferd

¶For there he had the felde and victorye

And

---

10. ¹ Wher Bernulph slew Beorwynd. ² In the Baldrede. ³ St. Wilfride. ⁴ Into one of. ⁵ But they fyue drofe out of the felde shortly. ⁶ Then drew into ⁷ Soone ther.

And slewe Dardan, a knyght full chyualrus
The kynges sonne, of Denmarke sekerly
And all his hoste, that was full malicyous
By vertue of the crosse, patyke precyous
For whiche alwaye after, in hys banner
Of azuer whole, the crosse of golde he bear

¶ Whiche armes so full, after this daye
Kyng Kinigyll of Westsex, had them boze
Fro his bapteme, thenne afterwarde alwaye
And all the kynges after, so dyd euermoze
Of Westsex, so in mynde of Chzistes loze
His crosse, his death, and his holy passyon
Whiche Jewes him wzought, without compassiō

When kyng Egbert had fyue and thyzty yere
Reygned in lande, and felt full great syckenesse
Of whiche he dyed, of Chzystes birth full clere
The yere so then. viii. C. was expzesse
Foure and thyzty, nother moze ne lesse
At Wynchester, then royally buryed
As Flozes sayeth, and well hath notifyed.

The. C. v. Chapiter.

¶ Athelwolfe kynge of Westsex, reygned. xix. yere, & dyed the yere. viii. hundzeth. liii. after Chzystes byzth,

* Tythes firste graūted to the clergy in Englande.

AThelwolfe was king crowned at his citee
Of Westchester, in all royall estate
To whome the kinges, & lozdes made feau (te
And homage leege as was pzeozdynate
That reygned after. xix. yere foztunate
And graunted the churche, tythes of cozne & haye Of

1 Patisse und. king afore that. Signifie.
2 viii. edit. alt.
4 Which graunte.

Of bestiall also through Westsex for ay.

¶ In this yere eight hundred thirty and eight
The Danes ariued with shippes fourscore & thre
Where Athelstane his sonne did with them fight
And duke Wolfward, by greate fortunitee
Theim toke and slewe with all felicitee
But Athelstane, in that battaill was slaine
Of his warres, that was the capitain.

¶ And in the yere eight hundred thirty and nyne
The kyng faught sore with Danes at Wersyng=
Wher erle Harbart was slain a prince full fine (tō
But Danes all were take and slain there adoune
Without mercie, cracked vpon the croune,
The kyng came home, with honour and victorye
As Flores saieth, right in his memory.

¶ And in the yere eight hundred fourty and one
The Danes watched thest sea coste throughout
With diuers hostes, for which ỹ kyng made great
Al helples thē, the Danes that wer so stout (mone
In many places, with many diuerse rout
All harmlesse went without hurt or pain
By diuerse tyme, that yere home again.

In the yere eight hundred foure and fourty
At Carham then, the kyng full sore did fight
With Danes fell, and had the victorye
And at Aluewik he faught, again furth right
with Danes also, wher kyng Redwolf that hight
Of Northumberland, and erle Alfride was slain
And full greate parte, of their hoste certain.

o.i. Kyng

Greately vexed, and punished was right sore
Whenne saied he was, for sinne inordinate
With his stepdame, that was so consociate
But then he had, as God would repentaunce
For his trespas and misgouernaunce.

Afore he died, he did full sore repent
And for his synne, stode to correccion
Of holy churche, for his amendement
Submitted whole, without obiection
And for to liue, in clene perfeccion
Departed were by lawe and deuorced
Afore his soule was passed and vncorced.

The.C.vi.Chapiter.

Ethelbert kyng of Westsex protectour of Englande that reigned fiue yere.

Sir Ethelbert his brother gan succede
In whose dayes, ỹ Danes destroied sore
The east parties of Englād thē in deed
And home again, thei went harmelesse
Destroyed ỹ people, & the lāde right sore (therfore
But sone there after, kyng Ethelbert them mette
And sleugh them doune, in battaill sore and bet.

Another hoste, then newe spoyled all Kent
And by treaty, wyntred within the Isle
Of Tenet, then by Kentishe mennes assent
But at the last, thei with a subtle wyle
Dispoyled all Kent, and falsely did beguyle
And to their shippes went without delaye
Into Denmarke, with muche riche araye

This

1 Vexed. 2 Full. 3 Well. 4 And his. 5 In.
6 And grete riches in these parties they bore. 7 And sore them.
* The last. 8 All newe than spoyled.
9 So went. 10 Richer.

This Ethelbert reigned hole fiue yere
And dyed the yere of verey Chriſtes date
Eyght hundreth hole and therto ſixty clere
As Flores ſaieth, and hath it approbate
But with ſickenes he was ſo altcrate
He dyed then, and at Shyrborne buried
With great worſhyp and honour laudefied

The.C.vii.chapiter.

¶ Elfride kyng of Weſtſex protector of England reigned ſixe yere, & died in the yere of Chriſt eyght hundred.lxvi.

ELfride was kyng, after his brother then
That reigned ſo, with all the dignitee
In Weſtſex hole, and mightely began
Protector was as was neceſſitee
For Danes then of great iniquitee
His land foule brent, waſted and deſtroyed
That al England, was combred and anoyed

Elfride kyng.

¶ In the Eaſt coſt of England ſpecially
In Eaſtangle, where Edmond then was kyng
There did great hurt ful cruelly
In Northumberland ful felly warryng
The people deſtroiyng, and the land bremmyng
Where Danes then ſleugh the kyng of that lande
Beſyde Yorke, ſo as Flores doeth vnderſtand

Byside

¶ Alſo they ſleugh, in Northfolke all about
The people doune, and in Suffolke alſo
The kyng Edmond they ſleugh without doubt,
Of Eſtangland, with arowes ſharpe tho
Was ſhot to death, with muche other woo

Folly. 2 Ethelred. 3 Estenglonde. 4 The Danys
hadde with an other hoote thei were murderynge
In Northumberlonde full cruelle werrynge. 6 Hen vo. 7 Ether

That is a sainct honored this day in blysse
At Edmondes bury canonized I wisse

Hungar and Ubba slewe hym ful cruelly
And brent abbeis throughout all England tyme
By North and South, and prestes full cursedly
All holy folke fled out of that realme
They slewe all people that had take baptesme
At Colyngham sainct Ebbe, that was abbesse
Their nonnes put from them in sore distresse

For dred of the tyrauntes. ii. ful cruel
And their people cursed and ful of malice
That rauished Nunnes, euer where they hard tell
In her chapter, ordeined againe their enemies
Should not defloule, their clene virginitees
She cut her nose of, and her ouer lippe
To make hir lothe that she might from him slipe.

And counselled all hir systers to do the same
To make their faces to horge so with the sight
And so they did, afore the enemies came
Echon their nose and ouer lippe ful right
Cut of anone which was an horugly sight
For whiche tho fooes, thabbey and Nunnes brent
For they them selfe disfigured had shent.

Frō Twede to Thames, abbais then they brent
And churches hole and people slewe right doune
Wyues, maydens, widdowes, and Nunnes shent
Through all the land the east region
People sleyng in euery borough and toune
The women euer they violate

1 Whiche. 2 They slewe all folke that hade taken baptyme. They spared noone to cruelte was their tyme. 3 Coldyngham.
4 Sir. Sprote 5 Throughout. Edit. alt. 6 By wher as she. 7 Lepe that he fell.
8 Theym.
= Horge. Edit. alt Vgge. Mal. 9 Furth. 10 Hade and.
11 All Abbayes. 12 Wifes and. 13 Of the. 14 And diuerse wretch man

Ii

In euery place and fouly defloȝate.

And in the yere. viii. hundȝeth fyftie and fiue
He died so, and from this woȝlde expired
Whom all his tyme, the Danes full soȝe did vexe
Againe him euer, ful soȝe they had conspired
Theyȝ hearttes in malice, alway soȝe asserd
Somtyme the woȝse they had, somtyme the better
As Floȝes sayeth, and written hath in letter.

The. C. viii. Chapiter.

Alurede kyng of Westser protectoȝ of Englande reigned xxi. yere and died the. viii C. xcv.

Alurede kyng.

ALurede, kyng was of this region
That bȝother was to this noble Elfryde
A perfit clerke, pȝoued in opinion
As clerkes could discerne, and pȝoued
In knyghthode also appȝoued and notified
So pleuerly, that no man knewe his peer
So good a knight, he was and synguler.

In battayles many, in his fathers daȝes
And also in his bȝethȝen tyme al thȝe
He fought ful oft, and bare him wel alwaȝes
That foȝ his deedes and singularitee
He was commended among thenemytee
Within the lande and out, as wel was knowe
His fame among the people hye was blowe

Whyles he was kyng, he had aduersitee
With Danes oft, that on him dyd rue
Destroyed his land, with great iniquitee

The

The whiche ful oft with might he did out dryue
And slewe thoulandes, that lost theyr lyue
Through the warres, begon of theyr outrage
That meruell was to sene, of one lynage.

And in the yere. bitt. hundreth sixty and eyght
The Danes came to Yorke, and toke the toune
Hunger and Ubba, with many a wyle slight
Wasted the land about, both vp and doune
And so came furth to Wars, with hostes boune
And to Westsex, whom then the kyng Alurede
Discomfited there, with the host that he did lede.

The Danyshe host, to Redyng came againe
Another host at London, was with pride
Of Danes also, that wrought him mekyl paine
But whyles these hostes were parted and deuided
With his power, Alurede gan to ryde
And at Englefeld he fought, in Barkeshyre right
Where victorie he had, maugre of theyr might

At Redyng in Barkeshyre, then he mette
An hostful great, where he had then against
The victorye, and his foes doune bette
At Basyng also, he slew them doune certaine
At Asshenden, he drove them out all playne
And gotte the felde with all the victories
As Flores saieth right in his memories

And in the yere. bitt. hundreth lyrty & fourtene
The Danishe host rode Lyndsey & Wars countrey
And home againe, as then was wel sene
In Northumberland with great prosperitee

The

1 And many. 2 Their. 3 And sleight. 4 Discomfite. 5 This.
6 His. 7 He sent after his men on euery side.
8 At Englishfelde. 9 With mekyll. 10 Than in Wiltshire. 11 Dies ther
12 His. 13 They drove Lynn. 14 Merde. 15 It was.

The Danes rode, doyng great aduersitee
Where the bishop then of holy Iland
And all his monkes were, ful fast fleand.

¶ With s. Cuthberts bones, bare about. iii. pere Superstition.
Nowe here, nowe there, in diuers places aboute
For dread of Danes, and enemies that there were
In Northūberland dwellyng, that tyme ful stout
But then the kyng, the sea sayled throughout
And shippes gatte, with muche great ryches
For to defend his land, fro great distresse.

¶ In Westsex then, with fooes againe he mette
Where they fro him, to Exeter that night
Fled ful fast, where Alurede them ouer sette
And slewe them doune, in battail and in fight
And then in Mars, anone he fought forth right
With Danes tho, and also with Norwayes
That wasted had al Mars, in many wayes.

¶ Then fought he also, at Chipnā in Wilshyre
And Hunger and Ubba and duke Haldene
Tyrauntes cruel, hote as any fyre
The Christen folke dyd brenne, wast and slene
With cruel tourmentes, dyd them care and tene
Where Alurede had the victorye
And slewe that day, al the Danishyre.

The.C.ix.chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Alurede fled, to Ethelyngay in Sidlis, for dread of Danes, and serued an oxherde of the countre.

1 By Northumberlonde so to take their nawe
With greate riches gote by their robbery. 2 Of the Gutron
3 Ran. 4 Right. 5 Pore and. 6 after in.
7 He fought with Reyn fule. 8 To. 9 Ille. 10 Chepynham. 11 To.
12 They spared noone murder to Reyn was fayre.
13 Ille He. 14 Langeborne.

GUtron the kyng of Denmarke ỹ was tho
In Westsex warred ful sore, & brent ỹ lond
With whych ỹ kyng so marred was ẅ wo
He wyst not wel whether to ryde or stond
But to Ethelyngay anone he toke on hond
To ride, where then he hyd him in a place
For drede of Danes, suche was his hap & grace.

In Denwolfes house thorherd of the towne
So was he then, in poore and symple aray
Where Denwolf, clad him in his owne goune
And tender was to him there alwaye
But his wyfe made him to labour ay
With bakyng and with bruyng wonder sore
In water beryng, she made hun worke euermore

Where then his lordes & knyghtes in good aray
Came to him then, with host and great powre
Where than the kyng vpon Gutron that day
In battaile strong, with courage freshe and clere
Fought sore, and toke Gutron prisonere
And thyrtie dukes with him in companye
Unchristen were, they al of Panymry.

And had the feld with al the victory
And of Danes many thousandes slewe
He baptised than, as made is memory
This kyng Gutron, that after was tul true
And named was Athylstan al newe
To whom the kyng, gaue than al Estengland
As Edmond had, to holde of him that land

And al his dukes were also there baptised

And

1 Guthrum. 2 Than. 3 For. 4 symple poore. 5 Brto.
6 But by his wife he made was Laborer aye. 7 And 8 Guthrum.
9 Tale fore 10 Guthrum. 11 Paianry. 12 Than to.

And chrysten men, became for goddes loue
The yere of Chryst, viii. C. then compeysed
Seuented and eyght as Florys doth approue
The kyng was then, agaynne at his aboue
Remembred hym of Denwolf, that hym hyd
And sent for hym to Ethelyngay, he dyd.

¶ His wyfe was dede, & sonwhat was he letered
At his desyre, the kyng set him to lerne
To tyme that he was wyse, and mekel betered
In holy wryt that he could wel discerne
And then the kyng made hym byshop as yerne
Of Wynchestre, when Dunbert there so dyed
That bishop was afore hym sacrified.

¶ In the yere. viii. C. and foure score
The Danes in Thamis & wyntered at Foulham
The kyng came in somer after thore
And slewe them all, that they went neuer hame
The dede, the quycke, the maymed, and the lame
All buryed were, where the battaile was smyten
As Florys saieth, and clerkly hath it wryten.

¶ At Rochester the Danes were eft on lond
With whom the kyng, there faught, & many slew
Many drowned, and lyng on the sond
As they vnto their shippes, agaynward flewe
He droue them there, vnto a warmely stewe*
After their laboure, to haue recreation
Upon the sondes, to make theyr habitation

The. C. x. Chapiter.

¶ How Martine B. of Rome, graũted to kyng Alurede to founde

1 Bettered. 2 Wynthe. 3 Full 4 Dunbarde. 5 Fulham. 6 Vanquished. 7 Feare.
* Stewe. 8 Enbarred. 9 Byshop of Rome.

found an vniuersitee and study for clerkes, whiche he made at Oxford, where the clerkes be twayne, they shal not rede for their fourme at Stamford.

AND in the yere. viii. C. lxxx. and twayne
[Martin] bishop of Rome, granted to king
To fond & mak a study thē again Alurede
And an vniuersitee for clerkes in to rede
The whiche he made, at Oxenford in dede
To that entent, that clerkes by sapience
Againe heretykes, shulde make resystence.

And christen faith mayntayn, by their doctrine
The kyng also, to comforte and counsaile
By their teachyng, and wytty disciplyne
As Philosophers of olde, dyd great auayle
To kynges, prynces, and cities, gouernayle
Gaue all their wyt, in study and diligence
Agayne mischeues, to fynde and make defence.

And in the yere. viii. C. lxxx, and eyght
All his ryches, in fyue partes he ganne deuyde
One part to men of warre, to kepe his right
Another part, to land tyllers in that tyde
The husbandry to mayntayne and to guide
The thyrde part, all churches wasted to restore
The fourth vnto the study of their lore

And to the Judges, and men of lawe wel lerned
The fyfte part, ful wysely he dispende.
To holde the lawe in peace truely gouerned
Disposed thus, he was the realme tamende
This was a kyng, ful greatly to cōmende

That

[1] Graduates. [2] That they shuld not teche at Stamford. [3] Martyn. [4] Thorpe Mawdyne. [5] To. [6] Als. [7] And. [8] Greatly to recommende.

That thus could kepe his lande from all veracio
And not to hurte, his commons by tyraccion.

Fortruste it well, as God is now in heuen
Who hurte the poore people, and the commontee
By taxes sore, and their goodes fro theim reuen
For any cause, but necessitee
The dismes to paye, compell of royaltee
Though thei speake fast & mũble with the mouth
Thei praie full euil with hert, bothe north & south

The yere of Christ. viii. C. lxxx. and thirtene
The duke Hastyne of Danes, euer vntrewe
Destroyed the lande, with hostes proude and kene
By Easte and West, that all the lande did rewe
Whom the kyng in battaill, felly slewe
After diuerse battailles, emong theim smitten
In sundry places, there as it was well weten.

In euery shire, the kyng made capitaines
To kepe the lande, with folke of their countree
And shippes many, & galaies lõg with chieftains
And Balyngers, with bargis in the see
With whiche he gate riches, greate quantitee
And at the flud was called Uthermare
He slewe an hoste of Danes, with battaill sare.

The. C. xi. Chapiter.

How duke Rollo a panyme, gate Normandy, of whõ all the dukes of Normandy, be lineally discended.

AND in the yere. viii. C. lxxx. and seuentene
The duke Rollo, of Denmarke nacion
A Panim stout, with mighty hoste & kene

In

In Englande brent without any delacion
Whom Alurede by good suppoztacion
Droue then again: vnto his nauy right
And of his menne, a thousande slewe in fight

Whiche Rollo then, landed in Nozmandy
Of whom all dukes, of that pzouince discent
And wan that lande, with swerde full manfully
And duke there was made, of whole entent
By pzocesse after, and by the kynges assent
Of Fraūce, whose doughter he wed vnto his wife
And christen manne became so all his lyfe.

Superst: cion of nesse with dam nable ido latrie.

At Charters firste, he sieged so the toune
Where thei within, our ladies smocke the shewed
Foz their banner, and their saluacion
Foz feare of whiche, full saze in bert he rewed
All sodainly, and vnto Roan remoued
Where the his wife, dame Gille was ded & buried
Without childe betwene theim notified.

But then he wedded Pepam, the sister faire
Of duke Robert, of Nozmandy and Roane
On whom he gate William his sonne and heire
That after hym was duke thereof anone
When yeres many were passed and ouergone
But now at this to ceasse, I will encline
Till afterward, I shall tell forth their line.

Kyng Alurede, the lawes of Troye and Brute
Lawes Woluntynes, and Marcians congregate
With Danishe lawes, that were well constitute
And Gzekishe also, well made and appzobate

In

1 Manie. 2 is. 3 Sore. 4 And for. 5 to Rome so he.
6 Sue. 7 dies.

In Englysshe tongue, he theim all translate
Whiche yet bee called, the lawes of Alurede
At Westminster, remembred in dede.

And in the yere. viii. C. lxxx, and eyghtene
Then Alurede, this noble kyng so dyed
When he had reigned. xxix. yere clene
And with the Danes, in battailes multiplyed
He faught often, as Colman notifyed
In his chronicle, and in his cathologe
Entitled well, as in his dyaloge.

That fiftie battailles, and sixt he smote
Somtyme the woorse, and somtyme had the better
Somtyme the felde, he had at his note
Sometyme he fled awaie, as saieth the letter
Like as fortune, his cause left vnfeter
But neuertheless, as oft when so thei came
He countred theym, and kept the lande fro shame

The. C. xii. Chapiter.

Edward the first kyng of Englande reigned. xxiii. yere, and died the yere of Christe. ix. C. and. xix.

Edward his sõne, so crouned was anone
Of Westsex, then by all the parlyamẽt
Protectour was made, again the fone
Which warred sore, in Englãd by assẽt
The yere. viii. C. lxxx. and fyftene spent
Erle Athulwold he exyled, into Fraunce
For he a Nunne had raufshed, to his vnaunce.

But after that, this same erle Athulwolde
With

With Danysche hoste, Mars and Englande
Destroyed sore bothe, kyng Edward full bolde
Slewe Ethalwode, and his hoste I vnderstande
Discomfet whole, and droue them out of lande
And made all kynges of Englande, his subiectes
For so he thought, it was his very dettes.

He sommoned then at London, his parliamēt
Where he deposed, the kynges euerichone
Of all Englande, and made them by assent
Dukes and erles, thence forwarde so anone
In euery kyngdome, then he ordained one
And in some three, he made by ordinaunce
And all kyngdomes, forynged by gouernaunce.

And he to bee the kyng, of all Englande
Proclaimed whole, to voyde all variaunce
Discorde and warre, that many yeres had stande
Whyles seuen kynges, had the gouernaunce
There might no lawe, ne peace haue perseueraūce
Wherefore he toke, of euery Duke homage
Of Erles also, and of the Baronage

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

Scotlande and Wales, he warred sore in dede
Till they became his menne, and made homage
For soueraigne lorde of Britain, as I rede
The kynges then did, for their heritage
For all their menne, and for their vasselage
To ryde with hym, where that euer he goe
In warre and peace, againe frende and foe

Duke Ethelred of Mars, and also his wife
Elfled that hight, Westchester then repaired

That

[1] Englande. wit. out. [2] But. [3] Ethelwolde [4] Eche [5] Beau. [6] Eadrich. [7] Thur. [8] Both, frende. [9] As

That wasted was, by Danes warre and strife
Whiche Roomaynes first builded, had and keired
In tyme when, thei to this lande repeired
Of Roomayne werke, whiles thei here occupied
That citee first, full freshly edified

¶ The kaught the kyng, w Danes at Wodefeld
In Wers[3] & also at Herford w greate pain (sore
Wher victorye he had, of theim euermore
Again he kaught with Danes soth to sain
At Towcester, and laid theim on the plain
In Yorkeshire also[4], he slewe the Danes downe[5]
And voided[6] theim all out of his region

The.C.xiii.Chapiter.

¶ This kyng made an vnion of all the realmes, and called it Englande, and after it failed neuer of that name.

THis noble kyng thus made an vnion
Of seue realmes, y stode three hūdred yere
Sixe and thyrty also[7] in greate deuision
And warres many[8], as Colman saieth full clere
Fro Gurmond had driuen out Carreis here
Whiche was the yere fiue.C.iiii.score & thirtene[9]
Unto the yere of Christ nine hundred & nientene

¶ These[10] erles all, and dukes then held the lawe
As shyues[11] nowe in shires dooen and maintene
That the commons ouerlaied, full sore with awe
And sore oppressed their states to sustene
Wherfore he voided[12] theim out of office clene
And shyues[11] made through all his region
Whiche haue not forgete[e] extorcion

[1] In Harleian MS. Reads Writes thus his londe p This
[2] failed with malice fried. [2] Thes. [3] Merse. [4] Als. [5] Alle [6] Voide.
[7] Telle [8] Kyng Carreis. [9] Threne. [10] His. [11] Shireuys. [12] Voide.
[e] Forgoten. Edit. alt. Yit forgete. MS.

¶ This noble kyng, Edward thelder highte

Harding fol. cxiii b.

⊗ Instead of this stanza he has

And in the yere kyng
When Duke Rollo of Tha
Yore hase then cris
Seven daies after the
Wt in while the sinner c
Art full teronte after in
And the patient is wass

¶ In whyle tyme so, ỹ yere of Chryst nine hũdzed
And thyrty moze and fiue full accompted
Robert Rollo his soule and cozps alondzed
His cozps to the earth, his soule amounted
Whiche in knighthod, his Danes surmounted
That reigned had then duke of Nozmandy
By thirty yere accompted full clerly [8]

¶ To whom succedid his soõne Wyllyã lõgspee
That after hym was duke of Nozmandy

1 Had then. 2 Vor of. 3 Coulde. 4 Than was. 5 Admired. But
6 Erred on hym. 7 Make. 8 Here add as a Note the leaves marked

Hardyng fol. cxiv.

[illegible]

3 Here the MS. has three additional Stanzas

For which his ordes vnto hym than complayned,
inpossyng that his gyarde were not trewe
To ape homage of Scotis, but mater fayned,
And praied hym faste vpon his folke to rewe.
He bade them come the morrow to hym newe
He shulde theym geue an answere for to treste,
Which nyght he lay, and praied without rede,

Vnto seynt John of Beuerlaye full boun,
To latte hym with a verray trewe knowlage
If he hade right be title of his Croun
To Scottes service and to their liege homage;
And made a Vowe his Church to priuelage;
To whome seynt John appered and to hym seide
Ape thy service and be nothynge affraiede.

And to the tokyn that all thy folke may fest
Thou shalte welle smyte to morne in stone right doun
An elne deepe with myght of gode doun prest
That noone myght dor of all the Regioun
For which at morne by goddes direccioun
He performed wele right with his naked swerde
In Dunbarre cragges that neuer maide werde.

[illegible] watche battaill, the truage was releled
By couenaunt made and composicion
[illegible] destroyed So long [illegible] p ij Betwene

3 By. edit. alt. 4 and so were. edit. alt.
Here add as a Note the paper marked 6 In gladnesse than of this myght 7 Vnto his.
8 stein. 9 Tyne. 10 For te. 11 dowre. [illegible]
12 With many a Dane. [illegible]

¶ This noble kyng, Edward thelder highte
When he had reigned full twenty & foure yere
Buryed he was at Winchester full right
As in Flores, full clerely dooeth apere
Who in his tyme surely had no peere
Of wysedome nor manhode as was seen
The lawe and peace that could so well sustene

The. C. xiiij. Chapiter.

¶ Athelstane kyng of England reigned fiftene yere and dyed in the yere of Christ nine hundred thirty & fiue. How Constantyne kyng of Scottes warred again Athelstane but he recouered his homage by myracle of sainct John of Beuerley as sheweth here afterward.

SIr Athilstane his eldest soonne of age
In wisedome euer full sadly & well auised
At kyngstō was crouned & toke homage
Of all the lordes right as he had deuised
Agaynste whome all Wales as thei suffised
Then he warred, but he made theim obeye
And made homage, his mennе to bee for aye

¶ In whyle tyme so, ỹ yere of Christ nine hūdred
And thyrty more and fiue full accompted
Robert Rollo his soule and corps alondred
His corps to the earth, his soule amounted
Whiche in knighthod, his Danes surmounted
That reigned had then duke of Normandy
By thirty yere accompted full clerly

¶ To whom succedid his soōne Wyllyā lōgspee
That after hym was duke of Normandy

1 Had then. 2 Nor of. 3 Could. 4 Man was. 5 Admired.
6 Herred on hym. 7 Make. 8 Here add as a Note the paper marked

But

Hardyng fol. cxiv.

[illegible]

3 Here the MS. has three additional Stanzas

For which his Lordes vnto hym than complayned,
Supposynge that his quarell were not trewe
To aske homage of Scotis, but matter fayned.
And praied hym haste vpon his fe to reue.
He bade them come the morowe to hym newe
He sholde them geue an answere for a treste,
Which nyght he lay, and praied without reste,

Vnto seynt John of Beuerlay full lowe,
To latte hym wit a verray trewe knowlage
If he hade right be title of his Crowne
To Scottis seruice and to their liege homage;
And made a Vowe his Church to priuelage;
To whome seynt John appered and to hym seide
Aske thy seruice and be nothynge affraiede.

And to the sayn that all thy folke may fest
Thou shalte welle smyte to morne a stone right down
on eine deepe with nyght of gode downe threst
That noone nyght dor of all the Regioun
The which at morne by godder direccioun
He performed wele right with his naked swerde
In Dunbarre cragges that neuer maide werde.

[illegible] wyche battaill, the truage was releſed
By couenaunt made and compoſicion
[illegible] Betwene

2 [illegible]

3 By. edit. alt. 4 and so were. edit. alt.

Here add as a Note the paper marked [illegible] 6 For gladnesse than of his nyght [illegible] his.

8 stan. J. yne 18 For to. [illegible]

19 With whom a Dane [illegible]

4a.

tr

Wyat after hym was duke of Normandy

1 Had ther. 2 Nor of. 3 Cuthe. 4 Than was. 5 Advised. But
6 Erred or hym. 7 Make. 8 Here add as a Note the chapter marked C

But then the kyng of Scottes by cruelte
Hight Constantyne, hym warred cruelly
For whiche, kyng Athilstane mightily
Stroyed all Scotland till his people dyed
For cold and hunger dyed and moztified

Rebellyō of the Scottes.

But he was so comforted euen by miracle
That he faught a none, wō this kyng Constātyne
And had the feld and his habitacle
Theim droue thzough all the lād wō muche payne
To tyme he was, full fain to enclyne
To Athilstane, for to make his homage
For all Scotland that was his heritage

Homage of the Scottes.

Anlaaf the kyng of Denmark, full of pzide
Coulyn to kyng Constantyne of Scotland
With shippis many arriued on Humberside
At Burnesburgh and claymed of England
For to haue of the kyng as I vnderstand
The truage, whiche his eldzes had afoze
And with hym bzought Colbzōd to fight therfoze

And Athilstane at the daye assigned
Made hym redy the battaill to haue smitten
Again Colbzond, armed with hart benyngned
But then sir Guy of Warwike as was weten
In palmer wyse as Colman hath it wzyten
The battaill toke on hym for Englandis right
With Colbzond in armes for to fight

Guy of Warwicke.

Wher then he sleugh, this Danyshe champion
By whiche battaill, the truage was releled
By couenaunt made and composicion

Betwene

destroyed so long.
3 By. edit. act.
4 and so were. edit. act.
6 for gladnesse Rar of this nyght 7 For his.
8 stroin. G. yne 18 For to. Warrone.
19 With whom a Dane. Were with hym to stryke
the Brennynge and Lyued in England.
Here add as a Note the paper marked

Betwene the kynges afore and warres ceſed
Thus kyng Aulaaf, home to Denmarke prelid
Without more warre or conturbacion
And ſir Guy went to his contemplacion

¶ kyng Athelſton then, fraunchelid Beuerley
In the worſchip of God and ſainct John
Wher in his life, is writtē for euer and aye
The miracle of his ſtroke ſo in the ſtone
That neuer manne might dooe but Athilſton
Through grace of God and his direccion
Through prayer of ſainct John and affeccion

¶ This noble kyng was euer more iuſt & trewe
To God his faith, and to churches deuocion
To poore menne grace, on ſubiectes euer did rewe
To preeſtes and age reuerence in feld and towne
In dome ſadnes, trouth and diſcrecion
And in the yere nene hundred thyrty and fiue
When he had reigned ſixtene yere with life

kyng Edmōd reigned vi. yere.

¶ This brother Edmōd for kyng thē was crouned
Of Englande whole by concent of all eſtate
To whome Dothowe kyng of Scotlāde ẏ ſtoūde
And Howell of Walis the kyng then create
As was afore vſed and determinate
Feaute to hym made and leege homage
For Wales and Scotlande ẏ was their heritage

Homage of the ſcottes.

¶ The ſette ſainct Dunſtan then at Glaſtenbury
Under thabbot of monkes and religion
That abbot was with hym at Canturbury
This kyng Edmond was ſlain by a felone

Whyche

Whiche of malice, and his false treason
That forfet had, and dampned was to dye
For his forfet, and for his felonye.

At Cauntorbury, as ỹ kyng hym saw on a da
For yre on hym, he ranne and sore hym wounde
For whiche he stroke, the kyng for aye
So they dyed both two, ther in that stounde
Eche of theim, of his mortall wounde
Whiche to a prince, accorded in no wyse
To put hym selfe in drede, wher lawe may chastice

He reigned but. vi. yere then all out
And died the yere. ix. hundreth fourtye and one
At Glastenbury buried without doute
For whome the people, made then ful great mone
For lawe and peace, he kept to euerychone
And his commons, neuer his tyme suppressed
And oppressours of hym alwaye were chastised

His brother Edrede, after hym had the crowne
At London then, and tooke royall feautee
Of all estates, within his region
Excepte Scotlande, that throughe theyr vnlewtee
Crowned Gilryke, a Dane of great beautee
Of royall bloodde borne and generate
And for theyr kyng, hym fully had create.

Edrede kynge of Englãde

Rebellió, of ỹ Scottes.

The kyng Edrede went to Scotland w̃ his power
And all the lande, wasted sore and brent
Wherfore the Scottes, by hole consent for feer
Put downe Gilryke, from all the regyment
And droaue hym to Denmarke or they stent

homage of ỹ Scottes. And to Edzede came all the Baronage
And to hym made feautee and homage

And in the yere.ix.hundzeth fourty and nyne
He died, buried at Wynchester his cytee
When that he had, his soule made to enclyne
Out of his cozps, to passe awaye and flee
Where God of heauen, would that it should bee
But.viii.yere full, he reigned and no mozе
When death hym toke, with sikenes great & sozе.

Edwyn kynge. Edwyn his bzother, resceyued then the crowne
Folysche and pzoude, and of his will maligne
And in his wytte, was full lytle reason
Whom his barons, foz cause he was vndigne
[Made hym his crowne, foz to resigne]
Deposed hym then, out fro his regiment
At the parliament, by [theyz commen] assent.

Whom saynt Dunstane, foz aduoutre blamed
But it amende, he would in no kyn wyse
Of whiche he was, full openly defamed
Thzough all the realme, he was the mozе vnwise
Foz whiche the lozdes, and commons all did ryse
And dzoaue hym out, awaye wher no man knewe
Thus synnes olde, make shames come full newe.

He reigned had, but.iiii.yere and no mozе
When he was depziued of his estate
Without thanke of God oz man therfozе
And well wozse, was of all men moste behate
[Of his reygne hauyng no lenger date]
Who dyed the yere.ix.hundzeth fyfty and thze

Fozinged

[1] Hanc Jeanta. [2] Ord buried. [3] Deelyne.
[4] wold han. [5] The Comons. [6] Hath deprived. [7] Without ye
[8] As he that coueted Ire and the reuth.

Forynged hole from all his magestee

The.C.xv.Chapiter.

¶ Edgare kyng of Englande, reigned. xviii. yere & died in ỹ yere of Thrist.ix.hundreth three score and eleuen.

HIs brother Edgare by a commē assente
Was chosen kyng, as chronicles recorde
With diademe crowned, at his parliamēt
And homage toke royall of euery lorde
So mercyfull and full of misericorde
Was he, that saynt Dunstan reconciled
Whome kyng Edwyn, wrongfully had exiled.

Edgare.

¶ Whom archebyshop of Cauntorbury he made
With all estate and primates dignitee
Of Monkes and nonnes, mynsters fayre & glad
Fourtye founded of religiousstee
Within his realme, of his owne royaltee
Endewed theim all in lande and tenemente
Sufficiently with all establyshemente

¶ He wedded Elfhede ỹ dukes doughter Ormere
On whom he gate a sonne, both good and fayre
That after was saynt Edwarde the marter
Who was his eldest sonne and his heyre
A lykely prince towarde, both comly and fayre
Elfsedē died, he wedded Elfrith to wyfe
That doughter was to duke Orgare be life

¶ On whom he gate Ethelbert so anone
The kynges of Wales, hē had in subiection

p iiii The

Homage of ꝑ Scottes

The Scottes kynge kynowth withouten moon
Wade hym homage, without obieccion
Thus all were vnder his ꝓteccion
And rode with hym, alwaye in warre and peace
In all his tyme, withouten leas.

So trewe he was, and in his dome wyse
That for no mede, nor fauoure wold he false
The trewe leuers, his lawe did not despyse
He socoured euer, and felons hanged hy the halse
Conspiratours, murtherers and traytours als
The cõmon weale, aboue all thyng ꝓferred
Which euery ꝓince, shuld se wer wel obserued

He taxed not his commons, ne supprysed
Ne holy churche, nor yet the clergie
But lyued on his owne, as it was assised
Upon his rentes, and landes mozallye
His officers hym ruled, full notably
In euery shire he went in ꝓiuetee
To spie and knowe, who hurtes the commontee.

He was a kyng, full worthy and condigne
That let not, for his ease nor his laboure
To searche and see defautes, that were maligne
Thoffice of a kyng
And theim correcte, he was a gouernoure
God set neuer kyng, to be a ryotoure
To trippe on tapettes, and lyue in ydelnesse
But for to rule, with all kyndes of busynesse

He died the yere. ix. hundreth sixty and eleuen
When he had reygned full eyghtene yere
Buried he was, at Glastenbury to neuen

His

1 Reynalde. 2 Withouten. 3 The Nes. 4 Reigned. 5 Dooms so. 6 Not. 7 The fals. 8 Lawes that. 8* Thus ech man rade as he deserued 9 Conserued. 10 This. 11 In all maner. 12 That

His corps to the earth, his soule to heauen clere
When he had been dead, foure and twenty yere
Byshop Oswald, of that same diocise
By counsell of thabbot, that was wyse

Abbot Edwarde of that place that hight
Who layde hym in a toumbe, made of newe
For it was shorte, he brake his legges wight
Of whiche the bloodde, as rede and freshe of hewe
As euer it was sprent out, all hote and newe
Into his eyen, by whiche he lost his sight
Wen sayd it was, for he had so hym dight

Edwarde his sonne, that eldest was and heire
Saynt Dunstan then, as made is mencion
Tharchbyshop of Cauntorbury fayre
So crowned hym, kyng of this region
Whom dame Alfrith[1] of false presumpcion
His stepmother, to crowne syr Ethelrede
At Cornilsgate,[2] so cut his throte in dede

Edwarde marter kynge of Englande.

As he with her did drynke, of good entent
And buryed was, at Warham then anone
But afterwarde the B. of Rome, to England sent
To take hym vp, and laye hym hye anone
In a toumbe made of siluer gold and stone
As a marter, then hym canonized
At Shaftesbury, where he is autorized.

And dyed in the yere of Christ. ix. hundreth clere
Sixty also accounpted and fyftene
That reigned had in Englande, but. iiii. yere
His soule to blysse, went then as is well sene
Where

[1] Elfrida. edit. alf. [2] Fir. m. [3] [Corf. caſt?]

Where nowe he muste, euer dwell and been
In ioye eterne, emonge the sayntes of heauen
And there with Christ goddes sonne beleuen

The. C.xvi. Chapiter.

¶ Kyng Ethelrede, kyng of Englande reigned. xxviii. yere and dyed in the yere of Christ, a thousande and thirtene

Ethelrede kyng.

THen Ethilrede, withouten tarying
At Kyngstone tho, by all the baronage
Crowned was, fayre & royally as kyng
His brother was, and heyre of heritage
But saynt Dunstan then, by his trewe language
Prophecied and sayd, withouten leas
In all his tyme, he should not reigne in peace.

¶ For to this realme he sayd he had no right
But by murther and cruell homycede
Of your brother, that for you was dight
Whiche murther euer asketh vengaūce on euery
Wherfore he said, serue God what so betyde (syde
And then it is the fayrest chastisement
To be put out, fro that same regyment.

¶ Saynt Dunstan died, and went to heauen
The kyng rode forth, to London his citee
A wonderfull token. And as he rode, he sawe a cloude full euen
As rede as bloodde, as all the people did see
Whiche Englande hole ouerspred in quantitee
Fro whiche the bloodde, reyned vpon the ground
That men trouwed to haue ben perysshed ye stound

¶ The

The next yere after, the Danes at Southhāpton
Arryued, and brent the countre there aboute
Also they spoyled, and sore brente the towne
And so they dyd all Cornewayle throughout
And Deuenshire also, and somerset no doubte
With Dorsetshire, and Wylshyre, & Barkeshyre
And to London came, or euer they stent (brent

The suburbes there, they spoyled sore and brent
Two dukes then, of Denmarke and Norwaye
Northfolke, Southfolke, & Esser, or they stent
Brent and spoyled, and so forth helde the waye
To London then, where theyr felowes laye
So assembled they, and passed into Kente
Where that countre, they spoyled sore and brent

¶ The lande of kent to them graunted truage
To lyue in peace, and home agayne they went
But in Northfolke an other hoste their passage
Made then, and so to Lyncolne or they stent
All Lyncolneshyre throughout, then they brent
And Yorkeshyre also, and home they went againe
With pylage great, of which they were full fatne

¶ The king might get, no helpe w̄ them to fight
For which he treated, w̄ king Aulaaf of Norway
And w̄ king Swaan, of Denmarke for his right
That destroyed had the lande, in fell araye
And truage hight, them furthwarde to paye
For they had no power, amongest thē to prayse
And was full fayne, the warres for to cease

But yet kyng Swayne, wold nothig rest for this

He

1 Arrriue. 2 Felly. 3 Als. 4 Somersett shire
5 Robbed foule. 6 Shire. 7 Westsone 8 Sussex. 9 Kent.
10 Graunte so. 11 For none power than for to sett in peace
12 Se. 13 Peace MS.

He came agayne, and crowned was for kyng
Greate tallage, of all this lande a myssе
He toke alwaye, and specyally all other thyng
Saynt Edmũdes landes, he hurt by great talkig
And tallage, which of it that he rayſed
Unegally, he pondred then and peyſed.

For whiche warrys, quene Emme to Normandy
To her brother, duke Rycharde the thyrde
With her ſonnes, Allurede and Edwarde her by
And Edmunde Ironeſyde, then it ſo betyde
All theſe ſhe toke, and in a ſhyppe ſhe dyd
And with kyng Ethelrede by the ſea led pryuely
For helpe to haue gotte his lande there by

In whiche tyme, whyls he in Normandye
Was ſoiournyng, kyng Swayn full lowde then
And ſayde vnto his men, & faſt gan crye (cryed
I am but deed, ſaint Edmunde hath me ſpyed
And with a ſpeare, hath me here mortifyed
Wo worth ỹ day, I noied S. Edmundes ground
For with his ſpeare, my hert he hath ſore wounde

He dyed tyght ſo, without confeſſyon
And whyther he went, I ne wote ne whare
But well I wote, in good and true profeſſyon
Saynt Edmonde king dyed, and made his fare
To blyſſe eterne, without any care
But then the Barons, and lordes of Englande
Sent worde to Ethylrede, with hym for to ſtande

And wrote to him, how ỹ kyng Swayn was deed
And bade hym come, to his lande agayne

1 Specially ouer all. 2 Cantuariensis. 3 Tapyngs. 4 Not egally. And
5 Ethelrede. 6 Edmonde ironside worthy. 7 Allurede als and Edwarde so hete de
confessor. Edit alt. 8 For in a shyppe in a ſhyppe to ſaile.
9 To gete. 10 He left ora. 11 wote wottynge 12 Mourne. 13 Hurte.

And so he dyd, by councell and theyr rede
He exyled all the Danes, with greate disdayne
And slewe them downe in batayle, w̄ great payne
For whiche therle Edryk, sent to kyng Knowte
To Englande to come, with hoost great and stout

¶ This ylke kyng knowte, ye sonne was to kyng
To England cam w̄ host & great power (Swain
Whome Ethylrede then met, and faught agayne
In batayle stronge, & droue him home full clere
With whome Edryk, then fled as dyd apere
Into Denmarke, as a false traytoure vntrewe
Purposyng so to come agayne all newe

But kyng Ethelred in the meane tyme, then dyed
The yere of Chryste, a thousande and thyrtene
And reygned had, as Colman notifyed
Thyrtte and eyght, in warre and in tene
Euer newe and newe vexed as was sene
His owne lande fled, for drede of enmyte
Without socoure, fro it he was fayne to flee.

¶ Thus was he chastysed, for his mothers gylt
Accordyng well, to holy trewe scrypture
For cause that she, his brother had slain & spylt
And lyke the wordes of saynt Dunstane, full sure
That sayde it was, a punishyng full pure
Oute of the realme, to be dryuen and expelled
In whiche by syn, he had so hye excelled.

The.C.xvii.Chapiter.

Edmonde

Edmonde Ironesyde reygned kyg of Englād tyxe yere.

EDmond Ironeside gotē & generate (glād
Of his first wife, a dukes doughter of En
After Ethelrede his father was progate
Unto the crowne, of all this royall lande
Wen called hym so, as I can vnderstande
Where euer he rode, armed was he ay
Oppressours all, to chastyce in his waye.

CKnowt of Denmarke, assayled ofte this lande
So in this tyme, that euer he armed went
To vse the feate of armes, I vnderstande
As to knyghthode, full well it dyd appent
Thus Colman sayth, and Flores that he ment
But syxe batayles, agayne kyng Knowt he smote
With victorye, as Flores hath it note.

CBut then to boyde, the greate effusyon
Of chrysten bloude, they two together accorde
To fyght them selfe, for full conclusyon
Within an yle of Seuerne, by concorde
Withouten warre, or any more discorde
And who so then, myghte get the victorye
Reioyse the realme, and all the monarchye

CAnd at theyr daye, and place so assygned
They armed, met with strokes knyghtly set
With speare and sword, eyther other so repugned
With axe and dagger, eyther on other bette
Eyther of them tryste, the ouerhande to gette
But at laste kyng Knowt, to hym alayde
These wordes there, and thus to hym he sayde.

CWolde god Edmonde, thou were so couetouse As

1 Cnute. 2 So ofte. 3 Hys. 4 So 5 For 6 Weye. 7 He 8 On. 9 Sore.

As I am nowe, and as myne herte now wolde
And in this case, as glad and desyrous
We shulde not longe, this batayle thus holde
And to our men, great gladnesse manifolde
Yf thou the halfe, of Denmarke had with me
And I the halfe of Englande, had with the.

With whiche they both the wepons fro the caste
And eyther other, in armes gan them embrace
That both theyr hostes, amarueled were ful faste
What it dyd meane to ceasse, in so lytell space
But when they knewe, betwne them the case
They kneled all, and Chryste they laudifyed
With herte deuoute, ye eche of them so victoryed.

Their realmes both, they parted then in two
By hole accorde, betwene them so concorded
And loued euer, as brethren after so
As chronycles, haue well hole recorded
Fro that tyme forth, no more then they discorded
This yle where they faught, hyght Clyues
Of cõmon langage, as then it dyd them please

But Edryk of Lyncolne, euer vntrewe
Reconsyled home, by Edmonde was agayne
By subtyll meane, this good king Edmond dewe
In pryde wyse without wounde or mayne
But in what fourme, I can not wryte nor sayne
When he had reygned, ye tyme fully .iii. yere
Buryed he was, but where no man durste spere

But in the yere of Chryste, a thousande so
He dyed awaye accompte, and syxtene

Unknowen

1 Thirsta. 2 b. 3 Kynge can. 4 eken. 5 de the. 6 Ran. 7 Either 8 chronicles. 9 Riues. 10 Aye. 11 Kyng. Vit. alt. Prive. Ms. 12 hit wrotten 13 Mayne. 14 Br. 14 monde he. 15 Men durste not. 16 accompted.

Unknowen to his people, and Lordes tho
For whom they made great dole, as thē was seen
But neuertheleſſe, it myght no better bene
This falſe Edryk, ſo fallely it couered
That openly it was, not then diſcouered.

* Knowt kynge of Englande and of Dēmarke.

The. C. xviii. Chapiter.

KYng Knowt, reigned in Englād thē anon
And wedded had quene Eme of England
Ethelrede wife, which gate him loue anon
In Englande, of all the eſtates of the londe
Of cōmons alſo, that were both fre and bonde
On her he gate a ſonne, that harde Knowt hight
On his fyrſte wyfe, had Swayne & Herold ryght

The ſent Edmonde and Edwarde, ỹ ſonnes two
Of Edmōd Ironeſide, to Swithen to kīg Knowt
To ſlee or lowſe, to kepe in pouerte ſo
That they ſhould neuer haue power in nor oute
To claime England, neyther with hooſt ne route
Whome he ſent forth, then into Hungry
To the emperoure, with letters worthely

Beſechyng hym, to noryſhe them and ſaue
Declaryng hym, whoſe ſonnes that they were
The whiche he dyd, full worthy and gaue
Unto Edmonde, his owne doughter dere
Whiche Edmonde then dyed, and ſhe in fere
Without chylde, wherfore Agas his coolyn
Doughter of Herry, he gaue to Edwarde fyne

Of whiche Edwarde, called Edwarde theryle
Came Edgare, then called Edgar Athelyng

But

1 Knute. 2 Allone. 3 Emme. 4 All. 5 Als. 6 Han. 7 Hardeknute. 8 And ye Kyng. 9 To reign or to lowe.
10 Which were conueied Han. 11 Whome the kynge hym receiued worthelie. 12 The Meſſangers kynge praied them to saue. 13 Upon the ſyrſte full worthely. 14 Hir brother Hardeknut & Henry the kyng

But Knowt it let, hym selfe then crounyng
That to London to hold his Chrystmas
With his houshold, went then with greate solas

Wher erle Edrik, to kyng Knowt hym cõfessed
That he had slain; kyng Edmond Ironeside
His owne leege lorde with cruell death inpressed
To gette his loue, and with hym dwell and bide
For vnlikely it was to goo or ride
Twoo kynges together in Englande
He saied was not accordyng in the land

The kyng his woordes well herd and cõceiued
And howe he asked a reward for his mede
There made hym tell, howe he his lorde disceiued
Afore the lordes, as he had dooen in deed
The whiche boldely he did without dreed
Hauyng no shame, to aske a greate reward
For whiche the kyng & lordes gaue whole award

To hang hym on the toure duryng his liue
To he were dedde, that all folke might hym se
And his treson there, openly to shriue
And after that, to hang there till he dye
For whom then was emong the commons truily
A greate bitorde, as many one ỹ wounde & rõne
As did on therle Edryke of Strettoun

The kyng went to Norway and it conquered
And droue the kyng Olaak out of that land
And held it so by conquest of his sword
Full worthily he gouerned euery land
To peace and lawe, he kept theim as he saund

And

And in his domes, was rightwyse and stable
And to the pooze alway merciable

Homage of ꝑ Scottes,

¶ Kyng Malcom of Scotland, the did homage
To hym and furth became, foz euer his manne
So did the kynges of Wales of hye parage
And all the Noꝛth West Occian
Foꝛ their kyngdomes, and foꝛ their landes than
And in his tyme moste he was redoubted
Of all pꝛinces and in all londes loaued

¶ To Roome he rode, in royall goodly wyse
And there was with the bishop greately commēd
As Chꝛisten pꝛince, by papall whole aduise
The cardynalles foure, whiche the bishop had sēd
At Malburgate, foure mile fro Roome extende
With greate meyne hym mette, & greate honour
As if he had been of Roome themperour

¶ At his commyng again into England
He gaue Noꝛway vnto his soonne sir Swayne
And to Herold his soonne as I vnderstand
England he gaue, of whiche he was full fain
And to Harknowt, Denmarke he gaue certain
And so dyed in Chꝛisten whole creaunce
At Shaftisbury buryed by his oꝛdynaunce

¶ The yere of Chꝛist a thousand so was than
And thirty foure also truly wꝛitten
When he had reigned, fro the tyme that he began
Eightene yere whole, as well it was wꝛytten
With the darte of death, whē that he was smitten
In whose dayes the land was inquiet

[1] Ay and. [2] Malcolyne Kan kynge of Scotlonde. [3] Iles of Noꝛth West. Full
[4] Loued. edit. art. Louted MS. [4] Pope. [5] Male Burgate
[6] Hardeknute. [7] Entered by. [8] Than wetyn.
[9] And of his Reygne muche more is ther wretyn. [10] In gu

Full of riches and of welfare whole replete

The.C.xxiiij.Chapiter.

¶ Herold kyng of England the soonne of kyng Knowt reigned fiue yere, and dyed in the yere a thousand and.xxxix.

HEroldе his soonne, was crouned then in
By Lofrike ỹ duke of Leicestre (deede
By Londoners, in Flores as I reede
By Danyshy[2] also, as saieth the letter
That strong werre then, and of power greater
Then other lordes of Englishe nacion
At London made was this cozonacion

¶ Alurede the soonne, of kyng[4] Ethelrede
With fifty sailes, landed at Southampton[5]
Wher kynge Herold with hoste hym met in deede
Redy to fight with hym for the croune
But certain lordes of Englondes region
Betwene theim treated, that Alurede went again
To Normandy, to duke Robert full plain

¶ But afterward, as Alurede so rode
Fro his mother vnto the kyng Herold,
The duke Goodwyn on Gyldismore hym bode
With people greate, of nombre manyfold
And slewe his menne downe there as he would
And led hym furth to Ely and hym slewe
As traitour false, that euer had bee vntrewe

¶ Some chronicle saieth, he putte out bothe his eyen
Fro whiche he dyed sone for pain and woo
Some other sayn, he slette his wombe full keen

[1] Als in. [2] Danysherie. [3] His. [4] The kynge.
[5] Northampton. [6] Than for. [7] Fote. [8] At Gilforde moore.
[9] Slle doun. [10] Wase. [11] seith.

The lengeſt gut to a ſtacke he nayled tho
Led hym about the ſtack ther with muche wo
Till all came out that was his wombe within
Thus ſleugh thei hym, with ſobteltie and gyn

This mother quene Eme, Edward then ſent
To Normandy to duke Wyllyam anone
That hir couſyn was, to kepe he were not ſhent
By kyng Herold, of his cruelty alone
Warnyng hym of the treaſō ỹ Herold had dooen
For whiche cauſe Herold hir exild
Out of England, and Edward alſo hir child

To Flaundres ſhe fled, then full ſore amoued
To erle Badwyn hir couſyn nie of bloodde
Declaryng to hym, howe Herold had diſtroyed
Hir ſoonne Alurede that heyre of England ſtood
And exiled hir, without ſocour or good
And Edward alſo hir ſoonne, heire of England
His brother childzen alſo, awaye in vncouth land

Wherfore therle, to kyng Hardknowt then
All hir complaynt and of his ſocour prayed (wrote
And he ſhould help, with all his might God wote
It were amendid of that ſhe was affrayed
He came anone, in warre full well aryed
Into Flaundres, his mother for to pleaſe
Hir for to ſocour, and ſette hir hert in eaſe

In whiche meane while, the kyng Herold dyed
At Weſtminſter, and buried was full feire
After he had reigned, as it is notified
Fiue yere reigned without any heire

Of

1 Stake. 2 With mekell 3 Suche a ſotille.
4 Than quene Emme than Edwarde.
5 And ſaid Godeswyne for they two were both come. 6 Than kynge H
7 Alſo. 8 Which 9 Livelode 10 Hardeknute. 11 That it were mende.
° Araied.
12 He ded than.
13 Fyue yere and an halfe withoutyn.

Of his body gotten, after hym to repeire
England to gouerne, wherfore the lordes by assēt
To kyng Hardknowte then into Flaundres sente

¶ To bee their kyng, sith Herold was a gone
To please hym with, and his mother to comfort
Who came to England furth with anone
And crouned was with all the whole disport
That lordes conde, as Flores dooeth report
Thus kyng Hardknowt was kyng of Englande
Who worthily ẏ tyme to reigne tho began (than

¶ This kyng began his brothers death to venge
On erle Gowyn, that erle was then of Kent
That pealed was, for he should not reuenge
With riche giftes, whiche that he on hym spent
With meekenesse lowe, & swore that he was sent
To dooe that thyng, on pein of high treson
By kyng Herold, charged without reason

Kyng Hard knowt.

¶ Through good and giftes, & mighty hie riches
And of his kyn, that meekely hym obeyed
And by acquaintaūce, that thei made then erpresse
Upon the holy euangelis swore vndelayed
The kyng graūted hym his grace & was well pay
To make hym of his coūsell, & of gouernaūce (ed
Without more wrath or any discordaunce

¶ He maried then his sister Gunylde to Henry
Themperour, that falsly was accused
Of synne and crymne vsed in auoutry
With a young manne the whiche hir excused
After the lawe of the land that was there vsed

His Name. b Hardeknute. 3 4 5
a The. b To reigne. c lyne. 7 Duke Gotwyn. 8 Lord.
Thus. 10 He. 11 Kayn. 12 In holy scripture. 13 An vile man
That Earle.

By battaill of his hand that then their slewe
His acculour approuyng hym vntrewe

¶ For the whiche she would, nomore come in his (bed
But lyued sole euer after, so hir life
For good ne gold for aught that he hir beed
For loue ne threte, for betyng ne for strife
With hym dwellyng, forthwarde as his wife
In all thynges els, euer at his gouernaunce
Bothe daye and night in womanly pleasaunce

¶ Kyng Hardknowt then, his doughter maryed
Unto a duke of the Danishrie
At Lambirgh dyed at his feast magnified
Emong his lordes and all his prelacie
And putte hym whole in God his high mercye
And charged theim, his brother Edward to croũe
To reioyse the land of Englandes region

¶ This was the yere of Christ then inscriued
A thousand whole fourty also and one
When that he had reigned, as was subscribed
The twoo yere whole, whē he was thus wyse gone
For whom was made that tyme full muche mone
At Wynchester, byside his father buryed
With lordes all, thither full well accompaignied

The. C. xix. Chapiter.

¶ Kyng Edwarde the confessour kyng of Englād reigned twenty and foure peres, ỳ began the yere of Christ a thousand fourty and one and dyed the yere a thousand sixty and fiue.

Edward

1 Hir brethrene. 2 By forthwarde. 3 Hardeknute
4 His own. 5 From ỳ 6 Lambehith. 7 as. 8 Joie. 9 Inscribed.
10 The. 11 dict wife.
10 By. 11 Thusgates. 12 Grete.

EDward his brother,sõne of kig Ethelrede
was crowned then,kyng of Englande
The yere of Chryst,a M.then in dede
Fourtye & one,as Flores could vnderstande
To whom the kyng Swayn,of Denmarke lande
The tribute whiche he had, fully releſed
And warres all betwene theim ceaſſed.

King Edwarde ỹ cõfeſſour.

¶ To ſende hym then,the hole Englyſhe nauy
Agayn Magnus,that kynge was of Norwaye
That helde it ſo,by wrong and tirannie
Whiche Edwarde ſente anone in great araye
With lordes,knightes and ſquiers freſhe & gaye
With archers many,by whiche he gate his lande
Of Norwaye hole,and ſeazed it in his hande.

¶ Erle Euſtace of Boleyn,that had wed
Edwardes ſuſter,on his mother ſyde
To Edwarde came,at Douer ſore beſted
Where then his men,a burges ſlewe that tyde
Wherfore therle Goodwyn,ſet full of pryde
Aſked the kyng, to haue delyueraunce
Of therls men,to byde his ordynaunce.

Therle Goodwyn.

¶ Notwithſtandyng,ỹ Burges ſlewe his knight
For that ſame cauſe,wherfore he it denyed
But made peace then,as he therle had hight
Of Boleyne,ſo his brother in lawe alied
For whiche therle Goodwyn ſore replied
And warred ſore, vpon the kyng eche daye
With his ſonnes fyue,in full great araye

¶ Not cõſideryng,ỹ kyng his doughter had wed

1 The kynge of all. 2 Can. 3 Than of. 4 ia ſeyed. 5 and knightes. 6 good. 7 The Duke. 8 In right forth.
Omitted in the Edit

And his treason perdoned had and hyd
Of his brothers death, when ẏ he murthered had
Whom then the kyng, Somond cõmaunde & bid
[Upon his legeaunce, whatsoeuer betid]²
For to aunswer in his courte, and amende
Defautes all, betwene theim might be kende.]¹

At whose summons, he would not then apeare
But warred sore, both he and his sonnes fyue
For whiche the kyng, theim exiled out all clere
But after they landed and did aryue
At Sandwiche, so the kyng theim met belyue
Where lordes then, theim treated and accorded
And afterwarde nomore they discorded.

The.C.xx.Chapiter.

Howe Sywarde duke of Northumberlande, slewe in batayle Maclom kyng of Scotlande, and crowned Malcolme kyng at Scome, accordyng to saynt Edwarde the confessoures commaundement whiche Malcloms did homage to saynt Edwarde, as apeareth by his letters patent.

Duke Siwarde then, was of Northũberlãd
In batayle slewe kyng Maclom so in dede
Of Scotlande then, ẏ false was of his bãd
Whiche to the kyng he made, who taketh hede
Wherfore the kyng, in Marian as I reade
By his letters charged, duke Siward take on hãd
To croune Malcolin ẏ was of Comberland

The whyche he dyd full myghtely anon
At Skone abbey, wher kynges were all crouned
Upon his hed he set the crowne anone

¹ Whome. ² To his Parlement to come that war sad. ³ That. And
⁴ Wherin he hade offende. ⁵ Forth. ⁶ Come they londe. ⁷ There. ⁸ They two wo
⁹ Malcolme. Edit. alt. ¹⁰ Malecolyne. ¹¹ To Edit. alt. ¹² To take
¹³ Erle than. ¹⁴ Whome).

And toke homage of hym, vpon the grounde
In Edwardes name, as he of right was bounde
For that ylke realme, and as his elders dyd
Suche fortune then, to Englande was betid.

Homage of ỳ Scottes.

¶ The kyng Gryffyn of Wales, then was slayn
That Herford shire spoyled had and brent
His hed set vp, at Glouceſter full playne
For his vntruthe, and falshed, that he ment
And sone therafter, his brothers hed was sent
Unto the kyng for his rebellion
So wer they both forynged for treason

¶ And as kyng Edward, in his palayce of pryde
Duke Goodwyne, then sittyng at his table
Sawe the butler on his one fote slyde
And lyke to fall, that other fote full stable
As he was seruyng the kyng at his table
Then held hym vp, that he fell not to grounde
Kyng Edward sayd, to Gudwyn in that stounde

¶ As his one fote, ye se helpe that other
Full well and trewe, I kynde it dayly nowe
Had ye ne bene, thus had helpe me my brother
Therle then to the kyng on side gan bowe
And sayd, if I wer cause, I praye God nowe
This breade passe not my throte, but dead I bee
And straungled here anone, that ye maye see.

¶ At his prayer anone, with that he died
For with that breade, straungled was he ỳ stound
It might not passe his throte, as men espied
Wherfore the kyng then, bad drawe out ỳ hounde

Under

'Griffith ²Herefordshire than . ³Ps wide ; . . .
. . . . . ⁵Earl Godw . ⁶ Kent

Under the boorde, as he that false was founde
On whome God shewed an hasty iudgement
Approued well, by good experiment.[2]

¶ Wher Herolde had, therle Algare exiled
Fro Leycestre, where erle he was so then
The kyng Eward, agayn hym reconsiled
And perdoned hym, and toke hym for his man
Of Couentre, as Flores tell it can
The lord he was, and there thabbey founde
And buried there is, with his wyfe that stound

¶ This Algare was, the sonne of erle Leofryke
Whiche Leofrike was, the duke Lofwynes sonne
That erles had been there, none afore theim like
But duke Siward, as he did wonne
Syckenesse hym tooke, and sore vpon hym ronne
In whiche he dyd, hym arme in all degree
And had his axe in hand, full lyke to dye.

¶ He sayd vnto the lordes, then hym about
Thus seemeth well, in armes a knight to dye
And not in bed to lye, loute and loute
Tyll death hym kyll, with paynes cruelly
As would God, here were my moste enemye
That I myght dye vpon hym, nowe in right
In armes thus arayed like a knight.

¶ With that he died, for paynes that he felt
Vpon his fete standynge in that araye
And shoke his axe, while ỹ his hert gan swelt
And to the ground he fell in that fraye
Who buried was, at saynt Marie abbeye

At

1 Ore vengeaunce. 2 Gode and treue experiaunce. 3 Thre.
4 Leofwyne. 5 Hym. 6 At Gode than. 7 The whiche to dede hym harme
8 He tolde. 9 He sowed 10 That wolde goode Gode 11 Unto.

At yorke citee, with worshyp and honoure
As likely was, for suche a gouernoure.

The kyng Edward, the duke of Northũberlãd
To Tosty gaue the sonne of duke Goodwyn
Under the name of erle, as Flores doth vnderstãd
After whiche tyme, all haue been erles syne
With landes and rentes, both fayre and fyne
Whiche estate suffice, for princes ben both two
In euery lande accompted, where they go.

The disherited erle Waldyue, his owne sonne
Who erle was then, create of Huntyngdon
Of Northampton also, as chronicles tell can
A worthy prince, of all this region
That rule a realme coulde, well then by reason
Another prince, was Loefrike that daye
Erle of Leycestre and Couentry no naye

Whiche Loefrike had a wyfe, ỹ Godiue hight
That naked, throughout all Couentree
The tolles sore, and seruage agayn right
To redeme hole of her sempnitee
She in her heare, hangyng beneth her knee
Upon a daye, rode so through all the towne
To bye it free, by her redempcion.

For otherwise, therle would not it free
But yf that she, rode naked through all the towne
Upon the daye, that all men might her see
Trustyng she would not for no warysom
Haue doen it so, by suche redempcion
But thus by witte, she kept her selfe vnshamed

And

And freed the towne, worthy was he blamed[1]

Kyng Edwarde sente then into Hungary
For his cousyn, the sonne of Emond Ironesyde
Themperoure sent hym, Edwarde gladly
His brother sonne, and folke with hym to ryde
His sonne Edwarde Athelyng by his syde
Margarete and eke Christine his doughter[3] dere
Whiche kyng Edward, receyued with good chere

The maried Margarete, mighty w[4] great riches
To kyng Malcolyne, of Scotland was[5] that daye
That on her gatte, fiue sonnes of great noblinesse[7]
Edwarde, Dunkan, Edgare, Alixander the gaye
And Dauid also[8] that kynges were all no naye
Eche after other, of Scotlande throughout
Whose mother is now S. Margrete[9] wout doute

At Dumfermlyn shryned and canonized
On whom Malcolyne a doughter gate also
Kyng Henryes wife, the first full wel auised
Quene Mawd[10] ꝑ hight, ꝑ well loued Englãde tho
These crosses fayre and roiall as menne goo
Through all Englande, she made at hir expense
[And dyuerse good orders throwe his prouidence][11]

Another sustre, this same saint Margarete had
That Christine hight, kyng Edwarde thē ꝓfessed
In religion to lyue, she was full glad
To holy lyfe, disposed and adressed
[An holy woman of lyfe, and of god blessed][12*]
Who at hir death hir soule then vncouered[13]
[And to][14] our lorde, full mekely so it offred.

1 Bl Blamed. 2 Edgare 3 Doughters. 4 With mighty.
5 Kyng. 6 which 7 Nobleyse. 8 Dā. 9 Mgrt. 10 Mgrt.
11 And to theym gote pardoune and Indulgence. 12 Which.
12* All Lōgyng in hir soule weye impressed. 13 Vncoffred.
14 Vnto.

C In

¶ In his forest, as he pursued a dere
In Esser, a palmer with hym met
Askyng hym good, whome gladly he dyd here
He claue his ryng, and in sonder it bette
The halfe of whiche, he gaue without lette
To the Palmer, that went awaye anone
That other good to geue hym, there had he none

¶ But after that, full longe and many a daye
Two pylgrames came, vnto that noble kynge
And sayde, saint John thappostell in poze araye
Us prayed, and bad straytly aboue all thyng
To you present, and take this halfe golde ryng
Whiche ye gaue hym of almesse and charyte
And bade vs say, that ryght sone ye should him se

Ignorance and superstycyon.

¶ Whiche ryng he set together there anone
And that ylke place he called, ay after haueryng
And that same place, where they it brast alone
He called ay after that tyme, Claueryng
In Esser be bothe fayre standynge
Where that he made two churches of saint John
Theuangelyst, and halowed were anon

¶ Sone after that, he dyed and went to blysse
But fyrste he made duke Herold protectoure
Of his coulyne, to gouerne and to wysse
Edgar Athelyng, full ponge a gouernoure
Whome he ordeyned to be his successoure
As very heyre to Edmonde Ironesyde
But thus Herolde, then set all that aslyde

When he had be kyng. xxiiii. yere

He

*Herolde kynge of Englande duke Goodwins sone.

He dyed the yere, a thousande syxtye and syue
At Westminster canonyzed is full clere
All newe he made, the churche there in his lyue
All were he not ryght heyze, as men in stryue
A confessoure he is, full hye in heuen
With God to dwell, euermoze and beleuen.[2]

Herolde by strength, then crowned was foz kynge
Foxswozne that was, vpon the euangelystes
Foz to crowne Edgar Athelynge
And hym pzotecte, and defende in all wyse
Unto his age, that none the realme suppzyse
This was his othe, of whiche he was [illegible]

Fol. cxxvii b.

A blysfull kynge he was and fortunate
The Tribute whiche his fader had paied
The Danysshgelde called he quyte and exonerate
That Englonde was no more for it affraied
Nor neuer after to Denmarke ought obeied
But full of welth and alle prosperite
He lyste Englonde the tyme whan he tide dee.

And newe Herolde Harngrey, as was wryten[6]
Kyng of Nozwaye, and earle Tosty vnder shelde
That neuer after, myght armes[8] welde
And thousandes fell, of Danes and Nozwayes
He kylled there that daye, as Flozes sayes.

A yere he reygned, whom[10] Willyam Conquerour
That duke was then, of all layze Nozmandye

1 Doo. 2 Here the Harleian MS. adds [see the Paper marked] ⁂ Hym.
3 Fortune. 4 his 5 kyng Edwarde. 6 Wetyn. 7 Fortune. 8 none Armes
9 Many. 10 Nyne monethis he reigned whan 11 Whiche

Hym slewe in batayle, for his ymagyned errour
Agayne hym, that he dyd so cruelly
And not wolde mende, ne yet satisfye
The duke Willyan, so the felde then conquered
With strokes sore, for whiche the lande was ferd

This kyng Herolde at Waltam, whiche he found
Of foure score chanons, full fayer was buryed
At the hye aulter, as a kyng was crowned
All yf he were intrusor notifyed
And in batayl slayne, and victoryed
Of gentylnesse, the Conquerour bad so
All yf he were afore his mortall fo[4]

[1] Intrewe. [2] Nought. [3] Nor yet him.

Here the MS. adds,

Nota hic quod linea Regum Saxonum extincta est et Normanni regnare incipiunt. Tamen remansit per multiebrem sexum videlicet per Margaretam sororem Edwardi Regem Scocie et filiam Edwardi filii Edmundi Ironside Regis Angliæ et Agatha filie Henrici Imperatoris et ita de linea Regum Normanni Reges et de Saxonibus Linealiter descendunt. —

*Herolde kynge of Englande duke Goodwins sone.

He dyed the yere, a thousande syxtye and fyue
At Westminster canonyzed is full clere
All newe he made, the churche there in his lyue
All were he not ryght heyze, as men in stryue
A confessoure he is, full hye in heuen
With God to dwell, euermoze and beleuen.[2]

Herolde by strength, then crowned was foz kynge
Fozswozne that was, vpon the euangelystes
Foz to crowne Edgar Athelynge
And hym pzotecte, and defende in all wyse
Unto his age, that none the realme suppzyse
This was his othe, of whiche he was fozswoze
All yf he made Edgar an Earle therfoze.

The earle Tosty,[3] then of Nozthumberlande
That bzother was, vnto the kyng Herolde
By kyng exyled, out of the lande
To Englande came, with kyng Herold full bold
Of Nozwaye then, in Chzonycle as is tolde
But kyng Herolde of Englande, with them met
At Staũfozd bzydge, to death they both wer bet.

Besyde yozke, was this batayl ful soze sinyten
Where kyng Herolde of Englande, had the felde
And slewe Herolde Harngrey, as was wzyten[6]
kyng of Nozwaye, and earle Tosty vnder shelde
That neuer after, myght armes welde
And thousandes fell, of Danes and Nozwayes
He kylled there that daye, as Flozes sayes.

A yere he reygned, whom[7] Willyam Conquerour[10]
That duke was then, of all fayze Nozmandye

1 Doo. 2 Here the Harleyan MS. adds [See the Father marked] ⁂ Hym
3 Tostius. 4 This K. Edwarde. 6 Wetyn. 7 Postius. 8 None Armes
9 Many. 10 Nyne monethis he reygned whan 11 Whiche

Hym slewe in batayle, for his ymagyned errour
Agayne hym, that he dyd so cruelly
And not wolde mende, ne yet satisfye
The duke Willyam, so the felde then conquered
With strokes sore, for whiche the lande was ferd

This kyng Herolde at Waltam, whiche he found
Of foure score chanons, full fayer was buryed
At the hye aulter, as a kyng was crowned
All yf he were intrusor notifyed
And in batayl slayne, and victoryed
Of gentylnesse, the Conquerour bad so
All yf he were afore his mortall fo[4]

[1] Intrewe. [2] Nought. [3] Nor yet him.

Here the MS. adds,

Nota hic quod linea regum Saxonum Exlincta est et Normanni
regnare incipiunt. Tamen remansit per muliebrem sexum videl.
per Margaretam Scotorum reginam uxorem Malcolini Regis
Scocie et filiam Edwardi filii Edmundi Ironside regis Anglie
et Agathe filie Henrici Imperatoris et sic de linea regis
Normanni Reges et de Saxonibus Linealiter descendunt. —

¶ willyam Conque-

rour, kyng of Englande, and Duke of Nor mandye, beganne to reygne, the yere of Chryste, a thousande. lxvi. and reygned. xxiiii. yere, and dyed, the yere, a thousande. lxxxv. and the sayde Conqueroure founded the Abbaye of Batayle, for the soules of the people slaine there; the fourtene daye of Octo ber, in the yere of Chryste a thousande, three score and syxe.

The. C. xxi. Chapiter.

Duke Willyā of Normandye.

The. xiiii. daye of October accompted
The duke Wyllyam ỹ was of Nor=
mandye
At London was crowned, and an=
noynted
In trone royall, to hauethe Monarchye
By his conquest, and his victorye
Without tytle of ryght to hym discente
But onely of his tryumphall entente.

¶ The yere of Chryste, was when Alurede hym
Tharchbyshop of Yorke, ỹe prymate (crowned
A thousande hole. lxvi. well founde
Quene Mawde his wyfe, to hym associate
He crowned also, that tyme in her estate
The abbay of batayle, that then he bounded
And for the soules there slayne, he founded.

¶ He called it so then for a memorye
Of his batayle, by whiche Englande he gate

In

In token of his myghty victorye
That Englande there he had,so well ouerset
To praye for the soules slayne,as was his det
Whiche abbaye is in Susser,in that stede
Where the batayle was,and the people dede.

¶The South part of England then he rode
And dalt it largely vnto his menne
The North again hym rebelled then abode
With help of Danes,in that countre were then
And Scottes also, that false wer, when and whē
But kyng Wyllyam,that worthy conquerour
Discomfite theim,with long and sore labour

¶To Normandy he went,then right anone
And with hym had Edgar called Athelyng
Edwyn and Morkar afore that were his fooen
For cause they should not,then make more rysyng
In his absence,while he were ther abidyng
But at his home commyng with hym again
He brought theim all,of whiche the folke were fain

¶Gospatrik that they was erle of Cumberland
That not again stode king Malcolm in his werre
When he distroyed therldome and his land
But hym withdrewe out of waye full ferre
Wherfore the kyng,as saieth the chronicler
Hym disherited,and gaue to Rauf Westhyne
His erldō,meto whom menne did enclyne

erl tone to

The.C.xxii.Chapiter.

¶Homage of Scotlande dooen to kynge Willyam conquerour,at Birmithi in Scotland,and also howe the kyng of ffraunce

1 Ther kynes ther mayne and hi. 2 ouste tuo in the. 2. Partia. 3 and bode. 4 tille. 5 Edwarde. 6 which. 7 Brought. 8 Nought gaynstode. 9 Malcolyne. 10 his Erledome. 11 his wane. 12 Erldoma hoole.

Fraunce scorned the kyng Wyllyam & he quit it hym after

Then rode the kyng into Scotlãd anone
And brent the land vnto Abirnythy
Where kynge Malcolyne submitted hym with great mone
And homage leege hym did full humbly
And amended there all his iniury
Then went he furth, to Duram wher he offred
And to the churche, he gaue great good vncoffred

homage of the Scottes.

The thẽ his lawe and peace alwaye proclaymed
Officers made in euery shire about
And so held on, to London vnreclaymed
Wher his iustice he sett ẏ land throughout (doubt
The kyng of Fraunce, thus scorned hym out of
That kyng Wyllyam in Gesine had lyen long
And tyme hym wer been kyrked[4], with good songe

When he this hard, to Fraunce he went anone
There to bee kirked[4], he offrid his candill bright
A thousand townes he brent, as he did gone
At theim he prayed, the kyng of Fraunce to light
His candill then, if that he goodly might
Whiche at his kirkehale and purification
To Wars he thought, ẏ tyme to make his obliacõ

Edwyn therle proclamed of Leicester[6]
After decesse of Algary[7] his father dere
And erle Morcare[8] his brother that after[9]
Dyed bothe twoo, Lucy their suster clere
Of Leicester then, and Lyncolne bothe in fere
The coũtesse was, whome[10] kyng William maried
To Iue Tailboys erle of Angeou magnified

To

1 So anone. 2 Egypcian. 3 St. 4 Churched. 5 Churchale.
6 The Erle of Leicestre proclaymed. 7 Algare 8 Morgare 9 After Naymed.
10 Name.

¶ To kyng Wylliam then came full glad again
At Wynchester he held his parliament
Wher he then slewe, for wyath and greate disdain
The duke Waldiue, that no harme to hym ment
But onely for he counselled and consent
To erle Edgar, to gette his heritage
Of England whole, and made to hym homage

¶ Who duke was then of Northumberland
And erle create was, also of Huntyngton
By chronicles olde as menne can vnderstand
Entitled whole, as of all Northampton
Behedeḍ was at Wynchester towne
Whose hedde together, grewe to the necke again
Buried at Crowland, for sainct the soth to sain

¶ The kyng then made, as I vnderstand
The bishop then, of Duresme that Walter hight
Erle proclamed of Northumberland
Whom at Cattleshede, ẏ countre slewe doune right
The kyng then made, a lord that Awbryke hight
Erle of ẏ countre, ẏ durst not Scottes withstande
Wherfore he gaue, Robert Mowbray that lande

¶ And made hym erle of Northumberland
The kyng then sent vnto euery shire
Justices to sitte, throughout all the land
Of all lordshipis, and knightes fees enquere
What temporales he had, to knowe he had desire
And what perteined vnto his royall croune
And what the churche had of deuocion

¶ Vnto his soonne, eldest then generate

1 The 2 the, 3 his and of. 4 he wane + sais ymaginacion. 4* can vnderstande.
5 Gateshede. 6 Roger. 7 Crowne. 8 Iean of. Justices.

All Nozmandy he gaue in heritage
And England whole,to Wyllyam nominate
His second soonne gaue with all thauauntage
And to Henry his third soonne young of age [o]
Therldome gaue then of Glouceſter ſea
With the honour of ſlede, foz euer in certente

The dyed the yere a thousand four scoze and ten
And of his reigne twenty yere and four tho
At Cane buried,in thabbey that hight then
Sainct Stephēs abbey,by Cane that ſtādeth ſo
His doughter Adē,afoze had maried tho
Unto therle Stephē of Bloyes, a pzince of might
Of warres wyſe,and a full manly knight

The.C.xxiij.Chapiter.

¶ Wyllyam Rufus kyng of England reigned thirtene yere, and began to reigne in the yere of our lozde a thousand four scoze and ten,& dyed ꝑ yere a thousand one hundzed & thzee.

kyng William Rufus

His soōne Wylliam Rufus as he deuiſed
Was crouned then w̄ great ſolempnitee
But after soone,duke Robert was auiſed
To clayme England by his pziozite
And Nozmandy alſo,as foz his pzopzete
Is he that was his eldeſt soone and heire
With hoſte full greate,in England game repeire

And made greate warre vpon his bzother ſo
Thzee yere all out,betwene theim ſo continued
Till at laſt thei bothe,betwene theim twoo
Did condiſcende,as well to theim perteined
With whole herte and will,nothyng feined [5]

The

[o] And page. Exit alt In ~~page~~ yonge age. Mā. 1 Heire 2 Caen. 3 Exe. 4 n.

[5] Gamma. 5. hey to abide be heire of his certeyned.

The iudgement of kyng Philip of Fraunce
To vndergo and bide his ordinaunce

¶ In whiche meane while, his brother erle Hêry
The castels all belongyng to the croune
As high constable of England properly
Then seazed had in his possession
As his office by good derection
Asked of right and of good consuetude
To kepe theim sure to the crounes excelsitude

¶ The kyng Philip, by his auised parliament
Gaue iudgement, betwene the brethren twoo
As kyng Wyllyam their father full ment
All Normandy, Robert should haue euer moo
And Wyllyam England, & frendes should bee so
And liue in peace, without any clayme
And either other releace, and whole disclayme

¶ The erle Henry of England then constable
Deliuered all the castels and citees right
To kyng Wyllyam his brother enheritable
As he was bound, and fully so had hight
Duke Robert then, his brother a worthy knight
To England came, to sport hym with his brother
At whiche tyme, either was glad of other

The.C.xxiiij.Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Malcolyn of Scotland warred in England for his wifes right, pretendyng ỳ she was right heire of England, and afterward he did homage to kyng wyllyam Rufus for the realme of Scotland.

¶ His Malcolin of Scotlãd greatly claimed
To haue England then by his wifes right
Margarete ſuſter of Edgar, heire pclamed
Of England whole, that expelled was by might
Of kyng Wyllyam conquerour by vnright
So for his right, the Northland he deſtroyed
And home he went again, nothyng annoyed

¶ But then the kyng and his brethren twoo
To Scotland rode and waſted ſore the land
Homage of the Scottes. Till Malcolyne came, and did his homage
By letter wrytten and ſealed I vnderſtand
Whiche Hardyng gaue, in to kyng Henryes hãd
Without reward or any recompence
Of mayne labour, his coſtagis and expence

¶ The duke Robert went home to Normandy
And kyng Malcolyne & his ſoonne, then Edward
Warred again Northumberland in hie
But erle Robert that kepyng had and ward
Of Northũberland, w̃ hym then faught full hard
Byſide Aluwike at Malcolyne well were ſlain
There Malcolyne and Edward his ſoõne certain

¶ Whẽ quene Margret, ſo of ỹ tidynges knewe
She eate neuer meate, for ſorowe dyed anone
At Dunfermelyn, buryed as then was dewe
But nowe ſhe is there ſhryned in fleſhe and bone
Worſhyng miracles, as ſayeth many one
Entombed faire, and in the firetree tranſlate
Of whiche abbey nowe is ſhe aduocate

¶ The Scottes then made, Dunwalde ſo their kyng
Malcolynes

1 The kyng.

° Homage tho. Edit. alt. MS. 2 For his 3 Lordſhyp.
4 Againe in 5 Alnewike at Malcome wher.
6 The Lordſhyp 7 alſo. 8 Tho. 9 And Miracles hath ſhewed many one.
10 A Shryne.

Walcolynes brother, that to it had no right
But Dunkā, sonne of Walcolyne that knowyng
With helpe of kyng Wyllyam, and royall might
Of Scotlande, so droaue hym awaye to flight
And crouned was, as chronicles vnderstande
And homage made to wyllyam for his lande

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

¶ Sone after, kyng Dunkan of Scotland slayn
By treason was, and Dunwall restitute
Unto the croune of Scotlande then agayne
Whome Edgare then, by succoure and refute
Of kyng Wyllyam droue out, all destitute
Of any helpe, and crouned was in Scotlande
To kyng Willyam did homage for his lande

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

¶ Of whose homage, John Hardyng gaue ỹ letter
Full clerely made, written well and sealed
The whiche also, with other letters better
That by reason maye not be repeled°
The whiche, yf he would haue enbeseled
The kyng James vnto his waryson
A Wy. marke, hym hight of his discrecion.

¶ And in his tyme, Roes that Richarde hight
The kyng of Wales, in battayl strong was slayn
Besyde the castell of Brekenham, then full right
Fro whiche tyme forthe, theyr kynges seazed full
And princes called they were, soth to sayn (playn
The kyng with hoste, on Robert Monbraye rode
Who with the kyng, faught of his traytourhode.

¶ And discomfite, helde Bamburgh castell then
And the kyng enduryng, full. bii. yere

r iiii Consentyng

[1] Engeland. [2] Chronicles. [3] To kynge William made homage. [4] Danwalde. [5] And homage made to William. [6] Rees. [7] Yere. [8] The soth. [9] Hym

° Reueled. Edit. alt

x For. Edit. alt.

Consentyng with the lordes, that so began
For to depose the kyng, of his croune clere
And duke Robert his brother, with great power
To croune and make, the kyng of all Englande
With Normandy to ioyse, I vnderstande.

The kynge exiled Anselme of Cauntorbury
Tharchebyshop, that withstode his wronges
Doen to the churche, and to the prelacie
To the commons also, that theim belonges
Seuētene tounes, w̄ also many churches amōges
And abbeys foure, he wasted and confounde
The newe forest in Hamshire for to founde

He buylded the Newcastell vpon Tyne
The Scottes to gaynstande, and to defende
And dwell therin, the people to enclyne
The towne to builde, and walle as did apnend
He gaue theim ground, & golde ful great to spend
To buylde it well, and wall it all aboute
And fraunchised theim, to paye a free rent out

The rentes & frutes, to tharchbishop pteinyng
And to the byshoppes of Wynchester & Sarum
And also, ix. abbeys lyuelod conteynyng
In his handes seazed, and held all and ioine
But for his worckes & buylynges held eche croine
With whiche he made then, westmynster hall
And the castel, of Newecastell withall.

That stādeth on Tyne, therin to dwel in warre
Agayne the Scottes, the countree to defende
Whiche as men sayd, was to hym mekill deer

And

1 Yore. 2 dō. 3 Sturgis and Castle he wasted and further. 4 Newe Ca 5 For to. 6 Duelte. 7 Of nyne. 8 Crum. 9 The newe Castelt 10 Stonde. 11 That & Tinde.

* See the Paper marked [o]

And moze pleasyng, then otherwyse dispende
And muche people foz it, did hym cõmende
Foz cause he dyd the commen wealthe sustene
Of marchers vnnumerable to mayntene.

The.C.xxb. Chapiter.

¶ This kyng Willyam Rufus taxed so soze the commons, ꝑ they might not mayntene tilthe, foz whiche fell great derth and great myschiefe and mozen of catel foz defaute of food, foz whiche the commons wer glad of his death.

GReat tallage of England, then was rayſed
In so ferfozth, that tilthe of land was leyd
Of which sued mischiefe, nothyng prayſed
Foz faute of food, mozayn of bestiall frayed
And death of people, foz hunger soze arayed
A kyng woteth not what harmeth housbandrye
Housbande to pill, and taxe outragiously.

To Godis dome, haue no consyderacion
Howe that this kyng, on huntyng as he stoode
Under a tree, and as writynges maketh mencion
Walter Tyrel at his game in that wood
Shotyng at a dere, of whiche he drewe no bloode
But stroke the kyng, vnto the dethes wounde
That there anone he died, vpon the ground

At Wynchester then, buried anone
The date was then, of his reygne.xiii.yere
Foz whome the folke, no sozowe made noz moone
He hurte theim so, with taxe and tallage here
Of Chzist a thousande an.C.and thzee yere clere
Whose death the folke, in no wise did complayn
Were they all therof, bothe glad and fayn.

The

The.C.xxvi.Chapiter.

¶Henry the first kyng of Englande and duke of Normandye reigned.xxxvi.yere,and died in the yere of Christe a thousande.C.and.xxxix.

Kyng Henry the first

HEnry his brother,ẏ first was of that name
was crouned thē,w̄ al ẏ honour might be
He recōsiled saynt Anselme that cam hame
Who crouned Maude his wyfe full fayre & free
That doughter was,full of benignitee
To kyng Malcolyne,& saint Margarete ẏ quene
Of Scotlande,whiche afore that tyme had been.

¶On whom he gate Willyam,Richard & Mold
Whose goodnesse,is yet spoken of full wide
Ẏf she were fayre,hir vertuous manyfolde
Exceaded farre and vices she set aside
Debates all,that engendred were of pride
She staunched hole,with all beneuolence
And visited sycke and poore with diligence.

¶The prisoners also & wemen eke with childe
And in gesene lyuyng ay where aboute
Clothes and meate,and beddyng newe vnfiled
Wyne also and ale,she gaue without doubte
Where she sawe nede, in countrees al throughout
These crosses all,that yet bee moste royall
In the hye wayes,with gold she made theim all

¶kyng Edgare thē,hir brother was of Scotlād
That to kynge Henry then made homage
The byshop of Duresme,then toke on hande

Homage of ẏ Scottes.

To

o Vertues. ~~xxxxx~~ Vice. 2 And Debates. 3 Visite.
4 xxxx 5 all. 6 giuean 7 clene. 8 Als. 9 worthouty2
10 se 11 The kynge.

The duke Robert, to gone in message
To make hym clayme Englande his heryptage
The whiche he dyd, anon without delaye
As they accorded vpon a certayne daye.

But Anselne, byshop of Caunturbury
And also quene Maude, then made them well ac-
The kyng to paye, thre. M. marke yerely (corde
To duke Robert, without more discorde
And counsayled then the kyng, as was recorde
To loue the lordes, that made the discencyon
Betwyxte his brother, and hym by conuencyon

The kyng Henry, warred Robert Estenuyle
The eldest sonne of Roger Mountgomery
And his brother, that was so called that whyle
And create Earle of Shrewysbury
Who his castell of Arundell helde for thy
And Shrewysbury also, and the cytee
With other mo castels, in his countre

Whiche to the kyng, he yelde by conuencyon
He and his brother, to passe to Normandye
With all theyr men, without discencyon
To theyr father, Roger Mountgomerye
That earle was there, of Bolesmo manly
The kyng went then, to Caue and to Barhous
Helde them with force, and herte full couetous

Whiche towres Robert the duke of Normandy
Asked of hym, to haue delyueraunce
And his money, of thre thousand marke yerely
Whiche he ought hym, by the hole concordaunce

Whiche

1 So. 2 in. 3 Caue.

4 As his. edit. alt. 5 So. 6 Accorde. 7 eight 8 marke 9 Ile.
Shrewsbury 10 Son of Mastelle 11 Counte.
12 Then. edit. alt. 13 Montvile. × held. edit. alt. 14 Bolesme.
15 Caen. 16 Barrouse. 17 Strenght 18 Power 19 Heir

Whiche he agayne layde, and stode at variaunce
Wherfore they fell on warre, and toke the felde
With hostes greate, full sore faught vnder shelde

At Tenarthbray, that is in Normandye
Where Nigell then, of Albany that hyght
Toke duke Robert, in batayll manfully
And brought him bound, vnto the kyng w̄ might
For which ẏ kyng anone there made him knight
And gaue hym landes, that were forfet afore
By Robert Stutuyle, in Englande for euermore

The gate also a castell, besyeged longe
Whiche he scalyd, with noble polycie
And to the kyng it gaue, though it were wronge
For whiche, the kyng gaue hym anon in hye
The landes, all that forfet were only
By Robert Monbray, earle of Northumberland
In his brothers tyme, as I vnderstande.

The same Nygell, that hyght Albanye
A sonne had then, whome the kyng Henry
Roger Monbray, dyd call euer after ay
Thus Albany was chaunged morally
Unto Monbray, for the lyuelod onely
Whiche Monbray had afore of herytage
These Monbrayes nowe, rose fyrst of hye corage

This kynge Henry then seazed Normandye
And made his sonne Willyam duke of ẏ lande
And home came to Englande then in hye
And in the yere of Chryste, to vnderstande
A thousande hole, an. C. and ten on hande

His

1 Geynsfeide 2 Stutevile. 3 Seged. 4 Moubray. 5 I can
6 This. 7 Whome so. 8 Foray. 9 Moubrays newe. 10 Come so.

His doughter Maude, he maryed to Henry
That Emperour was then of Romanye.

He put his brother duke Robert in straite warde
And many other, that were of his cognisaunce
Where he released couenauntes and forwarde
Afore wryten of his enherytaunce
That betwene them, myght make any dystaunce
And founde hym euer, in all royall estate
By good auyse, and councell ordynate

Whiche duke ordred was so, for he forsoke
The realme, of al the lande of Jerusalem
When he was chose therto, and nought it toke
For couetyse, to haue this Englysshe realme
For he forsoke that fortune, as men dyd deme
Agayne goddes wyll, and his hye ordynaunce
For chosen he was, by all chrysten creaunce.

For at wynnynge of Jerusalem
Where prynces many, kynges and dukes were
He was the worthyest of any realme
And bare hym beste, in knyghtly dede of warre
At all assautes, moste knyghtly dyd hym beare
The honoure all, and fame he had euermore
And chosen was there, to be kynge therfore,

Men saide, ỹ God gaue hym suche punyshmēt
His brother, to put hym in greate myserye
Unto his death, agayne his owne entente
For he forsake Chrystes owne monarchye
In whiche he was borne, & for man lyste to dye
The chrysten fayth, to mayntayne and encrease

For

1 High Romanye. 2 Inheraunce. 3 Longe 4 Fu
5 Men seide. 6 After the deth of his fader kynge William.
7 Of this 8 Kyng. 9 Suche. 10 ỹ Jerusalem and als the Regalie

For couetyse his brother, to discreace.

¶ The yere of Chryste, a thousande was ful clere
And an hundreth also, and therwithall eyghtene
When good quene Maude was deed, & laide on
At Westminster buryed, as well was sene (bere
For heupnesse of whiche, the kyng I wene
To Normandy, then went vnto his sonne
The duke William, & there with hym dyd wonne

¶ The third yere after, to England came agayn
The duke his sonne, Williyam of Normandye
His brother Rychard also, the sothe to sayne
And earle Rychard, of Chester in company
With many other lordes, in shyppes them bye
Upon the sea were dreynt in greate distresse
Of the whiche the kyng, had then great heuinesse

¶ Which duke Williã had wed ỹ doughter then
Of Fowke Tailboys, Earle of Angeou had bene
With whome a. C. lx. knyghtes with many men
And ladyes many, were drowned as was sene
And then the kyng wed Hadelysé the quene
The duke Godfrey daughter, ỹ was of Lorreyne
Of his mournyng, to comforte hym agayne.

¶ And in the yere, a thousande fully accompte
And an. C. twenty, and also fyue
Themperour Henry, the death surmounte
And passed to God fro Maude that was his wife
Who to her father, king Henry came belyfe
Abode with hym in Englande, then two yere
Maude Empryce, was called then full clere

And

1 Bisencreue 2 als. 3 With. 4 Adelisa. 5 And bode.

~~* Here the Harleian MS adds the following stanza~~

~~fourth & other succeeding~~

(In the paper margin)

¶And in the yere of Chrystes incarnacyon
A thousande was, an.C.twenty and seuen
When kyng Henry, in greate prosperacyon
His doughter Maude, the empryce to neuen
The earle Geffrey Plantagenet euen
Earle of Angeou, the sone of Fowke Tailboys
So maryed had of fame, that had the boyce.

¶On whome he gate a sonne, ỹ Henry hyght
By surname called Henry fitz Empryce
Then dyed his eme Alexaunder forth ryghte
The kyng of Scottes, a prince of great enterprice
That homage dyd for Scotlande, as suffyce
So dyed, then to whome Daupd succede
His brother was, saint Margarete sonne in dede.

* Homage of ỹ Scottes.

¶That to kyng Henry, made his homage
And then to Maude, the forsayde Empryce
By hole assent, of all his Baronage
By letter wryten and sealed, as maye suffyce
which John Hardig, in Scotland brought of pce
with many mo, for foure. C. marke and fyftye
At biddig ỹ cõmaundement of the kyng Henry

* Homage of ỹ Scottes

¶Cadwalan, prynce of Wales at Wadeyet
In batayle faught, where kyng Henry him slewe
And greate people of Wales, that there forset
Were slayne that daye, to hym ỹ were vntrewe
Of whiche batayl, Wales maye alway rewe
The yere a thousande, an.C. and thyrtye
And there tyll two, as made is memorye.

¶Then went the kyng to Normandye agayne

1 To. 2 Her. 3 Emprice. 4 Sought. 5 Fo. 6 Thereto. 7 In the Harleian MS. this stanza immediately follows the last of fol. cxxxv.

And

And there abode, and kepte all Normandy
To tyme he dyed, of whome that lande was fayne
But Englande then of it, was full heuy
When he had reygned so full worthy*
He dyed in the syre and thyrtye yere
At Boys Leon, of his reygne then full clere.

¶ Of Chrystes date, was then a thousande yere
An hundreth also, and .ix. and thyrtye moo
Buryed at Redynge, as well it doth appere
In the abbaye, whiche there he founded so
Of monkes blake, where euer they ryde or goo
That pray for hym, & for quene Maude his wyfe
Who eyther other loued withouten stryfe

The. C. xxbii. Chapiter.

¶ Stephan of Bloys, kynge of Englande reygned. xix. yere, & beganne the yere of Chryst, a thousande. C. and. xxxix, and dyed in the yere a thousande. C. lviii.

kyng Stephan.

STephā of Bloys, his sister sōne was croūd
A manly mā, was thē of great power
And king was made of England ỹ stound
Withoute stryfe, or any maner warre
To Normandy he went, and seazed all there
and gaue it to his sonne, syr Eustace
And made hym duke therof, with great solace

¶ Thus Eustace, then duke of Normandy
To Parys went, to kyng lewys of Fraunce
His homage made for his lande so in hye
And put oute then, with greate contrarpaunce
The offycers, that dyd to Maude pleasaunce

And

* Worthely edit. alt. royally. Ms. 3 Als. 4 Founde. 5 In that. 6 This.

And wed the suster of kyng Lewes to wife
For supowaill of it without strife

¶The kyng Stephã to Englãd thẽ home came
And tidynges had,howe kyng Dauid had distroi
The North parties,& dooen full muche harme(ed
Wherfore he brent Edenburgh then and noyed
And the countree aboute,he sore accloyed
For wiche Dauid his soonne to Henry then sent
To bee his manne,thens furth at his entent

¶To whome kyng Stephan therldõ of Hũtyng
Then gaue,and erle therof hym so create (ton
Who then for it,by verey due reason
His homage did as it was ordinate
Whiche Hẽry dyed, and neuer had kynges estate
For whiche the Scottes,seyn thei owe no seruice
To Englishe kynges, but onely of this wise

Homage of the Scottes.

¶kyng Stephan then bet the castell doune
In England,so that stode hym to defence
His menne thei gaue to their enheritesoun
And all-soon,for cause of their offence
He disherite with might violence
Diuers erles and lordes he disherite
And many other of his frendes enherite

¶The yere of Christ a thousand was then gone
An hundred thirty and eight also
kyng Stephan brake all his othes a none
That he had made vnto the barons tho
For whiche thei rose full sore again hym so
And warred hym felly on euery side

¶ And

1 Supowell. 2 Without. 3 Sore & hurte and greued.
4 Wherfore kynge Dauid with hoste entred Scotlonde and brente Edenburgh toune and castell.
5 Ex. 6 Castell. 7 Then 8 His soone
9 Be. 10 His strength. 11 Truse brake.
12 And made hym warre felly on ethe side.

And he on them also with mikyl pryde.

¶ The yere a thousande, an. C. thyrty and nyne
Maude Empryce, in England claymed her right
With earle Robert, of Glouceſtre her brother fine
And earle Randolf of Cheſter, with all his might
Syr Bygot earle of Northfolke then hyght
Awbrey Uer then earle of Orenforde (forde
And Willyam Bawne, ye then was earle of Her-

¶ Willyam Legroos, earle of Almarle tho
Robert Louell, & Willyam lorde Percy
Kyng Dauyd her eme, and many other mo
Of earls and barons, that were full hardy
The caſtell then Lyncolne gate on hye
The cytee helde of Lyncolne with alſo
With hoſte full greate, lyggyng with them ſo

¶ Where then the kyng, ye caſtell ſeged longe
Tyll he it had, by treaty and conuencyon
And bode therin, with power greate and ſtronge
Tyll Maude and he, as made is mencyon
With ſtronge batayles, and great diſcencyon
Beſyde Lyncolne, where then ſhe had the felde
And Stephã taken, & hurt ſore through his ſheld

To Bryſtowe then, earle Roberte Clare hym led
And in the towre, there kepte in ſtronge pryſon
The Empryce Maude, with power that ſhe had
To Wynchester then, ſhe rode ſegyng the towne
Where the quene Maude, as made is mencyon
Kyng Stephã his wyfe it reſcowed w batayl ſore
And toke the earle Clare his eme thore

The

1 Wyll full grete. 2 The 3 Hugh Bigot.
4 Bourne. 5 His her 6 Wyll many. 7 Lincolne. 8 with them
9 His. 10 Sore. 11 Redde. 12 his vncle.

The.C.xxviij.Chapiter.

¶ Thenterchaunge of kyng Stephan and of tht duke Robert Clare duke of Glocester.

FOr which cause thē, to haue hir eme[1] again
Themperesse and quene Maude accordid
To enterchaunge, ỹ kyng so then full fain
For erle Robert without more, concordid[2]
This enterchaunge, thus made and recordid[3]
The kyng hir sued vnto Oxenford
Fro whens she went, by night to Walyngford

¶ Upon the frost, in the wynter[4] season
In her smocke alone, with hir vncle dere
That none hir knewe, of theim without the towne
So like hir smocke and the snowe was in feer[5]
The kyng knewe not in what place that she wer[6]
For Oxenford he gate, and Awbray slewe
Of Oxenford, that was an erle full trewe

¶ The kyng Stephan, a castell then began
At Wilton, where kyng Dauid with power
And erle Robert, of Glocester that was then
Hym droue awaye, out of that place full clere
And bet it downe, to the ground full nere
To Walyngford, the[8] kyng with power went
Themperesse to sech[9] was his entent

¶ Hir partie then, droue hym then[10] awaye
With greate slaughter of menne and occision
And euery lorde on other, made greate affraye
And spoyled other through al this region

[1] Her vncle. [2] & W. thereby [3] So is. [4] Is in snowe in. [5] were. [6] That. [7] The. [8] Fro. [9] For the [10] Sege. [11] now.

By greate impression and cruell sore raunson
The kyng treated with erle Randolf full trewe
But false then was his treaty, as menne knewe

¶ For when he came vnto his presence
Anone he putte hym in[1] sore prisone
To tyme he had by his magnificence
The castell of Lyncolne vnto his croune
And putte hym then to fyne and greate raunsom
So variaunt he was alwaye of hight
Fro euē to morowe, that no man trust hym might

The fiftene yere of the[3] same kyng Stephen
Therle Geffrey of Angeou decessid[4]
A noble prince as all menne did beleuen
Henry his soonne, of persone well encressed
Of childishe wit also full released
And of age he was then fiftene yere
To Scotland came, kyng Dauid to require

¶ Of his socour, and of his supportacion
England to gette, that was his heritage
Who made hym then, full greate consolacion
And with hym came without[5] fee or wage
With full assent of all his baronage
Under baners, kyng Dauid made hym knight
Upon the felde, again kyng Stephen to fight

¶ But suche treaty was made and good accorde
That kyng Stephen, to Henry shoulde retourne[6]
As very heire, without more discorde
At his decesse, to Henry whole retourne
[The croune of England, without more soiourne][7]

[1] Myprision [2] Into. [3] This. [4] So discessed. [5] Withoutyn [6] Who
[6] attournes. [7] Omitted in the mss.

Who died then,after in his.xix.yere
At Feuersham buried,he was full clere.

¶Of Chzistes date,was then a thousande yere
And an hundzeth fyftyé and eyght also
His wyfe and he,there buried both in feer
The whiche he found,whyles he was lyuyng so
And reigned here,in muche trouble and wo
And had this realme,without any ryght
Foz thempzise Maude,that fayze lady bzight

The.C.xxix.Chapiter.

¶Henry fitz Empzice kyng of Englande and erle of Angeou,duke of Nozmandye and Guyen,by. xxxvi. yere and beganne to reygne the yere of oure Lozde a thousande a hundzeth.lviii.and dyed the yere a thousande an hundzeth and.xciiii.

kyng Henrye the seconde.

HEnry therle of Angeou was tho
In this meane tyme,had bē in Nozmādy
And set his rule therin,foz frende oz foo
And crouned was at London wozthely
With all the lozdes of his hye monarchie
And made hym then, theyz feautee and homage
The pzince of Wales also foz his heritage.

¶He wedded then a lady,fayze and bzight
Dame Alianoz,the dukes doughter of Guyen
And heyze therof,and lady by all right
Possession had with all,the pzofytes then
And welbeloued was she with her men
Deuozced fro the kyng Lewes of Fraunce.

1 Also hette. 2 Ao Kynge of Engelonde reignynge in dede and no. 3 He. 4 W. Thonton. 5 Ladie feire and. 6 So. 7 Also.

That hyr had wed to wyfe, of his puysaunce.

And on her gatte two doughters, fayre & gente
But for fibrede and consanguinitee
They were departed, by papall iudgement
On whome kyng Henry, by Chrystes decree
Gatte sonnes foure, of great humanitee
Henry, Richarde, Geffrey, and John also
Elianor and Jhone, his doughters two.

The. C. xxx. Chapiter.

Howe Malcolyne the seconde kyng of Scottes made homage for Scotlande & for therldome of huntyngdon.

In this meane whyle, kyng Dauid then so dyed
To whō Malcolyn, Hērryes sōne was heire
Whiche Henry was erle notified
Of Huntyngdon, without any dispayre
[Of that erldome, bothe good and fayre][3]
And sonne was[4], to this noble kyng Dauy
That wedded had, erle Waldens[5] doughter onely.

[To enioye[6] therldome, by her enheritaunce
That gat on her, this Malcolyne that was kyng
Of Scotlande nowe, of mighty hye puysaunce
That homage made, for his enherityng
[Unto Henry, that then was of Englande kyng][7]
For all Scotlande, and also for Huntyngdon
Whiche seruices[8] both, were due vnto the croune.

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

The. C. xxxi. Chapiter.

This

1 Hynred. 2 Johan.
3 In Englonde an Erledome of goode heire. 4 He was.
5 Waldene. 6 Joye. 7 To Henry Courtenantell fitz Emperesse ne
le Eyre. 8 Dills. 9 Seruyce.

¶ Of his hous thomas cald Thomas becket bushop

fol. cxl.

Here the Harleian MS adds

Pursued hym sore anoone into Engelonde
Unknowen to the kynge without hidynge
In his own Churche as men can understonde
With violence hym slewe without lettynge
For whiche the kynge with teres full sore wepynge
Remordyng than his wordes of occasion
Repented sore and axed absolucion.

Kynge Henry than unto the Pope furth sent
Ambassiatours with his supplicacion
Besechynge hym with verry humble entent
For to admytte his trewe declaracion
Touchynge the deth and the desolacion
Of Thomas of Caunterbury his Clerke
For it was never his wille in worde ne werke

To whiche Malcolyne, Willyā his sonne & heyre
Was crouned kyng of Scotlande then full fayre.

The. C. xxxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kynge Wyllyam of Scotlande wente in to Normandye, with kyng Henry of Englande the seconde, as his liegeman.

 This

1 The Churches. 2 Paied. 3 So he. 4 So. 5 For whiche. 6 And also. 7 (Here add the paper marked ✠)
8 concealed. edit. alt. MS.

That hyr had wed to wyfe, of his puysaunce.

[illegible] yat on yer, this Wyllcolyne that was kyng
Of Scotlande nowe, of mighty hye puysaunce
That homage made, for his enherityng
Unto Henry, that then was of Englande kyng
For all Scotlande, and also for Huntyngdon
Whiche seruices both, were due vnto the croune.

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

The. C.xxxi. Chapiter.

1 Tyrared. 2 Johan.
3 In Enaelonde an Erledome of goode Leire). 4 He wesa.
5 Waldeue. 6 Joye. 7 To Henry Courtenauntell fitz Empereſſa no
8 Joye. 9 Alo. 10 Seruyce.

This

¶ This kyng Henrye exiled Thomas becket byshop of Cauntorburye.

HE maried then his sonne the young Henry
To the doughter of the kyng of Fraunce
He exiled then, Thomas of Cauntorbury
Out of Englande, and many of his aliaunce
For cause of his rebellious gouernaunce
And as he came fro Rome, by Fraunce awaye
With language fel, he prayed the kyng that daye

¶ The poyntes to mende, and so to Englād went
For which the kyng, was with hym sore displeased
That then he sayd, had I had men that ment
Myne honeste, I were not thus diseased
With suche a clerke, thus greued and vneased
Therfore three knightes, Raynold le Fitz Vrsy
Hughe Morvyle hym slewe with Robert Tracy.

Raynold fitz Vrsy
Hughe Marvile
Robert Tracy.

¶ But kyng Malcolyne died, that was full true
Of his homage, at Westchester ensealed
To kyng Henry dooen, so as it was due
For it should not be gaynsayd ne counselled
Nor afterwarde of Scottes be repeled
To whiche Malcolyne, Willyā his sonne & heyre
Was crouned kyng of Scotlande then full fayre.

Homage of ye Scottes.

The. C. xxxii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kynge Wyllyam of Scotlande wente in to Normandye, with kyng Henry of Englande the seconde, as his liegeman.

Subiec-
cion of ỹ
Scottes.

THis kyng Wyllyam then rode with hoste
full stronge
The Northẽ lãd he brent & sore distroyed
By east and west, of both Merches of Englande
The lorde Uesty, with it was anoyed
The lorde Unfreuyle with syckenesse so accloyed
With power great at Aluwike with hym faught
Wher he was takẽ, in batayll sore and caught

Whõ to the kyng, to Londõ then thei brought
Unto kyng Henry, with great honoure
Then had the kyng, tydynges he liked nought
His sonne Henry, by kyng Lewys socoure
Besieged Roan, with hoste great and rygoure
For when the kyng, to Normandy then went
The kyng Wyllyam, with hym his labour spent.

And Dauid alsó, his brother with al his might
That erle was then, create of Huntyngdon,
And Robert ferers erle of Leycester so hight
And Roger clare, with theim of great renoume
Of Gloucester, that erle was in possession
With other lordes, and the siege sone remeued
And his cytee of Roan, full well rescued.

The siege and saute, perdoned and forgeuen
At the prayer of kyng Lewys of Fraunce
Within fewe yeres, in peace and rest to liuen
He crowned his sonne without distaunce
Kyng of Englande, and gaue hym gouernaunce
And at the feast of his coronacion.
He sewed afore hym, for his consolacion,

The. C. xxxiii. Chapiter.

1 By weste and Este of both Marches endlonges. 2 Umfreville.
3 Sore. 4 Anwick 5 And grete. 6 whiche. Tales. 8 at. 9 Withoutyn.

¶ This yonger Henry reigned but.iiii.yeres, and died before his father, wherfore he is not accompted as kynge because his father outlyued hym and reigned after his death.

AND to hi said, sõne thinke I do you honour
A kynge to serue you thus, nowe at youre meate
He aunswered hym full vnthankefully that houre
And sayd, it was no reyzoue ne forfete
An erls sonne to serue the kynges sonne at meate
For whiche the father Henry, to Irelande went
Tyll young Henry the kyng was dead and spent

Then came Henry, and had the gouernement
The father and kyng, was then admytte agayn
And reigned then, and had the regiment
And but.iiii.yere his sonne reygned soth to sayen
Wherfore he is among kynges certeyne
Not accoumpted, by no chronicler
For his father was kynge afore and after clere.

The.C.xxxiiii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Wyllyam of Scotlande made his homage to kyng Henry the seconde.

THe kyng Wyllyam, at his daye assigned
To Yorke came, to do there his homage
That made it then, & nothyng it repugned
But for his due dette, then for his heritage
Of Scotlande whole, by verayе dué knowlage
Of his barons, and by his euydence
Agayne it founde he then, no trewe defense.

Homage of ỳ Scottes.

¶ The kynge Henry then, cõquered all Irelande
By

1 le. 2 sete. 3 And ther abode to yonge Henry.
In the margin of the Harleian MS. is this Gloss. Nota iste juuenis
henricus rex regnavit nisi quatuor annis, et aliter vocatur henricus. Et o
merator pro Rege quia pater ejus henricus rex senior infirmitate
regnavit ad mortem. 5 Ro. 6 Trewe. 7 Ro.

By papall dome, there of his royaltee
The profytes and reuenues of the lande
The dominacion, and the soueraynteé
For errour whiche agayn the spiritualtee
They helde full longe, & would not been correcte
Of heresyes, with which they were infecte.

He founded then, the priory of Newstede
Within Shirwod, and Waltham founded newe
Afore were secular without hede
Whiche regular he made, in order due
And other two houses of order trewe
He founded there, for his soule to praye
Where was holy seruyce kepte euery daye.

Geffreye his sonne, the thyrde gotten and bore
That duke of Britayne was hole create
By his wyues right, to enioye for euermore
Whiche was a prince, of royall great estate
At Parys dyed, that Arthure create
To sonne and heyre, and Isabell the fayre
His doughter was, without any dispayre

In the yere of Christ, a thousande clere
An hundreth and sixty also and one
Baudewyn the thyrde, died taken prisoner
By the Sarysens, that were his mortall foone
Of his body, that yssue then had none
To whome his brother Almarike did succede
To Jerusalem, and there was kyng in dede

By treason of therle Triples then
The Christen hoste, that had foule betrayed

When

1 the 2 Pines. 3 Faire. 3 He founded foure for Thomas Becket after he was of Canterbury the Archbishop and martyr

4 Eledia who Arthure generate. 5 And in.

6 Of Triples.

When Bawdewyn was so taken, through ỹ falle
That great people of Chriſtē had thē reiſed (man
And on the felde, nothyng to be prayſed
To the Sarayns went, with all his power
And diſcomfyt the chryſten hooſt full clere.

The.C.xxxb.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Geffrey Plantagenet, otherwyſe called Plantageneth Earle of Angeou, elder brother of Bawdewyne and Almaryk, ſhoulde haue ben kyng of Jeruſalem afore, and ſo by conſequens thys kynge Henrye ſhoulde haue be kynge of it.

But yf ryght, had lynally procede
Geffray Plantagenet, Earle of Angeou
The elder brother of Bawdwyn ſo in dede
And of Almaryk, with mykell blyſſe and ioye
Whiche Geffray, ſo Earle of Angeou
Shulde haue be kyng afore of all that realme
Both of Surry, and alſo Jeruſalem

¶ When duke Robert, Jeruſalem forſoke
For couetyſe to haue, and ioyſe Englande
Godfray Boleyne, the realme of Surry toke
And of Jeruſalem eke, I vnderſtande
And crowned was, to be kynge of that lande
That duke had bene afore, of all Loueyne
A noble prynce, and a worthy Chyeftеyne

¶ A thouſande was, an hundreth ſixty & fyxtene
Withoute yſſue, of his body cōmynge
Dyed, to whome his brother as was ſene
Bawdwin ſucceded, and of that realme was kyng

That

1 The Erle. 2 Mocha myrthe 3 Of. 4 Ioie. 5 De Boleyn.
as. 7 Lorreyne.

That ruled the lande,as was full well semyng
Full worthy accompted,amonge all estates
That chrysten fayth susteyned,without debates

To whom his sonne,king Bawdewin did succede
The seconde was,that had so borne that name
A noble Prynce,of all marcyall dede
And in that lande, greate honoure had and fame
Whiche on his wyfe, gate without blame
A doughter then had vnto his heyre
That lande to haue enheryte,and repayre.

Whom then earle Fowke of Angeou,wed to wife
And kyng was of that lande then by her ryght
On whome he gate thre sonnes in his lyfe
Worthy knyghtes,and men of greate myght
The eldest Geffray Plantagenet hyght
That gate this same Henry fyrst Empryse
kyng of Englande,of noble and hye enterpryse.

The.ii.sonne,of Fowke,was Bawdewin ỳ thirde
Dyed prysoner,as it is expressed afore
Without yssue of his body betyd
The third sonne then,of Fowke & laste was bore
Hyght Almaryk,whiche two were kynges thore
Where erle Geffrey their elder brother had ryght
That suffred them,to ioye that lande by myght

Which Almaryk dyed kyng so of that realme
After whome then reygned, his sonne Bawdwyn
That fourth was of that name of Yerlam
That impotent was,without medecyn
To mayntayne warre,he myght no more enclyne

Who

1 Worthely. 2 In euery. 3 He had 4 Right 5 Empire.
6 Jerusalem.

Who called was Bawdewyn Paraliticus
For with the palsye,stryken was he full hydeous

The.C.xxxvi.Chapiter.

¶ Howe that kyng Henry the seconde was very heyre of Jerusalem, and by consequens, Rychard of Yorke shoulde be the same.

herfore he sent to kynge Henry his crowne
With his banner also,of his armes full fayre
Of Jerusalem,that were of great renowne
As to hym that was then the very heyre
Of earle Geffray eldest sonne full fayre
Was to kyng Fowke, and to his wyfe the quene
Doughter and heyre,to Baudewin the.ii.clene.

¶ This fourth Bawdewyn called Paraliticus
This message sent,the yere of Chriſte a thousand
An hundreth ful, foure score and thre, ryght thus
When Henry was requyred,to haue that lande
Whiche he proroged,and sent agayne his sounde[2]
He shulde be there,yf that the kyng of Fraunce
And he myght well accorde of gouernaunce

¶ He went so forth anon to Normandye
With hoost full great,with kyng Philyp to treat
Of that voyage and warre,accorded[3] on hye
But then the death,hym felly ganne reherte[4]
Wherfore anon,he satte vp in his seate
And to his sonne Rychard, greate sõme[5] he gaue
Thether to go,that holy lande to saue.

¶ And then he dyed,at Pount[6] Eucrard buryed

The

1 Seconde. 2 Sonde. 3 Accorde. 4 Rehete. 5 Goodes.
6 Founte.

The sorowe of herte, and great contricyon
A prynce chrysten, fully notifyed
Without pere in all comparyson
Of worthy knygthode, and manly renowne
A thousande yere, an. C. lxxx. and fourtene
And of his reygne, was syxe & thirty clene

The. C. xxxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Richard king of England, duke of Normãdy, & earle of Angeou, reygned. x. yere, and beganne the yere of Chryst a. M. an. C. lxxxxiiii. & dyed the yere. M. CC. and. iiii.

King Rychard the fyrst, called Cure de Lion.

RYchard his sõne, to kig the was crowned
By Bawdewyn archbyshop & primate
Of Cauntorbury, & of England ye stound
That ruled the churche, then by lawe ordynate
His brother Geffray, of baste so procreate.
Archbyshop was of Yorke, then newe electe
The Northren churche, vnder him to be protecte.

¶ The lorde Lucye, that Godfray Lucye hight
Afore hym bare a royall pyllyon
And John Marshal, his spores of gold ful bright
Willyam Maundeuile, his mighty hye crowne
That earle was then of Almarle by and downe
Of his wyues ryght, & willyam Marshal bolde
Earle of Strigeyll, the scepter bare of golde.

¶ Willyam Patryk, that was then Longspee
That Earle was, then create of Salysbury
A staffe of golde, for constable then was he
Of Englande hole, to haue the regeny
By ryght of his offyce of constablery

For

1 With. 2 As. 3 See the Paper marked ○X○X○ 4 So. 5 Called was. 6 Regency.

For yf the lande were voyde, & none heire knowe
To kepe the realme, by his offyce hym owe.

¶This ylke Willyam, was earle also create
Of Glouceſtre, by whiche that offyce grewe
To hym of ryght, for he was generate
Of Roberte Clare earle of Glouceſtre trewe
Foure Barons bare, by theyr ſeruyce full dewe
Aboue his hed, then in proceſſyon
A cloth of golde, by good direccyon.

¶Earle Dauyd then, that tyme of Huntyngdon
Brother, of the kyng Willyam of Scotlande
And John the earle of Morten of renowne
Kyng Rychardes brother, as I vnderſtone
Ryght worthy lordes, that tyme of this lande
And Robert Ferrers, earle of Leyceſter tho
Thre ſwordes bare, afore the kyng there ſo

Syxe Earls then, and Barons of eſtate
A cheker bare, with Jueles full royall
And clothes ryche, that were well ordynate
For that ylke feſte, and ſtate imperyall
Fro South, vnto the Septentrionall
Where then, none ſuche accompted of rycheſſe
As there were then, as wryten is expreſſe

The.C.xxxviii.Chapiter.

¶How kyng William of Scotland, made homage for Scotlande, and then after his coronacyon at Weſtmynſter, he went to ffraunce, and ſo to Jeruſalem, by the aſſent of the kynge Phylippe.

1 Morteyne, 2 Tho.

Homage of the Scottes

THe bishop of Dureſme on his right hande
The bishop also of Bathe on his left syde
The kig of Scottes Willyã for Scotlãd
Made hym homage and keaute leege that tyde
kyng Rychard then, to Fraũce with muche pryde
Anone so yode tharchebishop Bawdewyne
With hym then went, [worthy clerkes][2] and fyne

¶ Sir Rauf Fulgence[3] erle of Perche then also
Robert Ferrers erle of Leceſter then
With erles fell and barons many moo
[Of all this land, went many a worthy then]
Of England and Scotland many a manne
Of Ireland Wales, Guyan and Normandy
Then with hym went, in that voyage on hie

¶ The kyng Philip, shippid his hoste at Jene
The kyng Rychard tooke the sea at Marsile
With all his hoste, without[4] other meene
Within short tyme, arriued vp in Cisile
Wher he full faire, receiued was that while
By kyng Tancred soonne[5] of Wyllyam
Whiche Wyllyã wed his suster, Johan by name

¶ The kyng Rychard, twoo Isles ther cõquered
Byside Cisile, to his suster theim gaue
To hir kyupng, and bade hir not bee fered
For he should se hir dower, she should haue
[Longyng to the right that she should craue][6]
And at Meschyne, kyng Rychard then did make
A Bastell strong, the Sarlyns for to wake

¶ And sailed furth, to Cipres then by sea
Where

1 Also. 2 A worthy Clerke. 3 Fulgers.
4 Then. cast. out. 4 Without. 5 The sonne.
6 And forth he went and praied gode hym saue.

Wher his mother hym mete with dame Barnage
The kyng his doughter of Nauerne faire & free
Whom ther he wed, in lawfull mariage
At Lymosyn in his pilgremage
A citee great full of all habundaunce
Whiche by assaute, he gate of his puysaunce

The kyng Rychard rode then to Nicholie
And gate the citee, with[2] force and might
The citee also of Cheryn mightely
Wher his[3] doughter and heire, he toke full right
To Buffenet and Balle that were full wight
To Dendamour and Candor[4] his citees[5]
He went anone with greate felicitees

He gate theim all, & all the realme throughout
And toke the kyng Isaak and hym[6] slewe
And wed his doughter, vnto the kyng full stout
Of Jerusalem, whose wife was dedde then newe
That Sibill hight, ỹ doughter was[7] mẽe knewe
Of Almarike, kyng of Jerusalem
The brother of Geffrey, of Angeou hir eme

This kyng Rychard, ỹ realme of Cipris wãne
To whome the lordes, echeone did their homage
And anone by sea, with many a manne
To Acres wher in that ilke voyage
He toke a ship of high and greate auantage
Of ablementes for warre, and ordinaunce
The whiche he had, with hym in gouernaunce

But fiftene[8] Sarsyns there he dreyncte[9]
And twoo hundred he kept, that ship to gnie

[1] where than was ioye and myrth with[2] To
[2] Ther with [3] The kynges. [4] Candure. [5] The Cite.
[6] Than hym. [7] Full trewe. [8] Fiftene hundreth. [9] Dreynte.

To Acres then, wher kyng Philip full feynt
Had sieged long without remedie
But kyng Rychard, of Acres toke in hie
The stronger syde, and gaue it greate affraies
Late and erly, bothe by nightes and dayes

The gate it sone, with his greate ordinaunce
And on the walles his baners full hie he sette
The kynges armes, he sette vp also of Fraunce
And kyng Gupes armes of Jerusalem well bette
The duke of Districh Lympold without lette
Set vp his armes after aboue theim all
Whiche kyng Rychard, did cast doũe ouer ỹ wall

With wages greate, and riches manifold
He rycheb his mẽne, & rode throughoute all Sur-
The citees all and castelles that he would (ry
He gate with force, and came again in hie
To castell Pilgrym, whiche kyng Philip pleinly
Beseged had full long, and went his waye
Whiche Rychard beseged in greate araye

To the whiche there was, no waye but one full
On a cawsey with dikes depe and wyde (straite
Strongly walled, with towres on to wayte
With many drawe bridges, wher none might go
Strongly cheined, w barris on eche side (ne ryde
Whiche castell then he gate in dayes ten
With battaill force, wher he sleugh many menne

The cheynes of prone, he stroke vp w his axe
Bothe at Acres and at castell Pilgrym
And brent theim all, as thei had been of ware

Cheynes

Theynesse barres, with muche might that tyme
The Saralyns also, he slewe with muche gryme
The kyng Philip fell sicke and home would gone
To fraunce anone, and toke his menne echeone

Unto the duke of Burgoyn theim to lede
To bide for hym, vpon the warres there
And home so went to fraunce without drede
Wher then he made greate warre and muche dere
In Normandy and Guyan, fouly hym bere
Against his othe, and his greate assuraūce
At their passage, by couenaunt and concordaunce

The.C.xxxix.Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Rychard sold the realme of Cipres to Statyn once, & an other tyme to the kyng Guye Lezinaunt to resorte to hym & to his heires, in de faute of issue of theim.

He sold Cipresse to kyng Statyn of might
An other tyme to Guy Lizenaūt full bold
For great riches, the resort again[2] of right
And for greate sommes of innumerable [of] gold
His prisoners he raunsomed, sore and sold
But with his hoste, full well he distribute
All that he gate, vnto their greate refute

Joppen he gate and it repaired newe
He and the duke of Burgoyn full sore sought
On the Soudan and felly did pursue
To castell Assure, fro whens he fled vnfought[3]
But kyng Rychard, that of no perill rought
Was hurt right ther, with dartes venemous

[illegible] if Fiue

1 A blank space is [illegible] left in the Harleian MS., as for the future insertion of the six stanzas here placed in brackets.

2 To him ayen. 3 Vnfought

Fiue woundes sore, mortall and perelous

¶ The drove hym then, into Jerusalem
And layed a sege, about the citee rounde
And kyng Rychard hard, howe fro Egipt realme
Came strong vitail, and ryches in that stounde
With full greate hoste, the Chrisien to confounde
By night he came, and there theim discomfete
With worshipp greate, and farpassyng profite

¶ Gase he buylded full faire, and Ascaloyn[2]
To the templers, to whome afore thei longid
He deliuered, and made hym redy boun
For to assayle the citee, and haue fongid
With might of menne, & laddirs full well hongid
Engynes and gonnes, greate stones for to cast
Whiche to haue wonne, thei were [full] like at last

¶ The Soudan out by night, then stale awaye
And Chrisien menne, the citee gate anone
And kyng Rychard, with all the hoste his waye
Toke [to] the Flum of Cedar[3] on his foon
He folowed fast, with hoste as he might goon
With the Soudan faught, & putte hym fro ỹ feld
And mightely fro hym, he rest his sheeld

The. C. xl. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the Soudā toke a trewce wt kyng Rychard, after he had putte hym to flight & wonne his citee and [1]castels in Surry. Kyng Rychard gaue Jerusalem and ỹ realme of Surry, to his susters soonne Henry erle of Campanya, with the heire Sibill to his wife, and homeward was takē prisoner in Districh, but in his gift of Surry and

[1] Batayle. [2] Ascaloyn. [3] Haue it. [4] At the. [5] His.

[3] The flum of Cedar.

& Jerusalem, he reserued the resort to hym & to his heires

THe Soudã toke a trewce w̃ kyng Richard
For thre yere whole to bye all marchandise
And sell and passe sauffly thitherward
To the sepulcre, in all maner wyse
With entercomen, as then it did suffice
And home he went, for cause his brother John
Then purposed had, for to bee crouned anon

¶ He sent his mother, and wife to Cisile
And of Acres he made then capitain
The baron bold, sir Rychard Umfreuile
Jerusalem to Henry erle of Champein
With all Surry to haue and to demain
And made hym kyng therof without delay
For his suffers soonne, he was without nay

¶ For the marquis Wyllyam Mountferrate
That kyng therof was, by his wife enherite
Was slain in Tire, his citee by debate
All sodeinly for cause of greate dispite
Uetulo de Mount, his brothers death to quite
His bretherne twoo to Tire, with power hath sent
That slewe hym there, by Uetulo his assent

¶ Whose wife he gaue, to Henry his cousyn
For she was heire of Jerusalem
He made kepers, in euery place full fyne
And homeward came, then by the sea stream
Hoostyng by diuerse countres and realme
To Romany Tuskan and Lumberdy
In to Districh, and there was take in hye

¶ Thẽperour led home, thẽ to Mẽske he brought
In strong ward brought, to tyme that his finaũce
Was fully payed, emong his commons & sought
Of holy churche, vnto ful greate greuaunce
The marchaũtes also, thẽ made great cheuisaũce
Of all the shypues, was take full greate riches
Through all England, to raũsom w, his highnes

¶ And home he came, & John his brother chasti-
And his fautours, empzisoned all full soze (sed
To Nozmandy then went, and there suppzised
The kyng Philip, and werred hym euer thoze
That stroyed his land of Nozmandy afoze
Against his othe, and his hie assuraunce
Whilest he labozed vpon the miscreaunce

¶ He then appeled the kyng Philip to fight
Thei twoo alone, hand foz hand in feld
That he was false of his pzomise and hight
Whiche kyng Philip graunted, but not it held
But cowardly, with royall hoste hym beld
Upon hym came, all sodeinly to fight
Within thzee dayes then, foz their bzothers right

¶ Beside Gysours thei faught with hostes soze
Wher kyng Rychard had the victozie
Kyng Philip fled fro his baner thoze
With muche shame, reprosse and vilanie
Kyng Rychard segid a castell then in hie
That Caluce hight, not ferre fro Lymosyne
Wher hurt he was, full soze and dyed fyne

¶ An arblaster with a quarell hym smot

As

1 T. Thenperour. 2 led. 3 Ch. 4 By. 5 Mẽske

As he about the castell went to spie
But then he made therto a saute full hote
On euery syde, about full cruelly
And gatte the place so then full myghtely
And slewe theim all, without any grace
Agayn hym so that holden had, that strong place.

The shroue hym then, vnto abbots three
With great sobbyng, and hye contricion
And wepyng teares, that pitee was to see
Mekely askyng penaunce and absolucion
That it might [illegible] at his peticion

000000

fol. Cxlviii.

Who sone after full longe and many daye
To Rome or wente aproued full clere of synne
As seynt Samonde it saue a countenaye
With open eyen without any tynne
Through visites mere that neuer man can be blynne
With seynt sone Sanctemitche and Cormate
In Canterbury to dedir conuicte.

Because from synne, he did conuerte
Longyng for that blessed daye
To see Christ, that for his synne dyd paye
That crucyfied was vpon the roode
Redemyng his synne, by the shedyng of his blode.

And of his reigne, he died the.x. yere
And in the yere of Christes incarnacion
A thousande

[illegible] Asanta. [illegible] Withoutyn. [illegible] The Purgatorye [illegible]
[illegible] after that.
Omitted in the printed edit.
[illegible] Here [illegible]
[illegible] proper [illegible]
000000

¶ Thēperour led home, thē to Mēske he brought
In strong ward brought, to tyme that his finaūce
Was fully payed, emong his commons [a] sought
Of holy churche, vnto ful greate greuaunce
The marchaūtes also[3], thē made great cheuisaūce
Of all the shypues, was take full greate riches
Through all England, to raūsom w, his highnes

¶ And home he came, & John his brother chasti-
And his fautours, empzisoned all full soze (sed
To Nozmandy then went, and there suppzised
The kyng Philip, and werred hym euer[4] thoze
That stroyed his land of Nozmandy afoze
Against his othe, and his hie assuraunce
Whilest he labozed vpon the miscreaunce

¶ He then appeled the kyng Philip to fight
Thei twoo alone, hand foz hand in feld
That he was false of his pzomise and hight
Whiche kyng Philip graunted, but not it held
But cowardly, with royall hoste hym beld
Upon hym came, all sodeinly to fight
Within thzee dayes then, foz their bzothers right

¶ Beside Gysours thei faught with hostes soze
Wher kyng Rychard had the victozie
Kyng Philip fled fro his baner thoze
With muche shame, reproffe and vilanie
Kyng Rychard segid a castell then in hie
That Caluce hight, not ferre fro Lymosyne
Wher hurt he was, full soze and dyed fyne

¶ An arblaster with a quarell hym smot

[1] T Thēperoure. [2] Nene. [3] Als. [4] Ay. [5] Mesk

As

As he about the castell went to spie
But then he made therto a saute full hote
On euery syde, about full cruelly
And gatte the place so then full myghtely
And slewe theim all, without any grace
Agayn hym so that holden had, that strong place.

The shroue hym then, vnto abbots three
With great sobbyng, and hye contricion
And wepyng teares, that pitee was to see
Mekely askyng penaunce and absolucion
That it might please God, at his peticion
To forgeue his offences tyll domysday
So afterwarde in blysse, he might been ay.

The quethed his corps, then to bee buried
At Fount Euerard, there at his fathers feete
To whom he graunted, and made it notifyed
Traytour he was, and false of his behete
His herte inuyncyble, to Roan he sent full mete
For their greate truth & stedfast great constaunce
His bowelles lefte to Poytou, for decepuaunce

Whose soule, from the body dyd departe
And into heauen went, where is eternall ioye
Because from synne, he did conuerte
Longyng for that blessed daye
To see Christ, that for his synne dyd paye
That crucyfied was vpon the roode
Redemyng his synne, by the shedyng of his blode.

And of his reigne, he died the .x. yere
And in the yere of Christes incarnacion
A thousande

[1] A saute, at after that. [2] W. Thornbyn. [3] The Purgatorie to [illegible]
[4] Omitted in the [illegible] edit. [5] Here [illegible]
[illegible] per [illegible]
000000

A thousande hole,two hundreth and.iiii.clere
As written is,by clere computacion
Who in his life had hole dominacion
In Normandy,Guyen,Cypers and Surry
Whose honoure shone,aboue all other clerely

The.C.xli. Chapiter.

¶ John kyng of Englande,duke of Normandy and Guyan & erle of Angeou,began to reygne the yere. M. CC.and.iiii. and reigned.xvii.yere and died the yere.M.CC.xxi.

Jhō kyng of Englande.

HIs brother John,was kyng then of Englande
And crouned was,at westminster ful faire
By all estates and lordes of his lande
And sone therafter deuorced,full vnfayre
From his wife wedded,that there afore was heyre
Unto therle of Gloucestre full wyse
That sonnes had,that tyme of great enterprise

¶ For cause of whiche,and of consanguinitye
Deuorce was made,and toke another wyfe
Dame Isabell,therles doughter fayre and free
Of Englande,and his heyre knowen ryfe
Whiche after made hym ful great warre & stryfe
For she was wyfe,of Hugh Brune of Toreyn
The Uiscount then,toke fro hym a virgyne.

¶ Wherfore Hugh Brune,nomore of hym wolde
But warred hym,on euery side aboute (hold
Tyll he hym toke,with other manyfolde
And slewe theim all,were thei neuer so stoute
In his first yere,a tare he tooke full out

1 Torreyn. 2 Fro. 3 Slew. 4 Tyl... 5 Theym. 6 Tooke

Of

Of eche plough land thre shyllynges fully payed
For whiche the people bitterly for hym prayed

The.C.xii.Chapiter. xl./

¶ Howe kyng Wyllyam of Scotlande did homage leege to kyng John at Lyncolne, the duke Arthure of Britayne & all the lordes of Irelande did thesame

IN his first yere, kyng Wylliã of Scotlãd
Made hys homage, in Lyncolne his citee
And Arthure duke of Britayne, I vnder- [°]
Sone after, made hys homage & feautee (stande
At London then, with great humilitee
The prince of Wales, there made his homage
For Wales then, that was his heritage.

¶ The great [†]a Neele, and Makmurre also [4]
And al the lordes, and kynges of Irelande
Therles also of Ulster, did right so [°]
Of Dymond and Desmond, for there lande
And all estates there, as I vnderstande
Wer sworne to hym, and to hym did homage
For theyr lyuelodes, and theyr heritage

¶ The kyng Philip confedered with Arthure
To rebell sore, agayne his eme kyng John
And graunte hym men, & power stronge and sure
To gette Guyan Poytou and Angeou anon
Wherfore kyng John to Normandy gan gone
And there he tooke Arthure duke of Britayn
In [°]castell Mirable dyed, in mykell payne

¶ Dame Isabell the suster also of Arthure.

In

* The margyn of the edit. has now "Homage of the Scottes".
† Onele. Edit. alt.
° The margyn of the edit. has now "Homage of the Irishmen".

In the castell of Bristowe, was then holde
And died there in prison, then full sure
As kyng John hir vncle, so it wolde
A lady of greate beautee, she was hold
Beshet in prison, in paynes strong
So endeth her life, for sorowe liued not long

Thus slewe he both, Athure and Isabell
The chyldren of his brother, duke Geffrey
To ioye the croune of Englande, as men tell
Wherfore moste parte, of all his landes that daye
Beyonde the sea, forsoke hym then for ay
Retournyng to the kyng of Fraunce in hye
To holde of hym and his perpetually

Bishop Hubert of Cauntorbury tho died
Wherfore kyng John, vnto the couent sente
To chose his clarke, whiche they refused & denied
Wherfore the kyng, was wroth in his entente
For they disobeyed the lettre, whiche he sent
For they had chosen mayster Stephan Langton
An worthy clarke, of all disposicion.

The pitious & lamentable storye of king Iho who by the Romyshe byshop and his adherentes was most shamfully & vylanously abused, as by this hystorye doeth appeare.

Whom kyng John, then wold not admytte
For Romayn bull, ne for the prelates prayer
But prisoned some, and some to death commytte
Some he exiled and theyr eyen clere
And all personnes and prelates in fere
He then put out and seazed theyr benefice
Through all the lande, as his mortall enemyes

The Romyshe byshoppe curssed hym openly
And all the realme fully did enterdite

That

1 For the rest of this and the next section see Matt. Paris here & nyge Iohn also. 2 Boves.
3 Tho. 4 and mandeth them full sore he should repent.
5 Rode ambassiatour. 6 to St. Paule. 7 and come.
8 The Pope excommunicated ye Englishe kyng.

That sacramentes none, therin should occupie
And to the kyng of Fraunce, without respite
He wrote his letters so full fayre endite
To take Englande hole in gouernaunce
For kyng John his great misgouernaunce.

¶ Many erles also, and many great barons
Unto the kyng of Fraunce, wrote openly
To sende his sonne Lewes, the rebellions
To helpe, to whome they promysed sikerly
To croune hym kyng of England worthely
If that kyng John, would not his trespasse amēd
Unto the churche, in whiche he had offend.

¶ Wherfore ỹ kyng of Fraūce, to England sente
His sonne Lewes, with hoste and power strong
With whom many lordes susteyned his entent
And other some, mayntayned kyng John in wrōg
Thus stode this lande, Englande & Wales longe
Hole enterdite, frō all holy sacramentes
That none was done, without priuelegementes

¶ Lewes the sonne, of kyng Philip of Fraunce
Had castelles, fees, and citees many one
At his good rule, and full wyse gouernaunce
In Englande then, well mo, then had kyng John
Tyll on a daye, to lordes he made his moone
By whose coūcel, vnto ỹ Romishe bishop he wrote
His letters meke, as best he could theim note

¶ Besekyng hym of mercy, and of grace
Of forgeueneſſe and absolucion
His defautes all to mend, and his trespasse

And

And vndirguage all his punyſion
For to releaſe thenterdiccion
For whiche the Romiſhe biſhop as he ỹ letters ſee
Wepte ſore, hauyng full greate pitee

¶ Thenterdiccion fully he releaſſed
And to the kyng of Fraunce, anone ſent[3]
To ceaſſe the warre, the peace to be encreaſſed
Betwene hym, and kyng John bayſſent[4]
To whiche he would, put ſo all his entent
To Lewes then, he ſent theſame meſſage
And of Englande, to haue his hole coſtage

¶ And for Lewes, with Lordes of Englande
Obeyde not the byſhops commaundement
He ſent Gwalo his legate I vnderſtande
To curſſe Lewes, and all of his aſſent
Then died kyng John, in Chriſten hole entent
At Croxton abbey, and buried was full fayre
At Worceſter, with lordes and great repayre

¶ Some bookes ſayen, he poyſoned was [to dead][5]
Of plummes ſo ſyttyng at his meate
In thabbey of Ciſtews at Swynſheade
With whiche a monke, there hym did rehete
Wenyng of God greate thanke to gette
At Newerke died, at Worceſter ſepultured[6]
In chronicles, as is playnly ſcriptured.

¶ He gate a ſõne, that Hẽry of Wynchester hight
And other after, and Richarde was his name
That erle was of Cornwayle, of great might
A Worthy knight, and of right noble fame

[1] To daye. [2] Weped full [3] Re ſent.
[4] Aſſent, [5] [6]

This

These sonnes on his wyfe, that noble dame
And gate Isabell, the wyfe of Frederyk
Emperoure of Rome, a lorde full poletyk.

¶In his tymes were these earles in Englande
Geffry Maundeuile, earle of Essex than
Syr Quincy, as I can vnderstande
Earle of Winchester, that was a manly man
And the earle of Cornewayle that was than
Roger of Clare, then earle of Glouceste[illegible]
That in Englande was, none his [illegible]

¶Roger Bygot, earle of Northfolke then
That Marshall was, that tyme of Englande
Henry Bowne, then earle of Herforde, as I can
Conceyue was then, Constable of the lande
A ryght worthy knyght, of his hande
And Dauyd, then was of Huntyngdon
Willyam Marshall, earle of Penbroke full boon

¶Randolfe of Chester, the earle of good estate
Robert Veer of Orenforde full wyse
Willyam Groos, of Almaryk generate
Willyam Lõgspee, earle then, of great enterpryse
In actes marcyall, a man knyghtly and wyse
Of Salysbury, a mighty lorde that daye
Through all Englande, knowen of greate araye.

¶Willyam, the earle of Arundell that hyght
Albeny by his surname, full well then knowe
At Wimondham, in Northfolke buryed ryght
Father was of Philyp, full yonge vnknowe
That full curteous was, both to hye and lowe

That

1 Fule-wise.

2 Of. edit. alt. 3 Vere. 4 Erle of Almarle generate.
5 Of Salis. 6 Vindelsom.

That after hym was earle of Arundell
As chronycles wryten, can clerely tell

¶ This kyng John dyed in hole creaunce
The yere of Chryste, a. M, was then knawe
Two hundreth. xxi. by remembraunce
In chronycles, as I haue red and sawe
And full cumbreous, bothe to hye and lawe
At Worcester, buryed in good araye
As a prynce royall of reason, ought that daye.

The. C. xliii. Chapiter.

¶ Henry the thyrde, kynge of Englande, duke of Normandye and Guyen, and Earle of Angeou, that beganne to reygne the yere of Chryste, a thousande. CC. xxi, and dyed in the yere, a thousande. CC. lxxiii. and of his reygne the. lvi. yere

¶ In his tyme was a batayl at Lincolne, where Earle Randolfe of Chester discomfyted Lewys, ỳ sonne of kyng Philyppe of ffraunce.

Kyng Henry ỳ thirde

HEnry his sonne, then was of. ix. yere age
At Glouceſter, crowned with the dyademe
By the Legate Gwalo, & the Baronage
Stephan of Langton, helpyng as did well seme
Archbyshop then, as the byshop coulde deme
The same yere then, the kyng w Lewys faught
Besyde Lincolne, where Lewys was nere caught

¶ Foure. C. knyghtes, of Lewis there was slaine
Therle of Perche, was slayne on Lewis syde
And many fled, with Lewys soth agayne
Therle Randolf, of Chester knowen wyde
The felde there gate, ỳ daye with mikell pryde

And

And Lewys then, all his ryght releſed
And home he went, with mony well appeſed.

¶In the ſeconde yere, he wedded Alyanor
Therls doughter of Pzouynce, good and fayze
Whoſe elder ſyſter, kyng Lewys wed afore
This earle was then, famed amonge repayze
The nobleſt pzynce, without any diſpeyze
That tyme alyue, thzough all chzyſtente
Of all honoure, and greate nobilyte

And John, the ſonne of Dauyd of Huntingdon
That of Huntyngdon, & Cheſter earle had bene
Without chylde dyed, his erldome to the crowne
Then ſezed were, to tyme ỹ it was ſene
Howe his ſyſters myght them departe betwene
The parliament graunted, ỹ wardes to the kyng
That helde of hym, by knyghtes ſeruyce doyng

¶To make ſtatutes, at Orenforde & ordynaũce
By whiche, there ſhulde none alyence enheryte
And put the kyng vnder the gouernaunce
Of certayne lozdes, wyſeſt & moſte parfyte
Whiche after made amonge them greate diſpyte
And batayles ſtronge, & greate contrariaunce
Thzough all the lande, by longe continuaunce

The.C.xliiii.Chapiter.

¶Of the byrthe of Edwarde his eldeſt ſonne, and heyze was in the.xxix. yere of his father, and in the yere of Chryſte a thouſande. CC. xxix. Howe Symonde Mountfozte Earle of Leyceſter was create.

His

1 Were.

2 in. edit. alt.

His eldest sonne, and heyre ỹ Edward hyght
At Westmynster, of Chrystes incarnacyon
The yere a thousand. CC. ix. and. xxx. eyght
Whome the legate Otho by informacyon
Baptyzed in funt, saynt Edmondes confirmacyō
To hym then made, as the churche deuysed
In his baptime holy, then autorized.

Symond ỹ sōne, of earle Symond Moūtfort
Came oute of Fraunce, for ferdnesse of ỹ quene
To kyng Henry, whome he gaue great comforte
He gaue hym then, his man for ay to bene
Of Leycester, the earldome fayre and clene
With the Stewarde of Englande, in herytage
Whiche is an office, of greate priuelage.

And wed his doughter, dame Elyanore
To Willyam Marshall, earle of Penbroke
After whose deathe, she auowed chastyte for euer-
But he her maryed, and her betoke (more
For all her bowe, as sayeth the booke
To Earle Symond Mountfort to be his wyfe
Notwithstandyng, ỹ she bowed chastyte her lyfe.

Tho dyed Lewelyn, the prynce of Wales then
Betwene his sonnes Gryffyth, and Dauid grewe
Greate discencyon and stryfe ay, when and when
And dame Beatryce, the kynges doughter trewe
To earle Symonde, of Britayne wedded newe
The yere of Chryste, a thousand was accompted
Two hundreth moo, fourty and one amounted

The. C. xlv. Chapiter.

Of

°Name. Edit. alt.

¹ To frā Symond of Britaine wedded newe
The yere of Crist a thousande was accounted
Two hundreth moo fourty and one amounte.

¶ The birth of Edmond erle of Lancaster and of Leicester, long after in the yere of his father one and thirty, and in the yere of Christ M.cc.xli.

THé same yere then, Edmond his soõne was
At Lãcastre ỹ yere of Christ thé writé (boze
A thousand whole, twoo .C, and fourty mo
And one therto, in Flozes as is wzyten
And in the yere next after then ouersetten
The kyng his doughter, Margaret then maryed
To Alexaunder kyng of Scotland notified

¶ At yozke citee, wher he then did homage
Foz Scotland whole, and Isles apperteinyng
Then dyed themperour full sage
Wherfoze the lozdes of Almaignie bartyng (yng
Some chose Rychard kyng, Henryes bzother be-
And some ỹ kyng of Castile would haue algate
But erle Rychard of Wenskè had all the state

Homage of the Scottes.

¶ Then rose discozde, betwene the kyng Henry
And certain lozdes of mighty greate power
Symond Mountfozt, vpon hym toke boldly
To bee cheftein, to hold the feld full clere
At Lewis faught, of christ then was the yere
A thousand twoo hundzed and sixty accompted
And foure also, so muche moze amounted

Battaile of Lewes

¶ This erle Symond, had then the kyng Henry
And his bzother, Rychard themperour
In his keppyng and ward, wer hold strongly
But pzince Edward, was sette in Herfozd toure
And erle Henry of Herfozd that was floure

That. 2 More. 3 Kelyn. 4 Chelten. 5 Almayne.
Mentche. 7 Colayn. 8 Cornewaile was the.

Themperours soonne, at Herford with hym laye
A myle about, dispozted theim euery daye

The bat taill of Euesh̃.

¶ Fro whens at last, with hozse thei brake awaye
And to Wigmour castell thei came in hie
To sir Roger Mozthymer wher he laye
That theim receiued, then full gladly
And so thei assembled with greate hoste mankully
And held the feld, the lozdes fast to theim drewe
And at Euesham, thei stroke a battaill newe

¶ In the yere of Chzist, a thousand was tho
Twoo hundzed no, sixty also and fiue
When pzince Edward faught with his foo
Symond Moũtfozt, and raught hym fro his liue
The feld discomfited, there anone as bliue
With help of erle Gilbert, then called Clare
And other lozdes with hym that were thare

¶ He slewe many, and some awaye exiled
And some he held in pzisone and distres
He toke out then his father, as is compiled
His eme Rychard, holden in greate dures
And all his frendes, of his hie wozthynes
He socoured euer, and with his gold suppozted
And wher it want, with his woozd theim cõfozted

The. C. xlvi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Robert fferrers erle of Darby was disherite and many other of their compaignie.

1 That Theym. 2 Wes. 3 Full manfully. 4 Ther with. 5 Hâe reste ther. 6 Eme.

Robert

RObert Ferrers, that erle was of Darby
Disherite then, for his insurrection
With many other at Chesterfeld in hie
Faught with Edward, of their presumption
And fled awaye, with greate confusion
Unto the Isle of Arholme, and fro thens
Unto Lyncolne, and spoyled the citezens

¶ Fro thens to Ely thei went anone
Wher prince Edward, thilke proudely assailed
Thei fled fro it soone, to Yorkeshire gan gone
In freres clothis, that were full long tailed
Robbyng their foes, when thei of good failed
And other some to Kilyngworth then fled
To Henry Hastynges, who then the castell had

¶ Wher then ỹ kyng, great siege laied all about
But nought auailed, so strongly thei defende
And forther was, in euery shire throughout
So greate robbery, and nothyng amende
The kyng was fain, for lordes then to send
By whose aduise, he ordeined for that cause
That all disherite and exiled, should haue grace

¶ All disherite, should buye their landes again
To paye for theim gold, as thei might accorde
With the owners, so that no man should payen
More then the land were worth, by greate recorde
In seuen yere whole, and if thei might concorde
For lesse money, so it exceade a yere
The value of the yerly rent full clere

¶ Robet Ferrers erle of Derby then

1 Foolishly. 2 Syne. 3 Like syne. 4 Wilt. 5 That.
Ware amende.

The soonnes also, of erle Symond exclude
That perpetuall iudgement fully then
Neuer to redeme their landes, but been exclude
So that the owners, be not with theim delude
Unto a daye, that fifty thousand pound
Be paide of nobles whole and round

Edmond the soonne, of the same kyng Henry
Was wedded first vnto dame Auelyn
Erle Willyam his doughter, of Almarle womanly
None issue had, neither male ne feminine
Then was he wed to Blaunche ye quene full fyne
Of Nauerne, and so of Lancaster create
With Leicestre also therle denominate

The. C. xlvii. Chapiter.

Howe Edward theldest soone & heire of kyng Henry the third, and his brother erle Edmond of Lancaster and of Leicestre went to Jerusalē with greate power whiche twoo princes were cosined the semeliest of all the hoste of Christendome.

His brother Edward, and he associate
To Jerusalem, their voiage the auowed
Two semely princes, together adioynate
In all the world, was none theim like alowed
So large & faire thei were, eche manne he bowed
Edward aboue his menne, was largely seen
By his shulders more hie and made full clene

Edmond next hym, the comeliest prince aliue
Not croke backed, ne in no wyse disfigured
As some menne wrote, the right lyne to deprue
Through

1 Was. 2 Han. 3 They. 4 Neither. 5 Be was create.
6 Adminstre. 7 Treyn 8 Abought

Through great falsehed, made it to bee scriptured
For cause it should alwaye bee refigured
And mencioned well, his yssue to preuaile
Unto the croune, by suche a gouernaile

¶ But prince Edward and he held fourth[1] their (waye
To Jerusalem, so did themperour
Rychard his eme[2], and Henry his soonne full gay
To Cisile came by sea, through many a shoure
Edward with hym, then had his wife that houre
Elianour doughter of the kyng of Aragon[3]
A princesse faire at his election

¶ The kyng Lewes also then thither went
And in his waye dyed and expired[4]
Sainct Lewes nowe is named by all assent
Of holy churche, as it is well enquired
Approued trewe as reason well required
But Edward prince, and Edmōd abode two yere
With werres greate, and mighty strong power

¶ For nacions all, vnto prince Edward drewe
And to Edmond his brother, for their semelines
And greate māhode, whiche in theim ỹ thei knewe
Sir Charles, ỹ brother of king Lewes doubteles
Kyng of Cisile of noble worthynes
By the Soudan was chasid without beld[6]
Whome prince Edward socoured, & had the feld

¶ And with the Soudan faught in bataill sore
Discomfit hym, and putte hym to the flight
Wher Edward then was hurt and woūded thore
Of woundes fiue, that mortall werre to sight

[1] So. [2] Uncle. [3] So. [4] And so. [5] It. [6] Withoutyn.

[7] With.

His brother Edmond also wounded in that fight
But as Edward in his bedde, sicke then laye
A Saracyne came, to hym vpon a daye

To leche his hurtes, with salues many one
But false he was, for with a knife full sore
He strake hym foule, as thei were then alone
But yet that prince, the knife fro hym gate thore
And slewe hym then, with it for euermore
At Acres laye he then, with woundes fele
With medicyns, to lech and to hele

The lech so false, was by the Soudan sent
Hym to haue slain, in any maner wyse
For cause he had, discomfite hym and shent
And when he was all whole, that he might ryse
Message he had, fro all the lordes wyse
Of England then, of his father dedde
That praied hym home to come, & been their hede

Kyng Henry had then made, the minster faire
Of Westminster, as it is nowe at this daye
The remnaunt he left vnto his heire
To edifie and make in like araye
Or elis a some of money for to paye
The whiche he graunted to the edificacion
At his death, then bequeth and assignacion

Edward then, toke a trewce for tenne yere
With the Soudan, and to Cisile saylid
And landed at Rome, wher thē he had good chere
Bothe of the bishop and cardinalles not failed
That for had mourned, and greately bewailed

That

1 His. 2 Come on. 3 His 4 Leches. 5 Leche. 6 That his fader were. 7 Praying. 8 of 9 Pope.

That cursſed sore, syr Guy Mountfort eche daye
For the slaughter of Henry his cousyn gaye.

¶ The sonne that was of Richarde themperoure
Erle of Cornwayle, whome at Uetérbe he slewe
Right in the churche, for olde wrath and rancoure
In Englande dooen, his fathers death to renewe
At masse knelyng horribly hym all to hewe
Fro Acres as he came, as goddes knight
Without cause of reason or of right

¶ But prince Edward & Edmoũd his brother dere
To Sauoye cã, where iustes wer made & tourna=
And ther desired thei, & their knightes in fere (mẽt
With the duke of Sauoye, and his there presente
To iuste, and proue eche other in good entente
Theyr knightes younge, to learne as dyd suffice
In marcyall fete, knighthode to exercyse

¶ Wher he foriust, the duke full manly
His brother alsó, the dukes neuewe
And bare hym downe, both horse and man egerly
And euery knight, with other euer iusted newe
Daye by daye, whyles echeone other knewe
By .xiiii. dayes endurynge and contenued
With feast solempne, by the duke sustey ned.

¶ An hundreth ladyes, of worthy good estate
Were set on hye, aboue within a tente
By the duke of Sauoye, well ordinate
To geue the gree, and thanke by iudgement
Whiché then awarde, playnely by hole assent
To prince Edwarde, & erle Edmound his brother

1 Viterbe. 2 Of. 3 Without. 4 wrote. 5 Ille ranne to
b Rose.

That had forfaust the duke and many other.

¶ The duke hym gaue, gyftes of great honoure
And to his brother, gyftes of hye pleasaunce
And to his knightes, giftes of great valoure
And conueyed hym, into the lande of Fraunce
Where of the kyng with worthy gouernaunce
Receaued he was, as prince full excellente
And homage made to hym, in good entente.

¶ For his landes, lyeng beyonde the sea
The whiche was true, as chronicles witnesse
And home he came, with great felicitee
Of whose cõmyng, the people had great gladnesse
Hym to receaue, in all kynde of worthynesse
And of his brother Edmound also in feer
They were full glad, at all theyr hole power

¶ But kyng Henry was gone to God afore
The yere of Christ, a thousande hole accompted
Two hundreth hole, syrty and thirtene more
On saynt Edmondes daye, when he amounted
This worlde leuyng, full of trouble accompted
Unto the blysse of heauen, for euer to reste
Emong good soules, where Christe so liked best.

The. C. xlviii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Edwarde of Englande, the first after the conqueste, called Edwarde with the longe shankes, beganne to reigne on the morowe after saynt Edmondes daye ỹ kyng in the yere a. M. CC. and. lxxiii. & died the yere. M. CC. and. vii. the eyght daye of Julye, and the. xxxiiii. yere of his reygne.

Edwarde

1 Ad gestas. 2 Royalle. 3 Reyn. 4 Dide 5 Made. 6 Manei

EDwarde his sonne & heire, first generate
With all honour by all the baronage
Crouned was, in all royall estate
And of the estates, receyued hole homage
Kyng Alexander for his heritage
Of Scotlande hole, and ylles apperteynyng
His homage did, right then vnto the kyng.

Kyng Edwarde the fyrst after ꝑ conquest.

The homage of ꝑ kynge of Scotlande to kyng Edwarde.

¶ The duke also of Bzitayne made homage
For Bzitayn hole, and there became his man
Whiche pzinces two, had wed in mariage
His susters two, Margarete and Beatrice then
Margarete to Scotland, & Beatrice to Bzitayne
Both two maried, and wed in hye estate
By their father full wysely ordinate

¶ A marchaunt toke the wife of pzince Lewlyn
Erle Symonds doughter, of Leycester ꝑ had ben
And to the kyng hir bzought full femenyn
Wherfore the pzince, by heste as then was seen
To be his man, and homage did full clere
And led his wyfe to Wales in good entent
By the kynges grace, and by hole assent

¶ The kyng then, did great right and iustice
Upon clippers and peirers of the coyne
And newe money made, that then might suffice
Of syluer plate, made out of Boloyne
The grote, half grote, all in newe coyne
He coyned fast, peny, halfpeny, and ferthyng
For pozayll to bye with, theyr leuyng.

¶ That same tyme he made a newe statute

That

1 Dide. 2 Promytte. 3 Be hest. 4 Redd soure.
5 Siuer plate vnbroyne 6 For Ne.

A restraint of lãdes to be geuen to the clergye.

That no man should graunt lande ne tenement
To the churche, ne geue nor constitute
No maner grounde, nor no maner rente
Without licence, of the lorde and his assent
Of whome it is holden, aboue in chiefe
And els ỹ church, this realme had put in mischiefe

¶ The prince Lewlyn, and of Dauid his brother
Made warre vpon the kyng in greate araye
The Marche brent and many harmes other
In Englande did, wherfore the kyng his waye
To Wales held, in all the haste he maye
The lorde Mortimer, toke then the prince Lewlyn
And to the kyng hym brought, for to enclyne

¶ The kyng hym headed, and to the toure it sent
The Walshemen made, Dauid his brother then
Prince of Wales, by theyr commen assent
Wherfore the kyng, to warre on theim began
And of the Walshemen, slewe full many a man
And had Dauid vnto his presence brought
Hanged and drawen, as then he had it sought.

¶ Then seazed he Wales, for euer into his hands
And ordeyned, that no prince therin should be
But he or els his heyre I vnderstande
And that no man, of Wales hole countre
One night shulde lye, in castell nor cytee
But voyde out fro sunne to sunne, thē euery night
Thus kept he Wales, his tyme by royall might.

The. C. xlix. Chapiter.

1 he. 2 N[illegible] 3 Doone forth. 4 in 5 Euery towne. 6 Enclyne. 7 Shote 8 The. 9 He seazed 10 He.

¶ Howe

¶ Howe Gladowys Dewy, the doughter of Dauyd, prynce of Wales, was wedded to syr Raufe Mortymer, of whom came the Earles of Marche.

GWenlyan, ỹ doughter was of Lewlyne
Without chylde dyed, a byrgyne aye
In a nonnery, of the order of Gylbertyne
And Gladowys Dewy, Dauyds doughter gaye
Yonge, freshe and lusty, as the rose in Maye
To Rauke was wed, that was lorde Mortymer
Of whome ỹ earles of Marche, become full clere

¶ Then went the kyng, and quene to Gascoyne
And Gwyan, to set that lande in pees
And so forth then, he went to Aragon
To sporte them with theyr father there no lees
To Gwyan then, agayne for his encrees
He came anone, and set in peace that lande
And so came agayne to Englande.

The.C.l.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng dyd atteynt his Justices, and sette enquery of peace breakers, ryouters, oppressours, extorcyoners, and of the vsurye of Jewes.

HIs Justyces all, by lawe he dyd attaynt
For wrong domes, & falſe iudgement
For couetyse, ỹ falſe were then & faynt
To helpe the poore cõmons, to theyr entent
He set Justyces in heyre by all assent
That called was, that tyme Troilebaston
For to enquere, of all extorcyon

Of

¶Of Ryouters, kyghters, and baratours
Of market beters, that rayled greate debates
Of peace breakers, and all the susteynours
That were with theim of preuy associates
Of oppressours, of all the poore estates
And all that were then founde culpable
Emprysoned were, or by theyr purse excusable

¶Of Jewes within this lande, ỹ was abidyng
Great plaintes were made, of Okoure and vsury
Howe they dyd waste, the folke by suche winning
And preuy bondes, made without measure
In payne of double, or elles forfeture
The king thē voided, for whiche ỹ church a disme
Hym graunted, so dyd the cōmons a quindecyme.

¶Rys Ap Madoke, a warre in Wales gan take
Agayne the kyng, that great warres had sustened
And prynce hym called, of Wales without make
Who then at Yorke, by lawe full wel mainteyned
On galous hye, as to hym well apperteyned
Was drawen and hanged, his hed vpon ỹ towre
was set anon, as rebell and traytoure.

The. C. li. Chapiter.

¶Howe Edmonde Earle of Lancaster, and of Leycester, kept Gwyan, and wed quene Blaunche of Mauerne the kynges syster of ffraunce, and therfore he bare the label in his armes for dyfference fro the kynges of Englonde euer after.

KYng Edward sent, his brother thē ful dere
To kepe Guyā, and w̄ him strōg chiualry
Who gouerned there, ỹ land without pere
To

1 Their. 2 Associate. 3 Rotate. 4 Foundyn. 5 Vexable.
6 Were. 7 Bere and fals loure. 8 withoutyn. 9 Clergie
10 Amarc duke 11 it 12 High traitoure.

To hye honoure, as made is memorye
In Fraunce sore dred, amonge the aduersarye
And other landes, lyeng there all aboute
Aboue all men, he was there moste bedoute

For euer he put them, to the worse in[2] felde
In armes ay, he had the victorye
And in Parys, at[3] Justes vnder shelde
Far passyng was, and dyd ay notably
That for his manhode, and famous chyualrye
In so ferforth, that all landes hym commende[4]
For his manhode, whiche so in hym they kende.

The wed dame Blaunche, of Nauerne ỳ was
King Philip sister, ỳ was ful good & faire (quene
Of whome he gate, Thomas of Lãcaster I wene
And Henry his brother, ỳ afterwarde was heire
And earles both, they were without dispayre
Of Lancaster, and also of Leycestre
As Flores hath expressed well, by lettre.

For whiche weddyng, and noble alyance
He and his heyres, bare for a difference
Englande armes, with labell hole of Fraunce
By whiche all men, maye haue intellygence
That Edmonde was yonger in existence
Then kyng Edward, though some say ỳ cõtrary
And from the truth, yet haue they wyll to vary

The.C.lii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the fyue portes, toke the nauy of ffraunce on the sea in batell.

[1] Soryage. [2] Fr. [3] In. [4] Commendeth. [5] Label.
[6] Grete.

The

THe kyng of Fraũce, a nauy great then set
Upon Englande, to warre in great aray
Which ỹ. v. poꝛtes toke on the sea & shent
And people greate, there slewe & dꝛeynt ỹ daye
Theyꝛ shyppes all, by batayl and affraye
Were take, and bꝛought then into Englande
With capitaynes many, and loꝛdes of ỹ lande

The kyng Philyp then, at Paꝛys in parlyament
Somonde Edwarde, afoꝛe hym to appere
Surmittyng hym, of robbery felonoment
Upon his flete, so done by tymes fere
Foꝛ faute of aunswere, foꝛfeiuged hym there
Destroyed his land, in eche place where he might
But kyng Edwarde, then went to Fraunce ryght

And gate agayne, his landes euerychone
And sought ay where, vpon the kyng of Fraũce
But he fled euer, and batayle wolde geue none
Sone after, so Philyp by oꝛdynaunce
A trewce toke, by good oꝛdynaunce
Foꝛ all his landes beyonde the sea
To set in peace, with all tranquilyte

The. C. liii. Chapiter.

Howe Moꝛgan and Madoke his bꝛother, were sette in the towꝛe foꝛ rebellyon in Wales made by comfoꝛte of kynge Phylip of ffraunce.

IN Wales, Moꝛgan made war & great di-(staunce
And Madoke alsó, his bꝛother ful vntrew
Foꝛ whiche the kyng, w̃ all his oꝛdenaũce
To Wales went, & taught with them all newe

At

[1] Felt [2] were affraid. [3] Then. [4] Soulement, [5] there. [6] kynge Philippe le gouernaunce, [7] bon ordonnance. [8] Fraunce beyonde. [9] la. [10] nus

At straytes great, whiche tho traytours knewe
Yet were they take, and put in sore pryson
Within the towre, for theyr rebellyon.

¶ The kyng Philyp had sent then golde to war
On England then, with sir Thomas Turbirville
Who was espyed, by sotell meanes afferre
And heded was anon, for all his guyle
His wyt not holpe hym then, ne yet his wyle
He dyed with shame, repreef and bilany
Engendred all of mede and surquedrye.

The.C.liiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Earle Edmonde was Leuetenaunt of Guyan, and warred vpon the kyng of ffraunce, and defyed hym by letter, for he brake the promyse made to Edwarde his brother kynge of Englande.

SIr Edmõd erle of Lancaster thê ful trewe
Leuetenaũt then of Guian, all throughout
On whom ỹ king Philip, then rode al new
And brake the trewce, w̃ hostes great and stout
Wherfore he went to hym without doubte
To se howe that, it myght be well defende
He bade hym thus, set to his knee and amende.

¶ Wherfore in ire, he gaue hym vp homage
The whiche he ought for his lande that he helde
And aunswered hym agayne, of great corage
From hens forwarde, I shall you holde the felde
And at my power, eche daye vnder shelde
Proue howe ye do vnto my lorde greate wronge
The whiche I shall amende, or it be longe.

And

[illegible] Theim. [illegible]. 2 Tubuyle. 3 Nouell. 4 Ne. 5 Withouten.
[illegible] 7 he answered him. [illegible]
8 Power. 10 My felde. 11 Er.

And so departed, without more langage
And into Guyan came, with all his myght
And to his brother wrote, & made hym knowlage
And bade hym come w̄ power for to fyght
With spere and bowe, for other writ of ryght
Maye not be got, within the courte of Fraunce
For to recouer, his hye enherytaunce.

¶Eche day thēce forth, w̄ bāners hole displeyed
He helde the felde, and kyng Philyp warred
And leters sent hym defyals and vmbrayde
Of hys suraunce, and othe that he had erred
And castelles gate, full many & not differred
Kyng Edward sent, his brother then suppowaile
The Frenche partye, to warre and assayle.

The.C.lb.Chapiter.

¶Howe syr Roger Mortymer was made Earle of Marche at Kyllyngworthe, and set the rounde table of a thousande knyghtes, and as many ladyes.

AND in the yere, a.M. was full then
Two hundreth also syxty and nyntene
When syr Roger Mortymer so began
At Kelyngworth, the rounde table as was sene
Of a thousande knyghtes, for disciplyne
Of yonge men after he couldē deuyse
Of turnementes, and iustes to exercyse.

¶A thousande ladyes, excellynge in beaute
He had there also, in tentes hye aboue
The iustes, that they myght well & clerely se
Who iusted best, there for theyr lady loue

For

For whose beautie, it should the knyghtes moue
In armes so etchone other to reue
To geate a fame in playe of chiualrie

¶This Mortimer, was then lord Mortimer
But in these iustes, he held great feastes eche daye
By fourty dayes conteined whole and clere
At whiche one part of ladyes faire and gaye
Gaue hym the price of fame, of all that playe
Wherfore the kyng, to encrese his estate
Proclamed hym erle of Marche there create

The.CLbj.Chapiter.

¶Howe Edmond erle of Lancaster and of Leicester faught at Bayon with the power of ffraunce and was slain there & sir Wyllyam Valence erle of Pẽbroke was dedde ther and many other lordes, in the yere a thousand twoo hundred four score & sixtene.

But erle Edmond the kynges brother dere
With twenty & fire baners, proud & stout
The fifth daye of June, was accompted
Of Christ his date a thousand yere all out (clere
Four score and sixtene with out doubt
At Bayon faught, with the frẽchemenne certain
Wher he in ỹ feld ỹ daye, like a knight was slaine

¶Sir Willia Valence, erle of Pẽbroke was thẽ
Sir John Rychmond and many other baron
Sir John sayncte John, right a full manly mãne
Thenglishe hoste felly, ther was broke doune
By a bussheme[n]t, laied by colucion
That brake on theim, fore fighting in the feld
Out of a wode, in whiche that daye were beld

But

1 Partie. 2 Price and fame. 3 Two hundred fore score & ten &.
4 At Bayon fought a gainst the former parte where he was slayn and moo of his mayny.
5 Kyng. 6 (See the Paper M.C.C.X.)

The.C.lvii.Chapiter.

Howe a chronicle was feygned to make Edmond the elder brother.

WHen John of Gaunt, ỹ sone of king Edwarde
For cause his brother ỹ duke was of Clarẽce
None yssue male had then, that menne of herd
But female[2] by all intelligence
When kyng Rychard in his greate excellence
None yssue had, he would haue been his heire
Apparaunt then, by act in perlyament feire

The whiche Thomas Wodstok, duke of Glou-
And all nobles[3] of England ther present (cester
Proclaymed then, by wrytyng and by letter
Howe that therle of Marche, then in perlyament
Unto the kyng, was then heire apparaunt
Wher duke John in diuers places made
Feined chronicles, that shewed were full brade

Howe this Edmond thelder soonne of kyng
Broke backed and bowbacked boze (Henry
Was vnabled[4] to haue[5] the monarche
And Edward so the younger kyng therfore
Shuche chronicles then, he feined full sore
And putte in place, of diuers religion
To make his soonne, right heire of this region

But when kyng Henry, this chronicle shewed
It was defect, and clerely sette at nought
And vnderfoote cast[6] doune and eke stroyed[9]
The contrarie by chronicles truly wrought
Was proued trewe, and then his title he sought
By resignement[10] and renunciacion
By depoisale and playne coronacion

It is not true, that croke backed he hight
For valyaunt he was, in all his doynges

And

[1] Wher. [2] A female. [3] Roials. [4] Bred. [5] Wherfore.
[6] To. [7] Was. [8] castyn [9] Strewed. [10] Resignynge.

And personable with all, to euery mannes sight

(As Note) f. clxii

Instead of this Stanza the Harleian Manuscript has the two following.

Men may welle se that Cronycle is contreve
Where he in Walis and in the holy londe
In Guyen, Paitowe, and Nauerne as men kneve
In Arragoyne in Spayne I vnderstonde
Be all his life grete manhode toke on honde.
In batell dide as welle as any knyght
It is not true that Crouke backed shuld he night.

Kyng Alexaundre of Scotlonde than he died
That wedded hade the kynges suster Margrete
That deed was als ye welle wase notified
And Alexaunde their sonne and heire that shete
And Margarete als their doughter als fast wete
Of Scotlonde their died upon the see.
Fro Norweie home the Quene Mary to be.

[illegible] they should not be repeled
Thei kept with[e] theim selfes, alwaye abydyng
Which lettre, John Hardyng maker of this boke
To kyng Hēry delyuered, ỹ gaue hym in recōpēce
The manoure of Gedyngtō, w̄ all ỹ appurtenēce.

This was to Henry the fyfth.

For whiche manoure, then the cardinall

(See the Paper marked [illegible]) r ii Of

[illegible] Copersoners. [illegible] The kyng. [illegible] Concorde. [illegible] For to. [illegible] Ascendth
[illegible] Whiche lettre so the forsaide John Hardyng
[illegible] maker of this symple boke gaue
[illegible] To kyng Henry the Fyfth at Bois de Vincent besi.

[illegible] Stanza [illegible] the Paper [illegible]

The.C.lvii.Chapiter.

Howe a chronicle was feygned to make Edmond the elder brother.

WHen John of Gaunt, ỹ sone of king Edwarde
For cause his brother ỹ duke was of Clarẽce
None yssue male had then, that menne of herd
But female[2] by all intelligence
When kyng Rychard in his greate excellence
None yssue had, he would haue been his heire
Apparaunt then, by act in perlyament feire

¶ The whiche Thomas Wodstok, duke of Glou
And all nobles of England ther present (cester
Proclaymed then, by wrytyng and by letter
Howe that therle of Marche, then in perlyament
Unto the kyng, was then heire apparaunt
Wher duke John in diuers places made
Feined chronicles, that shewed were full brade

¶ Howe this Edmond thelder soonne of kyng
Broke backed and bowbacked boze (Henry
Was vnabled to haue[3] the monarche
And Edward so[4] the younger kyng therfore
Shuche chronicles then, he feined full sore
And putte in place, of diuers religion
To make his soonne, right heire of this region

¶ But when kyng Henry, this chronicle shewed
It was defect, and clerely sette at nought
And vnderfoote cast[5] doune and eke stroyed[6]
The contrarie by chronicles truly wrought
Was proued trewe, and then his title he sought
By resignement[10] and renunciacion
By depoisale and playne coronacion

¶ It is not true, that croke backed he hight
For valyaunt he was, in all his doynges

And

[1] Wher. [2] A female. [3] Royals. [4] Brels. [5] Wherfore.
[6] To. [7] Was. [8] cast ye [9] Strewed. [10] Revignynge.

And personable with all, to euery mannes sight
Although false chronicles, haue other saiynges
Kyng Alexander of Scotland, then dyed
That wedded had, the kynges suster Margarete
And Alexander his sonne, beyng in the same stede
Who with Margatete his wife, on ỹ sea perished.

The. C. lviii. Chapiter.

How Florence erle of Holād & his persuers bond hym to bide the iudgement of the kyng Edward, if he should be kyng of Scotlād.

FLorence therle of Holand & his compeers
That claimed then, the croune of Scotlād
After the death of Margaret as pursuers
Came to kyng Edward, then of England
Requeryng hym in God his name all weldand
As he that was, of Scotland souereigne lord
To trye the right, and sette theim in accorde

For whiche he sette, at Norham a parliament
After Easter then next folowyng
In the kirke of Norham, to that entent
That all Scottes, and other that were pursuyng
Might ther appere, their titles claymyng
At whiche parliament, the pursuantes theim bond
At his decree and iudgement to stond

By one letter, with all their seales ensealed
Whiche doublid was, thei gaue vnto the kyng
The other part, for it should not be repeled
Thei kept with theim selfes, alwaye abydyng
Which lettre, John Hardyng maker of this boke
To kyng Hēry delyuered, ỹ gaue hym in recōpēce
The manoure of Gedyngtō, w̄ all ỹ appurtenēce.

This was to Henry the fyfth.

For whiche manoure, then the cardinall

(See the Paper marked ✠ r ii Of

Of Wynchester vnto the quene disposid
In hir dower and fro hym toke it all
When that the kyng, by death was deposid
Hym recompence, he promised and composid
But nought he had, but might ȳ prīce haue lyued
He durst full euill, his excellence haue greued

¶An other letter, duble in like wyse
The saied heires deliuered to the kyng
That other part as shuld of right suffice
Semblably with theim, was remainyng
By whiche thei bound, theim self by their sealyng
Hym to delyuer, the kyng his castels all
To kepe, to tyme his iudgement were byfall[24]

¶Of whiche iudgement without possession
Of castell strong throughout ther all the lande
He might not well dooen execucion
Wherfore the heires to hym, so their theim bound
Whiche letter also, Iohn Hardyng toke on hand
And did deliuer, so then at Boys Vincent
For the saied reward, together by one entent

The.C.lix.Chapiter.

¶Howe kyng Edward made sir John Balyoll kyng of Scotland.

AND in the yere of Christ his incarnacion
A thousād whole two hūdred & four scoure
And therto three by verye computacion
At the feast of sainct Michael set afore
The kyng Edward to Scotland came therfore
Wher twenty then, chosen were of England
And other twenty persones, also of Scotland

1 Doubted 2 the. 3 in like forme. 4 Yfalle. 5 with Kyng.

By

¶By whose aduyse, all other rightes excl ude
The kyng iudged, to John Bailyol the croune
That was discent, as clearely was conclude
Of theldest doughter, of Dauid of Huntyngdon
As chronicles make, therof good mencion
Margarete wedded to Aleyne of Galawaye
Whose doughter was kyng Johns mother ỹ day

¶That Dernegull hight, and was John Bailiols wyfe
Whose sonne & heire, kyng John was thē croūd
That Bailioll hight, that knowen was full ryfe
In ỹ mynster of Skone, within Scotland groūd
Syttyng vpon the regall stone full sound
As all the kynges, there vsed had afore
On saynt Andrewes daye, with all ioye therfore

¶At Christmas nexte after, the same kyng John
To Newcastell, to kyng Edwarde came
His homage made, and feautee leege anone
Of his free wyll, without any blame
And with greate ioye, agayn retourned hame
But then ỹ Scottes, chose theim. xii. lords by assēt
To rule the kynge John, by their entent.

Homage of ỹ Scottes.

The. C.lx. Chapiter.

¶How kyng John of Scotlande, made confederacye with ffraunce agayn Englande.

¶Hiche made him then, to make confederacy
With kyng Philip of Fraunce and aliaūce
Perpetually to be contributorie

ỹ iii Ether

1 Baillol. 2 Chronicles make. 3 K. of Scotland.
5 Agayn by.

Ether with other, by strong & great assuraunce
Englande to warre, with al theyr hole puyssaunce
The kyng Edwarde, seynge this hye falshede
To Barwike came, with hoste and great mãhede

At the nonnes of Barwyke, then he laye
And layde a liege, about on euery syde
At after Easter, but fleinynges then that daye
The Leden hall, there helde full strong that tyde
Which w̃ wylde fyre, was brent & might not byde
That same night, then syr Wyllym Duglas yald
Barwyke castell, to kyng Edwarde and salde.

Your father
yrnh, arste m
h mon wart
make me all on

The. C.lxi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng John of Scotlande surrendred his homage to kyng Edwarde, and disclaymed to holde of hym.

In this same tyme. vii. erles of Scotlande
Sieged Carleile, and so to Herham brent
And home again, harmeles out of Englãd
They went anone, and none harmes hent
Worse to haue dooen, was there entent
But then kyng John, surrendred vp his homage
To kyng Edwarde, for hym and his linage

By letters whiche the kyng, Edward then sent
To abbeys great, in Englande of recorde
To be remembred, of his false entente
Renoũcyng kyng Edwarde, for his soverayn lord
The seuen erles, at Dunbarre by concorde
Then sieged it, fro whiche earle Patrike went
And graunted to holde of hym, at his entent.

The

1 and Lake ſ. ſ. d. 2 ſay. 3 were 4 Vyde.
Douglas. 5 ſolde. 6 ſolde. 7 ſolde. 8 Than of.
N. granted.

The. C. lxii. Chapiter.

¶ Of the battayle of Dunbarre, where that kyng Edwarde preuayled.

Hiche castell so, then the kyng rescowed
And droaue therles, there out of the felde
And much people vnto the deth ther bowed
Without helpe, there slayne vnder shelde
To Ronkesburgh, the kyng Edward so held
That sone was yelde, to hym without stryke
Their good sauke also, and theyr lyke.

¶ So he forth to Edenburgh went anone
That yelden was, on thesame condicion
Then was Strpuelyn voyde and lefte alone
Without defence, or any garyson
That Edwarde toke, in his possession
Whiche kyng Edwarde, toke into his power
And saued the people, both farre and nere.

¶ Then came therle of Ulster with great power
Of Iryshemen, and so to saynt Johns towne
The kyng thē went, w̄ host through Fyfe ful cher
And brent ẏ shire, throughout both vpō & downe
When then kyng John, by good direccion
To Edwarde sent, and prayed hym then of peace
And to his grace, submytte hym or he would cease

Submyssion of ẏ Scottish kyng & al his lords vnto kīg Edward the first.

¶ Thē kyng Edwarde toke his submyssion
At Brighyn then, vpon the water of Taye
And gaue hym there, his realme without condicīō
Of Scotlande so, to hym and his foray
The lordes all, made hym homage that daye
The. x. daye was of July, and in the yere

1 Rokesburgh. 2 Wtholtye. 3 Goodes. 4 Of. 5 Sub.
6 ma. Lefte there yf ... to defende vnder their Iustyce. 7 Tier. 8 Iuyll.
9 Iuyll.

Of kyng John then the.iiii. was counpted clere

¶ And therupon, he sent hym to the toure
Of London then, with certeyne rebelles moo
Kyng John he kept, in worshyp and honoure
Like his estate, where he would ride or goo
Ten myle about, for his disport there so
Then kyng Edwarde, on the mountaynes went
That monthes there bee called in theyr entent

¶ And as he came homewarde, by Skone awaye
The regall there, of Scotlande then he brought
And sent it forth, to Westmynster for ay
To be there in a cheire clenely wrought
For a masse preaste to sytte in, when he ought
Whiche there was standyng, besyde the shryne
In a cheire, of olde tyme made full fyne

¶ Thē made the kyng, John Wareyn his regēt
That erle was then, of Susser and Surray
And treasorer he made, at his entent
Hugh Cressyngham, and Wyllyam Ormesby
The chiefe iustice, through Scotlande generally
His chaunceler at Skone, and tresorer
Abydyng wer, to rule the land full clere.

¶ Thē went kyng John to Flaūders for socoure
Of the dukes of Gelder and Brabant
And also of the noble Emperoure
That hym had hight, great helpe & socoure then
But none he had, and home agayn he want
For in ỳ meane tyme, whyle he in Flaūders abode
Wyllyam Valoys, all Scotlande ouer rode

De

1 Than. 2 Nowtens. 3 Preaste. 4 They 5 Yet is there standynge. 6 Kyng. 7 Than. 8 Walays.

The slewe the iudge, and the chaunceler
Thofficers also, and the chaumberleyn
The Capitaynes and the treasorer
And gatte the lande, fro Englyshmen agayn
And slewe theim all, with cruell death and payn
Wherfore the kyng, vpon the Maudeleyn day
At Fowkirke fought, with Scottes in great aray

Where Scottes fled, and fourty. M. slayn
And into Fiffes he went, and brent it clene
And Andrewstoune, he wasted then full playn
And Blakmanshire & Menteth as men mene
And on the ford of Trippour, with hoste I ween
To Bothbile, Glascowe, and to the towne of Are
And so to Lanarke, Longhmaban & Anand thare

Whiche all he had, euer wher he came
And then he wed kyng Philippes suster Marga-
A fayre lady, and full of noble fame (rete
Hir sonne and heire, Edwarde Carnauan hete
A mayden wed, kyng Philippes doughter swete
Whom his father, then prince of Wales create
Duke of Cornewayle, & erle of Chester nominate

Then went the kyng to Scotlande agayn
And wan the lande, and had there all obeysaunce
Sauyng Wales, that would not hym obeyn
But fled hym euer, for drede of mischaunce
He ordeyned then by statute ordinaunce
That none should bee, the prince of Wales more
Excepte of the kyng, his eldest sonne first bore

The. C. lxiii. Chapiter.

Howe

¶ How the byshop of Rome, at the suggestion of the Scottes wrote to kyng Edwarde vnder this fourme.

AND in the yere, a thousande. CCC. & one
Bishop Boniface, at ỹ Scottes suggestiõ
To kyng Edward, by lettre wrote anone
Chargyng hym, then vpon his benesson
For to delyuer the Scottes out of pryson
Whiche in Englande, he had holden with wrong
And his officers, call home ỹ there had be long.

¶ Alledged all, howe Scotlande hole was holde
Of Peters churche of Rome, & nought of hym
But by great wrong, and oppression bolde
He theim ouerled, with warres sore and brym
And theim compelled, in payn of lyfe and lymme
To become his men, & the realme of hym to holde
By homage leege, whether they wold or nolde

¶ And bad hym also, afore hym then appere
At the courte of Rome, his right there for to shewe
And yf it myght beknowe, his right were clere
Without delay, by iudgement iuste and trewe
He shulde it haue by execucion due
By sensours of theyr churche and hole sentence
For to obeye his hie magnificence.

The. C. lxiiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Edwarde wrote agayn an aunswer of his lettre.

1 the. 2 Bonifacius. 3 Whom. 4 he alleged 5 Not. 6 &c.

The

The kyng Edward, wrote vnto hym agayn
An aunswere, by his letters meke and due
All his tytles and duties full playne
Nought in fourme, neuer in effecte to sue
Nor in his courte, no iudgement to pursue
Remembryng well, his fatherhede
Howe Brutus had Albian, and dyd it possede

In Hely tyme, whiche to his sonnes he deuyde
Unto his sonne Locryne, fyrste propogate
He gaue Logres, that hath this tyde
To Albanacte, the seconde procreate
He gaue Albanye, Scotlande nowe denominate
And to Cambre, his yongest sonne he gaue
Cambre, that nowe is Wales, to ioye and haue

To kyng Locrine, of Logres and to his heires
The soueraynte, and homage ay reserued
Of Albanacte and Cambre, and all theyrs
Perpetually Troyan lawe obserued
By which lawes, Bryton hath bene conserued
Sith hitherwarde, without interrupcyon
Afore the tyme, that Rome had prescrypcion.

Afore the tyme also, that Chryste was bore
By many yeres, the kynges of Logres had
Scotlande by eschete, for faute of heyres thore
And remeued kynges, ꝑ were there knowen bad
And other kynges there made, with hertes glad
Whiche ꝑ land couth, there gouerne mikel better
And seruyce dyd to Logres, ofte by letter.

Also, the same Iohn Baylioll I made

Kyng

1 To the Pope. 2 Boniface 3 and his 4 his
His holy 6 Angelo de Cote. 7 Britayne. 8 made. 9 Balliole
omitted in the text

|⁂|⁂|⁂|

King Edwards letter, the substance of which is given in the preceding chapter appears at full length at the end of the Lansdown Manuscript of Hardyng, as well as the letter of the Barons which forms the subject of this chapter. As the one of these is already printed, with very little variation, in Rymers Foedera vol II. p. 883, and the other, p. 873. with the names of the Barons inverted who put their seals to it, it was thought unnecessary to print them here. The Kings letter occurs at the end of the Silken Manuscript at Oxford.

warde.

The.C.lxv.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lordes wrote to the byshop of Rome for the same cause.*

THe date was of this letter, a.M.yere
Thre hundreth also a one, the.viii daye of (May
And of his reygne.xxix.clere
With that the lordes in Englande were ye daye
By theyr letter, and the byshop dyd praye
The kynges ryght, not to put in questyon
Of eldest tyme, longyng to his crowne.

For

[1] Was. [2] Thirty. [3] Then. [4] i.e. [5] your lordships

* See the Papers marked |⁂|⁂|⁂|

[6] i.e. The letter wrote. S. Pope.

¶For in theyr letter, the bishop they did remẽber
They wolde not suffer his disherityson
His crowne so foule to hurte, and dismembre
His royalty to put in questyon
For despyte of his rebels false suggestyon
The whiche ryghtes, for death or lyfe mayntaine
They wer so bound, they could none other meane

¶So seased the byshop, and the mater lette
And kyng Edwarde then, in to Scotlande went
Through all Catnesse, destroyed it in greate hete
The monthes hye, & oute yles strayte he shent
Tyll they obeyed all, hole his regiment
And wyntred then, at Dunfermlin abbey
Where saint Margarete, is worshpped euer & ay

The.C.lxvi.Chapiter.

¶Of the batayle of Argyle, where Umfreuyle tooke Wyllyam Waleys, and John Waleys.

AND then therle of Angos Robert Umfre-
That regẽt was, of Scotlãd cõstitute (uile
Toke william Wales, then at Argyle
His brother John also without resute
With rebelles mo, that were all destytute
By batell sore, there smyten full cruelly
Where Umfreuile then had the victorye

¶And to London them brought, to iudgement
Where they were drawẽ, & hanged on galowe tre
And quartred then, their quarters home were sẽt
At certayne townes, hanged vp there to be
Theyr traytourhede, and falshede for to se

Theyr

Kyng of Scotlande as lawe and reason wolde
Who made homage, to me with hert full glad
And afterwarde, was false manyfolde
He stroyed my lande, w̄ hostes stoute and bolde
Wherfore I made hym warre, tyll he were fayne
To my presence to come, and hym obeyne

¶ Where then for tresspasse, and rebellyon
He surrendred to me, and to my heyres
The realme of Scotlande, & also the crowne
The lordes of all Scotlande, for them & theyrs
Made me homage, for theyr proper landes
By theyr letter wryten, and theyr bandes

¶ Wherfore then, hauyng therof possessyon
The pryde of my subiectes, and insolence
Where I dyd fynde, theyr false rebellyon
As ryght and lawe, wolde be my regence
I chastysed ay, at myne intellygence
Wherfore, please it to youre fatherhede
Myne aunciente rightes, to haue cōmend in dede

warde.

The. C. lxv. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lordes wrote to the byshop of Rome for the same cause.*

THe date was of this letter, a. M. yere
Thre hundreth also & one, the. viii daye of
And of his reygne. xxix. clere (May
With that the lordes in Englande were ỹ daye
By theyr letter, and the byshop dyd praye
The kynges ryght, not to put in questyon
Of eldest tyme, longyng to his crowne.

For

* See the Paper marked |·⁂·|⁂·|⁂·|

¶For in theyr letter, the bishop they did remēber
They wolde not sufferhis disherityson
His crowne so foule to hurte, and dismembre
His royalty to put in questyon
For desyre of his rebels false suggestyon
The whiche ryghtes, for death or lyfe mayntaine
They wer so bound, they could none other meane

¶So seased the byshop, and the mater lette
And kyng Edwarde then, in to Scotlande went
Through all Catnesse, destroyed it in greate hete
The monthes hye, & oute yles strayte he shent
Tyll they obeyed all, hole his regiment
And wyntred then, at Dunfermlin abbey
Where saint Margarete, is worshpped euer & ay

The.C.lxvi.Chapiter.

¶Of the batayle of Argyle, where Umfreuyle tooke Wyllyam Waleys, and John Waleys.

AND then therle of Angos Robert Umfre-
That regēt was, of Scotlād cōstitute (uile
Toke william Wales, then at Argyle
His brother John also without resute
With rebelles mo, that were all destytute
By batell sore, there smyten full cruelly
Where Umfreuile then had the victorye

¶And to London them brought, to iudgement
Where they were drawē, & hanged on galowe tre
And quartred then, their quarters home were sēt
At certayne townes, hanged vp there to be
Theyr traytourhede, and falshede for to se

Theyr

° Mountes. edit. alt.

Theyr heddes also, full hye vpon the towre
At London brydge, were set to great terroure

The. C. lxvii. Chapiter.

¶ How Peirs of Gauerstone, erle of Cornwalle was exyled

AND in the yere a thousand. iii. C. and fyue
He exyled out Peyrs Gauerston of Cornewayle
That Earle was then, for treason knowen ryue
And in the yere after, without any fayle
Earle Robert Bruis, of Carrike ganne assayle
Earle John Comen of Bonghan, at Dunfryse
And slewe hym there, in feueryere whē it did fryse

¶ Bycause he wolde not, to hym there assent
To be crowned then, kynge of Scotlande
And forthe he fled, to se who wolde consent
And many one drewe to hym in that lande
Became his men, and made fyker bonde
To whome Walter Wareyne, the yonger sonne
Of therle of Surrey, ỳ then dyd wonne

¶ With the lorde Uesty, that had his syster wed
That fro her went, vnto this Robert Bruys
Eyther of other were fayne, for they were fled
Out of Englande, their liuyng had such Guris
For their ryotous lyuyng, and male auentures
Thus went they aboute, harkening euery where
Who were foes, and who their frendes were.

¶ All Scotland through, this Robert wēt about
On fote to spye, who wolde with hym holde
And who wolde not, he warred them all oute

And

And kylled them downe, in places manifolde
And muche harme dyd, in chronycle as is tolde
And with hym was, alwaye Walter Wareyne
That w hym went, through mountaynes woode (and playne
On nightes they lay, in woodes & in moũtaine
At morowe, on theyr foes came downe and kyll
On day they were thousãdes, at euen but twayne
There knewe no moo at euẽ, where they drewe tyl
So were they euer at nyght of lodgyng wyll
For drede of guyle and of greate traytourye
They lodged them on nyghtes full priuely

But on the feaste of the Annuncyacion
Of our lady, saynt Mary the virgyne
Robert Bruys, with greate supportacyon
Was crowned at Skone, as he coulde ymagyne
To whom great folke, with good wyl did enclyne
Full glad of his welfare, & his coronacyon
With greate hoste came, to Perth w prosperacion

The. C. lxviii. Chapiter.

Howe syr Robert Umfreuille, Earle of Angeou, and syr Aymer Valence Earle of Pẽbroke discomfyted kyng Robert Bruys, beside saynte Johns towne, and put hym vnto the flyghte.

ON the morowe, sir Robert erle Umfreuile
Of Angeous then, ỹ regent was by north
The Scottes sea, and Aymer Valence ỹ
Erle of Pẽbroke, by south ỹ water of Forth (while
Wardayne was, of Scotlande forsoth
That daye faught, with kyng Robert Bruis
Beside

1 Newer. 2 To. 3 Dacies. 4 Longynge. 5 And on.
6 Erle Robert. 7 Wareyn was & wright with [illegible]

Beside Johnstoune, where he fled wout rescowes

Unto the Kentir, & many Scottes there slaine
Where then they toke, the wyfe of kyng Robert
And his brother Nygell, the sothe to sayne
And the earle of Athels, myght not [a sterte]
And sent them to the kyng, w̄ full glad hert
Whome the kyng kepte, after theyr estate
At London, well together consoeyate

Henry Percy, toke the brethren two
Of kyng Robert Alexaunder, & Thomas ỹ hight
To the Justes them sent, ỹ hanged were tho
His other brother, at London hanged rycht
Kyng Roberte then, sieged the Percy [full] wycht
But Umfreuyle, hym anon rescowed
And the syege, from hym anone remoued [3]

Kyng Robert Bruys, faught w̄ Aimer Valēce
Earle of Penbroke, and put hym to the flyght
At Methfen so, and slewe with violence
All Englyshemen, in batell there downe rycht
Therle of Glouceſter, Gylbert Clare ỹ hight
Thre dayes after, he syeged hym in Are
But kyng Edward therle [then] rescowed thare

The king Edwarde w̄ hoost hym sought full [4]
But ay he fled, into woodes & strayte forest (sore
And slewe his men at straytes & daungers thore
And at marreys and mires was ay full prest
Englyshmen to kyll without any rest
In the mountaynes & cragges, he slewe ay where
And in the nyght, his foes he frayde full sere

[1] Astarte. [2] Honge. [3] Remued. [4] Ille

The

[1] Without [2] In Yore.

The king Edward w̄ hoznes, & houdes him sought
With mēne on fote, throughe marris mosse & myre
Throughe wodes also, & moūtēs wher thei fought
And euer ỹ kyng Edward, hight men greate hyre
Hym foz to take, and by might conquere
But thei might hym not gette, by foze ne by train
He satte by the fyre, when thei in the rain.

¶ The kyng Edward foz anger, fell in accesse
And homeward came, full sycke and soze annoyed
And bade his soonne, he should foz no distresse
No trewce take w̄ Scottes, that soze hym noyed
But werre theim aye, to tyme thei were distroyed
Foz he saied thus, ỹ shalt neuer kynd theim trewe
But whiles thei bee, in thy subiection dewe

¶ At Burgh vpon the sande he died anone
And to London, caried then daye by daye
At Westminster buried, with muche mone
With quene Margarete, he had thē soōnes tway
Thomas Bzotherton erle of Nozthfolke gay
And marshall of England, the other of Kent
Edmond Wodstok, was erle in all entent

The deathe of Edward the first.

¶ This noble kyng died in July the third daye
And toward heauen he then tooke his waye
The yere of Chzist a thousand south to saie
Thzee hundzed whole, and seuen by calculacion
And of his reigne and cozonacion
Fiue and thirty, not fully whole complete
When he so went, vnto the blisse so swete

The.C.lxix.Chapiter.

y Edward

¶ Edward the second kyng of Engl and began to reigne the yere a thousand three hundred and seuen, the eyght daye of July and was deposed the yere a thousand three hundred twenty and sixe, and of his reigne nyntene yere.

Kyng Edward the second

EDward his soõne, prince of Wales & lord
At Carnaruan, of his mother boze
Was croũed kig, by good & whole cõcord
Of all the lordes that were assembled thoze
At Westminster, as was his father afore
And at the feast of thassumpcion
Of our lady, he sent for Peers Gauerston

¶ Whom then he made therle of Cornwaile
Again the will, of all the baronage
Whom his father exiled, for misgouernaile
The third yere after, for his misused outrage
The lordes rose, of ire and greate courage
And heddid hym as for an hie traytour
That wasted had, and spent the kyng his tresour

The battaile of Bãnokesburne.

¶ And in ỹ mean while, kyng Robert Bruys had
All Scotland nere, wherfore ỹ kyng Edward (get
To Scotland went, at Bannokesburne thei met
And faught full sore, till slain was the bawarde
And discomfited was the midelward
And to the rereward kyng Edward hym drewe
For greate socour, wher he had battayl newe

¶ Whiche kild was doune, sauf fewe that led the
To Dunbarre then fleand with hym away (kyng
Ther was therle of Gloucester slain fleyng
The lord Clifford, and all the lordes that daye

Therle

Therle of Herford to Bothuile fled his waye
Therle Edmond of Arundell, and erle of Valence
Therles of Warwike & Oxenford take at defence

¶ This battaill was the yere of Christ smitten
A thousand whole three hundred and fiftene
On midsomer daye, and of his reigne thē written
The seuenth yere, by chronicle as is seen
Then was Umfrey erle of Herford frethed clene
And enterchaungid for kyng Robertes wife
That holden was in England then full ryfe.

The.C.lxx.Chapiter.

¶ Of the releſſe that kyng Edward made to Robert Bruys at Dūbarre whiche releſſe John Hardyng deliuered in to the treſorye, in the dayes of kyng Henry the fifth at Boys Vincent in ffraunce with other, for whiche he gaue hym Godyngton that the quene hathe nowe.

Patrike Dūbarre erle of Marche that daye
¶ To kyng Edward was leege mā lōg afore
To his father, and trewe had been alwaye
Sent kyng Edward to Barwik, but therfore
He toke of hym a releſſe for euermore
Of his ſeruice, that due was to the croune
Anentes kyng Bruys to execute his treaſon

¶ Whiche releſſe the maker of this booke
John Hardyng brought with other euidence
And to the kyng Henry the fifth it toke
With other mo, afore at Boys Vincent
Perteignyng to England royall regiment
And nought he hath vnto his ſuſtenaunce

y it As

As oft a foze here, in his remembzaunce

The.C.lxxi.Chapiter:

¶ Howe kyng Robert Bzuis toke all the lozdes of England, and sleugh many at Stryuelin bzidge & distroied the Marches and bete doune castelles therin.

(utle

Kyng Robert Bzuys, toke Robert Umfre-
Erle of Angeos Henry then lozd Percy
Therle of Marche and also ỹ lozd Neuile
Acton and Scropen and also the lozd Lucy
At Stryuelyn bzidge, fightyng mightely
In the vaward of the fozsaid battaill
Taken pzisoners, and raunsomed foz auaill

¶ Thẽ kyng Robert, ỹ Marchis whole distroied
The castelles wanne and bet theim to the ground
And all Scotland afoze that he had noyed
Obeyed to hym and were his lieges bounde
And maintened well, thẽ furth all Scotlãd groũd
The bishopzike of Duresme all thzoughout
Nozthumberland, he bzent with hoste full stout

¶ Two cardinales ỹ B. of Rome to Scotlãd sent
To treate a trewce, a twene the kynges twoo
And foz to stall Lewes Beamount pzesent
Bishop of Duresme, that then was sacred so
Whose bzother was Henry, lozd Beaumont tho
Licensed and graunted, by the kyng of Fraunce
To bee liege menne, to Edwardes whole plesaũce

¶ But sir Gilbert Midelton theim mette
And sir Walter Selby, misruled knightes

A litill

A litell fro Dureſme their waye forſett
And robbed theim openly, on the lightes
And to Midford caſtell, led theim fourth rightes
And held theim ther, in mighty and ſtrong hold
To tyme thei had, their iwels and their gold

Gilbert Middelton robbed ye cardinalles.

¶Whiche knightes twoo, robbed the lād about
That caſtell held, by force and rebellion
A quarter of a yere, with rebelles ſtout
But thei were take within that gariſon
And to the kyng ſent, by that encheſone
That hanged were, as traytours all ſhould been
On galowes hie, that all might theim ſeen

¶Then after ſoone, ſir Goſſelyn Deynuile
His brother Robert, with twoo hundred in habite
As thei were friers, went about in exile
Robbyng the land, in full greate diſpite
The biſhopes places, of Dureſme in circuite
Thei ſpoiled clene, leuyng nothyng in theim
But walles bare, whiche thei would not claime

The.C.lxxii.Chapiter.

¶Howe the lordes of England with powre royall durſt not ryde into Scotlande paſſyng fourtene mile, England was ſo at vnder that tyme.

THerle Edmond then of Arundell
Wardein of the Marches, then conſtitute
Therle Robert of Angeos Umfreuile
Of his landes hauyng no refute
Therle Dauid of Athell deſtitute
Of his erldome, the lord Percy full hardy
The lord Neuell, the lord Beaumont manly

¶ With all the power of the Noꝛth contree
Distroyed then Scotland and bꝛent
Upon the Marche vnto Lyntell Lee
Whome sir Walter Wareyn, by whole assent
Of James Douglas, pursued as thei went
With great power, alwaye at their side
That thei were fain, again to England ride

¶ But sir Walter Wareyn and Douglas
With their power, bꝛent all Noꝛthumberland
Tyndale became Scottes, and false then was
And rode with theim, & bꝛent thꝛough all the land
To Alerton, and so rode home to Scotland
Thꝛough the West March, & bꝛent it all thꝛough
And home thei went, without any doubt (out

¶ The castell then of Berwyke and the towne
Kyng Robert gatte, after strong & greate defence
By treaty with peace, Spaldyng and treason
The Wendesdaye befoꝛe Easters reuerence
Wher that traitour, without long suspence
Betrayed the towne, and into Scotland went
By Scottes slain, as to a traytour appent

The. C. lxxiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Edward lated siege to Barwyke and foꝛsooke the siege and went South, foꝛ Robert Bꝛuys had destroyed mikell of Yorkshire, & discomfited ꝑ archebishop of Yoꝛke & his clergy, at Milton on swale

The kyng Edward began to siege Berwyk
And wonne it had, but false tales it let (like
And tidinges newe, ꝑ nought the kyng did
Foꝛ

For Robert Bruys, the kyng of Scotlande mette
With the bishop of Yorke, and hym ouerlette
Wherfore he loste the siege, and went awaye
But Bruys had stroyed England in fell araye

¶ To Borough brydge, by east and west he brent
And home agayne, with many a prysoner
Without harme or lette of his entent
With mykell good, but in Ryton medowe nere
To Swale water, laye then with great power
Walter Wareyn among the hay kockes bushed
Upon the byshop sodenly with Scottes yssued

¶ And .xv. hundreth Englysshe there he slewe
And home he went, with kyng Edward full glad
With prysoners many, mo then men knewe
The byshop fled fro the felde full woo bestad
With his clerkes, that then were full mad
For whiche therle Thomas, of Lancastre there
And kyng Edward, departed halfe in werre.

The. C. lxxiiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe at the nexte parliamente after, Thomas of Lancaster and Leycester erle and certayne lordes, exiled the twoo Spencers out of the land, but then ỳ Spencers made great persecucion with the kyng agayn the lordes, and slewe the erle of Lancaster and the other lordes.

AT ỳ parliamēt thē at westminster next hold
Erle Thomas, ỳ then was called ful trewe
Therle Umfrey of Herford, that was bold
Therle of Marche, full manly as men knewe
The Mowbrey also Percy and Clyfford drewe

All armed came, and two Spencers exiled
Out fro Englande, neuer to be reconsyled.

¶ But sone, the Spencers came to ỹ kyng again
Syr Hugh the lorde, and syr Hugh his sonne
And put therle of Marche, in great disdayn
Roger his sonne, that with hym did wonne
Appeched hym then of hye treason
Agaynst the kyng, wherfore the kyng hym sent
Into the toure, tabyde the parliament.

¶ Then went the kyng, and Spencers both two
With hostes full great, to Burton vpon Trent
Where the lordes laye, and sparled theim then so
That north they went, then wayes by one assente
To rayse mo men, they trust in theyr entent
The Spencers two, fully for to destroye
Who all the realme, full cruelly did noye.

¶ At Boringbrig, syr Andrewe Hertlaw met
With erle Umfrey of Herford, and hym slewe
And toke the erle Thomas, without let
And to the kyng, that then to Pountfret drewe
Where then were sette, vpon hym iudges newe
Therle Edmound of Arondell for iustice
And syr Robert Mapilthorpe, his enemyes.

¶ There he was headed, anone vpon the hyll
And buryed was there in a chapell fayre,
Henry his brother, stode at the kynges wyll
Whom the kyng graunted to bee his heyre
That wedded then Alyce, without despayre
The doughter and heyre, of therle Henry Lacy

Of

1 Fraz. 2 Kyng. 3 the Spencers. 4 Wales diuers.
5 Boringg. 6 Withoutē 7 Pountfret. 8 Where. 9 En.

Of Lyncolne,so graunted by the kynges mercy.

¶ Wyllyā fitz Wareyn, & many another knight
In diuers shyres,some hanged and some head
That hold with hym,or with his compeers right
Syr Bartholomewe Badelismere,without rede
Drawen and hanged,and put to foul dead
Roger Clyfford and John Monbraye barons
Headed then were,for theyr rebellions.

¶ Therle of Marche,syr Roger Mortymer
His sonne Roger,forfuged were for treason
And by the kyng,of death pardoned were
And put were then,in perpetuall pryson
Into the towre,for that same encheson
Fro that tyme forth,the Spencers other excede
The quene was,but an hand mayden in dede

¶ To tyme the kyng,to her brother hir sent
And also his sonne Edwarde to dooen homage
For Guyen,so to haue at his entente
And for they dwelled,so long in that viage
The kyng theim had suspecte,of theyr message
By councell of the Spencers,theim exiled
As in chronicle pleynly is compiled.

¶ The kyng then made,and playnly did create
Andrewe Hertlawe,erle then of Carlele
Whiche tyme,the kyng Robert full fortunate
Rode all the east Marche,full proudly and well
The byshoprryke and Yorkeshire euery dele
Andrewe Hertlawe,erle of Carlele absent
To Lancastre hym drewe in false entente.

The

¶The kyng Robert, was passed home agayn
With prayes greate, and many prysoners
Fro Humber north, the people downe were slayn
Of whiche the kyng, and all his councelers
Blamed therle Andrewe, and his compeers
For he had men enough, with hym arayed
The Scottes all, that might haue slayn & frayed.

¶He hight the kyng, haue brought to hym great
Into yorkshyre & held nothing his hight (powers
Therfore the kyng, by counsell of the Spencers
Gaue charge to take hym, either by daye or night
Or kyl hym downe, wher they mete wt hym might
To all shyres, was sent this commaundement
Fro Trent northwarde by writtes & maundemēt.

The. C.lxxv. Chapiter.

¶Howe syr Roger Mortymer the younger wente oute of the toure of London & went into ffraunce to the quene of Englande and to the prince Edwarde hir soonne, and also howe the lorde Lucye tooke syr Andrewe Hertlawe erle of Carlele, and headed hym at Carlele for treason.

THen syr Roger, the yongest Mortimer
Made his kepers dronke, and went away
Out of the toure by night & other in feer
And into Fraunce, anone he toke his waye
Unto the quene Isabell, in poore araye
And bode with her, at hyr gouernaunce
All tyme that she was soiournyng in Fraunce

¶And then Antony Lucye lorde of Cokirmouth Syr

Syr Robert Lowther, with other many in feere
At Carlele toune, as knowe was full couth
Toke syr Andrewe Hertlawe, with mekill steer
They put on hym, he toke royall power
In truce takyng, with therle of Murrey
Withouten power, in trayterous araye.

¶ In wrongyng of the kynges hye estate
And of his right, full great derogacion
And howe he toke greate golde immoderate
Of kyng Edwarde, through cauelacion
To bryng hym power for his supportacio
Agayn the kyng Robert, that then destroyed
His lande full foule, and had hym self anoyed.

¶ And howe he had the people hole withdrawe
With hym Westwarde, by false confederacie
Betwene hym and therle of Marrowe
Couened fully before cast traytorie
Wherfore they drewe hym first all openly
And hanged after, and to London sent
Unto the kynge his head, for great present.

The. C.lxxvi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the quene Isabell treated mariage, of one of the doughters of therle of Henaulde for hir sonne Edwarde to haue to wife, by thaduice of her brother kyng Charles e came to Englande with great power, and toke ỹ kyng and slewe his counsell for treason.

THere by aduise, and good consyderacion
Of the kyng of Fraunce, her brother dere
Quene Isabell accorded for supportacion

Hir

Hir sonne should wed, one of the doughters clere
Of therle of Henauld, that fyue then were
Through whose succour, she & hir sonne Edward
Toke then the sea, to Englande warde

¶ Erle Edmond of Kent, then with her came
Kyng Edwardes brother, & syr Aymer valence
Erle of Penbroke, whiche came with hir fro haine
And Wortymer the yonger, in hir presence
Henauldes and Frenche, with great sufficience
Of people stronge, at Orwell with her lande
Where lordes many, her mette I vnderstande

¶ To London then, she & hir sonne tho wrote
The councellours and traitours for to take
That ruled had, in mykell mysryote
The kyng Edwarde, her lorde & also hir make
And in prison, to kepe theim for hir sake
Wherfore they voyded, out of the citee then
The quenes enemyes, echone ay when & when.

¶ The kyng then, fled into the west countree
She and the prince, full sore hym then pursued
And at Bristowe, she headed, as men might see
Syr Hugh Spenser the father that was renewed
And syr Hugh his sonne, that was transumed
In hye estate, and erle had be create
Of Wynchester, wher he stode all mate.

¶ Syr Hugh Spēser, his sonne at Herforde take
Was headed then, and vnto London sente
So was Edmond, there headed for hyr sake
That was erle of Arondel there present

His

His hed smote of,for treason so was shent
Theyr hedes set vp, in dyuerse sere place
In recompence,of all theyr great trespasse

¶And at London,they heded the Chaunceler
With dyuers other, whiche they founde vntrewe
So dyd they also,the kynges tresourer
And there set they a parlyament all newe
But fyrste they put the kyng,as all men knewe
In Killyngworth,there to be holde in warde
To tyme they se,howe lordes wolde awarde.

¶At which parlyamēt.iii.bishoppes & erles thre
Thre Barons also,& thre Banarettes electe
To Kyllyngworth,to ryde w̄ the cominalte
All homage leege,by parliament hole directe
To surrender vp, without any reiecte
The which they dyd,for his mysgouernaunce
With heuy chere and mournyng countenaunce

¶The kyng full sad,with wordes well auysed
Thanked them all,knowynge his hye trespasse
And that he was, of rule not well prouysed
To the pleasure of God,whiles he had space
Ne cōmon wele to kepe in euery case
Ne to his wyfe,had bene a trewe husbande
But falsly had her exyled oute of lande

¶Mekely he prayed,the lordes at parlyament
His sonne to admytte vnto the regyon
Syth he vnable was to the regyment
And foule had ruled,the lande withoute reason
He them besought,for gylte of his caryon

His

His sonne were not refused, ne chastysed
But set in rule, by councell well aduysed.

¶ These lordes twelue, with heuy countenaunce
Reported vnto the quene, and lordes all
The sorowfull chere, and wordes w repentaunce
Of kyng Edwarde, as then it was befall
His prayer meke, and his desyre fynall
Of whiche the lordes, in ỹ same parlyament
Reioysed were, of his noble agrement

The. C. lxxvii. Chapiter.

¶ Edwarde the thyrde, kynge of Englande and of ffraunce, beganne to reygne, the yere a thousand thre hundreth twenty and syxe, and dyed the yere, a thousande thre hundreth thre score and seuentene, and of his reygne one and fyfty yere.

Edward ỹ thyrde.

EDward his sonne, ỹ prince of wales was
In tender age, that time of. xiii. yere (than
Was crowned on saint Bryce day & begã
The yere of Chryst was then accompted clere
A thousande hole, thre. C. and syxe and. xx. were
Whose father then had reygned. xix. yere oute
And in his twenty yere, withouten doute.

¶ From the third daye of July by computacyon
Of the yere, vnto sayncte Bryces daye
So muche in his twenty, by relacyon
He reygned had, & then put downe for aye
From kyllingworth, to the castell of Berkeley
By nyght he was caryed, and translate
From wyfe and chylde, forsake and repudyate
Where

Argument.
4 yere twenty. 5 Fro sayct Thomas daie the translacion of Cauntebury, vnto sayct Bricis daie.
6 daie

Where he was slayne,with an hote brenning spyt
Through his towayle,vp to his herte within
In September,his bowelles brent for hete
That deed he was, without noyse or dyn
On saynt Mathewes daye,so they dyd hym bren
The fyrste yere was it then accompted,& wonne
Of kyng Edward the third,that was his sonne

At Glouceſter entombed kayre,and buryed
Where some say,god shewed for him great grace
Sith that tyme,with miracles laudifyed
Ofte tymes,in dyuerse many case
As is wryten there,in that same place
For whiche kyng Richard,called the seconde
To translate hym was purposed hole and sounde

Sir James Douglas, in Englād w an hoste
Destroyed the lande, wherfore the kyng Edward
With frenche henauldes,& Englysh for ỹ moste
In myghty hoste & great then came northward
The seconde yere of his reygne,to regarde
Whome in Stanhope parke,he besieged then
That compted were of Scottes,ten.M.menne

By.xv.dayes,that syege there endured
He helde them in,they myght not passe oute
But through a mosse,ỹ all men trowed was sured
So depe of myre,and brode it was aboute
No siege was layde,for there they had no doute.
By which ỹ Scottes,cast them what so betyde
To escape awaye,in the nyghtes tyde

But James Douglas,their flekes fell dyd make

Which

Whiche ouer the mosse, echeone at others ende
He layde anon, with fagottes fell ouer the lake
There gate awaye, and passage to pretende
On whiche by nyght, they led their horse vnkend
And home they went, to Scotlande harmelesse
Wherof the kyng was heuy there doutlesse

When they were ouer ỹ quaking mosse & mire
They drewe the flekes ay after as they went
That Englysshe should not them sue ne conquere
This was a poynt of warre, full sappent
But on our syde, there was by consequent
But lytell wytte, that lefte the myre vnwatched
And by good watch, ỹ Scottes myght haue be ca-
(ched
And in the yere, a thousande compted clere
Quene Isabell, her doughter maryed
Dame Jane of ỹ towre, to Dauid Bruis her pere
Kyng Robertes sonne, and heyre hole notifyed
At Berwyk towne, the seconde daye signifyed
Of Juill, and of kyng Edwarde then was thre
By cause of whiche, the kynge in prepuite.

The. C. lxxviii. Chapiter.

¶ Of the releſſe that kynge Edwarde made in his tender age to kynge Robert of his ſeruyce of Scotlande, whiche John Hardinge delyuered to kyng Edwarde the. iiii. at Leyceſter with a patent, by which ỹ earle of Dunbar bound him and his heyres, to holde his landes of ỹ kinges of Englande.

By councel of his mother, & the Mortymer
Releſed there the hole ſouerayne (were
And ſeruyce dewe, that to the crowne then

At

At Berwike then without autozite
Oz any parlyament in especialte
In tender age, and youthes intelligence
In his third yere, so of his hie regence

¶ Hye sent furth then, to Henauld foz a wife
A bishop and other lozdes temporall
Wher in chaumbze pzeuy and secretife
At discouerit dischenely also in all
As semyng was to estate virginall
Emong theim selfes, our lozdes foz hie pzudence
Of the bishop asked counsaill and sentence

¶ Whiche doughter of fiue, should bee the quene
Who counsailled thus, with sad auisement
Wee will haue hir, with good hippis I mene
Foz she will bere good soonnes, at myne entent
To whiche thei all accozded by one assent
And chase Philip, that was full feminine
As the bishop moost wise did determyne

¶ But then emõg theim selfes, thei laugh fast ay
The lozdes then sated, the bishop couth
Full mekill skyll, of a woman alwaye
That so couth chese, a lady that was vncouth
And foz ỹ mery woozdes, that came of his mouth
Thei trowed he had, right great experience
Of womanes rule, and hir conuenience

¶ Kyng Robert Bzuys, smitten in lepzy dyed
To whom his soonne Dauid, then did succede
And crouned was, foz kyng and notified
His wife also, was crouned quene in deede

kyng Edwardes suster, she was then as I rede
Sir Roger then that was lord Mortimer
With Isabell the quene was holden dere

¶ Through hardinesse of whiche he wasted clene
The kyng his tresour as was notified
For whiche Henry erle of Lancastre for tene
Rose with greate hoste, as then was fortified
To haue withstand, and clerely haue replied
The wantonnes of Roger Mortymer
That was that tyme the quenes playfeer

¶ But treated he was, to sitte in rest and peace
Notwithstandyng, at the coronacion
Of kyng Edward, chose he was without lees
His custode then for good informacion
Of the kyng his persone, and preseruacion
But quene Isabell, and the Mortimer
Would not suffre, ne while that so it were

¶ Edmond Wodstok, that then was erle of Kent
By kyng Edward, of Carnaruan create
Whose brother he was, by quene Isabelles entēt
And Mortimer his mighty and greate estate
Arested was and stode repudiate
At Winchester foriudged in parliament
And he did there again the common assent

¶ A brother he had, hight Thomas of Brotherto
Erle of Northfolk, and marshall of England
That of his death made none execucion
For lordes all, the greatest of the land
Full sory were, but nought thei tooke on hand

Fro

° Notified. edit. alt.

Fro noone till euen without the castell gate
He stoode condempned as a repudiate

¶ Whome then at euen, a boye of the marshalse
Stroke of his hedde, for whome the lordes than
And commons all, displeased were inwardly
At Notyngham sone after thei began
Wher Mortimer, therle of Marche then
Arested were, and his soonne sir Roger
And to the toure of London sent thei were

¶ On sainct Andrewes daye thei wer drawe and
At London, so by dome of the parlyament (hong
At Westminster holden by processe long
Sir Simond Bedford, was of their assent
Drawe and hanged, therfore thei went
And fro the quene his mother he resumed
His landes all, for she had so consumed

¶ His treasour foule, and all his greate riches
He putte hir to hir dower, and nomore
To liue vpon, at the frere minours doubtles
Wher she had not been brought before
And there she dyed, and buryed is therfore
At London nowe, full feire and reuerently
Wher she had dwelt long, full honourably

¶ Edward Baylioll, to claim Scotland thē went
And with hym went, sir Gilbert Umfreuile
Claimyng to bee erle, by his whole entent
Of Angeous then, as chronicles compile
Sir Henry Beaumont also went that while
His heritage to gette and to conquere

So. ² Vase. ³ Ther afore he
Wher she died and buried in right there
But here she dwelte longe after, Roger.

Therledome of Boughan, should bee his clere

Thenry Percy, with Edward Bailioll went
Galoway to claime, as for his heritage
By shippe thei went, all whole by one assent
At Rauensporne and landed with greate corage
At Kincorne wel in Fyfe by all knowlage
Dauid Strabolgy erle of Athellis by right
With theim thē went, for his landes ther to fight

Thei were accōpted twoo. M. fightyng menne
And fiue hundred byside the mariners
At their landyng, their shipis thei brent right then
And bored some, and sanke at good leysers
Thei thought theim self, of good & strong powers
Thei toke none hede, of shippis home again
But landeway ride, for all the Scottes dain

Thei toke none hede, nor yet consideracion
Of thousandes many, ne of greate multitude
As lordes dooe nowe of commons congregacion
But putte their cause to god his hie excelsitude
And in their owne handes solicitude
At Kincorne, then kaught with therle of Fyfe
Discomfit hym and fled awaye with life

This menne were slain, vpon the feld echeone
Thē Robert Bruys, ỹ bastard soōne their Guyde
The lord Seton, with power came anone
And newe battaill theim gaue, with mekell pryde
That noumbred were, ten thousand on their side
Whiche slain were all, for thei would take none
Saufe the chiefteynes, that fled awaye alone

The

[illegible]

¶ The kyng Edward Baylioll with his power
To Dunfermelyne abbey, then furth so went
Wher in Glasmore, ỹ Scottes then sembled were
Fourty thousand, full proud in their intent
And all were slain, without suppowelment
Therle of Marre and therle of Murray
Therle of Carryk, and Menth dyed that daye

¶ And after soone, at Deplyng More mette
Sir Peel Bruys, with ten thousand in feer
That slain were there, and to therth doune beet
The Englishe had the feld that daye full clere
Their ordinaunce was, to take no prisoner
Wherfore thei slewe the Scottes without mercie
Lest newe batail came on theim in hie

¶ At these battailles, afore that been wrytten
Sixty thosaund Scottes, slain and mortefied
Were more with prees, as afterward was weten
Then w̄ mānes hand, thei were so feel multiplied
Echeone on other, of pride so reuied
Without rule of marcill gouernaunce
Thei smored were, by their contrariaunce

¶ And but twoo knightes, & thirty & thre squiers
Whiche ther were dedde of the Englishe power
In foure battailles faught, w̄ axe swerd & speris
At Diplyng Moore, fro tyme the soōne rose clere
To three after noon, as saieth the chronicler
Within seuē dayes thei smote these. iiii. battailles
As chronicles make full clere reherfailes

¶ Thē wēt thei furth, vnto saynct Johns towne

That was replete, and full of all vitaile
And kept the toune with manly direccion
Archebald Douglas and erle Patrik no faile
Of Dunbarre then, the toune began taſſaile
With thirty thouſand, but there thei were well bet
With caſt of ſtones, and greate defence ouerſet

¶ The citees then, and tounes to the ſea ſide
At their coſtage, to Scotland ſent a flete
To helpe our lordes, and get theim good that tide
And with the ſhippis, of Scotland for to mete
And ſo thei did, and ſore theim all to bete
And brought theim home, and ſome with wildfyre
In Taye water and ſome thei ſanke & ſhent (bȳt

¶ Wherfore the Scottes, the ſiege then forſooke
Thengliſh lordes, at Skone the kyng did croune
Edward Baliol the ſoonne was, who will looke
To John Baliol kyng of that region
Whome then afore, Henry Beaumount brought
Frome Baliol, wher he was lord in Fraunce
As his aunceters had been of remembraunce

¶ This kyng Edward Baliol his fooes ſought
And at Rokiſburgh, faught, w therle of Murrey
Diſcomfited theim, in battaill ſore ther fought
And to Dureſme ſent hym fro thens awaye
Ther to bee kept in ſiker ſtrong araye
Then ſir Archbald Douglas and erle Patrike
Then of Dunbar, their kyng thought to bee ſwik

¶ Thei toke with hym a trewce to Candylmaſſe
From October, in truſt of whiche he ſent

Thengliſh

Thenglisshe lordes,to England home expresse
Trustyng he had been sure in his entente
All was falshede,that the two erles ment
For they vpheldе Dauid,in tendre age
Kyng Robartes sonne, to whom they did homage

¶Syr James Douglas & erle Patrike Dūbare
With all theyr helpe,at the Candilmasse
On Edwarde roase the Bailiol,or he were ware
And slewe all that they found doutlesse
That fayn he was,to Englande to flee helpelesse
At Marche after,he entred then Scotlande
With thesame lordes,then of the north lande

¶On both sydes they rode,and fast destroyed
And to Berwike Edwarde Bailol came
And sieged it,and selly was annoyed
To whiche Edwarde of Englonde, w̄ great fame
Came with his hoost,and laye there at thesame
The Douglas then,and Dunbare with power
Northumberlande all through brent full clere.

The.C.lxxix.Chapiter.

¶Of the battayle of Haldon hill,and howe Edwarde Bayliol did homage leege,to kyng Edwarde of Englande.

TO Halydon hill,they came w̄ their prayes
Barwike castell and towne so to rescue
Wher to oure hoste,ful oft they made fra-
Both day & euen,and morowes or day dewe (yes
But then the kyng of Englande to hym drewe
The kyng also of Scotland with his might
Full sore that daye in batayll did they fight.

 ¶Wher

¶Where Edwardes two, had al the victorye
The royaltes of all Scotlande, there wer slayn
Thyrty thousande, with theim liggand by
Of men of armes, and archers dead certayn
Then in the yere, nexte after soth to sayn
At newcastell, Edwarde kyng of Scotlande
His homage did, to the kyng of Englande.

homage of ỹ Scottes.

¶For whiche, ỹ cõmons of Scotlãd on hym rose
And slewe his men, that he into Englande came
And gatte an hoste, and rode vpon his fooes
Through Anand, through Kylay & Conyngham,
Carrike and Glascowe, slewe al ỹ he foũd at hame
The kyng Edwarde of England with power
Through Lowthian, so did to Stryuelyn clere.

¶And both met there, with great gladnesse
And home they came, destroiyng all the waye
Another yere in Jule, for to redresse
Scotlande agayn, with hostes they gan a fraye
At saynt Johns towne they met in great araye
And ther they made, therle of Athelis regent
Whome the commons felly slewe and shent.

¶kyng Edwarde sent after in another yere
In Waye Henry Lancastre, a noble knight
To Scotlande, with an hoste of good power
And afterwarde he came with mekill might
To saynt Johns towne, & on the monthes right
Through Murrey to Elgyne, Giluernes & Rosse
Throughout mounteynes woddes myre & mosse.

¶kyng Edwarde, then came home into Englãde

And

And proclayned his sonne, Edwarde nominate
The prince of Wales, thens forth I vnderstande
Henry Lancastre, the younger he create
Erle of Derby, to beare the hole estate
Wyllyam Mountague, erle of Salisbury
Of Northampton, Wyllyam Bowne full manly.

¶ Of Glouceſter he made, Hugh of Awdely
Of Suffolke then, he made Robert Huffordth
Of Huntyngdon, Wyllyam Clinton gay
Whiche erles, the kyng toke with hym forth
With many a worthy knyght, bothe of south and north
And with the quene, so vnto Andwarpe
And there abode, by all the wynter sharpe.

¶ With great people, and worthy chyualrye
Agayn the kyng of Fraunce, to clayme his right
And wrote his title, vnto ỹ Romiſhe biſhop on hie
The duke of Barre, and other lordes of might
The quenes frendes, then socoure had hym hight
Where then the quene, of hyr sonne Lionell
Delyuered was, as chronicles do tell

¶ Ye cheriſhed then Flaundres, that they forsoke
Theyr naturall lorde, and swore feautee
To hym and his, theyr power they betoke
To byde and dwell, vnder his soueraynte
Because they sawe in hym suche humanitee
He chaunged his armes, in banners and penons
And in his seale, quartred of both regions.

¶ And in the yere, then of his reygne thyrtene
His armes chaunged, and called kyng of Fraũce
He

He rode in Fraunce on warre, as then was seen
A thousande tounes he brent, by his puysaunce
The kyng of Fraunce, without variaunce
Sent hym worde, that he wold with hym fight
But at the poynt, he did not as he hight

For at that tyme, in sonder they were a myle
He fled awaye, kyng Edward held the felde
Two dayes after he sued and Umkreutle[3]
Of hym had sight, and then he founde his sheld
By whiche he knewe, his couenaunt he not held
Wherfore the kyng, to Brabant went agayn
The dukes three of Barre Earle and Brabayn

The parliamẽt thẽ, at Westmynster was hold
Wher they graũted hym, the.ix. lãbe flees & shaue
Of the commons, but the churche nomore wold
Hym graunt, but one dysme of theim to haue
For which he graũted generall perdone and gaue
The.ix. lambe flees & shaue, graunt was two yere
To helpe the kyng, his right to conquere

The.C.lxxx. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kynge Edwarde smote the battayle on the sea at Sluse bespde Brydges, & howe the kyng firste rode into fraunce, and quartred his armes with the armes of fraunce, and sent to kyng Philip, to trye the ryght betwene theim two.

AND in his yere next after, then fourtene
At Sluse ỹ kig faught, w the frẽch nauy
Fro noone to eue & to the morowe, as was
Where all wer drowned & slayn myghtely (seen
And

1 Westminster. 2 Full more. 3 Re shewed and other while. 4 Like. 5 Have. 6 Wrong. 7 Dreynte.

And kyng Edward,to Fraunce went haſtely
With hoſte full great,deſtroied the lande & brent
The cytee of Turnais,beſieged and ſhente

¶Then wrote he to the kyng Philip of Fraunce
Not namyng hym kyng of that lande
But to Philip of Valoys,for greuaunce
Willyng alone,they two to take on hande
To fyght for the cauſe,and for to ſtande
Who hath the better,for euer to holde Fraunce
Withoute warre,or any more dyſtaunce

¶Or elles,they two eyther wt an.C.knyghtes
And yf theſe wayes,pleaſe hym not to excepte
Come with his hoſte,& all his ſtrongeſt wyghtes
To the cytee of Tournay,none excepte
At a certayne daye,iuſtly to be kepte
And who the feilde maye get,brooke well Fraunce
Withoute more ſtryfe,or any baryaunce

¶The kyng then wrote vnto kyng Edwarde a-
That he wolde not for the letters fight (gayne
Whiche touche not kyng Philyp in certayne
But Philyp Valoys,as ſheweth well to fyght
To whiche he wolde ſet,neyther daye ne highte
But when he thought it were for his honoure
He ſhulde hym chaſe awaye without ſocoure

¶Out of his land,which wrongfully he ſheweth
Agayne his fayth,feautye made and homage
To his auncеſters by letter,as it ſheweth
Under his ſeale,of hole and good knowlage
For Guyan,and his other herytage

And

And fro Turnace into Brabane agayne
The kyng Edwarde, in wynter dyd remayne

¶ To byde the byshoppes rule and dispolicyon
Of good accorde, for then two cardynalles
To take a trewce, by good prouisyon
Duryng two yere, betwene them generals
And all theyr frendes, that were prncyppalles
Then came the kyng to Edwarde into Englande
His offycers newe made, I vnderstande.

¶ To the trewce then taken at Waltrete
The dukes two, of Burgoyne and Burbone
In the kynges soule of Fraunce, swore and hete
Truly to kepe, for frendes or for foone
And duke Henry of Lancaster, sad as stone
Willyam Bowne Earle of Northhampton
And Willyam Mountague, full hye of renoune

¶ Earle of Salisbury, in kyng Edwardes soule
In lyke maner, were sworne and biheste (there
The .xix. daye, then of Janyuere
The yere of Christ, a. M. then was seste
Thre hundreth and two, and fourty at leest
When these trues were taken so, and sealed
For afterwarde, they shulde not be repeled

The .C. lxxxi. Chapiter.

¶ Howe Henry duke of Lancaster went to Gupan, in ỹ yere of Christe, a thousande thre hundreth .xlv. And of the batayle of Tressy, in the yere of Christe, a thousand, thre hundreth fourtye and syxe.

And

AND then Henry duke of Lancaster create
Went to Guyen, with many bolde baron
Where then he gate, the cytees of estate
And castelles fele, & many a walled towne
And made the lande Englysshe, both vp & doune
And to the kyng Edwarde obeied, as they ought
And great worshyp and ryches there he caught

¶ And in the yere a thousande and, CCC. gone
Syxe and fourtye, kyng Edwarde at Cressy
Met with Philyp, of Valoyes there anone
That kyng of Fraunce was by intrusery
At whiche batayle, Edwarde had the victorye
And with honoure and myght, there gate ỹ felde
And Philyp fled, and caste there doune his shelde

¶ And his eldest sonne, with hym went awaye
With an hundreth banners, in her company
The kynges of Beme, were slayne that daye
And of Valiogres, there full manfully
The dukes of Alaunson, also theim by
And of Lorreyn slayne were, in batayle
And earles fyue, without any fayle

¶ Of Flaunders, Bloys Harcourt & Melayne
Of gentyls and other, without any Essayne
And of Guntyre, were there in batayle slayne
Fyue score thousande, the twenty daye certayne
And syxe also of Auguste, accompted playne
The kyng Edwarde had all the victorye
The kyng Philyp, had all the vilanye.

¶ The king Dauid theh, of Scotland w̄ power
To

To Dureſme bꝛent, where on ſaynt Lukes daye
The archbyſhop, with his clergye clere
And ſyꝛ Gylbert Umfreuyle, in good araye
The Loꝛde Percy the Neuyle, then laye
With all the noꝛth, a lytell frome Dureſme
Wher then they kaught, & on ẏ king Dauid came

And take he was, ẏ yere of Chꝛiſte was then
A thouſande, full thꝛe hundꝛeth fourty and ſyxe
Full ſoꝛe wounded, full lyke he was a man
And alſo of his loꝛdes, mo then fyue oꝛ ſyxe
Bꝛought to London pꝛiuely, thꝛough Eſſex
Foꝛ loꝛdes ſhulde not hym take w greate power
From John of Coupland, ẏ was his taker clere

And in ẏ towꝛe of London, then kept in warde
To tyme the king were come home out of Fraũce
That then in Fraunce, mo caſtelles to regarde
And townes walled, goten by his hye puiſſaunce
Then had the kyng Philip in gouernaunce
And lyke was then, all Fraũce to haue conquerde
With his alies, he made that lande afferde

The. C. lxxxii. Chaptter.

¶ Of the greate peſtylence, in the yere of Thꝛyſte a thouſand thꝛe hundꝛeth foꝛtye and nyne, and the yere nexte after, the kynge wente vnto ffraunce, and the pꝛynce of Wales vnto Guyan.

And in the yere of Chꝛiſt clerly accompted
A thouſande hole, thꝛe. C. fourty & nyne
The peſtilence was in England amoũted
That kyng Edward newe warre ganne ymagine
The

The nexte yere after, agayne Fraunce kyne
Thether he went, & prince Edward then went
With greate power to Guien, as Regent.

¶ The kyng then put his sonnes yonge of age
In Fraunce then forth, in mighty gouernaunce
Syr Lyonell, Earle of Ulster in wage
Regent of Fraunce, hym made by ordynaunce
Syr John of Gaunt, to haue hole attendaunce
Of all the hoste, as hye and greate constable
To whiche he was accompte, ẏ tyme full able.

¶ Sir Edmonde Langeley, full of gentylnesse
Sir Thomas Woodstok full of corage
To their banners, them put for worthynesse
To haue rule in that worthy viage
Whiche princes kyue, approued in yonge age
There was no king christen, had such sonnes fiue
Of lyklynesse, and persones that tyme on lyue

¶ So hye and large, they were of all stature
The leste of them, was of persone able
To haue foughten with any creature
Singler batayle in actes marcyable
The byshops wit, me thinketh was cõmendable
So wel coulde chese the princesse ẏ them bare
For by practyse he knewe it, or by lare

The. C.lxxxiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kynge of Fraunce was taken prysoner at the batayle of Poyters, the yere of Christe, a thousande, thre hundreth fyftye and syxe.

In

IN the yere of Chriſte,a.M.accõpted right
Thre hundreth and fyre,and fyfty mo
The prince Edward,at Poyters fore dyd fyght
The.xix.day of September,was tho
Where kyng John of Fraunce,his ſonne alſo
He toke and had the felde,with victorye
His eldeſt ſonne then,fledde fro hym cowardly

The kyng Dauyd died,and lette his hoſtage
For his raunſome lygge ay forth in Englande
The yere,a thouſande.CCC.by knowlage
Eyght and fyfty,as I can vnderſtande
And payde not yet,ne quyt not out his bonde
Ne his hoſtage,he wolde not ſo diſpleaſe
To delyuer,ne putte theim fro their eaſe

The quene Iſabell,a the quene of Scotlande
Her doughter was,and kyng Dauyds wyfe
Sone after dyed,and buryed I vnderſtande
At the graye Freres,in lande knewen full ryfe
The whiche ỹ quene Iſabell founded in their lyfe
Full fayre entombed,a wrought full rychely
Where the two Quenes reſte full honorably [2]

The.C.lxxiiii.Chapiter.

Of the ſeconde peſtylence and the greate wynde and earthquake,the yere a thouſande.CCC,lxi.

AND in the yere of Chriſt,a.M.wyten
Thre hundreth alſo fyfty and one
The.ii.peſtylence,reigned as was weten
Duke Henry dyed,for whome was mekyll mone
Dame Blaunche his doughter,full faire of fleſhe and bone

His

His heire was then, whom John of Gaũt did wed
The duchy by hir had, men saied he had well sped

¶ In that same yere was, on sainct Maurys day
The greate winde and earth quake meruelous
That greately gan the people all affraye
So dredfull was it then and perelous
Specially the wind was so boistous
The stone walles, steples houses and trees
Were blow doune in diuerse ferre coũtrees

¶ And in the yere a thousand three hundred also
Sixty and foure, kyng John of Fraunce dyed
In London then, in Sauoy had been sicke
The dukes palice of Lancastre edified
Full royally as it is notified
His boweles buryed, at Poules with royaltee
His corps in Fraunce, with all solempnitee

Kyng John of Fraũce

¶ In that same yere, sir John Moũtfort of newe
Duke of Brytain was by heritage
As heire male, his title was act trewe
At Orrers faught, again the Frenche linage
Sir Charles de Bloys, that claimed by mariage
The duchy whole, of Brytain by the might
Of his wife, wher he was slain by might

¶ Duke John of Gaunt, was at that battaile
Sir Edmond also of Langley his brother dere
Sir John Chaundos treated without faill
All daye, and faught at eue through his aũswere
Whiche treaty is yet, oft remembred here
For Chaũdos trewce, that treted all daye to nigh

And made bothe parties at eue together fight

At whiche battaill, duke John of Gaũt in dede
And his brother Edmond, then faught full sore
Were neuer twoo better knightes, thẽ thei in dede
That better faught vpon a feld afore
It was but grace, that thei escaped thore
Thei putte theim selfes so ferfurth ay in prees
That wounded wer thei bothe, full sore no lees

The. C. lxxv. Chapiter.

Howe prince Edward of Wales wedded dame Johã doughter of Edmond Wodstoke erle of Kent, he of ỹ third degree and she of the second.

These brethrẽ twoo w̃ their Englishe power
Set John Woũtfort i his whole ducherie
With great honour & manhode all in fere
Erle John of Kent dedde was afore sothely
Erle Edmõdes soõne, to whom dame Johã truly
His sister was heire, whome therle Mountague
Of Salisbury had wed of maiden newe

And hir forsoke, after repudiate
Whom his styward sir Thomas Holand wed
And gate on hir, Thomas erle of Kent late
And John Holand hir other soonne she hed
Thomas their father, dyed of sickenes bested
The prince hir bowid vnto a knight of his
She saied she would none, but hym self I wis

for his beaute, all onely he hir tooke
wed hir so, and to Guyan went

The

The yere was then a thousand who so loke
Three hundred also, sixty and fiue extent
Rychard his soonne, whiles he was there regent
In Burdaux borne was thē with great gladnes
Supposyng then, of hym greate worthynes

A battaill in Spain

¶ The kyng Peter of Castell and Lyon
To Burdeaux came, & ther prince Edward beheld
To gette again his worthy region
Fro whiche his brother bastard wt full strong be-
Had putte hym out, & thought it for to weeld (eld
For whiche the prince with all his hole power
Rode into Spain to helpe hym to conquer

¶ Wher thē he faught, against the bastard strōg
The third daye of Aprill accompted then
In battaill sore forfoughten ther full long
In whiche were slain full many a Spanish māne
The basterd fled, the prince the feld there wan
And sette the kyng Peter in his region
In peace and rest without rebellion

The.C.lxxxvi.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lordes of Italy sent ambassiate to kyng Edward for sir Leonell of Andwarp, to make hym kyng of Italy, who was create erle of Ulster by his wife, doughter & heire to Rychard erle of Ulster of whom he gate dame Philip, wedded to Edmond Mortimer erle of Marche, whiche erle of Marche gate Roger erle of Marche and my lady Percy.

THe duke of Milayn yhight sir Bernabo
The lord Mātowe & the marques Ferrar
The lord of Mountpollestrme then also

The lordes of Jene, of Pyse that then were
The lordes of Uenis, and Florence there
To kyng Edward, sent ambassiate
By commen assent, of papall senate

For Lionell his soonne, with theim to send
The duke his doughter of Melayn, for to wed
Promisyng hym then, hym so to recommend
That of Itale the rule sholde all be led
By hym and his frendes, of Italye bred
And in short tyme, to ioye and bere the croune
Of all Italye the royal region

This wife was dedde, and at Clare was buried
And none heire he had, but his doughter faire
Philp that hight, as chronicles specified
Whom quene Philip Christened for his heire
Tharchbishop of Yorke, for his compeire
Hir godmother also, of Warwyk the countesse
A lady was of all greate worthynes

The kyng his soonne, sir Leonell create
Duke of Clarence, and to Melayn hym sent
With chiualrie of fame, well ordinate
And squyers fresshe, galaunt and sufficient
With officers and yomen, as appent
And with hym went, that greate ambassiate
At his costage, to Melayn consociate

The.C.lxxvii.Chapiter.

Howe sir Leonell when his wife Elionor was dedde was create duke of Clarence, and weddid the dukes doughter of Melayn in Lumbardy, and dyed ther

had

had no childe with her, and some saye he is buried there and some saye, his boones were brought home and buried at Clare in Essex, but in trouth of Clare he had his name, and honoure of duke of Clarence, for Clare is called Clarencia in Latyne, and also Clarence in frenche.

THis duke royall, of Clarence excellent
At Welayne, wedded was thē in royal wise
With that lady fayre and beneuolent
Full royally, as to suche a prince shuld suffice
And all the rule he had, by councell wyse
Fro mount Godard, vnto the citee of Florence
And well beloued was, for his sapience.

¶In citees all, he helde well vnitees
Greate iustes ay, and ioyus tournementes
Of lordes & knightes, he made great assemblees
Through all the lande, by his wyse regimentes
They purposed hole, by theyr commen assentes
To croune hym kyng, of all great Italie
Within halfe a yere, for his good gouernaly

¶In all the world, was then no prince hym like
Of hie stature, and of all semelynesse
Aboue all men, within his hole kyngrike
By the shulders, he might be seen doutlesse
As a mayde in halle of gentilnesse
And in all other places, sonne to rethorike
And in the felde, a Lyon marmorike

¶In whiche meane tyme, his iustes & his excesse
His great riot, and wynes delicacie
His ghoste exiled, out of his corps doutlesse

Afore the daye set of his regence
For whom was made great mone, through Italie
Some sayen he is buried at Melayn
And other some saye, at Clare certayn.

¶ But chyldren had he noone, but Philip heire
By Elizabeth his first wyfe, whiche the kyng
Edwarde maryed, to Emond Mortymer
Therle of Marche, that was his warde ful ying
Who gate on hir, Roger their derelyng
And Elizabeth wed to Henry Percy
Sonne and heyre, vnto therle Henry

¶ Of Northumberland, which two both father & (sonne
Wer knightly men, in warres ay occupied
Beyonde the sea great worshyp had they wonne
In many a realme, full greatly magnified
For marcyall actes by theim multiplied
The whiche were long here to reporte
For in theyr tyme, they were of noble porte.

¶ But of the prince Edwarde, yet wold I saye
Howe he fro Spayne departe then in dede
The kyng Peter toke hym, his doughters tweyn
Theider hight dame Constaunce as I rede
To duke John wedded, his lyfe with her to lede
The yonger hight dame Isabell by name
The duke Edmōd of Yorke wedded of great fame

¶ And in the yere, a thousande fully writen
Thre hundreth eke sixty, and also fouretene
The prince Edwarde died, as well was weten
At Kenyngton, which was his palice clene

And

And buryed was, at Cauntorbury as I wene
Betooke hym hole to goddes disposicion
After his mercy to suffre his punycion.

¶ And in the yere of Christes incarnacion
A thousande hole, and three hundreth signified
The prince pereles, by all informacion
Sixty and seuentene clerely notified
Great syckenesse, so had hym victoried
And droue hym out, from all his region
That neuer prince might haue dooē by persecucīō

¶ In June the. xxii. daye expresse
Was, when he died, & from this world expired
That was the floure of earthly worthynes
That to the height of knighthode had aspired
His owne hande pereles, as was enquired
At Westmynster buried in royall wyse
As to suche a prince, of reason ought suffice.

¶ Who was the first of Englysshe nacion
That euer had right, vnto the croune of Fraunce
By succession of bloode and generacion
Of his mother without variaunce (staūce
The whiche me thynketh, should be of moste sub=
For Christ was kyng by his mother of Judee
Whiche sykerer side is ay, as thynketh me.

¶ And of his pedegre vnto the croūne of Fraūce
With his bloode, wherof he is discent
Within this booke, without any varyaunce
Mencion is made, only to this entente
That reders by all good auysemente

The title of his right and heritage
May well conceyue, and haue therof knowlage.

The.C.lxxxviii.Chapiter.

¶ Richarde the seconde kyng of Englande and of fraunce, began to reigne the yere a thousand thre hundreth .lxxvii. and was deposed by parliamente, in the yere a. M.CCC. lxix. and the .xxii. yere of his reygne.

kyng Richard the seconde.

RIchard his heyre, ỹ sõne of pryce Edward
Crowned was then, with all solempnitee
By all the lordes and barons hole award
Obeying hole vnto his maiestee
Who that tyme, was in tendre iuuensee
Of eleuen yere, fully accompted of age
When he had so his croune and heritage.

¶ And kyng was called, of Englãde, & of Fraũce
In June the .xxii. daye full clene
Of Christes death, without variaunce
A thousande was, thre hundreth sixty to neuen
And .xvii. yere therwith to beleuen
When the two realmes, fell to hym by discente
As nexte heyre, to kyng Edwarde therexellent

¶ And in the yere, a thousande thre hundreth mo.
Sixty adioynt, and therwith all nynetene
The thyrde pestilence reigned in Englande so
So sore, that moste parte of the people clene
Dyed awaye, as thro[illegible] the realme was sene
And of his reignes of Eglande and of fraunce
The thyrde yere was, by very remembraunce.

And

¶And of his reigne, in June then the.v.yere
And of our Lorde, a thousande then accompted
Thre hundreth, eke.iiii.score and one full clere
The commons rose, an hūdreth thousād amoūted Insurrectiō
Of Kent and Esser, whiche that tyme surmounted
The kynges power, and all the hie estates
For whiche the lordes fled then as exulates.

¶And lefte the kyng, alone then in the toure
With tharchbyshop of Cauntorbury there so
And the priour, to been his gouernoure
Of Clerken well, whiche the commons heded tho
And brought the kyng forth, with theim to go
They asked hym, all bondmen to bee free
And tare none, euer after payed to bee.

¶They asked eke, Jake Strawe, & Wat Tiler
To bee made dukes, of Esser and Kente
To rule the kyng thens forth, in peace and warre
For they bee wyse, of royall regiment
Thus tolde they the kyng all theyr entent
The whiche he graunte, in all thyng by and by
For he durste no poynt, then theim denye.

¶Afore Jake Strawe, ỹ kyng thē stode hodlesse
Of which Walworth, the Mayre of Londō trewe
Areasoned hym then, of his greate lewdenesse
With a dagger, in Smythfelde then hym slewe
The citezens, with hym then strongly drewe
And slewe theim downe, and put theim to flight
And brought the kyng, into the citee right.

¶The cōmons brent the Sauoye, a place fayre
For

For eiuill wyll they had vnto duke Iohn
Wherfore he fled northwarde in great dispayre
Into Scotlande, for socoure had he none
In Englande then, to whō he durste make moone
And there abode, tyll commons all were ceased
In England hole, and all the lande well peased

¶ The.xx. daye of Maye nexte folowyng
And one therwith, as calculers it knowe
The date of Christ a thousande then beynge
Thre hundreth also foure score & two on rowe
Thearth quake was, whiche that tyme I sawe
That castelles, walles, toures and steples tyll
Houses and trees and cragges fro the hyll

¶ And in the yere afore, kyng Richarde wed
Quene Anne, vpon saynt Agnes day that floure
That doughter was, as I haue sene and red
Unto the kyng of Beeme and Emperoure
And suster also, vnto his successoure
Themperour of Rome, that Segemond hight
Who to kyng Henry in Englāde came full right.

The.C.lxxxix.Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Richard wente into Scotlande, in the yere a thousande three hundreth and .lxxxvi. and in his reygne the.x. yere, and howe he create two dukes of Yorke and of Glouce[st]re.

AND in the yere of Christ, a thousande so
Thre hūdreth also, foure score & .vi. ther tyl
And of his reigne, the.x. yere and mo
The kyng Richard, with hoste went at his wyl

Into

In to Scotlande, his cozage to fulfyll
To Edinburgh, and bzent the lande also
Without lettyng there of any foo

At London so then at his parlyament
He made therle of Cambzydge his vncle dere
The duke of Yozke, to be incontynent
And so he was pzoclaymed there full clere
That Edmonde hyght, of Langley of good chere
Glad and mery, and of his owne ay lyued
Without wzonge, as chzonicles haue bzeued

When all the lozdes, to councell and parlyament
Went, he wolde to hunte and also to hawekyng
All gentyll dispozte, as to a lozde appent
He vsed aye, and to the poze suppoztyng
Where euer he was, in any place bidyng
Without suppzyse, oz any extoztyon
Of the pozayle, oz any oppzessyon.

The made also the earle of Bokyngham
Thomas Wodstoke, that same daye and create
His other vncle duke of Glouceste by name
Pzoclaymed hole, and so denominate
With his bzother to be consociate
The fozetayle he bare ay on his spere
Where he so rode in peace, oz elles in warre.

The kyng then made ȳ duke of yozke by name
Maister of the mewhouse, & his haukes fayze
Of his venery, and mayster of his game
In what countree he dyd repeyze
Which was to hym, without any dispeyze
Well moze comfozte and great gladneste

Then

Then bene a lorde, of worldly greate rychesse

This vncle Thomas, ỹ duke then of Glouceſter
And wed the doughter, then of therle of Herforth
By whiche he had, by writyng & by letter
The Conſtablery of Englande, then ay forth
Both by South, Eſt, Weſt, and North
By herytage, of his wyues lande and ryght
Of auncyent tyme, by kynges graunt & hyght

* The batail of Rotcote bridge

And in the yere of kyng Richarde elleuen
The duke Thomas that was of Glouceſter
Henry the earle of Derby dyd beleuen
With hym by worde, and alſo by his letter
The earle Marſhall did, ſo then for the better
Therle Beanchampe, of Warwyk by his name
Of Arundell the earle, dyd the ſame.

These lordes fyue together, boldely ſworne
Agayne Robert Veer, then duke of Irelande
The kinges pleaſure, & one of age both like borne
Whom he loued moſte, as they could vnderſtand
With batayl ſtronge, at Rotcot bryge toke on hãd
To fyght with hym, where then he fled awaye
Ouer Thamis, without retourne for ay.

The.C.xc.Chapiter.

Of the great parlyament, where the fyue lordes forfuged ỹ duke of Irelande, and his compeers

AT Lenton nexte accompted in the yere
At London then, ỹ king ſet his parliamẽt
At weſtminſter to hold it there moſte clere
Where

1 had. 2 by. 3 Than dide. 4 That

Where these fyue lordes came armed, by one assēt
Appealed the duke of Irelande, of greate entent
The archbyshop of Yorke, that hyght Neuyle
And Michell poole, earle of Suffolke that whyle

¶ Sir Nichol Brēbyr of London ẏ was Mayre
Tresilyan also, and syr Symonde Bourley
Whiche they exyled, & some they honge vnfeyre
Some they heded that tyme, that was full gaye
Holt and Belknap, exyled were awaye
In to Irelande, for hye contryued treasone
Agayne the kyng, and his royall crowne.

¶ The earle Douglas, & the earle of March also
Northumberlande, by west the newe castell
Unto Morpath norwarde, dyd mikyll wo
At Otturborne, as chronycles dyd tell
Henry Percy, with small hoste on hym fell
And slewe Douglas, & many put to the flyght
And gate the felde vpon his enemyes ryght

* The batayl of Otturborne

¶ Hye sent the lorde, syr Thomas Umfreuyle
His brother Robert, & also sir Thomas Grey
And sir Mawe Redmayn, beyond ẏ Scottes that (whyle
To holde them in, ẏ they fled not awaye
Wherfore the Scottes releued agayne alway
Throuh which, Henry was take there anone
To Dūbar led, for whom was made great mone

¶ The felde was his, all yt ẏ he were take
The Umfreuyle, Grey, Ogle, and Redmayne,
Helde the felde hole, ẏ myght so for his sake
And knewe nothyng whetherwarde he was gayn

The

The Earle of Marche, with pꝛeuy men alane
Full pꝛiuely to Dunbarre, with hym rode
And kepte hym there, foꝛ he was greatly ferde.

¶ The Douglas all ẏ many were that daye
Laboured full soꝛe, with wyles and great wyt
Hym to hauc slayne, foꝛ euer and ay
Foꝛ Douglas death, so soꝛe they rewed it
This batail was on saynt Oswoldes daye cõmpt
The .xii. yere of the kyng, and of Chꝛistes date
Thirtene. C. foure scoꝛe, and eyght socyate

The. C. xci. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the quene Anne dyed, and howe kyng Rychard went fyꝛste to Irelande with his hoste.

AND in the yere, a thousand. iii. C. and mo
Foure scoꝛe & fourtene, quene Anne died
The. xviii. yere, was of the kyng then so
And buryed was, as well is notifyed.
Of all vertue, she was well laudefyed
To womanhede, that myght in ought appende
At Westminster, she is full well commende

¶ At Michelmasse nexte after folowyng
In that same yere, the kyng to Irelande went
With greate power, & hoste therin warrynge
Upon Makmur, with all his hole entente
And on the greate Aneell; by one ascent
Of his loꝛdes, where Makmurre & greate Aneel
To him obeyed, and made hym homage leel.

¶ The earle of Marche, syꝛ Roger Moꝛtymer

The

The kynge made then Leuetenaũt of Irelande
That ponge was then, and home he came ẏ pere
And great hoshoulde helde, as I can vnderstand
Far passyng kynges, of any other lande
For whiche, the voyce on hym rose and name
Through chrystendom, he bare then furth ẏ fame

And in the yere a thousande, as was then
Thre hundreth eke foure score, & also syxtene
Of his reygne, the .xviii. yere was then
At Alhalowmasse kyng Rychard as was sene
At Calys wed, dame Isabell the quene
Kig Charles doughter, ẏ then was kig of Fraũce
At Christmasse crowned by gouernaunce

And in Smithfelde great, iustes & torneament
Of all realmes and dyuers nacyon
Of Engiyshe, Irysshe and Walshe present
Of Scottes also, were at the coronacyon
And iusted there with greate cõmendacyon
By .xiiii. dayes iusted who so wolde
Henry of Derby, bare hym then full bolde

Henry Percy, and Rauke his brother gaye
Robert Morley, and syr John Grene Tornewell
Heer Nichol Hauberke, and eke syr Mawburney
Walter Bytterley, syr Thomas Blankeueile
Syr Hugh Spencer, and Jamco saunz kayle
Heer Hans, heer John, & the lorde fitz Walter
Blaket Dynmoke, and also the lorde Spencer.

Umfreuyle, and his brother Roberte
Umfrey Staffordе, and syr Rychard Arundell
These

1 Thom rose. 2 Ethan. 3 Hallowtide. 4 &c.
The rest has torment, evidently in error.
5 Ales 6 Irish 7 That. 8 Sothern.
9 The Erle Henry of Derby. 9 Jaunyce.

These.xx.helde the felde within full sinert
Agayne all other, that wolde with Justes mell
Of what nacyon he were, that man can tell
Of in any lande the knyghtes iusted thare
And squyers also without, ȳ well them bare

The.C.xcii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng arest the duke of Glouceſter, the Earles of Warwyk, and Aroundell, and forfeituged them for treason, and made fyue Dukes, a Marquis, and foure Earles, and watched daye and nyghte with Thesbyze men, for drede of insurrecyon.

The yere of Chriſte, a.M.was so then
Thre.C.eke foure score & also seuentene
At mydsomer, the kyng with many a man
At Plasshe toke Thomas, of Wodstoke full kene
Of Glouceſter, the duke that was full clene
That smyten was, in fell and great sykneſſe
And in the towre hym put in great distreſſe

Whome sone he sente, to Calyce secretely
And murthered hym, in the prynces inne
By hole aduice, of his councell priuely
And in eche shyre, of which he did greate synne
His confeſſyon of treason, more and mynne
Of.ix.poyntes fayned, he then proclayned
To staunche the folke, ȳ for hym cryed & claymed.

The then areſt Thomas, earle of Warwyke
And Earle Rychard, of Arundell no lees
The lorde Cobham full trewe, and also manlyke
Forfeituged them, by strength of men and prees
The earle of Warwyk, his name for to distreſſe

Unto

Unto thisle of Man in soze pzison
Of Arundell therle hedded foz treson

The lozd Cobham in to pzisone perpetuall
In the towze to abide foz euer moze
At Wighelmasse next so then did bifall
The kyng then held his greate parlyament thoze
At Westminster, wher the kyng mustred soze
At the Blakeheth, an hundzed thousand menne
To make the commons, foz to dzed hym then

At whiche parlyamēt, he made therle of Derby
Duke of Herfozd, therle of Rutland also
Of Almarle duke, therle of Kent duke of Surry
Therle of Huntyngton, duke of Excester tho
Therle Marshall he made and no mo
Duke of Nozthfolke, thus were there dukes fiue
Of newe create, and none was substantiue

He made therle of Somerset marques
Of Dozset then, sir John Beaufozt that hight
Of pooze liuelode that was that tyme doubtles
Foure erles next he made, in mantiles full right
With swerdes girt, the lozd Spencer on hight
That create was then erle of Glouceste
Thomas Percy also erle of Wozceste

The lozd Neuell then erle of Westmerland
Wyllyam Scrope erle of Wiltshire create
That Chamberleyn was then, I vnderstand
And tresourer of England ozdinate
These foure erles were thus consociate
Then all these dukes, and erles with many mo

Of lordes young he had aye with hym

¶ Bishopes thirtyne, he held then furth eche daye
Barons many, and many a worthy knight
To greate nombre, and squiers freshe and gaye
And officers, well mo then nedid right
In eche office, by tenfold mo to sight
Then were afore, for then he had eche daye
Twoo hundred menne, of Cheshire wher he laye

¶ To watche hym aye, wher so euer he laye
He dred hym aye, so of insurreccion
Of the commons and of the people aye
He trusted none of all his region
But Chesshire menne for his protection
Wher euer he rode, with arowes and bowes bent
Thei were with hym, aye redy at his entent

The. C. xciii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe in the tyme of kyng Rychard reigned ouer passyng pryde, aduoutree, and lechery as well in menne of the spiritualtie as in other of his hous.

TRuly I herd Robert Ireleffe[2] saye
Clerke of the grenecloth, ỹ to the houshold
Came euery daye, for mooste partie alwaye
Ten thousand folke, by his messis tould
That folowed the hous, aye as thei would
And in the kechin three hundred seruitours
And in eche office many occupiours

¶ And ladies faire with their gentilwomen
Chamberers also and lauenders[a]
Three hundred of theim were occupied[3] then

1. He had all with him. 2. Ireleffe.

a. Launderers. Edit. pri.

3. were accumbred of them.

Ther

Ther was greate pryde emong thoffycers
And of all menne farpassyng their compeers
Of riche araye, and muche moze costious
Then was befoze, oz sith, and moze precious

Yemenne and gromes, in cloth of silke araye
Sattyn and damaske, in dublettes and gounes
In cloth of grene, and scarlet foz vnpayed
Cut werke was greate, both in court and tounes
Bothe in mênes hoddis, and also in their gounes
Bzoudur and furres, & goldsmith werke aye newe
In many awise, eche daye thei did renewe

In his chapell, were bisshoppes then of Beame
Some of Ireland, and some also of Fraunce
Some of England, and clerkes of many a realme
That litill connyng had oz conisaunce
In musike honozably, God his seruice to auaunce
In the chapell, oz in holy scripture
On[2] mater of Goddis[3] to refigure

Lewed menne, thei were in clerkes clothyng
Disguysed faire, in fourme of clerkes wise
Their perysshyns full litill enfourmyng
In lawe deuine, ozels in God his seruise
But right practyke thei were in couetyse
Eche yere to make full greate collection
At home, in stede of soules cozrection

Gzeate lechery and foznication
Was in that house, and also[4] greate aduoutree
Of paramoures was greate consolacion
Of eche degre, well moze of prelacie

[1] and in. [2] Any [3] Gode. [4] Als.

Then
Dhen of the tempozall, oz of the chiualrie
eate taxe ay the kyng tooke thzough all the lād
Cz whiche commons hym hated bothe free & bōd
B for
C
A
J

The.C.xciiii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the duke of Herfozd and the duke of Nozthfolke wer exiled out of England.

AND in the yere .M. and thze hundzed clere
Foure scoze and therwithall eightene
And of his reigne the twenty & twoo yere
The duke Henry of Herfozd as was seen
At Couentree, in barres armed clene
Agaīn the duke of Nozthfozke, foz treson
Whiche bothe, the kyng exiled fro his region

The duke Henry, exiled was of foz ten yere
The other was also foz terme of life
That died duke, at Uenys leide on bere
But duke Henry exiled was beliue ...
Like as the chzonicle can openly discriue
Foz ten yere whole, foz to abide in Fraunce
And to auoyde the realme without variaunce

Upon the pain of decollacion
And hyng sone befoze saīnct Edwardes daye
In Octobze called the translacion
Upon whiche daye, he shipid fourth his waye
At Calice londed, and so rode on alwaye
Unto Paris, wher he was faire recepte
With lozdes many, and wozshipfully was mette

In lenton next, duke John his father dyed

Of

* The commons. Edit. alt.
of was also. Edit. alt. ... Full rise.
* with. Edit. alt. = Hedyng :. Furth.

Of Lancaster, of weakenes and of age
Entombed faire, at sainct Poules buryed
His heire in fraunce should haue his heritage
In Maye then next, the kyng with baronage
To Ireland went, with hoste and greate power
The wild Irisshe to wynne, and to conquere

¶ For then Roger therle of Marche was slain
With wild Irisshe, in bushment for hym laye
His soonnes then, full young were bothe twein
In ward were take, vnto the kyng that daye
And then the kyng made full fell araye
In euery shire, blanke charters to bee sealid
For cause his actes should not bee repeiled

Blancke chartres.

In the yere of Christ a. M. was then clere
Three C. also[1] foure score and eke ninetene
And of his reigne the twoo[2] & twenty yere
Begynnyng at Midsomer, then as I meane
Whiche afterward turned hym to mikell tene
He was then landed[3], in Ireland with his hoste
Of chiualrie and power with the moste

kyng Richard his votage into Irelād

The.C.xcv.Chapiter.

¶ Howe duke Henry of Herford and of Leicestre landed in Holderneſſe in the same yere, and Thomas Arundell archebishop of Cantorbury that before was exiled, and howe duke Henry swore to therle of Northūberland and to sir Henry Percy wardeyns of the Marches and to therle of Westmerland and to other lordes of ỹ North.

1 als.

1 That were but. 2 Time. 3 Londe.

AT whiche tyme so ỹ duke Henry toke land
At Reuẽspozn i Yozkeshire as was knowe
Tharchbishop Thomas I vnderstand
Of Cauntozbury Arondell that was lowe
Bothe of ryches and gold as menne sawe
Foz the kyng had hym out of the land exiled
Fro Cauntozbury, neuer moze to bee reconsiled

¶ In Holderneſſe, he landed with fourty menne
Wher the lozdes of Lyncolneshire hym mette
Bothe Wyloughby Roos, and Darcy then
And Beaumoũt also, w Penouns pzoudly bette
By ozdinaunce of Henry Percy sette
Erle of Nozthumberland, and sir Henry
His soonne, wardeyns of the Marche seuerally

¶ To Dancaster he rode full manfully
Wher bothe the wardeyns of the Marche mette
Then with the duke, with hostes great & chiualry
Therle also of Westmerland was sette
With his power, as then it was his debt
Foz he had wed the dukes suster dere
A full good lady without any were

¶ Ther swoze the duke vpon the sacrament
To claime no moze, but his mothers heritage
His fathers landes, and his wifes in good entent
And to laye downe, bothe tare and tallage
Whiles he might liue, but of the baronage
And all the estates somouned in parlyament
Thought it nedefull and therto whole assent

¶ The swoze also, the kyng in gouernaunce

To

To be put by good and hole prouision
And Chesshyre men, for theyr misgouernaunce
To voyde out of his house of ciuill condicion
And officers of good disposicion
To rule his house, like his estate royall
Thus was his othe there made in speciall.

¶Then rode they forth to Bristowe, were the lay
Scrop and Bussche, and also syr Henry Grene
And headed theim, but Baget fled away
And then the kyng, at Flynt as was sene
Great monstres made, of people that was kene
Whiche toke his wage, and came to duke Henry
And rode ay forth, with hym full redely

¶In this meane whyle, therle of Northūberlāde
Treated with the kyng, that tyme in Conwaye
To mete with duke Henry, then in Englande
And brought hym then, to hym in meke araye
With litell speche to Chester then the waye
They rode anone and put hym there in warde
And so to London, from thens came southwarde.

The.C.xcvi.Chapiter

¶Howe duke Henry of Lancaster was made kyng, by resignacion, renunciacion and deposayle and election of the parliamente and crouned at Westmynster on saynte Edwardes daye in Octobre.

AND set hym in the toure, where he resigned
His right, his realme, & his royall croune
To duke Hēry, which no mā thē repugned
And there he made a playn renunciacion

1 Bagot. 2 Mustres. 3 Were. 4 Came

Of all his righte, for whiche by prouision
The parliament then, for his misgouernaunce
Deposed hym so then, by greate ordinaunce.

Then went they to a free election
Seyng the youth then of the Mortimer
That erle of the Marche, by trewe direccion
Was then, and heire of England then moste nere
To kyng Richarde, as well then did appere
Consydred also the might of duke Henry,
They chose hym kyng, there durst none it deny.

Therle of Northumberlande, then had sent
His power home, by councell of duke Henry
So did his sonne Henry, that truly ment
Supposyng well the duke wolde not vary
From his othe, ne in no wyse contrary
And he and his, kepte all theyr power
Tyll he was crouned kyng, as it did appere.

Therles two, then of Northumberlande
Of Worcester, and syr Henry Percy
And therle also of Westmerlande
Councelled hym then, fro his oth not to varye
And though at eue he did to theim applie
On the morowe, by a pryue counsayl
He would be crouned kyng without fayle.[3]

The. C. xcvii. Chapiter.

Henry the fourth kyng of Englande and of ffraunce, was electe by ỹ hole parliament, the morowe after Michelmasse daye, the yere of our Lorde, a thousande thre hundreth foure score and nyneteue, and reigned. xiiii. yere, & died at Westmynstre

[1] Hys.
[2] To he were crouned for.
[3] Any faith.

mynster the. xix. daye of Marche in the yere of Chriſte a thouſande foure hundreth and.xiii.and of his owne reygne the.xiiii.yere.

Kyng Henry ỳ fourth

THis duke Henry, by great loue of the land
Of many lordes, and of the commontee
Tharchebyſhop Arondell toke on hande
To croune hym then, in royall maieſtee
On ſaynt Edwardes day, with great ſolempnitee
But kyng he was the morowe after Wighelmeſſe
His reygne begynnyng that day without diſtreſſe

Therle of Warwike, and therle of Arondell
That exiled were, and the Lorde Cobham eke
With all theyr frendes, ỳ kyng Richard did expell
The dukes frendes of Glouceſter, nought to ſeke
Whiche then began for to encreaſe and eke
Thrugh all the realme, with kyng Henry to ſtād
To croune hym kyng, that tyme of all Englande.

An hundreth thouſande cryed all at ones
At Weſtmynſter, to croune hym for kyng
So hated they kyng Rychard, for the nones
For his myſrule, and wrong gouernyng
For taxes and for blanke charters ſealyng
For murder of duke Thomas of Woodſtoke
That loued was well, more then all the floke

The great parliament, then he made reherſed
The dukes of Almarle, Excestre and Surry
He depryued and the iudgement reuerſed
That then was made, & gaue full wylfully
Agayne Woodſtoke and Warwyke for enuie
Arondell and the lorde Cobham full trewe

Whiche

Whiche was reuerſed and reuoked newe.

¶ The duke of Almarle, was then erle Rutlande
The duke of Surry, erle of kent was agayn
And eke the duke of Exceſter I vnderſtande
Of Hungtyngdon therle was to be fayn
The marques eke of Dorſet was full bayn
Of Somerſet erle agayn to bene
He chaſtiſed theim, no feller as was ſene

¶ Therle of Glouceſter, was lord Spencer
Then ſet agayn, to his firſt eſtate
The kyng then made his eldeſt ſonne full clere
The prince of Wales, in parliament hole create
Duke of Cornewayle and erle denominate
Of Cheſter alſo, that then was yong of age
But yet he was that tyme of hye courage

The. C. xcviii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng gaue the Conſtablerie and the Marſhalſee to therles of Northumberlande and Weſtmerlande wyth certayn landes, and how ſyr Robert Umfreuile was made knight of the Garter & captayn of Rokeſburgh, & faught on fote on ffulhoplelwe and wan the feld with victorie and was made lorde Umfreuile.

AT this tyme the kyng graũted by parliamẽt
The Conſtablery certayn of Englande
In heritage ſo at his coronoment
To therle then of Northumberlande
Alſo of Man thiſſe I vnderſtande
To holde of hym and of his heyres alwaye
By ſeruyce royall, as wrytten was that daye

¶ And

¶And to therle of Westmerlande also
The Marshallsee of Englande then he gaue
All Richemond fee, that was in Englande tho
By patent also, for terme of life to haue
The lordes all he pleased, so God me saue
With office ay, ozels with lande or rent
With liberall herte, as to a prince appent.

¶And whyles that parliament so did endure
The Scottes rode by North, and sore had stroyed
In Cokedale then, where Umfreuyle had cure
That with theim faught, & had theim sore anoyed
At Fulhaplowe, on fote he theim acloyed
For there he toke syr Richard Rotherforde
His sonnes fyue, full fell of dede and worde.

¶Syr Wyllyam Stiwarde, also he toke
The lorde of Gordowne, he put to flight
And Willibarde, the felde there then forsoke
And prisoners brought home, well mo at night
Then he had men with hym the felde to fight
For whiche the kyng, hym had ay after in herte
Consyderyng well his knightly aperte.

The. C.xcix. Chapiter.

¶Howe the kyng Henry remeued kyng Richard from place to place, by nyght in preuey wise, in whiche tyme therles of Kent, Salisbury and Huntyngdon, the lorde Spencer and syr Raulfe Lomley were headed.

THe kyng thē sent, kyng Richard to Ledis
There to be kepte surely in preuitee
Fro thēs after, to Pykeryng wēt he nedes
And

a Als.

1 and. 2 Fulhope Lawn. 3 Lady Warde.

4 Juperte.

And to Knauesburgh, after led was he
But to Pountfrete last, where he did die
Bothe therles, of Kent and Salisbury
Therle of Huntyngdon, and Spēcers sothelye.

¶ And syr Raulfe Lomley with mo in company
After Chrystmasse, thought to haue slayn the kyng
They were distured, and fled awaye in hye
But they were slayn at Circester fleyng
By the commons, with theim there fyghtyng
Therles of Kent and of Salysbury
And syr Raulfe Lomley in theyr companye.

¶ The lorde Spencer, take was vpon the sea
At Bristowe was headed and decollate
Therle also of Huntyngdon did flee
And brought vnto the countesse of estate
Of Herforde then, who had hym forth algate
To Plasshe, where she made men hym hede
Without counsayll of any lorde or rede.

¶ Syr Thomas shelly, set full hye in pride
And Mawbleyn with Ferebye drawe and honge
Syr Barnard Brockeys, was heded theim beside
The byshop also of Carleile theim among
In Westmynster, his life there to prolonge
Perpetually by iudgement was commytte
Among his brethren in order for to sytte.

The. CC. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng Richard was brought deade frō Pountfret to Powles, and after buried at Langley, for menne shoulde haue no remembraunce of hym. And howe syr Roberte

Robert Umfreuple faught with ỳ Scottes at Redeswere and had the felde and the victorye.

IN march next after, kig Rychard thē was
Fro Poumfret brought with great (dede solempnyte
When sayde forhungered he was & lapped in lede
At Poules his masse was done and diryge
In hers royall, semely to royalte
The kyng & lordes, clothes of golde there offerde
Some. viii. some. ix. vpon his hers were proferde.

¶ At Westminster then dyd they so the same
When truste he shuld there haue buryed bene
In that mynster lyke to a prynce of name
In his owne tombe, together with the quene
Anne, that afore his fyrste wyfe had bene
But then the kyng, hym faste to Langley sent
There in the freres to be buryed secretement

¶ On Michelmasse day, next after his coronaciō
Sir Robert then my mayster Umfreuple
At Redeswyres, withoute excusacyon
With Richarde Rotherforde fought that whyle
And toke the stewarde, as I can compyle
And James Douglas, with the lorde Seton
And prisoners many, for to geue raunson

¶ Two hundreth men, vpon ỳ felde were slayne
Thre hundreth fled, some hole, some maymed sore
That dyed at home, with sorowe and ẅ payne
Some died homeward, ỳ home they came nomore
Where so he fought vnto his men right thore
A mery worde he wolde saye or they met

¶ To

1 Men. 2 Shuld Hem. 3 Fast haue.
4 Burie. 5 Seacepiral. 6 Sir Richard. 7 of Seton.
8 Then for to.

To glad theyr hartes, enemyes to ouerset.

The kynges voiage into Scotlande.

¶The.ii. yere of his reygne, then he went
In harueſt tyme, ſo into Scotlande
And Edenburgh, with the countre brente
In whiche tyme the Scottes brent our lande
All Bamburgh ſhyre in Northumberlande
For both wardeyns, with the kyng were gone
No wardeyne there, but huſbandes by their owne

The.CC.i. Chapiter.

¶Howe Owen of Glendoure roſe in Wales againe the king and made warre on the lorde Gray Ruthin, and toke the lorde Graye and ſyr Edmonde Mortymer.

THe king came home, and to London went
At Michelmaſſe, wher thē he had meſſage
That Owen Glendoure, then felly blent
In Englande ſore, and did full great damage
For cauſe the lorde Graye helde his herytage
And to the kyng of it, full ſore had playned
No remedye gate, ſo was he then demeaned

¶The lorde Gray Ruthin did hym great wrong
Deſtroyed his lande, and he did hym the ſame
So both Marches, deſtroyed were full longe
But Owen wanne him ſelfe, eche day great name
Of vaſſelrie, of gentyls and of fame
That he them did, for whiche to him they drewe
And became his men, & to him were full trewe

¶So on a daye, the lorde Graye, and he met
With great power vpon eyther ſyde

Where

1 Their enemyes. 2 To the kynge.
3 Brent, ſlain, ect, etc. 4 So. 5 Outrage.
6 Ruthyn. 7 Walſhemyn. 8 For gentilmen.

Where then they faught in batayle sore bet
And toke hym then his prysoner that tyde
And there the felde, he had with mikyll pryde
Greate people toke and slewe, & home he went
The lorde Graye he raunsomed at his entent

¶ Syr Edmonde then Mortimer warred sore
Upon Owen, and dyd hym mekyll tene
But at laste, Owen laye hym before
Where in batell they faught, as well was sene
Where Owen toke him prisoner, as then ful kene
With mekell folke, on eyther syde slayne
And set Edmonde in prysone, and great payne

¶ He wrote vnto the kyng, for great socoure
For he had made with Owen his fynaunce
To whom ỹ kyng wolde graunt then no fauoure
Ne nought he wolde thẽ make him cheuesaunce
For to comforte his foes disobeysaunce
Wherfore he laye, in feters and sore prysone
For none payment of his greate raunsone

The.CC.iii.Chapiter.

¶ The Earle of Northumberlande, & his sonne Henry Percy stroke the batayle of Hamildon with the Scottes, & toke syxe Earles, and discomfyte.xl.thousande Scottes.

¶ In the.iii. yere therle of Fyffe & Murrey
Of Athell and Angos, & Douglas also
And of Menteth, wᵗ barons fell ỹ daye
The nomber was.xl.thousande and mo
Had brent the lande, by south Northward tho
To Homildon, where on holy rode daye

The

1 Fulle sore. 2 The lande.
3 Thus ye. 4 Fyr 5 Murry

The earle them met in good & stronge araye

This sonne also, Henry Percy was there
George of Dunbar, was in theyr company
And with the Scottes ỹ daye fought full sere
Discomfyted them, and had the victorye
Six earles taken and .xl. thousande playnly
Some fled, some died, some maimed there for euer
That to Scotlande, agayne came they neuer

The kynges voyages into Wales.

The kyng Henry, thryce to wales went
In the haye tyme, and harueste dyuers yere
In euery tyme were mystes and tempestes sent
Of wethers foule, that he had neuer power
Glendour to noye, but euer his carpage clere
Owen had at certayne straites and passage
And to our hoste dyd full greate damage

The king had neuer, but tempest foule & raine
As longe as he was ay in Wales grounde
Rockes & mystes, windes & stormes euer certaine
All men trowed, ỹ witches it made that stounde
The cõmens all, then of all Englande grounde
Warred his gate, to Wales euery yere
For haye and corne were loste both two in fere

Whiche made greate derth, & of catell morayne
And euen ay in hylles and in mountaynes
Kepte him ful strong, ỹ king ay wrought in vaine
The king might not, but euer more held ỹ pleines
And waste his owne lordshippes, & his demaines
And full great parte Owen had and occuppyed
By processe so in Wales, and victoryed

The

[illegible] . Then came, . he did .

[illegible] . 3 Kinge . 4 Owayne .

¶Therle Henry, then of Northumberland
Brought to the kyng, his owne prisoner
Therle of Fyffe, was then I vnderstand
Heire vnto the duke of Albany clere
Regent that was of Scotland without pere
But sir Henry his soonne, then would not bryng
His prisoners in no wise to the kyng

¶But the kyng he prayed for Mortimer
That raunsomed might he been w his frendes so
He saied hym nay, for he was taken prisoner
By his consent and treson to his foo
Whom he would not comfort for to ouergoo
The prince his landes, ne his owne to destroye
For ay he had greate trust, y he should hym noye

¶The kyng hym blamed, for he toke not Owen
When he came to hym on his assuraunce
And he aunswered then to the kyng again
He might not so kepe his affiaunce
To shame hym self with suche a variaunce
The kyng blamed hym for his prisoner
Therle Douglas, for cause he was not there

¶And saied he should hym fette, but he hym sede
Sir Henry sawe no grace for Mortimer
His wifes brother, he went awaye vnkende
To Berwyk so, and after came no nere
Afore thei mette, at Shrowesbury in fere
Wher then thei faught, for cause of his entent
He purposed had, Mortimer his coronoment

¶The lordes all of England had hym hight

¶ His

And Owayn also on leuerne hym to mete
Except therle of Stafford young to fight
By their letters, vnder their seales mete
But in the poinct, thei brake all their behete
And he was slain, and all the cause conselid
Why he the feld tooke and the kyng appelid

The. CC. iii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe for therle of Marche his right, sir Henry Percy and sir Thomas Percy his vncle erle of Worcester, faught with the kyng and were slain at the battaill of Shrewesbury wher all ꝑ lordes deceiued them the yere of Christ a thousand foure hundred and thre and of his reigne the fourth yere, that were bounde to theim by their seales except therle of Stafford, whiche letters I sawe in the castell of Werkeworth when I was constable of it vnder my lord sir Robert Umfreuille who had that castell of kyng Henry his gift by forfeture of therle of Northumberland.

ON Madleyn euen was[2] on the Saterdaye
After long trete, the prince began to fight
The yere of Christ a thousād was no nay
Foure hundred also and three, therto full right
When the battaill was streken of mikell[4] might
And of the kyng then was the fourth yere
Of his reigne, accompted well and clere

¶ His vncle dere, was with hym there dedde
His father came not out of Northumberland
But failed hym foule, without witte or rede
But to the kyng he came I vnderstand
Holy submittyng hym vnto his royall hand[5]

Whom

[2] Als. [4] Ilk. [5] Than. [3] That. [4] Great.

[5] In scarcetie this in lowte grace to founder.

Whom then he putte to hold in soze pzisone
With twoo menne of his owne in Bagyngton[1]

This castelles, all his mēne held then full strōg
To tyme the kyng had, graunt hym plener grace
But the lozdes, in counsaill then[2] emong
Hight hym to help, the sixte yere at the Pasche
But none durst come that tyme, so fell the case
But bishop Scrop and therle marshall
The lozd Bardolfe, then of our[3] lozdes all

The.CC.xii.Chapiter.

Howe in ỳ yere of his reigne & in ỳ yere of Thzist a thousand foure hundzed and fyue, master Rychard Scrope archebishop of Yozke, Thomas Mombzay erle marshall sir John Lamplewe and sir Wyllyam Plompton were hedded byside Yozke.

In lenton after he came home to his land
By perliamēt, whole deliuered and acquit
And twoo yere after, in peace I vnderstād
With kyng Henry, full peasebly did sitte
Then in the yere as menne remembze it
Of his reigne the sixte, the bishop Scozp went
Therle marshall with hym of one entent

To Yozkes Moze, and ther assembled power
Of their owne, and their frendes also
Of therles menne of Nozthumberland that were
To the nombze of twenty thousand tho
Afoze the daye, assigned that was so
By therle then of Nozthumberland
That there Chesten with theim should haue[4] stād

[1] At Babyngton. [2] Yeat the. [3] Thoyr
[4] We. [5] Of Yoyr [6] Ther stand.

¶ With other lordes that were to theim assent
But the bishop and therle marshall
Wher slain afore the daye of assignement
Betwene theim made afore in speciall
Hedded were then, nere yorke as then did fall
Sir John Lamplewe and sir Wyllyam Plomtō
With the bishop were hedded there for treson

The. CC. v. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lord Hastynges, the lord ffauconbridge and sir John Coluile of ẏ Dale and his make, and sir John Ruthyn were hedded at Duresme by ẏ kyng for therles of Northumberland & then he gate therles castelles and stroke of seuen heddes at Berwyke.

(take

THe lord Hastynges at Duresme was then
The lord Faucōbrige together in cōpany
Sir John Coluile of ẏ Dale & his make
Sir John Ruthyn[1] that knightes were full mālý
To therle of Northumberland openly
Were hedded there all foure vpon a daye
And to Werkworth remeuid in greate araye

¶ Wher the castell with in aweke was yolde
Unto the kyng, after assautes fell and sore
The casteleyns to passe free wher thei would
With horse and harnes, without chalenge more
Then to Alnwike[3], the kyng remeued thore
Wher the capitains vnto the kyng then sent
Wyn Berwyke ones, he should haue his entent

¶ So went he then to Berwyke without delaye
With assaut and shotte, of gonnis strong ẏ were

He

1 And richard le nayle Knyght. 2 Sir John Griffith.

3 Alnewyke.

He had it then, and ther hedded on a daye
The barons sonne of Graistoke taken there
Sir Henry Bowton and Blenkenslop therfore
And Prendirgest ran on the sea also
And Tuwile with other squiers twoo

¶ To Aluwike then, the kyng laied siege again
Without assaute, by whole conuencion
Henry Percy of Athel, with hert fain
And Wyllyam Clifford, without discencion
The castell yeld at the kynges entencion
With horse and harnes, without enpechement
Or forfeture or els impediment

¶ Prodhow, Langley and also Cokirmouth
Aluham Newsted, deliuered were anone
Thei remoued then furth in to the south
Therle of Northumberland was then gone
Afore Northward, to Scotland with great mone
The lord Bardolf with hym thither went
And there abode, with their suppowelment

¶ The sommer nert, by sea to Wales thei went
Unto Glendour, and after then to Brytain
And so by sea, to Flaunders or they stent
The other sommer, to Scotland came again
By thest sea, and ther thei did remain
To the winter then, of snowe full depe
That thei were slain, for whom ỹ folke sore wepe

¶ The nynth yere was then of the kyng Henry
In Feueryer afore the fastyngange
Of Christ his date a thousand certainly

Foure hundred and eight, counted emong
At Bramham more with speres sharp and long
In Yorkshire, so the Rokeby with theim mette
Shrief of the shire, with power that he gette

The.C.C.vi. Chapiter

¶ Howe the kyng his soonne of Scotlād & heire James was taken on the sea and brought vnto the kyng and then dyed Owayn and the kyng of Scotland.

THe same yere also, ý prince thē of Scotlād
Upon the sea sailyng, then in to Fraunce
Was taken & brought to ý kyng of Eng=
Eleuen yere old was he then, by remembraūce(lād
Whom the kyng then putte in gouernaunce
For like a prince, as to a kyng appent
In all honour as was conuenient

The tenth yere then of the kyng his date
The kyng of Scotland, and Owayn of Glendor
His soonne also, the world forsoke then algate
And dyed awaye, of theim then was no more
The prince of Scotland then was kyng therfore
And Wales all became the kyng his menne
In rest and peace without rebellion then

In that same yere Gilbert Umfreuile
Lord was then of Riddildale in keyme
That passid not seuentene yere that while
And ward was to the kyng that tyme
But seuentene yere of age was that tyme
At Arrays then saught full worthely

With

[a] Also and. [b] Als.
[1] he had.
[2] And of.
[3] Ye gouerned more like a gentill to them then borne.
[4] he ben.

With George Turnuile, in lystes syngulerly

With axe and sworde, and dagger vpon foote
Twenty strokes with euery wepen smyten
Undeparted without any mote
And on the morowe, there they syten
Twenty courses, with speres together hitten
A quarter bare vnarmed and vnarayed
Saue there serkes slewe with speres vnslayed.

The.CC.vii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Robert Umfreuile went into Scotlande and lay in the Scottishe sea.xiiii.dayes, and euery daye faught with ỹ Scottes, somedaye on the northsyde, and some daye on the southsyde, and gatte.xiiii.greate shippes, & brent there Galiot with ordinaunce and sore battayll in the Scottishe sea afore Edynburghe and at the Blakenesse.

The yere eleuenth, of this same kyng Henry
Syr Robert Umfreuile toke the see
With.x.sayles, to kepe it notably
When trewce was taken in specialtee
Betwene Scotlande and vs in certentee
To the Scottishe sea, both by sea and lande
And to Wonshole on our syde I vnderstande

In the Scottishe sea, with his shippes he laye
Where.xiiii.shippes he toke with his manhede
And faught full sore, at full sea euery daye
Sometyme vpon the northside so in dede
And some tyme on the southsyde out of drede
With the duke of Albany and of Fyffe
And his proude scottes, ỹ faught then full ryffe.

With

1 Prouerbe. 2 In some sore,
3 Some. 4 Parte slewe, 5 Wonsholle.
6 Fra Leyth. 7 Fra some tyme on the south syde vnto

¶ With therle of Douglas, and theim of Lothia
And brought his fiers, brennyng vpon the sea
In botes and cogges ordened by theim than
With other botes, with mē of armes in propertee
And archers good, well pauyshed in specialitee
That brent theyr shippes and theyr galiot
A shyppe of auantage was then God wote

¶ When he had ben, there. xiiii. dayes to thende
With his prises, he came to England
Full of cloth, wollen & lynnen, that land to amend
Pytche and tarre, both for fre and bonde
For to amende the shepes of our lande
Floure and mele of whete and rye he solde
The market he so amended manyfolde

¶ And wood he had, and other marchaundise
Woll and hide, and yron great quantitee
Woll skynnes, cloth of golde and spyceries
Jewelles in chestes and stones of precioustee
And other marchauntes in speciousstee
And prisoners also, and mykell flaxe
Wynes swete, and mykell poleyn waxe.

The. CC. viii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe syr Robert Umfreuile brent Pebles on there market daye, and made his men to mete their clothe with speres & bowes, and after the Scottes called hym Robyne Mend-market, and his neuewe brente Jedworth and Teuidale sone after.

¶ At Pebles long, afore that tyme. iiii. yere
He brent the toune, vpon their market daye
And met theyr cloth, w speres & bowes sere

By

1 course. 2 one. 3 Into. 4 The 5 Wrought both.
6 And marchaundyse gotten with strange handes.
7 Of diuers Wynes he then gote crete plente.
8 right muche. 9 There.

By his biddyng without any naye
Wherfore the Scottes from thence forthward ay
Called hym, Robyn mendmarket in certayn
For his measures were so large and playn.

Robyn mēdmarket.

This neuewe Gilbert, and he the.xi.yere
Of kyng Henry, vpon the water of Calme than
And also on Roule and Jedworth forest clere
Forrayed full sore, with many a manly man
His banner first, there was displayed then
When he was clerely but.xiiii.yere nomore
When his vncle had battled hym so sore.

The.CC.ix.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the prince Henry of Wales sent power to the duke of Burgoyn to helpe hym, the two Umfreuiles, syr John Graye with other, where Umfreuile with the Englyshe men helde the felde for he would not kyll the prysoners, as the duke of Burgoyn had ordeyned

The prince Henry, to duke Philip then sent
That of Burgoyn was so both syr & lorde
Syr Gilbert Umfreuile, & his vncle vera-
His coulyn also syr Jhō Gray, as mē recorde (mēt
With many other worthy, with speare & sweorde
Willyam Porter agayn the duke of Orleaunce
And his armynakes with men of great defence

At Seyncle then, agayn ỹ duke of Orleaūce
And the duke of Burbon by all a daye
Thenglyshe faught with great sufficience
And wanne the brydge, with battayll bet awaye
Tharmynakes, with many sore affraye

Where

1 Acc.

1 Came. 2 Whan. 3 Eighteene.
4 Wroysed hade hym there. 5 Sire.
6 Seynteo. 7 Full grete.

Where Umfreuile proclaymed was erle of Kyme
Cheiften was of all Englyshe that tyme.

¶ At Durdan also, and at Etham agayn
They faught all newe, where then they had ỹ feld
And prisoners many they did opteyne
The which the duke of Burgoyn wold haue weld
Because to hym they were so vnbelde
Cheim to haue slayn he cõmaunded then, eche ca-
His prisoners to kyll then in certeyn (ptayn

¶ To whiche Gilbert Umfreuile erle of Kyme
Aunswered for all his felowes and there men
They shuld all die together at a tyme
Or theyr prisoners, so shulde be slayn then
And with that toke the felde as folke did ken
With all theyr men, and all theyr prisoners
To die with theim, as worshyp it requyers

¶ The said they wer not come thyther as bouchers
To kyll the folke in market or in feire
Ne theim to sell, but as armes requiers
Theim to gouerne without any dispeyre
As prysoners owe home agayn repeire
For fyne paying, as lawe of armes wyll
And not on stockes nor in market theim to sell

¶ With whõ syr John Graye, as his cousyn dere
And all Englyshe with many other of Fraunce
With their prysoners full familier
Batayled in felde, with full strong ordinaunce
More like to fight, then to make obeysaunce
And helde therle of Kyme for theyr cheiftayn

To

To lyue and dye vnder his baner certayne

¶ The duke Philyppe, full of sapyence
Sawe his manhode, and his knightly courage
Lothe was to lese his noble aduenture
By treaty, and by other tender message
Of prisoners, graunt them to do auauntage
And hym withheide with all his feloship
As Earle of Kyme, proclaymed of great worshyp.

¶ Then after sone, oure Englishemen anone
Came home agayne, w great and hye rewarde
Whome then the duke, by letter cõmende alone
In writyng specifyed, with herte inwarde
Unto the prynce, that sent them to hymwarde
And thanked them greatly of his seruyce
In his warres shewed agayne his enemies

¶ The king discharged ỹ prince fro his coũsayle
And set my lorde syr Thomas in his stede
Chief of counsayle, for the kynges more auayle
For whiche the prynce of wrath and wilfull hede
Agayne hym made debate and frowardhede
With whom the kyng toke parte, & helde the felde
To tyme the prince, vnto the king hym yelde

¶ The king then made his sõne duke of Clarẽce
My lorde Thomas, and sent hym into Fraũce
To helpe the duke Lewys of Dyrpaunce
Agayne the duke of Burgoyne at instaunce
Of my lorde Thomas, againe ỹ prince suraunce
Whiche was thẽ cause also of theyr heuynesse
So to refuse duke Philyppes loue causelesse

But

¶ But then the duke of Clarence with power
Came to the duke Lowes of Orlyaunce
Kig Charles brother, who made hym noble chere
And hym receyued, with full hye reuerence
They two warryed, with mighty sukkycience
Upon the duke of Burgoyne, and hym outrayed
That he went into Burgoyne, all forsmayed

¶ Then rode the duke of Clarence into Guien
Through Fraunce, with hoste then full royall
And kepte that lande, w helpe of duke Lewis the
In whiche meane while, kyng Henry gan fall
In great sykneſſe, that his strength did pall
With contryte herte, and humble yelden chere
He sayde, O lorde, thy mercy I requyre.

The. CC. x. Chapiter.

¶ The wordes that the kynge sayde at hys deathe of hyghe complaynt, but nought of repentaſice of vsurpement of the realme, ne of the restorement of ryght heyres to the crowne

O Lorde he sayde, O God omnipotent
Nowe se I well, thy godhede loueth me
That suffred neuer my foes to haue theyr
Of myne persone in myne aduersyte (entent
Ne in myne sycknesſe, ne in myne infyrmyte
But ay haste kepte it fro theyr maleuolence
And chastysed me, by thy beneuolence

¶ Lorde I thanke the, with all my herte
With all my soule, and my spirytes clere
This wormes mete, this caryon full vnquerte

That

1 Lorde 2 Foule.

That some tyme thought in worlde it had no pere
This face so foule, that leprous doth apere
That here afore, I haue had suche a pryde
To purtraye ofte, in many place full wyde.

Of which ryght, nowe ỹ porest of this lande
Except only, of theyr benignyte
Wolde loth to looke vpon, I vnderstande
Of whiche good lorde, that thou so vysyte me
A thousande tymes the lorde in trinyte
With all my herte, I thanke the and cõmende
Into thyne handes, my soule withouten ende.

And dyed so in fayth, and hole creaunce
At Cauntorbury buryed, with greate reuerence
As a kyng shulde be, w̃ all kynde of circumstaũce
Accordyng vnto his hye magnifycence
Besyde the prynce Edward, with great expence
Of Christ was then, a.M.yere full oute
Four hundreth eke, and thirtene oute of doubte.

O very God, what torment had this kyng
To remember in bryef, and shorte entent
Some in his sherte, put ofte tyme venemyng
And some in meate and drinke great poysonment
Some in his hose, by great ymagenement
Some in bedstraw, pr̃os sharpe groũd wel a whet
Enuenemed sore, to slee him, if he had on them set

The conceyte of the maker.

Some made for hym, diuers enchauntmentes
To waste hym oute, and vtterly destroye
And some gaue hym batayle, full felonyment
In felde within his realme, hym for to noye

And

And on them selfes, the hurte and all the anoye
Ay fell at ende that honged were and heded
As traytours ought to bene in euery stede

¶ This kyng dyed, of his reygne in the yere
Fourtene accompted, of Marche ỹ. xix. daye
The sondaye was then by Kalendre
Of whome the realme, great ioye at first had ay
But afterwarde they loued not his araye
At his begynnyng, full hye he was cõmende
With cõmons then, & also lytell at the ende.

The. CC. xi. Chapiter.

¶ Henry the fyfth, kyng of Englande and of ffraunce, began to reygne the twenty daye of Marche ỹ was saynte Cuthbertes daye, and was crowned the ninth daye of Apryl, the yere of Thriste, a thousande foure hundreth twenty & two, after he had reigned. ix. yere and an halfe. And in the houre that he was crowned and anointed he was chaunged from all vyces vnto vertuous lyfe, and lycensed the folke to offer vnto Richarde Scrop, and buryed kyng Rychard at Westmynster, and graunted to Henry Percy his landes.

HEnry his sõne, ỹ prynce of wales was thã
On saynt Cuthbertes day in Marche folowynge
Kyng was so, as I remember canne
On passyon sondaye, after was this kyng
Anoynted and crowned, without taryeng
The ninth daye, it was of Apryll so
With stormes fell, and haylestones greate also

¶ In his fyrste yere, the lorde Cobham heretike
Confedered

1 Fate. 2 accounte in. 3, But the.
4 the. 5 M.CCCC.xiij. 6 Then it.

Confedered with lollers insapient Lorde Cob-
Agayne the churche arose, and was full lyke ham.
It to haue destroyed by theyr entendment
Had not the kyng then made suppowelment
And put hym fro the felde, by good direccyon
That sembled were, by greate insurreccyon.

¶Then fled the lorde Cobham herroryous
To Wales, so with lollers many one
Mysyng in his opinyon venemous
Howe that he myght destroye the churche anone
But God that syt in heuen aboue alone
Knowyng his herte, naked of all good entent
Let hym betake, to haue his iudgement

¶And put he was to prysone in the towre
Of whiche he dyd escape awaye by nyght
And take was agayne within an houre
And after sone dampned, by lawe and ryght
For heresye, by the clergy in syght
And brent he was to asshes deed and pale
Through cursed lyfe, thus came he in greate bale

¶The houre he was crowned and anoynt
He chaunged was, of all his olde condicyon
Full vertuous he was, fro poynt to poynt
Grounded all newe, in good opinyon
For passyngly without comparyson
Then set vpon all ryght and conscyence
A newe man made, by all good regimence

¶He gaue leue then of good deuocyon
All men to offer to byshop Scrop expresse

Withoute

Without lettynge, or any questyon
He graunted also, of his hye worthynesse
To laye the kyng Rycharde, and Anne doutlesse
His wyfe that was, at Westmynster buryed
As kyng Richard hym selfe had signifyed

And fro the freres of Langley where he lays
He caryed hym to Westmynster anone
And buryed hym of royall greate araye
With the quene Anne, in tombe of marbel stone
Full royally arayed, as royals by them sone
And to Henry Percy, he graũted his landes clere
That to the duke of Bedforde, then geuen were

My lorde of Clarence, fro Guyã home agayne
Came to the kyng, with ioye & greate pleasaunce
The seconde yere, of whome the kyng was fayne
At Leycester then, as made is remembraunce
In his parlyament, without varyaunce
His brother John, duke of Bedforde create
His brother vmfrey, duke of Glouceſter of estate

Thomas Beaufort, ỹ was earle of Dorcet
He made duke then, of Excester that whyle
He gaue in charge, that tyme withouten let
Unto syr Robert there Umfreuyle
By his wysdome, and manhode that whyle
To treate with the Scottes, to get Henry Percy
Layde in hostage, by his grauntsires foly.

The.CC.xii.Chapiter.

Howe

¶ Howe sir Robert Umfreuile faught at Geteryng the third pere with the Scottes, that had but seuen score speres and three hundreth bowes, on Maudelyn day and discomfited of theim.iiii.M.menne & made chase twelfe mile on theim in to their owne land, and went with the kyng to Harflete to the siege with whom I went thether.

THen was it warre betwene vs & Scotland
That sir Robert Umfreuile might it spede
But at Geteryng wᵗ Scottes hād for hād
He faught on fote, on Maudelyn daye in deede
Wher eightene score Scottes were take I rede
Three score slain, a thousand putte to flight
With four.C.mēne, discōfited theim fourth right

¶ Twelfe mile thē, he made on theim great chase
In to their land, and home he came again
To his castell of Rokesburgh in that case
Whiche he had then in kepyng soth to sain
Of his greate labour, in harte beyng full fain
With prisoners, many one hurte full sore
Hym self and his, that then had wounded thore

¶ At Lammasse next, the kyng then as he laye
At Southampton, therle of Cambridge toke
The lord Scorp also, and eke sir Thomas Graye
And hedded theim, the cause was who so looke
Emong theim selfes, for thei this counsaill toke
And purposed therle of Marche to croune
Kyng of England, by their prouision

The.CC.xiii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng wēt in to Normādy and sieged Harefleete and gate it with greate peyn and losse of menne But who maye cast of rennyng hoūdis and many racches but he must lese some of theim.

THE kyng held furth by sea to Normandy
With all his hoste, at Lydcans landed thē
And laied a siege to Hareflete myghtely
On euery side, by land and water wanne
With bulwerkes stoute, and bastell he began
In whiche he putte therle of Huntyngton
Therle of Kent also of greate renoune

¶ Whiche erles twoo, w̄ other to theim assigned
Cornwaile and Gray, Steward also and Porter
Full greate assautes, made eche daye & repugned
Whiles at last, thei bette the towne toures their
And what the kyng, with fagottes that there were
And his connyng werching vnder the wall
With his gūnes castyng, thei made ȳ toure to fall

¶ And their bulwerke brent with shot of wildfyre
At whiche place then, therles twoo vp sette
Their baners bothe, without any hyre.
The kyng therwith, his gonnes the walles bette
The duke did so, of Clarence without lette
On the ferreside, wher as he then laye
Therle Mountague, did well ther alwaye

¶ The lord Gawcort that thē was their capitain
Of Hareflete tho with other of the toune
Offred then the toune to the kyng full fain
And he with other, to stand at the kynges direccīō
Then made he there, his vncle of greate renoune

Capitain

Capitain of it duke of Excester than
And homeward went, through Fraunce like a mã

The.CC.xiiii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng came homeward through Normãdy and Picardie, and smote the battaill of Agyncore wher I was with my maister.

An hundred mile to Calais had he then
At Agyncourt, so homeward in his waye
The nobles there, of Fraũce afore him wẽ
Proudly battailled, w an hũdred thousãd in araie
He sawe he must nedes with theim make afraye
He sette on theim, and with theim faught full sore
With nyne thousand, no more with hym thore

The feld he had, and held it all that night
But then came woorde, of hoste and enemies
For whiche thei slewe all prisoners doune right
Sauf dukes and erles, in fell and cruell wise
And then the prees of enimies did suppryse
Their owne people, ẏ mo were dede through pres
Then our menne might haue slain, ẏ tyme no lese

On our side, was the duke of Yorke ther slain
Therle also of Suffolke worshipfully
And knightes twoo, with other then soth to sain
And at the siege, therle of Suffolke sothely
The father dyed of the flixe contynually
But mikell folke, at that siege yet dyed
Of frute and flixe, and colde were mortified

On ẏ Frech partie, ẏ dukes of Barre & Lorein

And of Alaunson, in battaill ther were dedde
And take were of Christeans in certain
The duke Lewes of Orliaunce their hedde
The duke of Burbone in that stede
Therle of Uendom and Arthure also of Brytain
And sir Burligalde marshall of Fraunce certain

¶ And therle of Ewe was taken ther also
Fyue barons also that were at their baner
And fiftene hundred knightes and squyers mo
Were slain that daye in full knightely maner
With woundes, so as then did apere
As werres would vpon Chrispyn daye
And Chrispynian that sainctes in blisse been aye

The.CC.xb.Chapiter.

¶ Howe themperour and the duke of Holand came to the kyng, the Coũte palatine the duke of Melayn the marquys Farrar, the lorde Mantowe and the marques Mount ferrete the lorde Mouñt Palestrine came with themperour the same tyme, and the duke Bauers and Embeir and the prince of Orenge also

AND in the yere of Christ a thousand clere
Foure hundred also therwithall fiftene
When this battaill was smiten as dooth apere
In the third yere of his reigne as was seen
To Caleice so he came, and home bee dene
With themperour of Roome sir Sigemond
Unto hym came then, in to England ground

¶ With a thousand mẽe ỹ were full clene araied

The

The duke of Melayn,the counte Palatyne
The marques Ferrer,ỹ lord Mantowe wel apay=
The coũte Carmeler,the counte Palestryne (ed
With many lordes of the water of the Ryne
And of the Garter was made the secondarye
And in it stalled,for he would not barye

¶The duke of Holand,then by sea came
With.lx.shippes,in Thamis that did arrye
And to the kyng,he went vnto lambe
To Themperoure after he went belyue
As chronycles then did discryue
Then was he made knight of the Garter
At his delyre,as sayth the chronicler.

The.CC.xvi.Chapiter.

¶Of the battayle of Sayne, & of the carykes there taken in the sea afore the mouth of Sayne.

THe kyng sent then,ỹ duke vnto the sea
Of Bedforde,ỹ with four hũdreth sayles
To vitayl Hareflete, w̃ therle of Marche no lee
Therle Marshall,without any fayles
With therles armed in plate and mayles
Of Drenforde,Warrewike and Huntyngdon
Of Salisbury,Deuonshire,& many a baron.

¶Of Arondell also,these erles all
Were in that flote,vnto the noumbre of men
Twenty thousande Herouldes did theim call
On our Lady daye thassumpcion then
All these lordes with many worthy men

1 Carmelio. 2 Stadia. 3 Then. 4 Whitsunday.

The fyfth yere of the kynge was then expresse
Whē there enemies theim met at Sayn douteleſſe

¶ They faught ful ſore, afore the water of Sayn
With carrikes many, well ſtuffed and arayed
And many other ſhippes great of Hiſpayne
Barges Balyngers and galeys vnfrayed
Whiche proudly came vpō our ſhippes vnprayed
And by theuen there ſayles aualed were ſet
Theyr enemyes ſlayn in battayll, and ſore bet

¶ And many dryent, were that daye in the ſea
That as our flete rode there then alwaye
Vnto the feaſt, nexte of his natiuitee
The bodies flete amonge our ſhippes echedaye
Full piteous was, and to ſee theim ay
That thouſādes were. xx. as they then tolde
That taken were, in that ſame batayll bolde.

¶ In which meane while, whiles our ſhips there
It was ſo caline, without any wynde (laye
We might not ſayle, ne fro thens paſſe awaye
Wherfore theyr galeys, eche day there gā vs fynd
With ores many, about vs dyd they wynde
With wildfyre oft aſſayled vs daye and nyght
To brēne our ſhippes in that they could or might

¶ The flete came home, than at our Lady day
Frō Sayn, whiche tyme ỹ kyng then had cōueied
Themperoure then to Caleys on his waye
And home agayn was come right well apayed
Of the welfare of that worthy flete aſſayed
So well in armes, vnto his hie pleaſaunce

Upon

1 Mattraced. 2 B. the kyng. 3 Than ſaile. 4 Fir.
5 Mra fortie. 6 Gun. 7 Ent. 8 Inde. 8a Without yn.
9 They 10 T. 11 Fum 12 Tant. 13 well arayed.

Upon his foes, & kepte theim selfe by gouernaūce.

The. CC. xvii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng wēt into Fraūce, in the .v. yere of his reigne the seconde time, and landed at Towke in Constantyne in Normandy.

THe king thē in his .v. yere wēt into Fraūce
And landed at Towke and gatte the ca-
stell than
And so caine with all his ordinaunce
And layde his siege aboute, with many a man
Whiche by processe, at the last he wan
Whiche to Umfreuile, that thē was erle of Kyme
He gaue to kepe, for great manhode that tyme

¶ Bayons, Falace, Cees, and Argenton
Dounfront, Mortyne and Juory also
Musterdeuilers, Euerons and Alaunson
Caldebeke and Depe, Arkes, Unycort tho
With other townes and castels many mo
Gurnaye, Newcastell, Gysours, Estoutuile
Roan, Louers and also Umfreuile

¶ Pountlarge, Pountoyes & also Pount Dorsō,
Maunte, Uire Balom and also Aueraunce
Castell Galiard, with many other toune
Bolham in Perche, saynt Joilian in Maunce
Merteyn in Perche, Chirbroke and eke Cōstaūce
Uernell in Perche, Seintlowe and Alauayle
Uernon on Sayn, without any battayle

¶ All Normandy he gate, within two yere
And after then, he trauayled in Fraunce

1 To Caine. 2 So he. 3 Euroud. 4 Gompt.
5 Belham. 6 Julian. 7 Mortayne. 8 Chirbrogh.
9 Sore in.

For mariage and conuencion clere
Betwene kyng Charles and hym at instaunce
Of duke Philip of Burgoyn, of aliaunce
In whiche tyme, so they were by appoyntment
Accorded well, and clerely condiscent.

¶ That then he wed, his doughter Katheryne
And proclaymed was, then of Fraunce regent
And heritour of Fraunce, by ryght lyne
Of his owne right, fro kyng Edwardes discent
And Normandy and Guyan as appent
Remayn should to hym, and to his heyres
Kynges of Englande euermore, and to theyrs.

¶ Then layde he siege to Melon anone right
Aboue Paris .xv. leagues vpon Sayn
Whiche by processe and laboure of his might
And full sore siege, full long with passyng payne
He had at laste, of whiche he was full fayn
And toke it, to Umfreuile erle of Kyme
To haue for euer, ay forwardes fro that tyme

¶ Sauncer in Burgoyn then gate he mightely
And Motreux also, where the duke was buried
Of Burgoyn then, whom he toke vp in hie
And at Dugyon, as it is notified
Hym buried so, in Burgoyn vndenyed
With high honour and great solempnitee
As to suche a prince, of reason ought to bee

¶ And Motreux toke he then to syr John Gray
That then was made erle of Tanõtruile
A manly knight in armes proued aye

And

And lorde Powes was, by his wyfe that whyle
And emes sonne, vnto therle Umfreuile
Two better knightes I trowe, there were not thā
Of theyr estate, sith tyme that they began.

¶ At siege of Meloyn, and of all other citees
After folowyng, the kyng of Scotland lay
The prince of Orenge withouten lees
The duke Embarre his sonne and heire alway
That fuster sonne then was, full freshe and gay
To kyng Henry at Meloyn, full well arayed
The kyng of Fraūce, with banner hole displayed

¶ The siege held, fro Midsomer to Chrystmasse
When kyng Henry at his palayce royall
Of Turnels fayre, besyde the bastell pereles
Of Saynt Antonye held his hole imperiall
Where then he feasted, these kynges & princes all
Where then therles of Suffolke and of Kyme
With ten men held the iustes by all that tyme

¶ But whyles the kyng Henry was so in Fraūce
The duke Robert, that was of Albany
Layd about Barwike of great puissaunce
Sixty thousande of Scottes cruelly
Assayled the towne echedaye by and by
The capitayn was syr Robert Umfreuyle
A knight of the garter, had ben long whyle.

The.CC.xviii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the duke of Albany besieged Barwike, and therle Douglas Rokesburgh in heruoste, in the seuenth yere of the

the kyng, and howe Henry Percy erle of Northumberland
rescowed Barwike and Rokesburgh, with .vii. score. My. mē,
for trust it true, there is no lorde in Englande, that may de
fende you agayn Scotlande so well as he, for they haue the
hertes of the people by North and euer haue had, and doute
it not, the North parte bee your trewe legemen.

THey shot their gonnes, and with their lad-
ders scaled
But nought auailed, thei wer so wel of bet
When they our hoste sawe, anone they vnscaled
That stale awaye by night without let,
For feare our hoste, vpon theim shulde set
At Baremore then, with. vii. score thousande men
For which the Scottes, fled fro ỹ duke home then

CVpon the night, and let hym there alone
With his owne men and no mo of weike power
yet rode he to Norham nere theim anone
And brent the towne, our hoste and he then wer
But two myle of, and durst not come no nere
Wherfore he rode, home then into Scotlande
Our hoste more sone retourned to England

CThen syr Robert Umfreuile, with the garyson
Of Barwike, with his countremen
Folowed after the Scottes, with his penoun
On the hynder ryders, and many of theim then
He toke homewarde, and slewe squyers ten
Within Scotlande, besyde Cherneside towne
And to Berwike came with his garyson.

CTherle Douglas, then hight syr Archebalde
Whiche his one eye had lost at Hamyldon
That semed hym well, ay after manyfolde

1 It vnscaled. 2 It withoutyn. 3 Haue set.
4 Scots towne. 5 Humyldon.

At

At Shrowysbury, for his correccyon
He loste one of his stones, for his raunson
His syege then lefte at Rokesburgh where he laye
And with the duke of Albany rode awaye

¶ The Earles two, of Douglas and Dunbarre
For trewce sent, to Roberte Umfreuyle
Wardeine of the este marche, full wyse and warre
He wolde none take with them, then for no whyle
Syth they the trewce had broken, and did fyle
He shuld them holde the warre, to they were faine
To seke peace then, at the kyng agayne.

¶ The kyng was then, in Fraunce hole regent
And Parys had, and all the lande aboute
Troies in Champaine, & Mews in Bry had hent
With all citees, townes and castelles stoute
In all that lande and countree there throughout
Of Mewis he made sir John Graye capitayne
That was lorde Powes, by his wyfe certayne

¶ That tyme syr Raufe Crõwel was gouernour
Of kyng Charles, and Isabell the quene
By kyng Henry ordeyned theyr protectoure
Who kept them at Boys vincent, as was sene
In royall wyse, as to them dyd parteigne
The kyng busy, that tyme in his conqueste
For to set rule in Fraunce, coulde haue no reste

¶ In this meane whyle, sir Robert Umfreuyle
Wardeine of the March, thought then full great
The king in Fraũce, doing so well ẏ while (shame
He made the warre on Scottes to haue a name

Two

Two yere complete he wrought thē mekell shame
Thest Marche hole of Scotlande then he brent
And market townes echeone, or that he stente

Thowyk Selkirke Jedworth, & all Dunbarre
Laudre also, with all Laudre dale
The forestes also, fro Berwyk that were farre
Of Eteryke Jedworth, and eke all Teuidale
And all the villages in them, both great & small
And none helpe had, but of his countre men
Of the bishoprike, & of Northumberlande then

In this mean time, ỹ Scottes had great paine
Wherfore therls of Douglas and Dunbarre
To London came, and toke a trewce full fayne
As Umfreuyle them hight afore the warre
That to the kyng they shulde it seke of farre
Of whiche he kept his hoste then full two yere
For with his warre, he waste the marche full clere

The.CC.xix. Chapiter.

How the kynge and the Quene came into Englaude, in the eyght yere of his reigne.

The.viii. yere of his reygne, at Cādelmasse
The kinge came home, and brought with hym the quene
That he had wed at Troys, in Chāpein doutlesse
Afore the lordes of Fraunce, as then was wel sene
The duke of Clarence, as men well it mene
He made regent of Fraunce in his absence
To occuppe ryght, as his owne presence

The earle of Salisbury, the Mountague

He

1 Grete. 2 And. 3 Als.
4 He swore and made and boldely sought in dede.
5 Whome. 6 At whiche place is knowen.

He made gouernoure then of Normandaye
Therle of Kyme, a knyght of his full trewe
Marshall of Fraunce, he made full openly
The lordes all, he ordeyned there to lye
Hym to comforte, and to bene attendaunt
To hym, in all that myght hym be pleasaunt

¶ This prynce of princes in England thē abode
To somer after, eche daye in busynesse
To ordeyne for his passage, and his rode
To Fraūce agayne, in which tyme then doutlesse
I sawe two knightes afore hym then erpresse
That none might them accorde, or treate to peace
Ne iustyce none, of fyghting might them cease

¶ The lordes then greatly counsayled the kyng
To make them fynde suretye to kepe the peace
The kyng answered anon without tarying
I shalbe youre borowe nowe or I cease
For of this thyng, I may not longe you prease
But what case fall that slaine is one of you
That other shall dye, to god I make a vowe

¶ They heryng this, anon they were accorde
By frendes that treated ẏ time betwene them two
And after that, they were no more at discorde
This was a Justice of peace, that coulde do so
His office kepte, without borowes moo
For when he dyed, Justyce of peace bode none
But baratours, theyr office kepte anone.

¶ And at the Easter, then in his xb. yere
The duke of Clarence, theenemies had espyed

At

1 Tour. 2 Tese Pyneeys of. 3 Ba. Feast of.
4 Ba. 5 Pasm. 6 nyght

At Bangy then for whiche his menne in fere
He lembled, and thyther faste he hyed
On Easter euen, he wolde not bene replyed
With whome were then therle of Huntyngdon
And Somerset the earle, his wyues sonne

The.CC.xx. Chapiter.

Howe on Easter euen, the duke of Clarence smote ỹ batell of Bawgy, in the yere of Thryste, a thousand.iiii. hundreth & twenty, and in the nynth yere of kyng Henry for that yere the feaste of the Annuncyacyon of oure Lady fell on Ester twysdaye, and the date chaunged after that batayle in the Easter weke.

AND nere at Bawge came Gylberte Umfreuyle
Marshal of Fraunce, w. b. horse & no mo
And of good wyt, counsayled hym that whyle
To kepe the churche and goddes seruyce tho
And after the feaste, to seke vpon his foo
And he aunswered hym, yf thou be aferd
Go home thy waye, and kepe the churche yerde

For thou haste bene with the kyng to longe
To make me lese my worshyp and my name
Thou haste ay gote the worshyp euer amonge
And I haue none, thus wolde thou lose my fame
With suche wordes chidyng he dyd hym blame
To whome he sayde, yf that thou be afrayde
And kepe the churche, as thou me nowe hast saide

With ỹ he saide, my lorde ye haue no menne
With the enemyes, thus hastely to fyght
Youre men wot not of this, ne howe ne whenne

* Bangy.

1 Lembled faste. 2 Pasche.
3 Of Somerset. 4 To 5 Gote. 6 Ale.
7 None. 8 Go home

To

To semble to you of power, ne of myght
For trewly nowe my cousen Graye nowe right
And I haue here but ten men and no mo
But yet ye shall neuer saye we leaue you so

¶ So rode they furth, ay chidyng by the waye
Tyll they to Bawgy, ouer the bridge were gone
Where the enemyes were batayled in araye
Where then they light, & caught with them anon
The duke was slayne ỹ day there w̄ his goone
With hym were slayne, then therle Umfreuyle
And syr John Graye the Earle of Tankeruyle

The lorde Roos, and syr John Lumley
With many other were with hym slayne ỹ daye
Whose names I can not wryte nor saye
The Earles two, of Huntingdon no naye
Of Somerset also, were taken there I saye
For prysoners, and put to greate raunson
And laye full longe in Fraunce then in pryson

¶ Thenglishe power came, when all was done
And rescowed then, the deed men where they laye
And brought ỹ lordes home, fro thens the ful sone
That were there vpon the felde that daye
And buryed them in Englande, in good araye
Echeone in his owne abbaye or colage
Afore founded within his herytage

¶ At Cauntorbury, the duke was of Clarence
Besyde his father kynge Henry buryed
With suche honoure, costage and expence
As the duches his wyfe coulde haue signifyed

Whiche

2 Earles.

1 Of Lumley. 2 Too. 3 Deade were. 4 Sham.

Whiche neded not to bene modifyed
She was so well, within her selfe auysed
Of greate sadnesse, and womanhede pzeuised.

The.CC.xxi.Chapiter.

Howe the quene wente agayne to ffraunce, & lefte the quene in Englande with chylde, and wanne dyuerse cytees townes and castelles in somer, in the nyngth yere of his reigne

The kyng then let ỹ quene in Englande byde
In somer then, the.ix yere of his date
And into Fraunce, agayne he went ỹ tyde
With heuy harte, to Parys went algate
The castell of Perfount, soone he gate
A royall place of all that men haue sene
The greate cytee of Compyne also I wene.

The cytees also of Cassons Bzay and Crayle
Of Owsare also, with many cytees moo
And to Parys agayne without fayle
In his castell of Lowze abidynge tho
Tidynges then came, to him full glad and mo
That of a pzynce delyuered was the quene
Of whiche all men reioysed as was sene

Saynt Dionis then, and castell Boys Vyncent
Corbell Pount Melanke, and full great parte of Fraunce
Burgoyne Artoys, and Pycardy to hym sent
To bene his men, without contraryaunce
And eche cytee, to hym swozne in substaunce
Walled townes and castelles euerychone
As hys regent of Fraunce by hym one

Then

1 Prouided. 2 Than soone. 3 Gretta the in compasse abt. 4 Without en.
5 Lorean. 6 Deuyse. 7 mistake
8 Than be his one.

¶Then rode he furth to Bawgy and Orleaunce
Wynnyng the tounes,and citees in his waye
And castelles all,that were of greate defence
Crepy,Lawnesse,and Milly with greate affraye
Nongent le Roy,he gatte with greate araye
Mount Caranton,with many other obeyed
To his highnesse,and were his menne conueghed

¶The duke of Brytain, then was his manne
For fee belaste,without rebellion
The counte sainct Paule,his manne was then
The duke of Burgoyn,without suspicion
With many other,his menne without collucion
Were sworne thē whole, ỹ coũtrees in ỹ same wise
Castelles and tounes,eke as he couth deuise

¶In August so of his reigne the tenth yere
He toke sickenes, and laye at Boy Uincent
In pain strong,as then it did appere
Full like to passe,wherfore in his entent
The duke of Bedford,he made hie regent
Of Fraunce,and of his other landes all
Beyond the sea as chief in generall

¶And of his soonne Henry,he made custode
Thomas Beaufort,his uncle dere and trewe
Duke of Excester,full of all worthyhode
To tyme his soonne,to perfecte age grewe
He to kepe hym,chaungyng for no newe
With help e of his other eme,then full wise
The bishop of Wynchester of good aduise

¶Therle then of Salisbury manly

That

1 Nugent le Roy. 2 Charenton.
3 For briefte. 4 introduction 5 Citie in
6 Paines. 7 Uncle. 8 [illegible]

That Mountague then hight by surname
He sette to kepe, then all Normandie
Under the regent, as knight of full greate fame
With other lordes, full sage and worthy of name
Therle of Oxenford, and of Suffolke also
Of his counsaill to been with many mo

The.CC.xxii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng dyed the last daye of August the yere of Christ a thousand foure hundred two and twenty and of his reigne the tenth yere, for all his rightwisnes and iustice that he did, he had no conscience of vsurpement of the crouue.

THe laste daye of August then full clere
Of Christ his date, a thousand signified
Foure hundred and twoo and twenty yere
When that this prince of princes so dyed
At Boys Uincent, with death then victoried
That neuer prince in earth might thē haue dooen
But he alone that ruleth sonne and moonne

¶ With whose bones, the quene came to Englād
The kyng of Scottes James with hir also
The duke of Excester, as I can vnderstand
Therle of Marche, Edmond Mortimer tho
Rychard Beauchampe, then erle of Warwike so
Humfrey then erle of Stafford, young of age
And erle Edmond, of Morten wise and sage

¶ O good lord God, that art omnipotent
Why stretched not thy power and thy might

To

1 Mountacute. 2 Also. 3 Devon. 4 Exeetre.

Suffolke. 5 Mortayne.

To kepe this prince, that lette was and consent
With themperour, to conuert Surrey right
And with Christen inhabite, it had hight
Why fauoured so thyne high omnipotence
Miscreaunce more, then his beneuolence

Aboue all thyng, he keped the lawe and peace
Through all England, that none insurreccion
Ne no riotes were then withouten lese
Nor neighbour werre, in faute of correccion
But peasebly vnder his proteccion
Compleyntes all, of wronges in generall
Reformed were, well vnder his yerd egall

The.CC.xviii.Chapiter.

Howe through the lawe and peace, conserued was the encrease of his conquest, and els had he been of no power to haue conquered in out landes.

When he in Fraunce, was dayly cõuersaunt
His shadowe so obumbred all England
That peace and lawe kept continuaunt
In his absence throughout all this land
And els as I can seyne and vnderstand
His power had been lite, to conquere Fraunce
Nor other realmes, that well were lesse perchaũce

The peace at home, and lawe so well conserued
Were croppe and rote of all his hie conquest
Through whiche ỹ loue, of God he well deserued
And of his people, by North, South, Est & West
Who might haue slain ỹ prince, or downe him
That stode so sure, in rightfull gouernaunce (kest
For common weale, to God his hie plesaunce

1 Conquere lirry. 2 Miscreaunce. 3 kepte.
4 Wronge. 5 Were kepte. 6 Shall.
7 Conceyue. 8 Libell. 9 Cleane. 10 Done.

The.CC.xxiiii.Capiter.

¶ Henry the sixte kyng of England and of ffraunce that fled in to Scotland without cause, on Palme-sondaye the thirty and nyne yere of his reigne, and of Christ a thousand foure hundred three score and one, began to reigne the yere of Christ a thousand foure hundred twenty and twoo.

King Henry ỹ sixte

HEnry his soõne, thẽ not .iii. quarters olde
That borne was at.S Nicholas daie afore
At Windesore, so as ỹ realme thẽ would
Unto the croune, succede as he was bore
All England hole, by might of lordes thore
The duke of Gloucester then disired
To haue the kepyng of the kyng enspired[4]

¶ The bishop of Wynchester it withstode
With all the lordes there, hole of his assent
Then would he haue been, as for ỹ next of bloode
Leuetenaunt then of England and regent
The bishop aye, withstode all his entent
That chaũceler was, by ỹ fifth kyng Henry made
And so furth stode, and in thoffice bade

¶ For cause he was so noyous with to dele
And office would he haue and gouernaunce
Wherfore thei made hym, for the common wele
The duke of Gloucester protectour of Englãd. Protectour of the realme by ordinaunce
To kepe the land, fro mischief and baryaunce[5]
The kyng of Fraunce, for sorowe then dyed[6]
The quene his wife also, as was notified

¶ The lord Cromwell, lost therof nothyng
For he had bothe theim[7] in his gouernaunce

And

[1] all the [2] of. [3] and Lorde.
[4] Inspired. [5] And Defensoure to avoide all distaunce.
[6] So died. [7] Them.

And home then came, when buryed was the kyng
Charles of Fraunce, with worthy ordenaunce
Quene Isabell also with purueaunce
Accordaunt well to their royall estate
With costages greate, as was preordinate

¶ The first daye of the moneth of Septembre
He gan to reigne, then was a thousand yere
Foure hundred as I can remember
Twenty and twoo accompted then full clere
As I finde write in the chronicler
But not crouned for tendernes of age
Nor yet anoynte, for dred of youthes outrage

¶ The duke of Bedford, stode so furth ay regent
The duke of Glouceſter, here was so protectour
The bishop of Wynchester by perlyament
Was chauncellor and hiest gouernour
Of the kyng his persone and his greate socour
His godfather and his fatheres eme
And supportour was, moost of all this realme

The duke of Bedford regēt of fraūce.

¶ The regēt then, of Fraunce wed Anne his wife
The duke his suster of Burgoyn, good and faire
The duke of Brytain, hir suster knowen rife
Had wed afore without any dispeire
[Whiche was lady of greate repeire.]
Whiche dukes twoo were sworne and aliede
With the regent to stand strongly fortified

The.CC.xxv.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the regent & lordes of Englād smote the battaill of Vernoyle in Perche, in ỳ third yere of kyng Henry ỳ.vi.

[1] Roiall. [2] Ad as.

¶ Therle of Boughan and therle Douglas
Therle of Wigton with power of Scotland
And lordes of Fraunce, to gether assembled was
Wher the regent with lordes of England
At Vernoyle in Perche, as I can vnderstand
Faught w̄ theim sore, & slewe the Scottes cruelly
And bade theim thynke emong on Bawgy

¶ The regent had the felde and victorie
With greate honour and laude full[2] comfortable
Therles were ther, with hym of Salisbury
Of Suffolke also, that were full honorable
The lord Wiloughby, full fortunable
The lord Scales of greate and hie corage
With many other of the baronage

[¶ Therle of Ewe, and his brother manly
Faught in that feld, and gate a worthy name
And many mo, did tho full doughtely
I dare well saie, was none therfore to blame
All other also, whiche that were worthy of fame
I would haue wryte, if I had knowen their mede
But to heraldes, I will commit their deede][3]

¶ Thei sleugh therles, of Boughan & Douglas
And of Wigton, of Scotland that wer there
The lord of Enermeth, of Scotland then was
With greate people, that dedde then there were
Our Englishmenne, full manly theim bere
The regent was there, that daye a lion
And faught in armes, like any champion

The .CC. xxvi. Chapiter.

Howe

[1] Vpon. [2] Due. [2nd Red.] is not in the hand of the Manuscript but
[3] This Stanza [illegible] a Subscript in the margin. [illegible]

Manuscript

¶ Howe Mountague erle of Salisbury layde siege to Orle aunce and was slayne there.

THerle of Salisbury, then Mountague
With great power, layd siege to Orliaũce
Wher slayn he was, for whō men sore gan[1]
So manly was his knightly diligence (rewe
He laboured euer in marciall excellence
Unto the tyme as would thende of fate
With a quarell was slayne infortunate

¶ And buried was, in Englande that yere
With greate worshippe and hie solempnitee
Richard Neuell had wed, his doughter clere
And erle was made, that tyme by her in fee
The regent then, of great nobilitee
By counsell of the duke then of Burgoyn
Kepte Fraunce full well, without any essoyn

¶ Then died his wife, and wed then sone agayn
The countee seynt Paules, sister of Fraunce
That leegeman was to kyng Henry certayne
To the regent swore, as by full greate assuraũce
With true seruice, and all[2] trewe aliaunce
He kepte bothe Fraunce, and eke all Normandy
In peace and rest, full well and worthely

¶ Therle Richarde of Warwike, kepte the kyng
By all this tyme, sith[3] the duke was dead
Of Excester, that first hym had in kepyng
Therle Richard, in mykell worthyhead
Enfourmed hym, but of his symplehead
He coulde litle, within his brest conceyue
The good from eiuill, he could vneth[4] perceyue.

The

[1] Power grete. [2] Dide. [3] sith tyme.
[4] vneth.

The.CC.xxvii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the kyng was enoynted and crouned in England in the yere of Chriſte a thouſande. CCCC. and. xxix. and of his reigne the.viii.yere. And afterwarde he was crouned in Fraunce, the yere a thouſand.CCCC.and.xxxi.and of his reigne the.x.yere, in whoſe preſence the regent ceaſed of his office, for whiche he was wroth with the cardinall his vncle for aſmuche as the kynge was there preſente, therfore there ſhulde bee no regente.

THe kyng then in his.viii.yere in Englande
At Weſtmynſter vpõ ſaynt Leonardes daye
The ſondaye then, as I can vnderſtande
And of Chriſt was then, a thouſande full I ſaye
Foure hundreth and.xx.and.ix.no naye
He crouned was, with all ſolempnitee
By whole aſſent of lordes and commontee.

¶ Then of his reigne, accompte the.x.yere
To Fraunce he went, wher then at ſaynt Denys
His fathers eine, the cardinall full clere
Hym crouned kayre, with biſhoppes there full wiſe
The regent was there, with ſuche ſeruice
As was due of reaſon, and to hym appent
The duke of Burgoyne, alſo obedient.

¶ The duke alſo, was there[2] of Britayne
The counte ſaynt Paule, and the duke Embarre[3]
Therle of Foys, with other lordes of Guyan,
The prouoſte of Parys, with other great repaire
Of lordes, knightes, and many ladyes kayre[4]
The gouernours of all the great citees
And prelates fele and Barons for there fees.

The

[1] In the. [2] There than. [3] Enbaire. [4] Many.

The.CC.xxviii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe the lorde Cromwell was chamberleyne in fraunce at his coronacion, and discharged at his commyng home in to Englande, and the duke of Bedforde regent of fraunce died, and then ỹ duke of Burgoyne was made regent a yere and then therle of Warwike was made regent a yere & died at Roan in the castell.

THe lorde Cromwel was his chamberlayn
Who was so wise, he was of great record
His homagers, as to hym did perteyne
In fraunce that tyme, by good and trewe accorde
For his fees, as[2] they and he concorde
Of Chrystes date, was then a thousande yere
Foure hundreth also and one and thyrty clere,

¶ The regẽt died, for whõ was made great mone
Then bothe councels of Englande and of fraũce
Chose the duke of Burgoyn then anone
To regent of that lande, for great affiaunce
That kepte it well a yere in all assuraunce
But sone thereafter, with the dolphyn accorde[4]
And was his man, as then was well recorde[5]

¶ Therle Richard of Warwike then conceyued
Of the symplesse and great innocense
Of kyng Henry, as he it well perceyued
Desired to be discharged of his diligence
About the kyng, and by his sapience
Was sent to fraunce and so was regent
And kepte it well in all establishement.

¶ Tyll[6] that he dyed, out of this worlde awaye

For

[1] Wrote. [2] Than as. [3] For Regente of Fraunce. [4] Accorded.
[5] Recorded. [6] So

For whom great mone was made and lamentacio
For his wisedome, and for his manhode ay
For his norture and communicacion
He stode in grace of hie commendacion
Emonge all folke vnto the daye he died
Regent of Fraunce, full greately laudified.

The. CC.xxix. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the duke of Burgoyn besieged Calys and set vp his bastell there, and howe the duke of Glouceſter rescowed it.

THe duke of Burgoyn, then to Calis came
And set a bastell then afore the toune
The which therle of Moreyn, by his name
Edmond Beaufort, as made is mencion
With soudyours it gatte and bet it downe
The duke wēt home, and left the siege with shame
When he our flete sawe, saylyng on thesame

¶ The protectour with his flete, at Calys then
Did lande, and rode into Flaunders a litle waye
And litle did, to counte a manly man
But that the siege, for hym then fled awaye
The duke distracte, sore sycke was many a daye
For sorowe and shame, he heide hym out of sight
Many a yere, he went not out to fight.

The. CC.xxx. Chapiter.

¶ Howe kyng James of Scotlande besieged syr Raulfe Gray in Renkesburgh, and howe Henry Percy erle of Northumberlande rescowed it with seuen score thousande men.

In

IN ỳ same tyme also, of Scotlād kig James
To Rēkesburgh[2] cā, & layd his siege about
Syr Raulfe Graye, thē kept it frō all sha-
Agayn his sautes, ỳ then were full stoute (mes
Therle then of Northumberlande throughout
Rayſed vp the lande, and when he came it nere
The kyng trumped vp and went awaye full clere

¶ Who sawe euer afore, two hostes royall
So easely without stroke discomfite
Of diuers landes, and neither had a fall
[And on no parte, smote no stroke perfite]
But for the shadowes, that were imperfite
Of our hostes so fled and sawe nothynge
But vmbres[3] two, of our hoste[4] then commynge

The cōtent of ỳ matter touchynge kig James.

¶ But thus I deme, tho princes wer forsworne
The kyng of Scottes, the duke of Burgoyn eke
That they not durst on no grounde abide therfore
Their vntruthes, made there hertes feynt & seeke
Truste neuer their manhode after worth a leeke
That vncompelled forsworne or wilfully
Shall neuer after haue honour ne victorie

¶ Take[6] hede ye lordes, of these great princes two
What came of theim, in shorte tyme after this
The kyng murthered, at home in Scotlande tho
The duke was wod, and frantike for his misse
Thus vengeaunce fell vpon theim bothe I wysse
Alas a prince shulde haue suche cowardise
To be vntrewe or falſe in any wise

¶ Sith he nede nought, so strecheth ay his power
To

[1] of Scotland als. [2] Rokesbourgh.
[3] Shadewes. [4] Hooste. [5] Ve.
[6] Beene. [7] Or. [8] Taketh.

To kepe his trouthe,and make his fo theſame
To kepe to hym with ſtrength of ſwoꝛde full clere
Oꝛ els deſtroye his land,and all his fame
And put hym ſo to foule and open ſhame
Foꝛ periury occupied,and lawe vnpꝛeſerued
Cauſed many a man,foꝛ to bee ouerterued

The. CC.xxxi.Chapiter.

¶ Howe therle of Staffoꝛde was.ii.yere regent of Noꝛmandy and howe therle of Huntyngdon was other two yere, and howe Richard duke of yoꝛke was regent of Noꝛmandy.vii yere with holden,and afterwarde was made leuetenaunte of Irelande.

BUt after then therle of Staffoꝛde went
With power ſtrong,to kepe all Noꝛmãdy
Two yere with holde, wͭ all loꝛdes aſſent
Whiche well he keped,and full honoꝛably
With litle loſſe,of places fewe ſodenly
By enemyes won,that might not longe ben holde
And home he came,when ſpended was his golde

¶ Then went therle thyther of Huntyngdon
That kept that lād,with ſad and trewe ſeruice
With great power,truely vnto the croune
Foꝛ all the foes,and eke the kynges enemyes
And fewe places loſte,ne had no great ſuppꝛiſe
And home he came agayn,at two yeres ende
When his wages were gone and all hole ſpende

And after hym the duke of Yoꝛke full ying
Thether was ſent,with great power royall

And regent was, of all that longed to the kyng
And kepte full well Normandye in especyall
But Fraunce was gone, afore ingenerall
And home he came, at seuen yere ende agayne
With mekell loue of the lande certayne

¶ The duke of Yorke, sent was then to Irelande
Leuetenaunt then he was there many a daye
And greate thanke there, and loue of all the land
He had amonge the Irysshe alwaye
And all the Irysshe, beganne him to obey
He ruled that lande full well and worthely
As dyd afore, his noble auncetrye

The.CC.xxxii.Chapiter.

¶ Howe Edmonde Duke of Somerset, was made keper of Normandy.

THe kyng then made ỹ marquis of Dorset
Edmõd Beaufort, at ỹ cardinals request
Without delay, then duke of Somerset
And sent hym fourth anon without reste
To Normandye, to kepe it for his beste
But in his tyme Fastolfe and Kyriell
Discomfyte were, in batayle sore and fell

¶ Where.vii.M.Englyshe were ouerthrowe
Wherfore the Frenche, assembled newe eche daye
And gate the lande ay, by and by on rowe
For whiche the duke wrote his letters ay
Unto the kyng and his councell alwaye
For more power, & elles he myght not byde
To kepe the lande, ỹ French were of suche pryde

He

1 Longeth. 2 Ther
3 Englisheria.
4 And of the Irisheria.
5 And.
6 W. thoutyn. 7 Suche a.

The coulde none get, this land was thē so pylde
Through war of Fraūce, they wolde not hī releue
So was the lande w̄ Frenchmen wonne & welde
With siege eche daye, and sautes fell and dreue
The frenche nought reste ẏ tyme a daye to eue
We loste moze then, certayne within two yere
Then kyng Henry gate in seuen clere

Then was the kyng comē vnto mannes age
Wherfoze the lozdes, wolde no pzotectoz
Wherfoze the duke loste his great auauntage
And was no moze then after defensour
But then he fell in a greate errour
Moued by his wyfe Elianoz Cobham
To truste her so, men thought he was to blame

She ware[d] then straunge, eche day vnto ẏ kyng
Foz cause she was foziudged foz sorcery
Foz enchaunmentees, ẏ she was in wozkyng
Agayne the churche, and the kyng curstedly
By helpe of one mayster Roger Donly
And into Wales he went of frowardnesse
And to the kyng had greate heuynesse

Wherfoze ẏ lozdes then of the kinges coūsaile
Made the kyng to set his hye parlyament
At Burye then, whether he came without fayle
Where in parlesey he dyed incontynent
Foz heuynesse, and losse of regyment
And ofte afoze, he was in that sykenesse
In poynt of death, and stode in soze destresse

When of the kyng was, vii. and twenty yere Then

1 Southa. 2 Ad. 3 Yone. 4 Henry the fiveth. 5 Comyn 6 After that. 7 Sorte a soune. 8 Woxe. 9 He had. 10 Deliuer it that at. 11 Than

Then he so dyed in full and hole creaunce
As a chriſten prince of royall bloude full clere
Contryte in herte with full greate repentaunce
With mouth confeſſed, to Goddes hye pleaſaunce
Unto the earth, that is all fleſche his neſte
His body went, his ſoule to heauens reſte

And of the kyng, the.xxix. yere
In Maye, the duke of Suffolke toke the ſea
On pilgramage to paſſe, as dyd apere
With Brigauntes then with compaſſed enmyte
Hym ſlewe and heded with full great cruelte
Agayne aſſuraunce of the kynges protectyon
That worthy were the death for inſurrectyon

That ſame yere then at the hye parlyament
Was made a playne, and a hole reſumpcyon
Of all the landes by ſad and hole aduyſement
Whiche the kyng had geuen of his affectyon
To any wyght by patent, or conceſſyon
Then taxe ceaſed, and dymes eke alſo
In all Englande then rayſed were no mo.

The.CC.xxiii. Chapiter.

¶ The duke of yorke, was made protectour and chyef of counſell, the thyrty yere of kyng Henry the ſixte, and the Earle of Saliſbury was chaunceller of Englande.

THe duke of Yorke then made was protec- (tour
And gouerned wel but.ii.yere not endured
Diſcharged he was, w̄ paſſing great mur (mour
Of cōmons hole, amonge them thē enſured
To helpe hym ſo, with power auentured

For

For he was set, the comon wele to auayle
By his laboure, and his hole counsayle.

¶ But ay the better, that he to God was set
The more were other, by worde and dede
The contrarye to laboure, and to let
His good purpose, to pursue and to spede
So that he had no hap for to procede
For sotell menne hym let ay at the ende
The cõmon wele to mayntene and amende.

¶ The Earle Richard also of Salisbury
So was disposed, in all thynges to the same
Whiche was the cause of theyr death fynally
For whiche of ryght, ne muste folowe blame
Their lyues well kepte, had bene without shame
For tho princes two, died in their kynges right
For the publike wele, of eche Englische wight

¶ The .xxx. yere this was then of the kyng
When they the kyng, then had in gouernaunce
And ruled hym well, in all maner thyng
And made good rule, and noble ordynaunce
Auoyding all misrule, and misusaunce
For worshyp of the kyng, and of his realme
Without doubte, or any other probleme.

The .CC. xxxiii. Chapiter.

¶ Howe the Earle of Northumberlande, the duke of Somerset and the lorde Clyfforde were slayne at saynte Albones the thyrty and .iiii. yere of his reigne, where ꝑ duke of yorke the Earle of Salisbury, and the earle of Warwike toke the kynge

kyng, & kept hym in good rule, the twenty & two daye of Maye, that was then the Thursdaye next of Pentecost the yere of Christ a thousand foure hūdred & lv.

THei were put by from all their good entent
And straūge were hold, after many a daye
To the thirty yere and thre by hole consent
At sainct Albones, then vpon the thursdaye
Accompted then next afore Witsondaye
Thei slewe the duke Edmond, then of Somerset
For cause he had the realmes wele so lette

¶ Therle then of Northumberland was there
Of sodein chaunce, drawen furth with the kyng
And slain vnknowne, by any manne ther were
The lord Clifford ouer busie in werkyng
At the barres theim mette sore fightyng
Was slain that daye vpon his owne assaut
As eche manne saied, it was his owne defaute

¶ Therle of Wiltshire with fiue hundred menne
Fled fro the kyng full fast that tyme a waye
The duke of Buckyngham, was hurte there then
The kyng thei tooke, and saued in good araye
To Westminster with hym thei tooke the waye
And ruled hym well, in all prerogatife
As kyng of right, without any strife

The.CC.xxxv.Chapiter.

¶ Howe ye lord Audely faught with therle of Salisbury at Blorebeth at Wighelmas terme, in the thirty and eight yere of his reigne.

¶ Yet were these lordes, voyde fro ỹ kyng again
The duke of Yorke, and therle of Salisbury
Therle also of Warwike, nought to layn
Without cause, I can not remembre why
But at Bloreheth, the lord Audely in hie
With therle of Salisbury faught full sore
Therle preuailed, and Audely slain was thore

¶ The thirty yere and eight of the kyng
And so he went to Ludlowe on his waye
The duke of Yorke, in Wales had shippyng
To Ireland then he went, full well awaye
Therles of March, and Salisbury that daye
And of Warwike, as God it had purueighed
To Calais went, their waye no thyng denied

The. CC. xxvi. Chapiter.

¶ Of the battaill of Northampton, wher the Earle of March, & therle of Warwike preuailed & led the king to Westminster & kept hym there, the yere of his reigne eight and thirty, and the yere of Christ a thousād foure hundred nyne and fiftie, and slewe the duke of Bokyngham, therle of Shrowisbury tresorer of England, the lord Beaumont, sir Thomas Percy, lord Egremond, and led the kyng with theim to London and gouerned hym full well and worthely, the tenth daye of July.

AT Couentree, the king in his parlyament
Proclaimed theim all thre for rebellours
But afterward, all three of one assent
At Northampton came, as worthy warriours
In somer after, to been the kyng his socours

Wher

[1] Not. [2] wishing. [3] right than. [4] Than.
[5] Prouided. [6] To.

Wher then the duke of Buckyngham, the un met
With power greate, and trust haue theim ouerset

¶Therle of Shrewesbury was with hym thoze
The lozd Baumount, with hym was also
The lozd Egremount, full stout in feate of warre
Whiche foure were slain, with mikell people mo
Beside Nozthampton, on the Thursdaye tho[3]
[The third daye of the moneth of July
And in the reigne of the kyng, eight and thirty]

¶Thei saued the kyng, & kept hym sauf & sound
With greate honour, therle of Marche Edward
Therle also of Warwike, in that stound
And with hym rode, so furth to London ward
Full wozshipfully, thei kept hym [thens fozward]
In all state royall as did append
And as his menne vnto hym did attend

The.CC.xxxvii.Chapiter.

¶Howe the battaill of Wakefeld wher the Nozth partie preuailed, was the fifth daye of Christemasse, and of the kyng his reigne the nyne and thirty.

¶Then in the winter, afoze the Christemas
The duke of Yozke, therle of Salisbury
Therle of Rutland, with theim Jgesse
With power greate, foz their aduersarie
To saue theim selfes, as then was necessarie
At their owne weld at Pool, so then had been
The robberies there, to haue stauncheid clene

¶Wher thé ye lozdes, of ye Nozth were assembled

Them haue. 2 Grete. 3 So.

4 Next after Eight Tenus Day last of Easter
5 Anno the yere of the kyngs Eight and thirty.
5 Nouely. 6 Then Northwarde. 7 Ne
8 at Christemasse wolde haue been 9 Ether.

And faught with theim at Wakefeld thē full soze
And slewe theim downe, whiles thei were dissēbled
And gate the feld that daye vpon theim thoze
And Southward came thei, then therfoze
To sainct Albones vpon the fastyngange eue
Wher then thei slewe, the lozde Bonuile I leue

The.CC.xxxviii.Chapiter,

¶ Howe therle of Northumberland, the lozd Neuell and the Nozth partie, faught at sainct Albones ỹ seuētene daye of Feuerpere, and slewe the lozd Boonuile & sir Thomas Kirpell and many other, the thirty and nyne yere of the kyng, and the yere of Chriſt a thousand foure hundzed & sixty, and led the king to Yozke.

AND sir Thomas Kyzell also of Kent
With mekell folke, that pitee was to se
And spoyled fast, ay homeward as thei wēt
Without rule, into their countree
Thei sette theim nought, on rule and equitee
Ne to kepe lawe noz peace, in nokynd wyse
Howe might thei dure long, in suche a guyse

But then the kyng, alone left on the feld
Came to the quene, and went to Yozke his waye
With the Nozth partie, that thē so with hym held
The duke of Excester with hym went a waye
The duke of Somerset, it is no naye
Therle also then of Deuenshire
And sir James Ozmond erle of Wiltshire

The lozd Woleyns, the lozd Roos also
The chief Judge, and sir Rychard Tunstall
The lozd Ryuers, the lozd Scales his soonne also

The

The lord Welles, and Wiloughby with all
Sir Wyllyam Tailboys, so did befall
And many other, went to the North partie
For to maintein then the sixte kyng Henry

The.CC.xxxix.Chapiter.

Howe Edward duke of Yorke and erle of Marche toke on hym ỳ rotall charge for the wele of the realme the fourth daye of Marche, the yere of Christ a thousand foure hundred and sixty, folowed kyng Henry that refused tho the rule of the land and gaue vp Berwike to the Scottes, and fled in to Scotlãd and gaue battaill to the North partie at fferibrig on Palmesondaye, wher kyng Edward the fourth preuailed, the yere of Christ a thousand foure hũdred sixty and one whiche was then the twenty and nyne daye of Marche, foure dayes after our lady daye that tyme.

THe duke Edward, of March thẽ ỳ. iiii. day
Of yorke full young, therle of Marche was then,
By counsaill of the lordes, by south menne saye
Bothe spirituall and tempozall, as mẽne saie then
Upon hym toke, estate royall and began
To reigne as kyng, and with hym reised the land
With lordes fele, by south I vnderstand

At Towton feld, he faught on Palmesondaye
Wher then therle Henry of Northumberland
The lord Neuell, the lord Clifford that daye
The lord Dacres were dedde I vnderstand
The kyng Henry, then out of the land
To Berwike toune, ỳ stounte in Scotland groũd
With certain lordes, and with the quene ỳ stround

1 That Erle. 2 by a man. 3 Many.
4 Territorie. 5 Stondyth.

¶And gaue the toune and castell to the Scottes
By whole assent of his simple counsaill
Whiche might well bee accompted then for sottes
As soules that were then, of no gouernaill
In to Scotland, with soule misgouernaill
The quene Margarete, and the dukes both twoo
Of Excester, and Somerset fled also

¶The lord Roos, and eke the lord Moleyns
And the chief Judge, that called was Fortescue
And Tailboys also, with other eiuill capitains
That after shall, full sore repent and rewe
If thei also well as I, nowe Scotland knewe
Thei would not so, haue hasted thitherward
From the presence and grace, of kyng Edward

¶kyng Edward thus had then the victorie
With his lordes and menne that were full trewe
That halpe hym so, and were contributorie
To wyn his right, whiche then the people knewe
To Yorke he went, and found it not vntrewe
To Duresme also, and to the Newcastell
That to hym were, as trewe as any stele

¶At yorke was hedded, that time and decollate
Therle that then was of Deuenshire
And at the Newcastell, so destinate
Hedded then was therle of Wiltshire
The kyng then sette, the land at his desire
Saue castelles fewe, wh force that then were hold
By North and West, with rebell manyfold

¶And South he went, for his disporte and plaie

At

At Leycestre helde he then his great counsayl
In the moneth that then was called Maye
And ordeyned there for good gouernayl
Of al his realme, that enemies nought it assayle
Then in wynter, Margarete that had bene quene
Fro Fraunce so came by shippe, as then was sene

¶ Into Scotlande, with. iiii. thousande frechmē
Of soudyours, for whiche the kynge anone
With hoste royall, to Durisme came he then
And sent therle of Warwike agayn his foen
Therle of Kent also, with good menne many one
They layde a siege, to the castell of Bamburgh
And to the castell also of Dunstanburgh

¶ Syr Raulfe Percy, and the duke of Somerset
Delyuered theim to the kyng by poyntment
By whiche the kyng, without any let
Gaue the kepyng of theim incontynent
Unto syr Raulfe Percy of good entent
And Aluewike castell was kepte many a daye
To rescouse came, and fet theim thens awaye

¶ Whiche stode in stale, not ferre from the castell
But. viii. thousande, to whom the castelleyns
Came anone out, as men were there to tell
With horse & harnes, & home rode through ỹ playnes
Into Scotlande, as good & wise chieftayns
I can well thynke, it was a manly dede
To noye theyr foes, and helpe theimselfes at nede

¶ My lorde Umfreuile, whom that I dyd serue
Sayd to me, it was the best thyng might befall

Any chiefteyne to greue his fo and ouerterue
And kepe hymselfe harmeleſſe therwithall
He that maye hurte his fo without fall
And paſſe away, to his ſocoure harmeleſſe
He is a foole to abyde any diſtreſſe.

¶ But when that they, wer gone ſo home agayn
And theyr frendes with theim, from thens awaye
Two hundreth men of commons, came full fayne
Out of Aluewike caſtell, in ſymple araye
Our men bet theim [in] agayn, there alwaye
Tyll they were glad, to yelde theim & haue grace
The whiche they had, without longer ſpace

The quenes power, ỹ ſhe [ſo] brought [fro] Fraunce
Was ſo litle, the wardeyns naught it dread
They hight the kyng, for all hir ordinaunce
To kepe the lande, for any helpe ſhe had
How may ſhe ought of great power beſped
Whē Charles doughter of Fraũce void of dower
Deſpoyled was, of Fraunce fayled all power

Kyng Richardes wife ſent home again into ffraunce

¶ Quene Iſabel that was kyng Rychardes wife
Depoſed was, by kyng Henry of Derby
Of her iwels, as it is knowen full ryfe
And home was ſent, without remedye
What auayled hir kynne and progenye
Of nought els, but great veracion
That Frenchemen made to theyr owne dampnacion.

The.CC.xl.Chapiter.

The

¶ The moction & conceypte of the maker of this booke touchynge kynge Henrye the syxte, his wife and his sonne, to be gotten home and putte in gouernaunce with all that fled with hym, cõsyderyng their trouth that forsoke their lyuelodes and welfare for his sake, and fro they so gotten home, that after they will be as trewe to you, and els to geue sore iudgement vpon theim.

OGracious lord kyng Edward fourth accompte.
Consydre howe kynge Henrye was admytte
Unto the croune of Englande, that did amounte
Not for desert, nor yet for any witte
Or might of hym selfe, in otherwyse yet
But onely for the castigacion
Of kyng Richardes wicked peruersacion

¶ Of whiche the realme then yrked euerychone
And full glad were, of his deposicion
And glad to croune kyng Henry so anone
With all theyr hertes, and whole affeccion
For hatred more of kyng Richardes defection
Then for the loue of kyng Henry that daye
So chaunged then the people on hym aye.

¶ yet kept he aye therle of Marche full ying
In erles estate, as he that was his warde
And brought hym vp, in all maner thyng
As his estate asked and coulde awarde
And cherysshed hym, in nourture to regarde

As

1 Thome. 2 Gaufrid. 3 Jo. 4 Courtnay

As his owne sonnes, duryng all his lyfe
To make hym loue hym, without any stryfe

THus by wisedome his sonne Henry right so
Hym cherished by good and wise counsayl
Whiche he assigned vnto hym tho
Of good rule, that would not let hym faile
For cause he should agayn hym not preuayle
And into Fraunce, in his hole estate
Had hym with his brother associate

ALl this he did, of full good policie
To wynne his loue, and kept hym in direccion
From entisement of all euill and folie
To his pleasaunce, without all suspection
This was greate witte and circumspeccion
To rule hym thus, his heighnes to obaye
Without stryfe, to sitte in peace his daye

O gracious lorde, nowe of your sapience
Consydre well this sixtye yere and three
Your kyn and ye by all intelligence
Haue been deuorced of all the royaltee
To nowe that God of his specialitee
Hath graũted you grace, your rightes to recouer
And your enemyes all to rule at ouer.

CConsidre well the benigne innocence
Of kyng Henry that nowe is in Scotlande
By Goddes dome of small intelligence
For your preuayle, as men can vnderstande
Sette hym nowe home, agayn into Englande

With

1 Sadnesse. 2 Sauue. 3 Remue. 4 Deforced.
5 Especialte. 6 And enemyes as further more to rule all ouer.
7 Youre kynne.

With all the meanes, ye maye of sapyence
His wyfe and sonne, with all your dilygence.

For truste it well, yf they maye passe to Fraũce.
Or power get to theim in any wyse
Eche yere they wyl you trouble, and do greuaũce
By Scottes assent, and theyr exercyse
To brag and boste, as they wolde on you ryse
To make your people and cõmons for to yrke
Jackes and salades ay newe and newe to wirke

For truste it well, as God is nowe in heuen
The Scottes wyll ay do you the harme they may
And so they haue full ofte, with odde and euen
Afore that Christe was borne so of a maye
As yet they do at theyr power euery daye
Wherfor good lord, brig home these persons thre
With all theyr men, & geue them grace all fre

And loue them better, for theyr great lewte
That they forsoke theyr landes and herytage
And fled with hym, in aduersyte
To byde in payne sorowe and seruage (rage
Good herte shulde rewe, well more theyr trewe co-
Then them ỹ wold haue gone, and durste nought
Consyder howe thei shewed, as they thought

Yf ye might get them all for any good
To be your men, and haue theyr herytage
And poure enemies, that agaynst you stode
Ye shulde make trewe men to your auauntage
To passe with you, in warres and hostage
As trewe as they haue bene to kyng Henry

And

1 Or. 2 Eche. 3 For all. 4 Avoide. 5 And in.
6 It nought. 7 Conciared 8 Of 9 Agaynst. 10 Kinge.

And mekell trewce for your ryght auncetry

¶ For yf ye myght them get nowe euery chone
Youre warres were done, thē might you syt in rest
Without trouble of any lande alone
For all youre lande throughout, thē might ye rest
Yf it were hole that ye nede not mistryst
No prynce christen, myght do you any dere
But in his lande, ye myght make him were.

¶ Graunt Henry grace, w̄ all his owne liuelode
The duchye hole of Lancaster, that is his ryght
Not as it is, but of worthyhede
Fyrste duke Henry, had the noble knight
At his laste daye, that was of mikyll might
His wyfe and sonne, get home by ordynaunce
And geue them councell, for theyr gouernaunce

¶ Suche as you truste, wyll rule them worthely
To youre plesaunce, in all tranquillyte
In peace and reste, with all good polyce
For better were, to haue them in suretye
Than lette theim bene, with your aduersyte
With Scottes or French, ỹ wold se your destresse
And helpe to it with all theyr busynesse

¶ And yf ye maye by no meane nor treate
Get them home, ordeine then faste youre flete
On the easte sea, into Scotlande in hye
At Edenburgh, so maye it with you mete
With all vitayle and ordynaunce full mete
And set vpon the castell, they bene in
Escape they maye not, but ye shall them wyn.

For

1 Suche trewce. 2 Ye. 3 Nought. 4 Wele make.
5 Grete. 6 Ye. 7 Ye. 8 What 9 Can.

¶ For I haue sene theyr castelles stronge echone
That strongest bene, and worste to get and wyn
Amonge them all, for certayne is there none
That may bene holde out longe, when ye begyn
Saue Dunbretayne, the sea aboute doth tyn
Eche daye and nyght, twyce withouten doubte
Whiche may be wonne, by kampshyng aboute

The castel of Dunbretayne.

¶ With shippes by sea, & siege vpon the lande
Ye maye not fayle, to haue it at the laste
All other wyll bene yelde into youre hande
So that ye haue by worckemen well forecaste
Youre ordynaunce and gonnes for to caste
With abylementes of warre, suche as ye nede
No castell elles maye withstande in dede

¶ Therfore in what castell that they bene in
Go to the same withoute impedyment
Not in wynter, but in somer ye begyn
When Jupll moneth, or Auguste is present
That forage may begot, as doth appent
Of corne and grasse, for horses sustenaunce
And fayre wether to mennes hye pleasaunce.

The tyme to beginne warre in Scotlande

¶ O righteous prince, bring home ỹ scatred men
To theyr pasture forsaken and forlore
For of your breste, shulde greate foyson ren
To nedy men, of grace and helpe euermore
Consyder howe God hath you set therfore
And ouer the flocke, to seke the scatered shepe
And laye them in your folde surely to slepe

¶ Consider nowe, most gracious soueraine lorde

Howe

1 Euerichone. 2 With. 3 But. 4 wolbe. 5 May ben.
6 For. 7 Thy. 8 Ensure. 9 Stayinge
10 Sete.

Howe longe nowe that your noble auncetrye
In welth and helth, hath reigned of hye recorde
That kepte lawe and peace continually
And thynke they bene of all your monarchye
The fayrest floures and highest of enterprice
And soneste maye youre forreyne foes suppice

¶ Conlider also in this symple tretyse
Howe kynges kepte neyther lawe ne peace
Went sone awaye, in many dyuerse wyse
Without thanke of God at theyr decese
And nought were dred with, ne without doutlesse
But in defaute of peace, and lawe conserued
Destroyed were, right as they had deserued.

¶ Consyder also, moste erthly soueraine lorde
Of French nor Scottes ye get neuer to your pay
Any treaty or trewce, or good concorde
But yf it be vnder your banner aye
Whiche maye neuer be, by reason any waye
But yf youre realme stande well in vnyte
Conserued well, in peace and equyte

¶ Your marchis kepte, & also your sea full clere
To Fraūce or Spaine, ye may ride for your right
To Portyngale & Scotlande w̄ your banner
Whils your rereward in Englād stādeth wyght
Under your banner, your enemies well you wyght
A better treaty, within a lytell date
Then in foure yere, to your ambassate

¶ Remembred bene, vnto youre excellence
The tytles all, that longe to youre regiment

Of

Of Scotlande hole, with all my dilygence
That third parte, is of Bzitayne by extent
And owe to bene, at your cõmaundement
And membze of your royall monarchye
As Chzonicliers haue made therof memozye

¶ Englande and Wales, as to their soueraygne
To you obey, whiche shuld thinke shame of ryght
To se Scotlande thus pzoudly disobeyne
Agayne them two, that bene of greate myght
It is a shame to euery mannes syght
Sith John Bayliell, his ryght of it resygned
To kyng Edward, why is it thus repugned

¶ Within thze yere, theyz greate rebellyon
Ye myght repzesse, and vtterly restrayne
And kepe them euer in youre possessyon
Foz to obey youre might, make them full fayne
As kyng Edward dyd wt hunger and with payne
Them conquered hole, to his subiectcyon
To byde euermoze vnder his pzotectcyon

¶ Wherfoze good lozde, nowe girde you wt your
And set vpon the frowarde heretykes (swerde
That erren fro the two partes of the herde
And strayen oute, as they were litargykes
Whiche haue forget their lozde as cronnatykes
Hauyng no shame of theyz peruersyte
Noz chaunge hewe foz theyz falsyte.

¶ And truste it well, as God is nowe in heuen
Ye shall neuer synde the Scottes vnto you trewe
Where they maye with youre enemies ay beleuen
They

1 Gwetz. 2 Ar. 3 In. 4 Ayens. 5 Such. 6 Gretter.
7 Emerich. 8 Exigunca. 9 Oppresse. 10 Vide. 11 Two Curtes.
12 Cronatykes. 13 Chaunges.

They wyll to you then, alwaye be vntrewe
Yet through your manhede, it maye them rewe
For lenger then ye haue them in subiecyon
Truste neuer truth, in them ne perfeccyon

The. CC. xli. Chapiter.

¶ The kynges tytle to all his landes, brefely reported, with a mocyon to vnion Scotlande and Englande.

TO England haue ye right, as ye maye se
By Brutus chronycle Saxõs & Normãs
To Wales ỹ same, & Scotlãd also perde
Who that the gifte and right well vnderstandes
Of John Bayloll, howe he into the handes
Of kyng Edwarde, it gaue and resygned
Why shulde it nowe be voyde and reppygned

¶ To Fraunce youre title, is writen well & know
For saynte Lowis, to you by hole discente
And Normandye all hole, bothe hye and lowe
Fro Willyam Conqueroure, by hole entent
Guyen and Poytowe, withall to them appent
For Elianour the mother of kyng John
Doughter and heyre, to duke Willyam anon

¶ To Angeou also, by Geffrey Plantagenet
Father of Henry le fyrst Empryce
That of Angeou was Earle withouten let
And of Mayne also, a pryncé of greate empyre
To Irelande also, by kyng Henry le fyrst
Of Maude, doughter of fyrste kyng Henry
That conquered it, for theyr greate herelye

To

1 Beene. 2 Beene to 3 Acon

4 Mocion. Edit. 4 de Empereur.

¶ To Castell and to Lion also ye been
Thenheritour also and verie heire
By right of bloodde discended clere and clene
Of Poztyngale, wher Lusshozne is full faire
Fro kyng Petro without any dispeir
Foz tho twoo, bee the verie regions
That named bee Castile and Legions

¶ your graunsirez mother duchesse Isabell
Full lady like faire and femenine
To kyng Petro as I haue heard tell
Was verie heire of theim, by rightfull lyne
To whom ye been heire as menne determyne
By small hackeneys, greate coursers men chastice
As Arthure did by Scottes, wanne all fraunchese

¶ Though scripture saieth, of Nozth all etuill is
Me thynketh I can, auaũte it as pzoperly (shewed
That thei bee as manly learned and lewed
As any folke and as muche pain maye dzy
Better menne of warre are not vnder the skye
And of lyuyng, Dauid saieth in his boke
Of Scotland well, who so that will it loke

¶ If Scotlãd were youres, to Wales & Englãd
Who hath power, to make you resistence
In any wise, in any vncouth land
Your rereward then scant in all sufficience
To kepe England surely in your absence
Make theim Albion, and passe furth wher ye list
To other landes ye nede none other trist

G Thercu=

¶ The excusacion of the maker, touchyng defautes of this booke and of the simplenes of it.

OF all maters I haue saied myne entent
So as I couth espie, & in all wise enquere
Whiche it it maye, your highnes well cõ-
My hearte reioyseth, to comfort your desire (tent
And of your grace, euermore I you require
For to consider, my losse and my mayme in fere
For Englandes right, as well as I couth spere

¶ Beseechyng ay vnto your royaltee
If ought bee saied in this simple treatise
Displeasyng to your hie nobilitee
For to resume it, in a better wise
Hauyng my witte excused, that neuer was wise
And thinke I would haue mẽt vnto your plesaũce
To whiche I lacke nothyng, but suffisaunce

¶ Please it also vnto your royaltee
The quene maye haue a vereie intellecte
Of your eldres of greate antiquitee
And of England, of whiche she is electe
Soueraigne lady, full worthily protecte
Under your rule and noble gouernaunce
Whiche God ay kepe without variaunce

¶ The whiche should please her good femenite
To reade vpon, for her comfort and disporte
To se and knowe, the greate nobilite
Of your eldres regalie and porte
Whiche maye her glad alwaye and recomforte
And if it maye please her souereingtie

Of

Of my labour I would reioyled bee

¶ For women haue femenine condicion
To know all thynges longyng to their houlband
His high worshyp and his disposicion
His hertes counsaill also to understonde
As at weddyng, to her he made his bounde
And moste of all his hertes priuetie
And the state of his good auncetrie

¶ O souereigne lorde ỹ quene hath all sufficiẽce
As touchyng you, but of your auncetrie
In this treatise of all their excellence
The quene maie se the worthy regence
Of this your realme and noble monarchie
Whiche hath been kept in greate nobilitee
By your eldres of greate antiquitee

¶ This booke I call after my name Hardyng
Sith God lent me that disposicion
To enforme hym that laboured the wrytyng
By plain language of small prouision
Through Godes grace and his supposicion
All destitute of language and science
And desolate of rethorike eloquence

¶ Moste cause was why I drew this ilke treatise
To make your father haue hadde perfecte knowlage
And you also of Scotlande in all wise
That percell was of your eldest heritage
And of all landes moste nere your auauntage
To haue it whole, no more to bee dismembred
Whiche might bee gote, as it is afore remembred

¶ I had it leuer then Fraunce and Normandy
And all your rightes that are beyonde the sea
For ye maye kepe it euermore full sikirly
Within your self and dede none emnytee
And other landes, without gold, menne and fee
Ye maye not long reioyse, as hath been tolde
For lightter bee thei for to wynne, then holde

¶ Your auncestres haue had beyonde the see
Diuers landes, and lost theim all again
Sore gotten sone lost, what auaileth suche totalte
But labour and cost, greate losse of menne & pain
For ay before, with treason or with train
And want of gold, was lost within a yere
That we had gote in tenne, as dooeth appere

¶ How the maker of

this booke reporteth the distaunce and miles of the tounes in Scotland and ye waye how to conueigh an armie aswell by lande as water into the chefest partes therof.

AWE to expresse, vnto your noble grace
The verie waye, bothe by sea & land
With the distaunce of tounes, and euery myles space
Through the chefest parte of all Scotland
To conueigh an armie, that ye maye take in hand
Herafter shall folowe, in as good ordre as I maye

The

1 Beare.

2 Sone. edit. ait.

The true discripcion, and distaunce of the waye

¶From Berwike to Dõbarre, twenty miles it is
And twelfe miles forward vnto Haddyngtoune
And twelfe miles frõ thẽse to Edenburgh I wisse
To Lithko twelfe, and so Northwest to Bowne
Twelfe miles it is, vnto Sterlyng toune
Besouth Fourth, that ryuer principall
Of right faire waye, and plentifull atall.

frõ Barwyke to Dõbarre .xx. Haddingtoũe xii. Edẽburgh xii Lythko xii. Sterlyng .xii.

¶Wher ỹ your nauy at Leith may rest saufly
With all your vitayles, a mile from Edenburgh
And after at the blakneſſe, whiles as ye ly
At Sterlyng toune, whiche is the kynges burgh
And wynne that shire, all whole out through
So shall your nauy at your necessitee
Bee at your hand still, your army to supplie

ffrõ Edẽburgh to Leith. i to Blakneſſe. ix. to Sterling. xiiii

¶From Sterlyng then ouer the riuer of Fourth
Passe alongest the brydge to Camskinelle
And if it bee broken toward the North
Unto the foorde of Tirps vnder the fell
Thẽ spede you Westward, thre miles as mẽne tell
Wher ye maye passe to the downe of Menteth
Whiche passeth from ỹ Fourth thre miles vnneth

ffrõ Sterlyng to ỹ doune of of Monteth. iii.

¶Then frõ the downe, a waie ye haue right faire
Through out Monteth, & eke Clakmannam shire
And so through Fiffe, to Falke land to repaire
Thirty long miles, without mosse or myre
For so it is compted, with horse and carte to hyre
From Sterlyng Eastward, & the highe oyghylles
Whiche some mẽne call mõtaignes, & some felles

ffrõ Sterlynge to ffalklãd. xxx.

¶ From falkland thã to Dilert towne, south east
Twelfe myles it is, of fayre ready waye
And from Falkland to sayntе Andrewes, east
But other. xii. myles, wythouten anye naye
Wher the bysshoppes see is, and castell as thei say
And at Kyngorne, and Dilert may ye meete
You for to vytayle, al youre Englysh fleete.

¶ Than ride northwest, from s. Andrewes towne
Alongest the south syde, of the water of Taye
Up to the burgh of sayntе Jhons towne
Right north from Fyfe, a countree freshe and gay
And from sayntе Androws. xxiiii. myles they say
A pleasant grounde and fruitfull countrey
Of corne and cattel, with prosperitie.

¶ Which countrey of Fyfe along the scottish sea
And from sayntе Androws, to the oyghles they say
Is. xliiii. myles longe of good countrey
And somtyme in bredth. vi. myles of fayre way
But from Logh leuen eastward, without nay
Of ryght good way, briefly to conclude
Xii. myles conteyne it dothe in latitude.

At Ennerkethen and sayntе Margarete I hope
Your nauy maye receaue vytayle in that countre
Alongest the water of Foorth, as I can grope
Wyth hulke, and barge, of no smal quantite
You to supporte, in your necessytee
So that ye maye not, in those countryes fayle
To haue for your armye, redye vytayle.

¶ Thẽ to s. Jhons towne, vpon the water of Taye
Wythin

Within Strathzen, that standeth fayze a stronge
Dytched about, syxtene foote depe I saye
And.xx.foote on bzeadthe ouerwhart to louge
yt is nozthest.xx.myles full longe
And nere to Scone abbay, within myles thze
Wher alwayes thei crowne their kinges maieste

Whyche water of Tay, is so nauygable
From the east sea, to saynt Jhons toune
Foz all suche shippes, as bee able
Foztie tunne of wyne, to cary vp and doune
Foz vitallyng, and keping of the toune
Unto the whych, so floweth the water of Taye
That all the dytches it fylleth nighte and daye

At the whych toune, passe ouer the bzygde ye shall
With al your armye, hostyng through that land
Wher in Angus, that countree pzyncypall
The kerke of gowry doth lye I vnderstand
A plentifull countree, I you warrande
Of cozne and catell, and all commoditees
You to suppozte, in your necessytees

Betwyxt the mounthes and the water of Tay
Whych some do cal mountaynes in our lãguage
Passe eastwarde, with your army daye by daye
Frome place to place with small cariage
Foz your nauy shall you mete in that viage
At Pozthincragge, shozte waye from Dunde
With vitailes to refreshe your whole armye

Beside the stuffe and vitaile of that lande
Which ye shall fynde, in the countre as ye go
And market made alwayes to your hande

Of all theyr vytayles, although they bee your fo
Now from s. Jhons towne, the soothe to say is so
xviii. myles it is, to the towne of Dundye
The pryncypall bugh, by northe the Scotysche see

Than ryde northeast all alongest the see
Ryght from Dumber to Arbroith as J mene
Than to Monrosse, and to Barupe
And so through the Meernes to Cowy as J wene
Then. xii. myles of moore passe to Aberdyne
Betwyxt Dee and Donea goodly cytee
A marchaunt towne and vniuersytee

Of the whych waye. xxx. myles there is
Of good corne lande, and. xx. large extente
Full of catell and other goodes J wysse
As to Moore lande, and heth dothe wele appente
From Brichan cytee to the orient
Wh ere doothe stande vpon the see
A goodly porte and hauen for your naupe

Where that the same, may easely poumete
To vitayle your armye, whersoeuer ye go
Ouer all the mountaynes, dyre mosses and wete
Wher the wild Scottes do dwel than passe vnto
That is in Mare and Garioth also
In Athill, Rosse, Sutherland and Chatnesse
Mureffe, Lenor, and out ysles J gesse.

And when ye haue that lande hole conquered
Returne agayne vnto Striuelyne
And from thence to Glasco homewarde
Twenty and foure myles to s. Mongos shrine.

wher=

Wherw your offeryng ye shall frō thence decline
And passe on forthwarde to Dumbertayne
A castell stronge and harde for to obteine

¶ In whiche castell S. Patryke was borne
That afterwarde in Irelande dyd wynne
Aboute the whyche floweth euen and morne
The westerne seas without noyse or dynne
When forth of the same the streames dooe rynne
Twyse in.xxiiii.houres, without any fayle
That no man may that stronge castell assayle.

¶ Upon a rocke so hye, the same dothe stande
That yf the walles were beaten to the roche
Yet were it full harde to clymbe with foot or hand
And so to wynne, yf any to them approche
So strong it is to get without reproche
That without honger, and cruell famyshemente
Yt cannot bee taken to my iudgemente

¶ Than from Glasgo to the towne of Ayre
Are twentie myles and foure wele accompted
A good countree for your armye euery where
And plenteous also, by many one recounted
For there I was, and at the same I mounted
Towarde Lamarke towne.xxiiii.myles
Homeward trudging, for feare of Scottish giles

¶ From the towne of Ayre in kyle, to Galloway
Through Carryct passe vnto Nithysdayle
Where Dumfryse is a pretye towne alwaye
And plentifull also of all good vytayle
For all your armye, wythout any fayle

So that kepyng this iourney, by my instruccion
That realme ye shall bring in subieccion.

Then from Domfrise to Carlill, ye shall ride
xviii. miles of veray redy waye
So maye ye wynne the lande on euery syde
Within a yere, without more delaye
For castelles there is none, ȳ withstande you may
Nor abide your seage, against your ordinaunce
So simple, and weake, is their purueiaunce.

And yf ye like good Lorde, at home to abide
With liteil cost, your Wardens ye may sende
Charging theim all, with hostes for to ride
In proper persone, through wynter to thende
With morow forraies, they may them sore offend
And burne Jedburgh, Hawike Melrose, & Lāder
Codinghm̄, Donglasse, & the toune of Dombarre

Then send an hoste of footemen in
At Lammesse next, through all Lawdendayle
And Lāmermore woddes, and mossis ouer rynne
And eke therwith the Stowe of Weddale
Melrose lande, Etryke forrest, and Tyndale
Lyddisdale, Ewysdale, and the Ryngwodfelde
To the Creke Crosse, that ryden is full selde

The wardens then of bothe the marches twoo
To bee their stayle, and eke their castelles strong
Then to reskewe from enemies wher euer thei go
With fleyng stayles, to folowe theim ay emong
Les nor then foes theim suppresse and fong
And euery night to releue to the hoste

And

And lodge together all vpon a coast

¶ And also than at the next Myghelmesse
The west warden to Domfryse ryde he maye
Four and twentie myles from Carelyl as I gesse
And than passe forthwarde, through galowaye
To Carricke after, into good araye
And then from thence, to the towne of Ayre
In Kile that countree, plentifull, and fayre

¶ Nexte than from Ayre, vnto Glasgew go
A goodly cytee and vniuersitee
Where plentifull is the countree also
Replenished well with all commoditee
There maye the warden of the east marche bee
And mete the other twayne as I wene
Within tenne dayes, or at the moost fyftene

¶ The thyrde army from Barwyke passe it shall
Through Dumbarre, Edenburgh, and Lythko
And then to Sterlyng, with their power al
And nexte from that vnto Glasgo
Standyng vpon Clyde, and where also
Of corne and cattell is aboundaunce
Youre armye to vittayle at al suffysaunce

¶ Thus these thre armies at Glasgew shal mete
Well arayed in theyr armour clene
Which hõward frõ thẽce, thei shal returne cõplete
Four and twentie myles to Lanarke so shene
To Pebles on Twede, is syxtene myles I wene
To Soltray as muche, thã twẽtie miles wt spede
From thence returne, they shal to Wark on twede

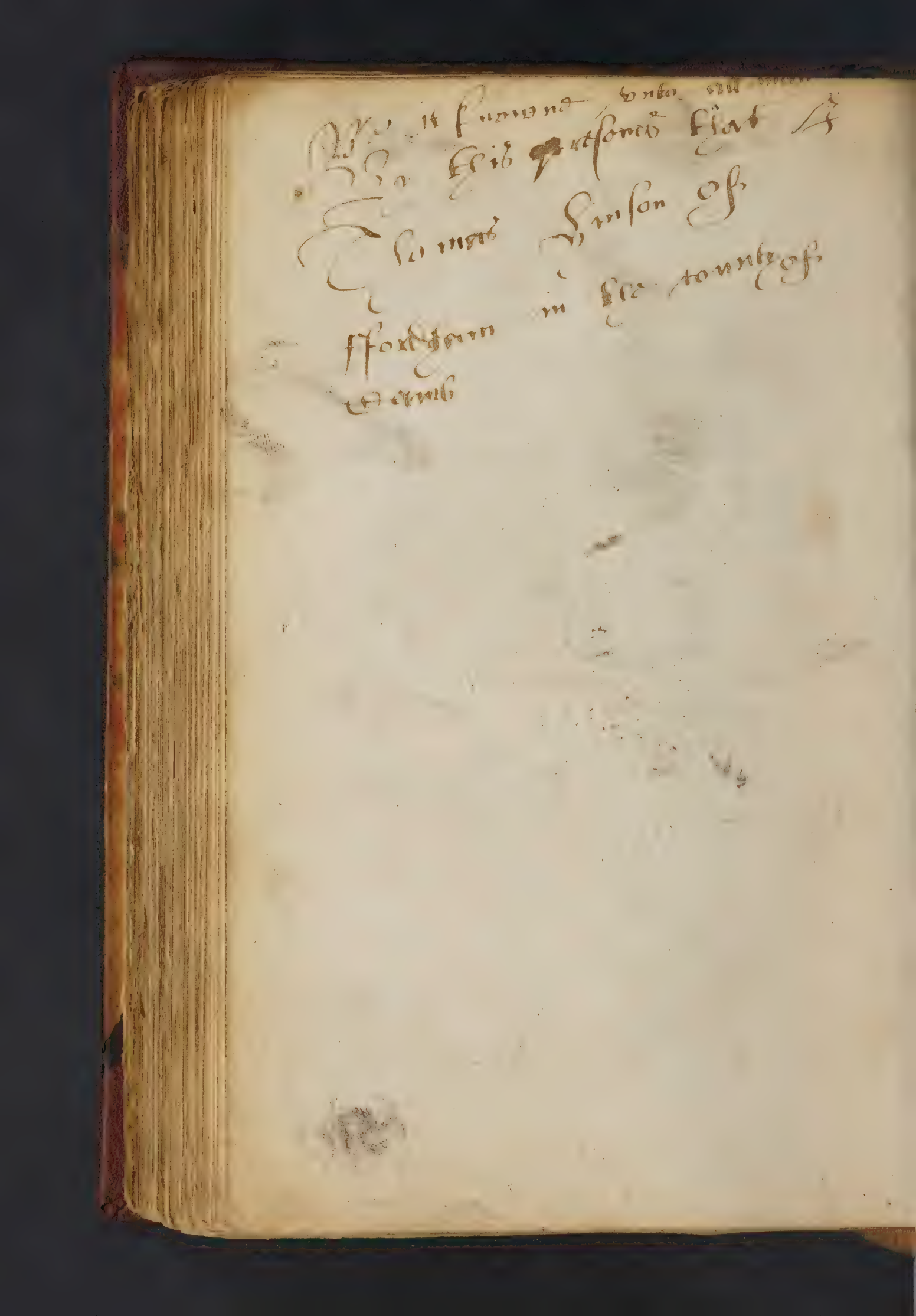
With

Within a moneth, this lande maye bee destroyed
All a south forth if wardens wyll assent
So that our enemies shal bee sore annoied
And wasted bee, and eke for euer shent
If Wardens thus worke, after mine intent
They maye well quenche, the cruell enmitee
This daye by south all the Scottishe see.

NOw of this matter, I haue sayed mine intent
Like as I could espye and diligently inquire
Whiche if it maye your highnesse well content
It is the thing that I hartely desire
And of your grace no more I dooe require
But that your grace, will take in good parte
Not only my peines, but also my true harte.

LONDINI.
In officina Richardi
Graftoni.

1543.



A contina-

cion of the chronicle of England, begynnyng wher John Hardyng left, ỹ is to saie, frome the begyn nyng of Edward the fourth vnto this present thirty & foure yere, of our moost redoubted soueraigne lorde kyng Hēry ỹ eight, gathered oute of the moost credible and autētique wryters.

To the reader.

Forasmuche mooste benyng reader, as this former autour Jhō Hardyng, wrote no ferther then to kyng Edward the fourth: in whose dayes it should apere ỹ he departed out of this world: & also consideryng the length of ỹ tyme sence, and the manifolde goodly histoyres, battailles, decres and statutes with the discēt and lyne of the kynges of England sence that tyme, I thought it not onely my dutie to labour ỹ knowledge of thesame histoyres to thētent to adioyne & annexe thesame herunto, but also it should bee a greate offence in me to suffre you to bee depryued of so many fruitefull & necessarie thynges. Wherfore I haue here to the vttermost of my poore wit gathered and set foorth vnto you thesaid histories not in metre, like as John Hardyng hath dooen before, partely because I would therby declare a dyfference betwene the former wrytyng of John Hardyng and this my addicion, but specially, that these excellent storyes should nether in sence ner woordes bee defaced of the eloquence and greate grace that the autoures of thesame haue all readie geuen theim, and therfore haue I wrytten theim vnto you in prose and at length, ỹwhiche thynges howe muche ỹ more that thei shall delyte and please you, so muche the more glad shall I bee of my peynes taken.

[a] And decres. edit. alt.

Edward the fourth.

AFTER TAHT EDVVARD had vãquished & put to flight Henry the sixte, beyng then verie ioious and proude (partely thorowe ỹ victorie that he had gotten and partely for that the commons began to cleaue vn to hym and to take his parte, and lykewise did the states of the realme) then departed he with all conuenyent spede to London, and ther assemblyng his counsaill together, was shortely after proclaimed kyng at Westminster ỹ nyne and twẽty daye of June and was called Edward the fourth of that name after Wyllyam the conquerour, and this was in the yere of Christ his incarnacion a thousand foure hundred three score and one. And the self same yere kyng Edward held his parliamẽt again, in the whiche, first the realme was sette in good order, and all thynges wholy redressed, whiche was very good & expedient for the commen weale, for ỹ it had not been looked to all ỹ tyme that ciuile battaill did continue. And also thorowe his decree & will, all ỹ statutes that kyng Hẽry ỹ first had made, was vtterly abrogated & of no vertue or strength, finally his twoo brethren ỹ wer younger then he, George was made duke of Clarence, and Rychard duke of Glouceſtre, and John the brother of Rychard Erle of Warwike, was made marques Montacute, and Henry Bur

The first yere.

abrogated

A ii cherie

chire the brother of Thomas bishop of Cauntur-
bury erle of Esser, and Wyllyam Faucombridge
erle of Kent, & this Henry Burchire beeyng a no-
ble manne & mooſt puiſſaunte in feactes of warre
had gyuen hym to mariage the ſuſter of Rychard
dyke of Yorke, called Elizabeth. And for this cauſe
chiefely, that the ſaid Rychard might haue his aſſi
ſtaūce and helpe of hym in all maner of aduerſitie
that ſhould chaūce, either by battaill or other wiſe
and that he did, after that kyng Edward the
ſoonne of the ſame Rychard had made hym erle of
Esser, to thend ỹ bothe the father & the ſoōne might
at all tymes bee a ſure foꝛtreſſe and defēce foꝛ hym
And he had begotten of this Elizabeth in laufull
mariage foure menne chyldꝛen, ỹ is to ſaie, Wyl-
lyam, Thomas, John, and Henry, and one dough
ter called Iſabell, the whiche liued but a ſhoꝛte
ſpace, the whiche ſoonnes vſed greate diligence in
bꝛyngyng matters to paſſe, & in weightie affaires
and buſynes very laboꝛious, in aduentures and
ieoperdies manly and bold, and in foꝛſeyng thyn-
ges very circumſpect, but ſpecially Wyllyam the
eldeſt had all theſe qualities. This Wylliam ma-
ried Anne a mayden diſcēdyng of high parentage
and of mooſt pure birginitie, the doughter of Ja-
mes Luſſheburne erle of ſainct Paule, by whome
he had Henry nowe erle of Esser, alſo Cicile and
Iſabell doughters, the whiche Iſabell died beforꝛe
ſhe was ripe to mariage, and ỹ other was maried
to Walter Ferryſe*. But to come to that I ſpake
in the begynnyng.

When all thynges chaunſed thus luckely to
Edward, and that all was as he would haue it,
Henry

° Omitted. edit. act. edit.

... Doughter of Jaquet duches of Bedford, by Rychard earle Ryuers, doughter to James of Luſſhenborough Erle of S. Paule. edit. alt.

* Lord Ferryſe. edit. alt.

Henry the duke of Somerset fearyng that kyng Henry should goo to wracke, and take the woorse, fled to kyng Edward, of whome he was after the moost gentle sorte intertayned, but sone after it repented hym of his deede, for in the meane season kyng Henry had gotte a greate power of Scotish menne, & vnwittyng to Edward gat Duresme, the whiche thyng after hearde, the duke of Somerset fled priuely to hym, with a greate compaignie of ỹ kyng his frēdes folowyng after, and so many for desire of lucre and vauntage did turne to hym, that Henry was thought to haue as greate an armie as his enemie had. The whiche armie he made menne thynke to bee the greater for ỹ he did spoile and destroye townes and feldes where soeuer he came, & so by long burnyng and wastyng he came to a village called Exham, where as he buckeled with John marques Montacute whome he mette there, and there fightyng very sharpely, as often tymes it had chaunsed before, was putte to flight, losyng the greatest noũbre of his hoost, & he hym selfe with a fewe mo, went in all the hast to Scotland, and the residue fled, some one waye and some an other to saue their liues. Ther was taken there prisoners, Henry duke of Somerset, Robert duke of Hungerforde, and Thomas Rosse, the whiche duke of Somerset was putte to death by and by for that he had chaunged his mynde so sone and went to ỹother partie, theother were had to Newe castell, and ther beyng for a season were putte to death in like maner, wherby other should haue no trust of any victorie, when their capitaines were dedde & gone. Albeit kyng Edward nowe might

Howe Henry ỹ duke of Somersette lefte kyng Henry the.vi. and fled to kyng Edward and after repented & fled againe to Hēry the.vi.

The discomfiture of Henry the sixt.

The duke of Somerset taken & beheded

° Encountred. Lait. alt.

* sword. Lait. alt.

** Thomas lorde Roos, for Thomas Wentworth, & for Thomas Hulse. Lait. alt.

°° Beheaded at Exham. Lait. alt.

thynke all thynges to be wel, and hym selfe strong enough agaynst the power of hys enemy for that he had gotte suche a byctorye, yet dyd he wyth all dylygence prouyde that Margarete kynge Henrye the. vi. hys wife, shulde at no hande be let into Englande for feare of wynnynge mennes hartes to her. Wherefore, he made bulwarkes & sure fortresses on euerye parte and coastes of hys realme that there myghte be no landynge, and dyd wryte to all theim of the southe partes, that they shulde in nowyse take in anye woman, or helpe anye, for yf anye so dyd, he shulde be taken as an enemye & an hyghe traytoure to the crowne, as they were a gaynste whome he dyd fyghte.

And of that parte that is nygh to the Scotish bancke, he layed watches, that none shoulde goo oute of the realme to kynge Henrye. But kynge Henrye hym selfe was neuer in anye greate feare whatsoeuer chaunced, in so muche that he came in to England in a dysguysed apparel, and then beinge knowen and taken of certayne spyes sone after he had come in, was caried to London to king Edwarde, and there layde in holde. After whose attachynge and imprysonmente, the realme was set in more quyetnes. Wherfore, Edwarde nowe beynge oute of all feare and daunger of hys enemyes, dyd wholy set hym selfe the foure yeres after ensuynge to the reformatyon and redressynge of hys publyke weale, and to the recompensynge of hys souldyers for their paynes: did deuyde and geue the landes of theim that were wyth kynge Henrye to hys owne, and so wyth geuynge large and ample rewardes, dyd get the fauoure of all his

The takynge of Henry the syxte,

hys people as well the laye as the nobles, and v-
synge suche vrbanyte and clemencyé to all kinde
of men, that he had throughlye wonne the hartes
of all men: the whyche gentylnes and kyndely fa
mylyaritee he dyd euer after vse. Also as for the
lawes of the realme he dyd alter and mend some,
and some he made newe, besydes that he coyned
monye as wel golde as syluer, the whyche at this
daye is currante. The whyche golde was royals,
and nobles, and the syluer, was grotes, so that in
hys tyme thys kinde of coyne came vp.

The coynynge of royalles & nobles.

And after that hys realme was in thys state he
made a proclamation, that yf anye manne beyng
a traytoure or rebellyon hertofore to hys grace, &
wyllyng to submyt hym selfe wholy to hym shuld
haue his pardon, and other that wolde not, shuld
die, and suffer accordyng to the lawes. The which
kyndnes and natyue loue dyd cause hym to haue
the good wyl and herte of his commons, so much
that it is euydent, he was al the dayes of hys lyfe
a conqueroure, through the helpe and ayde of thē
in so much, that hys enemyes were euer shameful
ly put to wrack, as it shalbe shewed more playnly
hereafter. And also not contented wyth the frend-
shyppe of hys owne countree menne, dyd wynne
and procure the loue of forein and straunge pryn-
ces, and made theim to bee of kynred wyth hym,
whereby that they myghte, (yf nede shoulde so re-
quyre) ayde and socour him, or at the least, not bee
iniurious or noysome to hym. So that he maried
hys syster lady Margarete, to Charles the sonne
of Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne, throughe which
maryage he had greate helpe at the insurrection

that chaunsed in thys his natiue countree, and af ter that sente Rychard the erle of Warwyke em bassadoure into Fraunce, the whyche shoulde de syre for hym to wyfe, a mayden called Bona, the syster of Carlotta the quene of Fraunce, and the doughter of Lewes duke of Sauoye, whyche after dyd marye John Galeot duke of Mylayne, the whyche busynes dyd cause cyuile battayle to bee. For in the meane tyme that the earle wente in to Fraunce, and had spoken wyth Lewes the kynge, wyth whom the ladie Bona was, and wayted vpon the quene her syster, Edwarde chaungynge hys mynde, maryed ladye Elyzabeth the doughter of Rychard the earle of Ryuers, which was maryed before to syr John Gray knyght, by whome she had two chyldren, Thomas and Rychard, of the whyche maryage, for the humylytie or baseness of stocke that the lady was of, he wold no prynce or kynges to haue knowne of it, no not so muche as her owne father Rychard the earle, for the whyche cause, when it was blased abrode, euerye man dyd meruayle greatelye, kynges and prynces were dysplealed and grudged at it, and sayde playnelye, that it was not for hys honoure so to doo, and beganne to reproue the forsayde maryage shamefullye, and for that he was led rather by blynde Cuppyd, than by anye reason, they dyd incessantlye reproue the same. And ether thys was the cause of the sedycion whyche afterwarde dyd ryse betwyxte kynge Edwarde and the earle of Warwycke, or els the pryuie enuye and malice whiche was in both theyr hertes nowe brastynge out, wherby, an occasiõ or quarel might be picked

For

For Edward after that he had got his kyngdome (as it was openly knowne) by the erle of Warwykes meane and helpe, begonne to suspect hym for that he was in such authoritee, so that he woulde haue plucked somewhat frome him & diminished his powre, wherby he myght haue ruled all thynges at his owne pleasure both in hys owne countree, & in other nacions. So that a man may see, it ofte chaunceth ỹ frendes will geue very seldome condygne rewarde to a mans deseruinges, yea, & ofttsones when a greate benefite is bestowed or cõferred vpon theim, thei will like ingrate persons nothyng cõsider it. Of this ỹ earle of Warwycke was not vnknowing, ỹ whiche although he loked for better thankes & a more ample benefite at his hãdes, yet neuertheles, he thought best to dissẽble and cloke ỹ matter, vntill such oportunitie might be had, wherby he myght, considering the wylfulnes of the kynge erpzobzate vnto hym the pleasures ỹ he had done for him. And it is verye true and cuidẽt that king Edward dyd make serche in his house for a thing that touched much his honestie, wher the earle in dede was a man that loued women well, and had great fantesie to their company. But what socuer it was, ether euell wyll, or desire of the empire that theyr league shuld bee infringed or broken, after that the earle had sure knowledge by the letters of hys frendes that the king had got him a wife pziuely and ỹ al ỹ he had done with king Lewis in his embassad for the ioyning of this newe affinitee was but frustrate and in vain, he was so ernestly moued with it, that he thought best that the kynge shuld be deposed frõ

the

the crowne,and as one not worthy of such a king ly office. But to oure purpose. The earle of War wyke beyng then sore vexed,and moued wyth the kynge, least ẏ in this his furoure hys intẽt beyng rashely gone aboute, shulde bee brought to no good ende,he determined so lõge to suffer & beare suche iniuries,vntyll suche tyme that he myghte brynge his matters to passe as he wolde haue thẽ whiche shortly after came into Englande,and sa= lutyng the kynge,dyd hys message vnto hym,ma kinge hym selfe to bee ignorannte of that mary= age. And after that,the earle throughe the licence of the king went into his shyre of Warwike, part ly to take his pleasure,and partly for the preserua
The first yere. tion of his saftie and helth,whyche was the yere of oure lorde God a.M.CCCC.lxvii.and the.vi yeare of the reygne of kynge Edwarde. In the whiche yeare, George Neuell brother to the earle was made archebyshoppe of Yorke, after the dys= cease of Wyllyam late archebyshoppe before him beeynge the. lii.byshoppe that had possessed that rome,and Phylyppe duke of Burgoyne dyed the same yeare, and Charles hys soonne was made duke, a manne bothe for manhode and valyante nes in warre moste excellente. Thys Rychard as we sayde before,was in hys shyre of Warwycke, and there callynge to hym George the archebys= shope of yorke,and John Montacute Marques hys brethren bothe,and after long communycati on had of many thinges,the space of.ii.or.iii.day es,at length gettynge meete occasion to speake of the kynge and hys doinges,dyd shewe hys mind to theim, desyrynge theim, by all the wayes that

he

he coulde possyble, to take kynge Henry hys part and to helpe him to the crowne, saiynge after this wyse and maner. Bzethzen, it is not of anye lyghtenes of mynde, but of playne iudgemente that I am moued to speake of kynge Edward and king Henrye. Thys Henrye is a very godlye manne, and loueth theim that bee hys kaythfull subiectes and doth cõsyder also who taketh paynes foz him whyche hathe a soonne bozne by nature to bee of greate wozthynes, pzayse and free lyberalitee, by whome euerye manne maye perceaue muche godlynes, why he helpeth hys father nowe beynge in thzaldome and captiuitee as muche as in hym lyeth. And as foz kynge Edwarde, he is a man full of contumelye, and ingratytude, geuen all to pleasure, euell wyllynge to take anye paynes, and pzomotynge rather theim that come of nought, than noble and auncient men. Wherefoze I thyncke it wyll come to passe shoztlye, that eyther he wyll destroye all nobilitee, oz elles nobilitee destroye him But befoze al other, we shulde fyzste enterpzise to reuenge oure cause whych haue fyzste taken hurt at hys handes. Foz he (as I am sure you knowe it bothe) after that he was kynge dyd fyzste pzyuelye gooe aboute to defyle oure dygnitee, and then after dyd openly intende our confusyon and losse of honoure, as thoughe he was not bzoughte to that dygnitee by vs, and not we by hym, and therfoze euen nowe of late when I went ambassadour to Fraunce I was had in no regard, whereby the estimation whiche all kynges haue conceaued of vs, partely gotten by our auncetours, & partly by our owne trauailes & peines, shal nowe be extyn-

guished

Comotion begonne bi Gloucester, & an occasion to depriue the Quene

guished vtterly, & nothinge sette by. And by these psuacions he wonne his brother ỹ archebishoppe his hert, & brought him to be of his minde, but he could not so sone nor easelye persuade the Lorde Marques, for at ỹ first he would by no meanes be moued to worke treason at any hãd against kyng Edward, but at the last whẽ the earle had promysed him the helpe & powre of many noble prynces he was cõtented to kepe warre. The which Marques as he was vnwilling to consent to this at ỹ fyrst, so dyd he at the time of warre holde more of king Edwardes side thẽ king Henrpes, as it shal appere more plain hereafter, the which was both destruccion to him, & his .ii. brethren. After this ỹ earle of Warwike a man of greate wytte perceauing George the duke of Clarẽce, brother to kig Edward, to beare no great good wyl toward his brother ỹ king, what so euer the matter was, first to proue hym and to knowe his minde, begãne to complain a lytle of the king his doinges, then after that the duke was in the same tale wyth hym again, & shewed him also what iniuries he had taken at his brothers hand: he beyng somwhat bolder to speake, brake his mynde more at large desiring him to folow his coũcel, & that he should not think this to be done of any rashnes, shewed hym how warely through his pollicie all his matters were wrought, & desired him, ỹ he would cast wt him selfe how to bring such a weyghtie matter to passe, wherby al thinges may be prouided before hand, to whom after many great promises, he offered his daughter then of ripe age, to be maried to him. The duke throughe the councell and greate

George duke of Clarence

desieryng

Edit. alt.

1 vigilantlye. 2 He declares to him ... secretly how vigilantly, and with what expleate through his pollicie al his matters were compassed. 3 Study and cast ... so well foreseen and prouided for ỹ some good ende and conclusion. Edit. alt.

desieryng of therle of Warwike was contented to dooe all thynges as he would haue hym. After ỹ therle had this communicacion with the duke, he purposed to goo to Caleis, of the whiche toune he was then chief capitain, and wher his wife and doughters wer then inhabityng, but to thend that this sedicion might bee the soner begonne, where with all Englād was soze troubled a greate tyme, he had apoincted that sone after he was gone to Caleis his bzother tharchebishop, & the lozd marques should make an insurreccion in Yozke, wher by the battaill might bee begonne while he was so farre frome theim.

When all these thynges were pzepared foz, and his counsaill well alowed and taken, he went streight with ỹ duke of Clarence to Caleys. And ther after that the duke had pzomised by an othe that he would euer bee true, he maried lady Isabell the erles eldest doughter, ỹ whiche whē it was dooen, thei bothe consulted together ỹ moze spedily, foz ỹ ỹ insurreccion was made in Yozke as it was commaunded and appoincted. The whiche cōpaignie begōne first to spoile with out all mercie oz respect of any thyng. Foz ther was at Yozke an old and a riche hospitall of sainct Leonard, where the pooze and impotent persones wer harboured, & the sicke menne comfozted, and this hous was founde of ỹ charitee of the coūtree, whiche did geue yerely certain of wheate, as ỹ first fruites of all their cozne to the sustenaunce and mainteynyng of theim, to the whiche noumbze of grayne certain housband menne of the countree did refuse to gyue any part thzough the counsaill of therle of Warwikes com

paignie

paignie, saiyng plainly that the poore and sickely people had it not, but thei that had ỹ rule and gouernaunce of the hous, and after that the procters of the hospitall claimyng it as dewe vnto theim, sought for their right. And for that cause greate tumulte was and muche conspiracie made, so that within fewe dayes, there was gathered aboute a fiftene thousand, whiche compaignie came towardes Yorke. But after ỹ it was knowne in the citee that suche a compaignie of menne had risen, the citezens watchyng euer for feare, was in doubte whether thei should mete theim and trie it in open felde, or tary in the citee and kepe theim frome the walles. But the lord Marques chief of that cõtre did put theim streight out of all feare and doubte, the whiche takyng good deliberacion and aduisement, mette theim cũmyng at the gates of ỹ citee where after a sharpe cõflicte, he tooke Robert Hulderne duke, and by and by chopped of his hedde, the whiche whẽ he had dooen, he receiued into the citee at ỹ midde night all his souldiours that wer there. The people beyng nothyng abashed at the death of their capitain, but rather the more eger & fearce, consideryng that thei could not ouercome Yorke, without ordinaunce whiche thei lacked, wẽt streight forth to London. And as for that the lord marques putte to death ỹ duke and capitain of ỹ cõmons, beyng also one of his cõspiracie, did it for this intent, that either he would not bee aknowen faultie of this cõmocion, or els that he had vtterly determined to holde with kyng Edward, of whom as it dooeth after appere, he did get perfect amitie but after the kyng knewe the mynd and purpose bothe

[1] Their leader and captain. [2] Toward. 2d. edit. alt.

bothe of therle of Warwike and the duke of Clarence his owne brother, & also certefied by dyuerse mẽnes letters that the armie was drawyng nigh to London, he sent by and by Wyllyam Harberte whome he made twoo yeres before duke, with a greate power of Walshe menne, commaundyng hym if he could conueniently, bydde battaill to his enemies. The erle makyng hast towardes Northampton, hard saie that the Northrenmenne had gotte it, where also he sette his tentes, and the next daye folowyng fought w̄ theim, in the whiche battaill he was putte to flight in a momẽt and cleane discomfited. The Yorkeshire menne beyng glad of this victorie, wer streight couled & went no ferder, but hauyng their handes full of spoyles & prayes went backe ward again, lookyng when the erle of Warwike would come, the whiche shortely after came from Calais with the duke of Clarence his soonne in lawe to the hoost, & commẽdyng highly the capitaines, and reioisyng gladly that thei had ỹ victorie, did spedyly prepare an other armie. Yet kyng Edward beeyng nothyng abashed ỹ therle of Pẽbruch had so eiuill sped, sẽt hym forth again with a greater armie, whiche he had readie at all tymes what so euer should chaunce, & he hym self he did folowe with a small cõpaignie, and that he might bee readier for all thynges, in his iourneye did encrease his armie w̄ many that came to hym of his secte, saiyng that his entent was to destroie ỹ route of misliuers and flagicious persones, and then therle of Warwike perceauyng that his aduersaries came vpon hym, sent in all the hast to ỹ duke of Clarence whiche was nigh by hym with an

1. Erle of Penbroke. Edit. alt.
2. Pitched his field. Edit. alt.
3. He did. Edit. alt.

an hooſt that he would bryng his armie in all the haſt to hym, meanyng ẏ bataill was at hand. The duke when he hard it, came ſtreight to therle. So thei bothe commyng together went to Banberie, where thei perceaued their enemyes tẽtes wer pitched, & there buckelyng together, tooke the erle of Pẽbruch priſoner, and killed and diſcomfited all his menne, and emonges other of his nobles ther was killed Rychard the erle of Ryuers the father of Elizabeth the quene, & his ſoonne Johñ Woduile. And towardes euenyng kyng Edward drewe nigh, and herying of the death and ſoden betyng doune of his menne, taried at a toune fiue myle frome that place. Therle of Warwike went to his chief toune with all his hooſt, and there within twoo dayes cauſed therle of Pẽbruch with certain other ſtates taken at ẏ tyme, to bee behedded. In the meane ſeaſon there begonne awaie to bee foũd foꝛ peace, foꝛ the whiche, letters wer wꝛytten too and fro, & herauldes ſent from the kyng to therle, and frome the erle to the kyng again, wherby the kyng truſtyng verely that all was pacified, was leſſe ware of hym ſelf, and feared leſſe his aduerſaries, the whiche thyng when it was knowen, and ſhewed to the erle by certain ſpies: he went furth in a night as pꝛiuely as he could with a ſtrong power to the kyng his tentes, & thei killyng theim ẏ kepte watche, tooke the kyng vnwarẽ, & bꝛought hym to Warwike, and to the entent the kyng his frendes might not knowe wher he was, conueighed hym pꝛiuely from thens in the night to a toune in Yoꝛkeſhire called Middelame, and there to bee kepte faſt in hold. But yet the kyng could bee in no

no place nor prisone but that shortely it was knowen, the whiche caused many menne to bee sorie, & lament his chaunce. But he hym self after that he was in prisone, spake faire to the kepers of the castell, and with muche intreatyng and greate promises made, did so tempte and corrupt them, that he was dimissed, although the rumour was that the erle was willyng to it, the whiche might bee of likelyhood, if therle had gyuen ouer fightyng, but suche was ỹ eiuill fortune of kyng Henry, wherby a manne maye perceiue that he could neuer haue his purpose, seyng mannes strength nor policie is not able to ouercome, for therle with all his frẽdes did ventre their bodyes, and spent their substaũce to haue brought Henry to the royall dignitee, for because he knewe suerly, that as long as Edward reigned, neither could he nor yet kyng Hẽry beare any rule. And yet neuertheless thei lette hym goo when he was in holde, & when kyng Edward was deliuered, he went streight to Yorke, and there beyng honorably receiued of his citezens, taried for the space of twoo dayes to gette hym an hoost of menne, but when he could not haue a worthy compaignie, consideryng ỹ he should goo to London emong the middest of his hoost, went frome Yorke to Lancastre, & there found Wyllyam Hastynges[2] lord chamberlain, of whõ he hauyng greate helpe came safe to Lõdon. But therle of Warwike and the duke, after thei had perceiued kyng Edward to bee deliuered throughe the meanes of false traitours[3], & that all thynges that thei had appointed was to none effecte, was greately moued with anger and sorowe, and by and by callyng together

1 But the kyng hym self spake faire to the archebishop and as the
me went corrupted ether the bishop or his seruauntes. So that one
had licence to go a hunting and by the waie ther met with hym sir William H
rre sir Thomas Abourough the lord Saward and diuerse other of his do
mestes with suche a multitude that the Archebishop nor all his frende dar
nost not folowe the Escape. 2 Lorde Hastynges his edit. lit. 3 Traitours
Ed. 2. lit. my edit.

all their chiefe frendes, consulted howe thei might begynne battaill again, the whiche whē the kyng was taken and in hold, was ended and dooen. And thus dooyng, there was certain that for veray angre and for the loue that thei had to warre, offred theim selfes to fight of freshe for nothyng, ỹ whiche moued ỹ chief capitaines to be ỹ more earnest. Also kyng Edward was as wyllyng to fight as thei were, wherby he might either bryng theim by force of armes to quietnes & peace, or els destroy and kylle theim euery mother soonne, that the realme might bee in a better state. For thorowe their seditious rebellyng, the people wer greately impouerished, seyng that the churches and houses of menne were spoiled and robbed, and menne slain in euery place, ỹ corne & grasse also destroyed that was of the grounde, and many other mischiefes dooen the whiche dooe chaunce eftsons in battaill The consideracion wherof, it pitied many menne to see the cōmen weale in that case, the whiche wēt dayly and hourely aswell to therle as to the kyng for atonemēt, desieryng & counselyng theim bothe that thei would rather kepe peace & haue the loue of all menne for their quiet lyuyng, then to liue in angre and enuie, fightyng one with an other to ỹ vndooyng of all the realme, wher as it wer a wicked deede to kylle the father, but yet a greate dele more wicked to destroye the whole bodie of the commen weale, whiche is the father of all menne, and by the whiche euery manne is maynteyned & kept. By this greate entreatyng of noble menne therle and the kyng gyuyng feyth one to an other peace was had for a tyme, wherein the erle and

the

the duke went bothe to London with a small com paignie of menne in comparison to the daunger that thei wer in, and at Westminster was with the kyng for the reformacion and stablishyng of all thynges and for peace to bee had, wher the kyng and thei beeyng at greate woordes, nothyng was determyned or ended. Therfore the kyng for the

a notes misreaction

bowe that he had made, departed and said lytle, and the erle with the duke also went to Warwike, and in Lyncolne shire gotte vp a newe hoost, and made sir Robert Welles the soonne of Rychard Welles graūde capitain, a noble manne of warre.

sr Robert Welles

These tydynges commyng to London, moued the kyng veray sore, whome he thought would rather haue kepte peace thē warre, but the more ỹ it was shewed to hym vnlokyng for it, ỹ battaill was at hande, w̄ so muche ỹ sooner & more spede he gathered an armie, & at the same tyme sēt dyuerse messēgers and haroldes for Rychard Welles, and the same Rychard beeyng often so sent for, made his excuse that he was sicke & diseased, but afterward whē his excuse was not admitted, he thynkyng to purge hymself sufficiētly before the kyng, came to London, bryngyng w̄ hym sir Thomas Democke his brother in lawe, and whē he was there, certain of his frendes certified hym that ỹ kyng was sore moued with hym, whiche for feare of the kyng did take sentuarie at Westminster & his brother also, mindyng to tary there vnto suche tyme as ỹ kyng his anger wer couled & apeaced. But kyng Edward trustyng to pacifie all this tumulte without bloddeshede, & promisyng those mēne his feith ỹ he would not harme thē, caused theim bothe to come

Promise that he had made to suffer them safe to goo and safe to returne. edit. St.

Richard Lorde Welles. Edit. St.

out of sentuarie. Then the kyng callyng Rychard to hym, warned hym to byd his brother Robert that he should leaue of warre, and goo frome the erle, and in the meane season the kyng went forewarde w̄ his hoost against his enemies, bryngyng with hym this forsaid Rychard & Thomas, and beeyng but frome Stamforde wher his enemies did lie the space of twoo dayes iourney, was informed y̆ Robert kepte y̆ armie still, nothyng moued with y̆ letters of his fathers wrytyng, for the whiche the kyng beyng sore greued, caused bothe Rychard and Thomas euen there cōtrarie to his promise, moost shamefully to haue their heddes chopped of. Robert, whē he sawe the kyng drawe nigh, and hard that his father & sir Thomas Democke was put to death, stoode first in a doubte whether he should fight or no, for because it was ieoperdeous to ventre vpon suche a greate power before y̆ erle came, yet at the last for the stoute courage and manly boldenes that was in hym, thei went together, and fought sore, long, and many menne killed on bothe sydes, and at the last whē the fore named Robert encouraged his menne that wer ready to geue ouer, was coumpassed about of his enemies & taken, and also sir Thomas Delalāt with many mo, the whiche capitaines beyng taken all y̆ hoost was putte to flight & driuen awaye. The kyng beyng glad of this victorie, cōmaunded Robert & sir Thomas Delalant with many other to bee put to death at y̆ same tyme & place. And in this battaill ther was kylled as mēne reported tenne thousand menne. The erle at this tyme beeyng at his owne toune of Warwike, and commyng shortely to his armie

1 The 1 Edit. alt. 2 Some. Edit. alt. 3 The other Editor

adds, and wrote flatteryng letters to Sir Robert Welles willyng him to submyt hymselfe and promisyng pardon; but he seyng afore his eyes how the kyng deceyued his father, studied whether he should fight or no, &c. Edit. alt. 4 for the reuengyng his fathers death. Edit. alt. 5 Here the other Editor adds, that [illegible] because the kyng wore men and their iackes and coates

armye at Stamforde with his power, was enformed that the battayle was foughte quickelyer then he looked for, and that his men had the worse parte, although he might now be discouraged, yet he made as thoughe he passed not and would not beleue, to the entente that he myghte the more enbouldē certaine of his compaigny then despayryng and geuyng themselfe to flight, beganne to make a newe hoste, and with many faire promyses did wowe his brother in lawe Thomas Stanley, to take his parte, but when ỹ said Thomas would by no meanes fight or rebell agaynste kyng Edwarde, then seeyng it was tyme to gooe one waye, and he mistrustyng that he was not able to resiste the power of hys enemyes, fled wyth the duke of Clarence (his soonne in lawe) to Excetre, and whē he had taried there two or three dayes, seyng that he lacked al thynges necessarye for warre, purposed to gooe to Lewes the kyng of Fraunce, with whom at his ambassate into Fraunce, was verye well acquaynted and beloued, trustyng ether to haue some helpe of the kyng, or els to incense hym wholy to fight against hym, and so toke shippe at Dartmouth, both he and the duke with a greate nombre of theyr familie, and sayled with ỹ wynde to Normandie, where the chiefe lord of thát towne entreteyned hym most royally, & in al ỹ hast certified ỹ kyng Lewes of his cōmyng thither. And ỹ kyng meruailyng greatlye at ỹ noble actes that ỹ erle had doen, was mynded thorowly to helpe hym in all ỹ he could, & when he knewe ỹ he was lāded in Fraūce, was glad of it, & sent to hym certayn of his nobles, to shewe hym that he did wishe to haue

1 Lorde Stanley: 2dit. alt. 4 For the marriage of kyng Edward he was very wel acquainted 4 beloued. 3dit. alt. 3 Frenche king. 4 King Edward 5 Duell 4dit. alt. 6 knowyng. 2dit. alt.

an occasion, wherby he might helpe hym, & at this tune would gladly dooe for him, desiryng hym to come to Ambassy where the kyng laye, which Ambassy is a manour place of ỹ kynges set vpõ the ryuer syde of Loire, & the duke also his sonne in law and that it should not bee for his losse or harme.

The.ix. yere. This was ỹ.ix.yere of kyng Edwardes reigne when the erle fled to Fraunce, and of our Lorde a M.CCCC.and.lxxx. But this greued kyng Edward that thei wer fled, for because many of ỹ people and cõmunaltee was desyrous to see hym, *and thought that the sonne had been goone from theim and out of this worlde, when he was absent.* And in suche estimaciõ and honour was he had of the people, ỹ thei worshipped & honoured none but hym, or at the least none more then hym. In so muche ỹ his only name was euery mannes song & voyce, especially of the cõmẽ people when they made triumphe abrode in ỹ stretes. Wherby, the moste parte helde of the earle his syde, and bare hym more fauoure in theyr hartes then kyng Edward. Wherby ỹ kyng was in feare and daunger both of his owne countremen ỹ wer in his realme, and of theim that were abrode in Fraunce, but before all other he did prouide for ỹ erle his cõmyng. And first he sente to Charles the duke of Burgoin his brother in law desiryng him ỹ he would manasshe Lewes the kyng, w whom he had made a league of peace, not to aide the erle of Warkwike or ỹ duke his sonne in lawe, neither w mony nor with mẽ. The which Charles wrote to ỹ kyng of Fraũce, & thretened hym many thynges, if so that he maintayned or helped theim. And when the kyng of Fraũce had red his letter, aũswered a-

gain

1 An hyre. 2d.t. alt. 2 Leyre. 2d. alt. 3 Fre. 2d. alt.
4 Thertoe. 2d. alt. 5 Monyst. 2d. alt. 6 Duke Charles. 2d. alt.
7 He answered. 2d. alt.

gain & sayed ỹ he might lawfully & would sauyng his league & truce, helpe his frēds ỹ wer valiaūt & noble men as the earle was, and settyng nothyng by all his thretenyng & braggyng wordes, sayd it shoulde bee neither greate peyne nor coste to hym. Whē these tydynges came into England, ỹ kyng was verye sorie, & for that cause searched prively in his realme, who wer frēdes to his enemies. And for feare by ỹ reason of the examinaciō of theim ỹ wer prisoners & in his hand, some did take sentuarie, and some came to ỹ kynges side. And emonges theim the lord Marques Montacute offered hym self to the kyng again, to helpe hym in his warres, whom the kyng gladly receaued, for because that by him mo would leane to his side. In this meane season ỹ erle of Warwike & the duke went to Ambassy, wher the kyng of Fraūce was, & by the way the people came verye thicke to see hym, because they harde so muche speakyng of his nobleneſſe, & when he came there, the kyng receaued hym moste gently, to whō shortly after the erle did breake his mynd, and shewed the cause of his commyng. To whome the kyng promysed all that he coulde dooe for hym to the vttermoste extente of his power. Sone after quene Margarete the wife of Henrye ỹ. vi. came to theim, with her sōne prince Edward and the earle of Penbruck, and also of Dreforde the whiche a lytle before sayled ouer to her. After they cōmuned together, as concernyng ỹ safegard of their bodies, a league was made thorowe the kyng of Fraunce his counsel. And first lady Anne the doughter of the earle was maried and despouled to prynce Edwarde the quenes soonne.

Also the erle and the duke promysed faithfullye ꝯ they woulde not geue ouer, vnto suche tyme that kyng Henrye the.vi.or Edwarde his soonne were proclaymed kyng of Englande, & after kyng Henry, that the erle and the duke should ouersee and gouerne the realme by the wyll and apoyntmente of the quene Margarete and her sonne prince Edwarde, vnto suche tyme that the forenamed prince wer of lawfull age and habilitee, the whiche they promysed faythfully to obserue and dooe as they wer apoynted. And besydes these, many other condicions were made, aswel for that reason did so require, as the busynes ꝯ was at that tyme. When this league of truth & faithfulnes was thus made the kyng Lewes holpe the erle with mẽne, harnes and nauie, that he might the surer go to Englãde. And Rhenate also the father of ꝯ quene Margarete, gaue hym mẽne & harnyse to his power. So that he hauyng no small nombre of men, did take shippe at Saynemouth & ther tarying, hard word from Englãd by letters, that he should come ouer in all the haste, & that there were so many ꝯ would take his parte, ꝯ he shoulde haue no nede to bryng any with hym, for they wer redy in harneyse at the water side, willyng to helpe hym in al ꝯ they could and not they onely, but many noble men & princes would helpe hym both w̄ mony, men & harneyse, & with all ꝯ they could dooe. When he had receaued these letters, he purposed to go forth, and take the oportunitee of the tyme. And because that ꝯ quene was not redy to set forth, he & the duke of Orẽford and ꝯ duke of Penbruch, went before w̄ parte of ꝯ hoste & naupe, to trie what chaũce thei shuld haue,

that

1 Sussex. 2 Dit. alt. 2 Scots. Dit. alt. 3 Rene. Dit. alt. 4 Erle. Dit. alt.

that if all thinges ſhould chaunce well, the quene and the p;ynce ſhould folowe and come vnto Englande. Therfo;e the Earle and the Duke thanking the king as highly as they coulde fo; that he had doone ſo much fo; theim, dyd take their leaue and ſayled vnto Englande with all their armie. Then the Duke of Burgoyne not contented that the earle ſhoulde bee holpen of the king of Frauce agaynſt king Edward, p;epared a great nauye of ſhippes aboute the coſtes of No;mandye, that he might take hym cóming towardes Englande, yet neuertheleſſe the Earle eſcaped all daungers, and landed ſafe he and all his menne at Dartmouth, frome the whiche place he ſayled to Fraunce halfe a yere befo;e.

After that the Earle came to lande, he made a p;oclamacion in king Henry the. vi. name, that all they that were of lawfull age ſhoulde make battayle agaynſt Edwarde duke of Yo;ke whiche agayniſte all ryghte and lawe at that tyme had the crowne. The whiche when it was doon, it cannot be ſpoken howe ſoone it went aboute all ỹ realme that he was come and had made this p;oclamacyon, at the whiche alſo is not to be erp;eſſed howe many thouſandes of menne came to hym. The Earle hauing all this power & greate armie went ſtreyght to London, whome when Edwarde perceyued to d;awe nighe, he fledde fo; the tyme, truſtyng to haue hym at ſome bauntage, but at the laſte he was d;yuen to that ende, that he had no mynde to get any hoſte to reſyſt his enemies, but beyng in greate daunger of his owne lyfe, fled w the duke of Glouceſtre his b;other, vnto a towne nighe

nighe the sea called Lye, and there taking shippe, sayled into Flaunders, to Charles the Duke of Burgoyne with greate daunger and parell of his lyfe by the reason of the boisterouse & cruel winde Elizabeth his wyfe beyng then greate with childe dyd take sentuarye at Westmynster, where she was broughte in bedde with a man chylde, whose name was Edward. After that the earle knewe of the going awaye of kyng Edward, he made haste to London and hearing of the tumulte and busynesse that was in Kente, and that all the villages and suburbes there were spoyled piteously, a lytel before the going awaye of ỹ kyng, pacified theim and sette all thinges in good ordre agayne: by the doing of the whiche benefyte, he was the more louingly accepted of theim all, and that doon, came to the towre & there deliuered kyng Henry the. vi. out of prisone, & geuing hym his robe of maiestye broughte hym to Poules, the people reioysing on euery syde, and there thanked God for that it had chaunsed as they wolde, & desired. And this was the yere of our Lorde a. M. iiii. C. foure score and one, that kyng Henry beganne to reigne. So that king Henry so often banquyshed began to reigne nowe, likely shortely after to faule againe. The which fortune chaunsed to hym by many mennes opinions, because he was a very simple and innocent man, and ỹ he had rather in godlinesse & vertue excell other, then in honoure and rule, so ỹ for the loue ỹ he had to religion, he loked for no dignitee or honoure, whiche chaunseth to fewe that wil not seke for it or regard & kepe it when they haue it. But his enemies saide he was a coward, & had not

1 Lynne. whit. writ 2 [1471?] 3 Christes religion. whit writ.

not the herte or manlynesse to bee a kyng or meete for that office. So that who soeuer despiseth that the cõmune people alloweth & marualeth at, is accompted for a mad man, contrariwyse, he ẏ doeth agree to them and in their tale, he is a wise man, where in dede suche wisdom (as it is comẽly saide) is foolishnesse before God. Also some saide, it was the will of God ẏ it should so bee, for his graundfather Henry the fourth gotte it by violencye and force of armes, so ẏ it coulde not bee longe enioyed of hym, but that faute of the graundesire did redounde on the nephewes. But nowe to ẏ matter.

After this king Henry held his parlyament at Westmynster, the.xxbi. daye of Nouembre, in the whiche Edwarde is declared openly traytoure to his coũtree, bycause he had taken ẏ crowne to him and all his goodes geuen away, & in like maner al theirs ẏ did take his parte, and so iudgement was geuen on them to dye. Furthermore, all ẏ decrees statutes and actes of ẏ forenamed Edward were broken & of none effecte. And then ẏ earle of Warwike, as a man ẏ had deserued much of his coũtre was made gouernoure ouer all ẏ realme, to whõ he did take ẏ duke of Clarence as felowe to hym. So by ẏ meanes ẏ realme was brought to a new state, cleane transformed & altered. To this parliament came the lorde Marques Mountacute, the which excusing his treason ẏ he did take kyng Edward his parte, & saing it was for feare of death, had his pardone. Truely yf this man had taken kyng Edwardes part, & had stand to his side manly, he had not been so sore an enemie, and hurted so much his frendes, as he was being a false fained and

1 Heyres. Edit. alt.

and coloured frende, for those thinges that we be ware of, and knewe before to bee pernicious, doo lesse hurte vs. But nowe quene Margarete being in Fraunce prayed euery daye from that time the Earle went into England, for the victorie, the whiche when she knewe was obteined by the king his letters that came to her, shortely after did take shyppe, towardes England, but thorowe ỹ sharpnesse of the wether and greate tempestes she was constrayned to lande, and to differre her iourney to an other tyme. At the same tyme Gaspar the earle of Penbruch went to Wales to his Earledome, where he founde lorde Henry the Earle of Richemonde his brothers sonne, a chylde of ten yere olde, & there kepte prysoner, but lyke a noble man of ỹ erle willyam Harberte his wyfe, whome we spake of before, that Edwarde had made hym erle, and then after taken in batayl was beheded at the cõmaundement of the earle of Warwike.[4]

King Henry the.vii.

This is that Henry the whiche when Richard the thirde brother to Edward was ouercome and vanquished, had the gouernaunce of the realme, of whome this is to bee beleued, that after that he came to his kingdõ sent as one by god, to quench and put awaye the greate sedicion and stryfe that was betwixte Henry and Edwarde, seyng that he minded nothyng so muche as that, whome lady Margarete the onely doughter of John the fyrste Duke of Somerset dyd bryng forthe beyng but fourtene yeres of age, the whiche althoughe she was maryed after to Henry the duke of Bucking ham his sonne, and after that to the earle of Derby, yet she neuer broughte forthe chylde after, as thoughe

1 The kyng his housbande. edit. alt. 2 Lande again. edit. alt.
3 That kyng Edward had made Erle of Pẽbroke in diuisite of Erle Iasper. edit. alt. 4 at Bãbery. edit. alt. 4 Henry Stafforde. edit. alt.

thought she had doone her parte when she hadde borne a manne chylde, and the same a kynge of a realme. Gasper the earle of Penbruch tooke thys chylde Henrye from the earle Harberte hys wife and brought hym soone after to London to king Henry the syxte, whome when the kynge had beeholded longe holding hys peace, and marualing at the goodlye wytte of the chylde, sayde in thys wyse to the nobles that were at that tyme present Loo, thys is he, thys is he I saye, to whome both wee, and oure aduersaries shall geue place to, in possession. And by thys he prophecied that the self same Henry shuld in tyme to come, as it chaunsed in dede, haue the kyngedome and rule of all the realme. And nowe Edwarde althoughe he was oute of his countree, yet dyd he not dyspayre but that he shulde haue mattre and redy occasion to recouer his kingdome, for the duke of Burgoyne partlye had promised hym both greate ayde and socoure, and partly the priuy frendes that he had in Englande dyd councell hym by letters sente from tyme to time, ỹ he wonld hasten his iournay homward, and incontinētly after, very many fled to hym oute of Englande, eyther for feare of the lawes, that they had offended, or elles for sorowe that the worlde was so turned, that they could not haue theyr wyll, as they had before, in accomplyshynge theyr couetouse myndes and desyres, and caused hym to make the more haste homewarde. And kynge Edwarde beynge rauished with their golden promises, thoughte nothyng more payne ful or wretched, then to tary one daye lenger, and nothyng more pleasaunt thē to go of his iourney, and

The prophecye of Henrye the vi. of kyng Henry the vii.

Edwarde prouideth for and

mane rabe Ludde arol of Englande fo Edwar

1 The Lorde Herbarte erle of Penbroke. with all.

and so takynge no moo wyth them then two thou
sande harneled menne, at the sprynge of the yeare
sayled into Englande, landynge in the coastes of
Yorkeshyre at an hauen towne called Rauinsport
Ravinsport And there settynge forthe all hys menne, dyd rea
son wyth hys captaynes and consulte, to what
place they shoulde fyrste goo. For it was ieoperdi
ous consydering the small companie that he had,
to take anye waye forthe. But after longe delyb-
eration, they were all agryed that some certayne
knightes and horsemen of that smal compaignie
shuld bee sent one to euerie quarter to the townes
that wer nyghe, to the intente that they myghte
drawe the hartes & myndes of the people to kyng
Edwardes syde. But it is not lykelye that kynge
Edwarde beyng a wyse manne durst be bolde, or
would in any wyse come into England, with such
a small power, excepte he had knowen surely that
he should haue had great helpe at hys commyng
the whych is a plain token, that the duke of Cla-
rence, and the lorde Marques, had procured hys
fauoure, promysinge him all their helpe that they
coulde make, for the tryall of the whych, ther was
manifest tokens, that dysclosed and bewrayed all
their falshed. For they priuilie wēt about to know
mennes myndes and to what parte they would de
clyne and the nexte day after came to kinge Ed-
warde, and shewed him that the common people
dyd stande stiflye of kynge Henrye his syde, and
woulde defende hys quarell as ryghte and iuste
at al times, and that they had nomore nede nowe
to make anye tumulte, in so much, that no manne
would (althoughe ettsons desired and prayed,) go

1 Rauenspurre 2dit alt 2 Had secretly. 2dit. alt. 3 Entent. 2dit. alt. to

4 Thei that kyng Edwarde had sente. 2dit. alt 5 About the townes. 2dit. alt.

to king Edward, yea, and that noman woulde for feare of the earle of Warwike, heare anye thinge spoken of that matter, whose myndes after that kinge Edwarde had throughlye serched and knowen, he chaunged his mynd and purpose, & wher as before he claymed the crowne, then he publyr shed abrode that he woulde haue but hys ryghte that was his landes, and heritage of Yorke shyre. And at that worde, it cannot be well spoken, howe redily mē wer wilinge to helpe him, consideringe that he claymed nothinge but hys ryghte, in so= much, ꝑ very pytie dyd moue manye, although they woulde not helpe hym, yet at no hande to re= syste hym. And kynge Edwarde reconsilyng him selfe to the common people by these meanes, toke hys iournye towarde Yorke, and wente to Beuer lay. The earle then beinge at Warwik, after that he knew ꝑ king Edward was landed about Yorke streyght sent a post to his brother lord Mōtacute then lyng that winter at Pomfreit w̄ a great ar= my, to shewe him what daunger mighte ensue, yt king Edward got ꝑ towne of yorke, & bed theim yt his enemies drewe nigh, ether to mete with thē in plain felde, or elles to bete theim from the towne, vnto such tyme, that he came wyth a greater host which he prepared then, in all the hast he coulde. And because he knew not surely which way his e= nemies wolde come, he fyrst sent to euery towne in yorke shyre, and to yorke it selfe certayne postes, to bid euery man be in his harnesse ready, and that ꝑ citezins should shut the gates surelye that kynge Edward myght haue no accesse. In the meane ty= me king Edward came peaceably, and wythoute the

[1] The Douchie of Yorke. [2] V. alt. [a] Marques Montagewe. [3] Erle of

the resistaunce of anye man towardes the towne of Yorke, of whose commyng when the citezens were certified, they made sure the gates, and standynge in harnesse, for the defence of it, dyd sende twoo of the aldermen, to warne the kyng the comming nyghe, that he dooe not enterpryse to farre, or put hym selfe in ieopardie, for they were myn= ded to dryue him and all hys awaye, wyth all the power they myghte. When Edwarde had heard theyr myndes, he was in so greate feare & agonie that he could not tell what to dooe, for yf he shuld haue goone back, he feared that the common peo ple as men gredye of a praye, woulde persue him and yf he should goo forth, he was in daunger of the Yorke shyre men, leaste they shoulde sodenlye faull vpon hym, and take hym: and therefore, seeyng that he was not able to match theim in dattayle, thought to mollyfie theim with fayre wor= des, and so beganne to entreat after the most low lye and gentle maner the messaungers, that they woulde in hys name shewe the cytezyns, that he came not to clayme the crowne, but hys heritage and ryghte of Yorke shyre, and therfore that they woulde helpe theyr lorde and duke of Yorke, and yf that he myghte be receaued through theyr mea nes, he wolde requyte theyr kindenes, and remem ber theyr benifyte as longe as he lyued. And by suche fayre speaking and flatterie, he dimissed the and folowed straighte after to the gates with his companie. The citezins beynge somwhat moued wyth thys answer, for that he entended no harme agaynst kyng Henrie, they spake wyth hym from the wall, and badde hym to go frome thence, and

'Citie. 2. The Duchie of Yorke.

yf he

if he would go quickely, he should take no harme. But he speakyng verye gentely to euerye one of theim, & callyng some by name, moost gentely did desire theim ỹ he might come into his owne toune And so passyng all the daye in that cõmunication, at ỹ length the citezens partely ouer come wt his moost gẽtle speakyng, & large promises made, fell to this poincte, ỹ if Edward would swere to handle his citezens after a gentle sorte, & hereafter bee obedient to kyng Henry his cõmaundement, thei would receiue hym in to ỹ citee, and helpe hym wt all ỹ power that thei might. Edward beyng glad to here this, the next daye after early, a masse was said at ỹ gates, wher he receiuyng the sacrament, promised feithfully vpon his othe ỹ he would obserue bothe the thynges afore named, & so was receiued in to the citee. Neuertheless, it was so ferre vnlike that he would obserue one of theim, that he minded none other thyng then ỹ he might deprive the kyng of his croune, as here after shall appere more euidẽt. So ỹ oftẽ tymes we se noble men, aswell as the laye people throwe ambicion & filthy couetousnes, thei forgettyng god & all godlynes dooe swere greate othes in promisyng thynges, ỹ whiche entendyng before thei make their othe, to breake it shortely after. Yet suche persons oftymes haue their rewardes of God at one or other tyme as this Edward had, so that some tyme the punishment falleth on the nephewes, for the offence that the vncle had cõmitted. But of this thyng I will speake more in Rychard the third, in a place wher a manne maye see that ỹ progenie of Edward wer punished for this offence, when Edward had thus

framed his matters, he forgettyng ỹ othe ỹ he had made, did se ỹ the citee was strõgly kepte, and gettyng hym an army together thought he wold not lynger his busines bycause he harde his enemies made no greate prparaũce or haste, but tooke his tourney towarde London, & in his goyng did purposely goo out of his waye ỹ led hym to Pomfret wher ỹ lord marques was, & toke on ỹ right hand within lesse thẽ .iiii. miles of his enemies. And whẽ he perceiued ỹ thei made no skyrmishe nor mocion came in to the right waie again when he was past theim, & wẽt to Notyngham. But this greued the Yorke shire mẽne that he should deceiue theim so vnhonestly & otherwise then did become a kyng, or noble manne. After that it was knowen that kyng Edward came wout all daunger of his enemies, to Notyngham, then came there to hym many noble mẽne, vpon this consideracion ỹ the lord Mõtacute either would not entre vpõ his enemies as though he had agreed with theim, or els durst not come out of his tentes, for that he was not able to matche w theim. Therfore menne thought better to take Edwardes part, considerynge ỹ his power was so greate, then to hold with kyng Henry and bee in daunger of their liues, and losse of all their goodes & landes. Edward reioysyng at this, went to Leceſtre, & hearyng that therle was at his toune of Warwicke & therle of Oxenford with hym, hauyng a greate armie, and that thei bothe entended to bryng hym to theim, prpeuentyng their purpose wẽt awaye w his hoost, either wyllyng to fight, or els ioyne in frendeship and loue with his brother duke of Clarence, with whome then commyng frõ London

Edwarde comen to Notyngham came to his hoste

Lorde Montarnte

Lorde Spensers

[1] And wente to Notyngham and there proclaimed hym self Kyng. Edit. alt.

[2] Fortresse. Edit. alt. [3] King Edwarde. Edit. all. [4] Ioyne in one against hym: He. Edit. alt.

London wᵗ an hoost of mẽne he thought to speake before ꝑ he came to therle & his cõpaignie, fearyng leste ꝑ he would not stand to ꝑ promise ꝑ he made, for ꝑ he was variable & incõstãt. In ꝑ meane tyme therle of Warwike was very heuie & sore moued wᵗ ꝑ lord marques because he would neither kepe the kyng from yorke as he was bed, nor yet when thei came before his nose, would not proffer theim ones to fight, & therfore cõsideryng ꝑ his enemies multiplied more & more, in his gooyng towardes hym made an hoost, & sent for ꝑ duke of Clarence to come to hym, then hauyng an hoost at London. Whõ whẽ he perceiued to linger, & as a man doubtyng whether he should kepe battaill or peace, to haue no mind of settyng forth his mẽ, mistrusting also ꝑ he was by some traine allured to folowe his brethren and take their partes, tooke his waye to Couẽtrie, to thende that there he might meete his enemies. Then Edward came to Warwike, and frome thens to the erle, and pitched his tentes by hym, and the next daie after bad battaill to therle, the whiche erle durst not come oute, for feare that the duke of Clarence whome he thought had deceaued hym, which duke in deede came, as it was shewed after with a greate power of menne. The whiche when Edward perceaued, he made towardes hym, & that it should not bee thought to bee a made guyle, sette his hoost in araye as though he would fight, and so did the duke. But when thei came in sight, Richard duke of Glouceſtre as one that should take vp this matter, firste spake with the duke priuely in his eare, and then came to Edward and did the same to hym, and at the laste

Felde. 2 Pitchell

peace was proclaimed, wherby euery manne puttyng doune their weapons, Edward & his brethrē enbraced louyngly one an other. After this Edward made it bee proclaimed that ỹ duke with all theim that came with hym, should bee perpetuall frendes, & that thei three should loue like thre brethren as thei wer in brotherly loue for euer. Neuertheless God dooeth not seme to haue forgiuē this Edward his offēce of periury, although euē nowe fortune fauored hym, for yer it were long he was again vexed w̄ werre, beside ỹ plage & distrucio̅ of his childzen after his death. When thei wer thus come together, thei minded to proue if ỹ erle wold come to theim also & hold w̄ theim, to whō ỹ duke of Clarēce sēt certain of his frendes, ỹ whiche first shuld excuse ỹ he had done, & thē desire hym if ỹ he would to bee at one with kyng Edward. Whose mynde whē therle heard, he vtterly detested hym, & with muche cursyng cryed oute of hym ỹ he had contrary to his feith & othe made, fled to kyng Edward. And to his cōmaūdemēt & biddyng ỹ he sēt, he made none other aunswer but this that he had rather bee like hym selfe, thē like a false & periured duke. So ỹ he appointed vtterly neuer to leaue battaill, before that either he wer killed and ded or his enemies ouercomed. After this, Edward hauyng suche a strong power of mēne went boldely to London, wher after that it was knowen that the duke of Clarence had taken his parte, and that all the brethren were come in to one knot, the citezens were in suche a feare, that thei could not tell what to dooe, but at the lengthe they were driuen for feare to take kyng Edward his parte

[1] King Edward. [2] The kyng.

At thesame tyme there came letters from the earle to kyng Henry, to ỹ duke of Somerset, to ỹ archbyshop of Yorke, and other of the kyng his counsel, ỹ they should kepe the citee from their enemies handes for the space of.ij.or.iij.dayes, & he would come strepght with a great armye of mẽne. They defended the citee as strongely as they coulde, but it was to no purpose, for the citezens cõsyderyng ỹ kyng Henry was no greate warryer, and ỹ he had but small policie in the feates of thesame, and contrary wise, that kyng Edwarde was a man that of hym selfe coulde rule a realme maruelous well, and suche a man that woulde not onelye preserue hym selfe and all his, but also defende theim from all maner of iniurpes and harmes that shoulde chaunce, thought best to leane on his syde. And at his commyng to London, the people coulde by no thretenyng or strayt cõmaundement, be otherwyse kepte backe, but that they would mete hym then comyng, & salute hym altogether as kyng & ruler of the realme. At whose commynge in, the duke of Somerset and certayn other fled away, and made the beste shifte euery manne for hym selfe that he could, to escape his hãdes, sauyng that kyng Hẽry tarped poste alone in the bishoppes paleyce besyde Powles, where standynge lyke a desperate manne, and not knowynge what to dooe was taken of kyng Edward, and cast into pryson agayn in the towre.

This Edward came into London the.xi.day of Aprill, halfe a yere after that he hadde sayled into Flaunders, and callyng his councel together, did highly commende the citezens, for ỹ trythfulnesse

that they bare to hym, and in especiall the Aldermen, ꝯ they caused the people to do their obeysaūce to hym, & also sharpelye rebuked other of the cytie whom he knewe to haue lent monye to kyng Henry. And for ꝯ cause woulde haue made theim paye mony to the preparyng of an hoste for hym, but at the last he bad theim bee without all feare, promysyng theim their pardon & safetie of life, throwe the whiche gentlenesse, he gatte the fauoure of the cōmen people wonderfully. The erle considerynge that battayll should be shortelye, folowed his enemyes in great haste, to the entente that yf his enemies had any stoppe or lette by ꝯ waye, he myght fight & buckel with theim, before they came to Lōdō. But now after that he had pursued theim long and came a good waye of his iourney, worde was brought ꝯ Edwarde had gottē London & imprisoned the kyng. The earle then perceauyng that the victorie & ende of fightyng should be tryed in this one batayle, rested at sayne Albones, partely to refreshe his men, and partely to take some counsayl. In this hoste there was the duke of Excester, the earle of Orenforde, the duke of Somerset and the lorde Mountacute Marques, brother to the earle whom the earle perceaued to bee very vnwyllyng to fight, and that agaynst kyng Edward, and ther fore he had no trust to hym, yet the loue ꝯ betwixte brother and brother diminished the suspicion, but whatsoeuer he thought eyther of hym or of other, he hymselfe was euer out of feare and daunger. And so came from sayne Albones, to a toune that is halfe waye betwyxte London and that, aboute a tenne myle frome London, called Barnet, and this

[1] kyng Edward. edit. alt. [2] The other Edition adds which came to the Erle by his Letters for his excuse. [3] That was Mont. a

this toune standeth on a hyll, where there is a goodlye playne, and here the earle entended to pitche his battayle. And Edward hearyng of this prepared his armye, and adioyned a greate power of young menne to theim, and so with bowes, billes, speares and arowes, and all maner instrumentes apperteynyng to warre, he had so furnysshed his menne, that he thought to make riddaūce of theim at that tyme for all, and fynisshe battayle that was so longe holden. And so came with this his armye to mete his enemies, and that he might bee the redier to fight with theim whereſoeuer he mette theim, he had foure wynges, that they could escape hym at no hand. And he brought with hym to battayle also Henry then prisoner, to the entente that his aduersaries might bee the more discouraged at the sight of hym, or els, if fortune fauoured hym not, he might neuertheless bee saued by him. After the noone he pytched his tentes at the fore named Barnet nighe to hys enemyes, but that he myghte not fyghte that daye, he defended hys tentes verye strongelye, for the longer he taryed the better it was, by reason of the daylye concourse of noble men and commen people to hym, and the woorse for the earle, for that he was farre from his frendes.

There they lodged that night, and by breake of day ỹ earle of Warwike begā to araye his armye of this sorte. Fyrste the lorde Marques and the earle of Oxenforde was set on the lefte syde wyth certayn horssemen, and he hymselfe with the duke of Exceter on the ryght syde. In the myddeste be-

twixte theim bothe he setteth the duke of Somerset with all the archers. And thus araiyng theim to this battayl, beganne to exhorte theim, that thei would fight lustely and lyke hardye menne, reuengyng the quarell of their countree, for that he had moste falsely possessed ỹ croune. In like maner did kyng Edward, whiche after that he had set theim in ordre, encouraged theim to fight lykewyse, and to remembre that thei inuaded rebelles, traytours and seditious persons, whiche entended nothynge but the vtter destruccion and losse of theyr countree. When daye came, the trompettes beganne to blowe on bothe sydes, as the tokens and lignes of the battayle. And firste the bowe men shot, & then drawynge nere tryed it with sweorde. Edwarde trustyng thorowe the multitude of his mẽ to haue the better hãd did stãde stiffely to theim, enbouldenyng his souldiours in all that he coulde. Whose power the erle moste manfully resisted. And so by long cõtinuaunce of battail, many men wer slayne in whose places succeded euer fresher & fresher. At the length the erle perceauyng his mẽ to bee ouerthrowen by the kyng his great power, drewe nigh with his forward, & constreyned the kyng to geue backe a litle. Then Edward seeyng that, brought freshe men to aide ỹ other, so that thother mẽ wer beten downe very sore to ỹ groũde. And Edwarde beeyng werye of this longe fyghtynge (for they fought from morynyng to none) caused theim that wer without the battayl, then standyng for the defẽce of Edward, yf such nede should be, to fall vpõ their enemies, & beare theim downe w̃ their great power. The erle then seyng freshe mẽ to come vpõ theim

trompettes

[1] kyng [2] Edward. 2 edit. alt. [2] The kyng, 2 edit. alt.

theim, was nothing afeard, but trusting & loking surely for the victorye, dyd comforte & encourage his menne then almoste discomfited, mooste manfully, desiring theim to beare oute this laste brunt lustely, and the victorie should redounde to theim but they being werped with longe continuaunce, were nothing moued at his wordes. Then he himselfe mooste valiauntly came among the myddest of his enemyes, and there kylled and slewe many of theim, where he hym selfe at the laste was striken downe and his brother lorde Marques then folowing hym, after whose deathe all the other fled, & so were taken mooste parte of theim. And this was the ende of the earle, whose stoutenesse of stomack made hym bee in lyke peryll and ieopardye at many other times at dyuerse and sundrye suche conflictes and warres. There was killed of both partes more then ten thousande menne, and so many taken prisoners that they could not be noumbred. The duke of Somerset, and the earle of Orkorde entendyng to take their waye to Scotlande, dyd chaunge their mindes, bicause it was so farre frō theim, and fledde streight to Wales to the earle of Penbrucke, and so euery man to saue their liues, fledde, some one way and some an other. The erle of Exeter skaping very hardely, tooke the sentuarye at Westminster, and there remayned. When Edward had gotte this victorye, he went to London after the mooste triumphyng fassion, hauyng Henry with hym as prisoner. The deed corps also of the earle and the lorde Marques were brought to Poules, and there laye for the space of .ii. dayes that euery manne might see theim to bee deed, and that

that no man after tainyng ỹ he was aliue, myght sowe sedicion againe in reuenging his quarel. Yet the kyng was not so glad at ỹ death of therle, but he was as sory for the losse & destruccion of ỹ lord Marques, whome he dyd esteme and take for his great frende. After this, quene Margaret hearing ỹ Edward was come into Englande, & had done much hurte in ỹ realme, purposed to come into England & her soonne also prince Edward wt a great armye of chosen & picked Frenchmen, & so to land at Waimouth. But for ỹ greate tempest ỹ was on the see, she could not come so soone as she woulde. But after she had landed, & heard that kyng Edward had conquered all, & her husband to be take prisoner as destitute of all his frendes, and that ỹ erle with his brother lord Marques was slaine in felde, and all their army discomfyted and slayne & putte to flight, she began like a piteful & desperate ladye, to mourne and lament the fate & calamitee of her husband, ỹ whiche she did nowe see to haue chaũsed, and sowith this great feare & agonie she was in that case that she had rather dye then lyue The quene mighte haue thought ỹ this euell had chaunsed to her for the putting to death of ỹ duke of Glouceſtre, of whose deathe althoughe peraduẽture she was not giltie, yet she offended, in that she dyd not saue suche a good man. For yf he had liued and had the dominion of the publike weale, king Henry had neuer been in suche trouble. But nowe (to leaue of this) ỹ quene desperyng bothe of her owne life & her sõnes also, went therby to a monastery of the charterhouse monkes at a place called Bewe lieu, in englishe called faire place, & ther taking

taking sentuarie, remained with her soonne. And when it was knowen, that she was there in sentuarie, there came to her the duke of Somerset, & his brother the erle of Deuonshire, whiche man euen frome the beginnyng had taken the other parte, whose returning after redounded to his euell and destruccion, also the erle of Penbroke Jhon Woenlocke, & Jhon Longstrother Capytaines and rulers of the Rhodes. The quene being in sorowe & miserye, was somwhat comforted at the sighte of her frendes, w̄ whome she talked and shewed the cause ẏ she came no rather, desirying theim to prouyde for the safegard of her soonne & to helpe her nowe, and ẏ she would if the wether serued goo to Fraunce againe and bryng w̄ her, god willing at a more better & mature time a greater power of me. The duke began to putte her in good comforte & would in any wise ẏ she should set her mind whole vpon batail, & nowe to fight against Edward whē he was bothe vnprepared & also not furnyshed of men ẏ were hable to fight, considering ẏ great batell that he had w̄ therle of Warwike, in ẏ which his men were sore hurted & wery ed all together, & ẏ it myght be their chaūce now to haue ẏ better of hym, although he discōfyted therle & his hoste, for because ẏ victorie turneth oftentymes frome one to an other in a momēt & short space. Furthermore he shewed her ẏ the most part of ẏ nobilyte bare theyr good mindes & hertes to kyng Henry, & if so bee ẏ she would bee a capitaine as she had bene in tyme passed, he promised her a great army of his owne costes and charges, and that he woulde make other noble menne to take her parte, and defende her

Edward of Warwike

Margaret of Anjou

1 Lorde Jasper. Edit. alt 2 Lordd Wenlocke. Edit. alt
3 Lorde of Saint Johns. Edit. alt.
4 Kyng Edwarde. Edit. alt

her at all times. The Quene mistrusting and fearing yet muche of her owne soonne, aunswered & saied that she allowed his counsell well, yf so that she only might bee in daunger, and not her sonne And therfore fearing that when they fought most earnestly for their countree, her soonne might bee destroied or caste awaye, she thought best either to putte of and differre the battayl to an other time, or elles to sende her soonne into Fraunce, & there to bee kepte vnto suche tyme ỹ they had some better succesſe in their warres. And truely the mother was not without a cause so louing to her chylde, for that her owne husbande was a prisoner and a captiue persone, and therfore as one caste awaye, so that nexte after hym, she loued mooste tenderly this her soonne. Also that they might goo ỹ more wisely aboute their entente, the quene counsayled theim all to laye their heedes together, and caste all the waies howe to conuey their businesse, and then yf they would fight, she promised theim both her helpe, and good councell. Then the Erle saied it was no nede to waste any more wordes, for he & all they woulde fight stoutely agaynste their enemies, and therfore they woulde doo that with all their might and power, that they had determined and apointed vpon. So they all gathered their armye, euery manne for his parte, oute of his owne countree & shire. The quene brought now in good hope of warre, saied wel be it, & streight went by ỹ councell of ỹ duke to Bathe, looking and tarieng there for the armye, but to what place so euer she went, she would be aknowen to none, to thentent ỹ her aduersaries might not knowe, vnto such time

that

1 The Erle of Deuonshire. Edit. alt.

that she came wher she woulde bee. Edward hearyng that the quene was come, and that the duke of Somerset, had prepared an hoost to ayde her, sente certayne spies to viewe of what number the armye was. And when they had shewed hym the nomber (but yet not knowyng whether they wold goo) the kyng apoynted to mete them before they came to London. And gathering his armie went to Oxforde shyre, and there pytched hys tentes at Abyngton, encreasinge hys nomber and army as much as he could. But perceauyng, that they wer at Bathe, and there tarved purposely to multyply and enlarge their company, came to Walebrydge xv. myles frome Bathe, & so hasted to come to the before they did go to Wales, as he suspected, whether in dede thei entended, to the erle of Penbruck hauyng theyr a great bonde of men. From which toune of Bathe the quene fled, and frome thence to Bristowe, and wyllinge to goo by Glouceter, sent spyes before to knowe, yf she myght haue passage, to whome aunswere was broughte that she coulde not, nor that thei of the towne would by anye meanes geue her place, she hearynge of that went from Bristowe to Teukisbury. And ther the duke pytched hys battayle, agaynst the wyll and aduise of many other captaynes, whych counsayled hym to tarye the erle of Penbruches comyng. Where Edwarde dyd take the quene, and kylled or at the least imprysoned euery one almoost that came with her. And of the nobilitee, there was killed the earle of Deuonshyre, John Wenlock captayn of the Rhodes, and the brother of the duke of Somerset, wyth manye other moo. And taken prysoners

[1] In other Edition adds Anne ye Countesse of Warwicke. — [2] kyng Edwarde. 1471. ult.

prisoners, the quene Margaret, & her sonne prince Edward, ỹ duke of Somerset, ỹ lord of S. Jhons, & more then .xx. knyghtes besyde thē. And all these wer behedded .ii. dayes after in ỹ selfe same towne sauyng only the quene Margaret and her soonne Edwarde. Shortelye after prynce Edwarde was brought before the kyng, and there asked wherfor he did inuade hys realme, which answered boldly and sayde, to recouer my kyngedome as heritage by my forefathers and progenie dew to me. At the which wordes, Edwarde sayde nothyng, but thrust kyng hym from hys syght wyth hys hande, whō the duke of Clarence and Glouceter, and ỹ lorde Hastynges dyd kyll moost cruelly at hys departyng. Hys mother the quene, was caryed to London prysoner, and frō thence raunsomed was had to Fraunce, where she lyued in perpetuall sorowe and care, not so much for her selfe, or her husband as for her onely sonne Edwarde, whome both she and Henry her husband trusted should lyue, and possesse ỹ croune. When kinge Edward had thus ouercome theim, he went to London, and ther for iii. dayes caused procession to bee throughout euery place after the moost solempne and deuoute fassyon. And here was the last ciuile battaile that this king kept, which was the yere of our lord. M. iiii. C. lxxx. and .xi.

After that kynge Edwarde was returned backe after the subduynge of hys rebelles, one Fauconbrydge the Earle of Kente hys basterde, a stoute harted manne, beynge admyrall of the sea, that none shoulde passe betwixte Calysse and Douer, to ayde or socoure kynge Edwarde, by the ap-

poynt

[1471]

poyntemente of the earle of Warwyke, then after dryuen to nede and pouertee, beganne to bee a pyrate and rouer in the seea. In so much that he had throughe his robberye and shamefull spoylynge gotte vnto hym a greate nauye of shyppes, and at the laste, landed in Kente, and there getting to hym a greate multitude of Kentyshemenne, wyth the assistence of theim and hys ryotouse compaignye of shyppemenne, came to London, and sayde wyth a lowde voyce, they woulde defende kynge Henrye, and restore hym to hys crowne. But the people and cytezyns of London perceauyng that quene Margarete was ouercome in battayle, woulde geue theim no passage, but wyth greate myghte and vyolence enforsed Fawconbrydge to geue backe, and to take shyppe, and kylled and toke prysoners the better parte of his menne.

Shortely after, the same Fauconbridge landing vnware at Southampton, was taken and behedded. But to speake of the earle of Penbrucke, whē he had knowne that the quene was taken at Tewkesburye, where she had waged battayle, then goynge of hys waye to her, turned backe agayne to Chepstey. And there lamentyng greatly both his owne chaunce, & also the euell fortune ỹ kinge Henry had, dyd breath alitle & deliberate w̄ him selfe, what wer best to be done. In the meane time king Edward sēt one Roger Vaughā to take ỹ erle by some train or guile. But the erle certified of it, did take ỹ selfe same mā & hedded hī, so ỹ he was killed ỹ intended to kyll. From that place ỹ erle went to his toune Pēbrucke, wher he was besiged of Thomas Morgan then sēt frō the king, that he could get

Deathe of Roger Vaughy-

Wrong

1 The battayle. Edit. alt. 2 Jasper. Edit. alt 3 Chepstow. Edit. alt

get oute by no meanes, but on the eyght daye one Dauid the brother of the forsayde Morgane his moost assured frende conueyed him awaye, which then went to a toune by the sea syde called Tinby and there takynge shyppe into Fraunce with the lorde Henrye his nephewe, by the earle of Rychemonde his brother, by chaunce[1] came to Britaine, and there shewing the duke the cause of hys comminge, committed him selfe wholy into his handes. The duke entertayned the earle and all his company, after ỹ moost best maner that he could, & made of theim as though they had bene hys brethren, promysing to theim sure passeporte & sauconduite, ouer ani place that he had rule or gouernaunce of. Nowe kinge Edwarde, after that hys realme was pacified, and these great tumultes apeaced, he tooke his iourny into Kente, and there setting his iustices, caused inquisicion and serche to be made of this busines and insurrection, by ỹ basterd and his adherentes, for the which offence manye were put to death, and suffered execution moost sharply, accordig to their merites. And not longafter, to thentent ỹ king Edward myght bee out of al daũgers & assaultes of his enemies Hēry[2] ỹ was deprriued not lōg before of his crowne, was also spoiled of his life, ỹ is, was killed. And as the report & fame went, the duke of Glouceter was suspected to haue done ỹ dede, which sticked him wt a dagger. And when he was dead, his corps was brought vnreuerētly frō the towre, through ỹ stretes of ỹ citee vnto Poules,[3] & ther lay all ỹ daye & on the morow folowing conueyed & caried to ỹ abby or blak freres[4] at Chertesley, & ther was buried

[the death of kyng Henry vi]

kynge hys by

1 And so by chaunce. edit. alt. 2 Kyng Henry. edit. all. And the other Edition addes With Bykes and Grayes. 4 Monkes. edit. alt.

And shortely after had to Windesore castell, & laied in ỹ newe chapell of.s. George in a solẽpne toumbe This Henry reigned.xxviii.yere, and after he had repossessed his kyngdome, but halfe a yeare. He lyued vnto he was .lii. yeres of age, and had by his wife quene Margaret one soõne called Edward.

Nowe to the entent ỹ Edward the kyng might liue in quiet after this manne his death, he went a boute to serche all the rebelles that thei might bee weeded out of the compaignie of menne as pernicious and vnprofitable to the publique weale. At what tyme he tooke tharchebishop of Yorke brother to therle of Warwike and sent hym prisoner to Guynes, wher he long remained in holde, but after dimissed, dyed shortely for thought and pensifulnes of mynde, also he attached the erle of Oxenford the whiche from the ceason of Barnet felde had holden sainct Michaelles Mounte, & by his cõmaundement was had to a castell beyond ỹ sea called Hant, wher he remained prisoner ỹ space of xii.yeares. Furthermore vpõ cõsideracioñ ỹ no rebelles or traitours might haue any refuge to straũge coũtres, he had made a league w̃ the kyng of scottes of peace & amitee to bee obserued & kepte for ỹ space of.xx.yeares. Yet he was not out of all feare, for ỹ therle of Pẽbruck & of Richemond wer with ỹ duke of Britain, wher thei had moost honorable intretainmẽt, cõsidering also ỹ the young erle of Richemõd would clayme ỹ croune i tyme to come he was in ỹ more feare for ỹ whiche matter, he sent priuie ambassadours to ỹ duke, promising hym ỹ if he would restore & deliuer vnto their hãde bothe therles he should haue an ample & large porciõ of

Ambassadours to ỹ duke of Britain

[1] xxxviij yeres vi monethes and viii daies. Iust. alt.
[2] Edward whiche was slain at Tewkisbury. Edit. alt
[3] and thereals. 1st. alt. [4] The other Editor. add. Submitted ỹ kyng
selfe his life only saued. [5] Hammes. 1st. alt. [6] Therles. 1st. alt.
[7] Mistrusted. 1st. alt. [8] The other Edition adds the rest of that to kyng
Henry the 6. t.

monye for so dooyng. But ỹ duke, to make a short tale, would by no meanes deliuer theim out of his handes, but so kepte theim, that thei neuer might bee in any daũger of their enemies through hym. Edward therfore in this his thirtene yere of his reigne, whiche was the yere of our lord a thousand foure hundred three score and thirteen, helde his parlyament at Westminster, wher first he caused all the statutes and actes of his whiche wer abrogated by Henry the first, to stand and bee of good effecte, then the goodes of these traitours to be bestowed & gyuen abrode, also the banished menne ỹ fled as rebelles and false to their countree, to bee brought in, & that if any grudge or enuill will wer betwirt any one or other of the nobilite, that ther it should bee forgotte, & turned to loue, & lastly that certain mony should bee payed to the kyng towardes ỹ greate charges of his werre. When he had thus studied & determined to liue quietly & set his realme in good ordre, Charles ỹ duke of Burgoin sẽt for aide to hym against Lewes ỹ Frẽche kyng so ỹ he could neuer bee at rest, but one thyng or other shuld disquiet hym, for he could not deny hym helpe considerynge ỹ benefites ỹ he had receiued of hym at diuerse & sũdry tymes before ỹ, & ỹ he nowe fought against his dedly enemie whiche aided the erle of Warwike bothe w̃ menne & mony to come against hym. Wherfore he assẽblyng his coũsaill together, & shewyng theim the matter, sent woord to the duke ỹ he would kepe one piece or parte of a battail againſt ỹ kyng. For in deede at ỹ same tyme there was mortall battaill betwixt the duke & Lewes ỹ kyng, & because that the same Lewes was a very

[1] Kyng Edward. edit. alt. [2] Frenche kyng. edit. alt.

very harde manne & churlishe & also hurtefull aswell to his frēdes as to his foes, many Frēchmen abhorryng his cōdicions, did consent to hold with ỹ duke. And emong many other, one Lewes of Lucēburge did apoinct wt the duke to dooe mischief to hym one waye or other, so ỹ the kyng was bothe in daūger of his owne coūtree menne, & also of the duke beyng a straūger. The duke shewed this to kyng Edward, ỹ he might the soner allure & entise hym to battaill. And vpō this, kyng Edward toke his voiage to Fraūce, takyng besides his tribute ỹ he had, certain money of ỹ lordes & commons of the realme, which thei of their owne gētlenes gaue vn to hym, to ỹ sustenaūce & maintenyng of his armie And for ỹ, the kyng called that tribute & leuiyng of money, benevolēce, whiche neuertheless was giuen wt an euill will of many one. But he vsyng suche gētle fassions towardes theim, & prayng theim so hartely of their assistaunce ỹ thei could none other wise dooe but geue it hym. Whiche whē he had, he gathered his armie whiche was .xx. M. & went to Caleys ỹ .iiii. daye of July. Whō Charles ỹ duke did mett, & reioysyng gretely at his victory did instantly desire hym that he would sticke stoutely to this battaill, ỹ he might haue of ỹ Frenche kyng ỹ he had lost by hym. But when Lewes ỹ kyng hard that Edward came wt his armie, he encreased the nombre of his people as muche as he could & the more nigher the daunger that he was, the sooner & hastely he came vpon theim. And with this armie he sent foorthe Robert of Stotevill a noble capitain to the cooستes Atrebatium to resyst the power of the Englishe menne. And the kyng hym self ta-

ried at Siluanect, castyng w̄ hymselfe what waye he might make a league of peace betwixt ỹ duke & ỹ kyng of England & hym. Heryng therfore that ỹ king was gone to Atrebates, he sẽt ambassodours to hym for peace: whose myndes when ỹ kyng had knowē, although he had foūd but litle frēdship at his hādes in tymes past, yet consideryng ỹ all his substaūce & treasure was wasted in ciuile battail, & that he was not hable to maintein a newe hoost if nede shuld be, nor yet vnneth sustein theim whom he had vnder his bāner, thought best euē for pure necessite to leane to peace & growe to atonemēt w̄ Lewes ỹ kyng. The whiche thyng he might dooe also sauing his honour, cōsideryng ỹ bothe ỹ duke & Robert of Lucēburge aforenamed had not dooē accordyng to their promise. So ỹ, at the desire of ỹ ambassadours he went to speake with the kyng at Pinquinake a toune in Ambiā shire wher noble mēne dooe assēble together, & there found ỹ kyng. Thē bothe ỹ kynges after due salutaciō, either to other had long communicaciō, & at the last a peace was cōfirmed & stablished for many yeres, for ỹ agremēt wherof ỹ frēche kyng gaue vnto Edward toward his charge & cost. lxxv. M. crounes, & from thēs forth yerely l. M. crounes. After ỹ truce made & mony paid, kyng Edward wēt to Caleis, & from thēs to Englād. In this battaill none was slain saūyng onely ỹ duke of Exceter, ỹ whiche māne was in sētuary before, & cōmaunded to folowe ỹ kyng was put to death cōtrary to ỹ promise made. This was the yere of our lord. M. CCCC. lxxv. frome that tyme forth Lewes ỹ kyng payed duely his raunsome to Edward, vnto the laste yere before he

[1] Ton. de Amyas. edit. alt. [2] Frenche kyng, ed. t. alt.
[3] The Erle of S.t Pole. ed. t. alt [4] The territorie of Amyas. edit. alt.
[5] Then both the kynges mette on a Brydge with a grate betwene them so ỹt one might se and speake with a nother and. &c. edit. t
[6] Kyng Edward. edit. alt. [7] Peace. ed. t. alt. [8] The other Edition adds
[9] Tribute

he dyed[1] at what tyme he denyed the paymente, as though he knewe before his laste dayes. But the duke of Burgoyne and Roberte of Lucenburgh,[2] after they had knowen that Edwarde had made a league wyth Lewes the kynge, they freted sore with hym, and wrote sharpe letters of threatenyng and tauntyng hym, saiyng: that he was the cause that they reuenged not themselfes of the kyng.[3] Whose fyre and thundryng wordes the kyng no more passed vpon, then of the turnyng of his hãde And as for Lucenburgh he was taken prysoner,[4] and for his proude and malicious writyng, beheded at Lutece.[6]

Thus kyng Edward beyng in quietnes both in his countre and abrode also, although he mighte wel thynke hymself to lyue so perpetually, for ỹ he had been so great a conquerour, yet consideryng ỹ the erle of Richemõde was of nigh affinitee to Hẽ ry the. vi. he was not out of feare & daunger. Ther fore he thought ones to attempte the duke of Britayn agayn, with giftes, promyses & faire wordes that he might haue ỹ erle, whõ he thought to rule as he would, after that his auncestrie was geuen. The ambassadours came to the duke with a great substaunce of mony, & that their requeste might bee the honestier, they shewed the duke that they came to desire the erle of hym, that he mighte marye the kynges doughter, so that by affinite, al euil wyll & grudge might be forgotten, and sedicion vtterlye reiected, although they entended not so to cause al suche thynges to bee forgotten, but by the death & kyllyng of hym. The duke after longe and muche deniyng theim, at the laste thorowe muche entrea-

1 Vnto the same yere that he died. Edit. alt.
2 The erle of Saint Polle Edit. alt. 3 kyng Lewes. Edit. alt.
4 The Constable. Edit. alt. 5 malicious writyng and other be-ceer. Edit. alt.
6 Paris. Edit. alt. 7 Answere. Edit. alt.

kyng, and also great rewardes that was brought gaue the earle to theim, sendynge a letter to the kynge, in prayse and commendation of hym, not thynkynge that he commytted the lambe to the woulfe, but the soonne to the father. The ambassadours was verye glad, that they had got hym, and sayled into Englande, in all the haste they couide. But the earle knowynge well that he wēt to hys death, for sorowe and care that he conceaued in hys mynde, was caste in an agewe. When he was goone, one Jhon Chenlet, suche a man as could not bee found agayne in al the countre, & in great fauour w̄ the duke, hearing of ẏ dede, being very sore moued therwith, wēt to the dukes place & coming before his grace, stode lyke a man strykē with some sodeyn dysease, very pale & holding his head downe, the duke maruayling at hym, enquyred what the matter was. To whom he sayde, O moost noble duke, my time is at hande, & thys palenes betokeneth death without remidy That I would God ẏt had come before this day, & then it should not haue greued me so much. And thys all cometh to me through a deed ẏ you haue done of late, which wil ether cause me to lose my life, or els to lyue in moost miserie & wretchednes as one wery of thys present lyke. The noble actes ẏ you haue doone, (moost noble prynce) haue enhaunsed your fame & glory to the fardest part of the world but this one thing me thynke (I praye you pardō me what I saye) is a great blemyshe to your dygnitee, that forgetting the promyse that you made so faythfully haue geuen the innocēt erle of Richmounte to be destroyed, & pitefully killed emonge wretched

wretched knaues & haungmen. Wherfore, they ỹ loue you, of whom I am one, cannot but lamente to see you dyshonored by this great fault of periury. Whē he had sayd, the duke answered, hold thy peace man I praye the, ther is no such harme shal chaunce to him, Edwarde the kinge woulde haue him to mary his daughter. Then sayd John, Beleue me (mooste excellente and redoubted prynce) this Henry is nowe almoste vanysshed and loste, & yf he once goo out of your countree, he is but cast awaye and paste all recouerye. At these wordes ỹ duke was persuaded, through the whych he commaūded one Peter Lādoson hys receauer, to take the same Henry frō the ambassadours. The sayd receauer pursued the Englysshe ambassadours to Maclonium, and there holdyng theim wyth long cōmunication, made him to be conueyed into a sēctuary, whych was then almost ded through that feuer and thought whych he was caste in. And so after that he was amended broughte hym to the duke. The ambassadours then beyng spoiled and deceaued, both of theyr plead and mony that they brought, desyred ỹ same receauer that they might not goo home in that wyse, whyche receauer promised, that he woulde eyther kepe hym in sentuary, or eles cause hym to be imprisoned at the duke his place, so that they should neuer neede to feare hym.

In all thys tyme Edwarde beynge desyrous to knowe what became of the Earle, was enfourmed, that he was taken prysoner, but after that escaped theyre handes, where at the kinge was verye angrye: but when he knewe that he

should bee kepte in holde, was well pleased & then dyd take no thought. And liued after, & that most welthy, sparing no expẽses noꝛ cost in keppng his house, neuertheles, he dyd fall into one great ofkence in this time. Foꝛ sodẽly, he cõmaunded his bꝛother the duke of Clarence to be killed & dꝛowned in an hogshhed of malmesey. And the cause of hys death was, as men repoꝛt, thꝛough a certaine pꝛophecie, which sayd ꝑ after kyng Edwarde, one shuld reigne, whose name begã wyth a. G. which pꝛophecye some sayde, was completed & fulfilled when the duke of Glouceter, ꝑ after hym had the kingdome, dyd reigne. Some holdeth another opinion of this his death, saiyng: ꝑ at what time ꝑ olde malice dyd bꝛeke out bewixt thẽ both, ꝑ duke thꝛough his sisters councel, woulde haue maried lady Mary ꝑ duke of Burgoyn his only daughter, which mariage ꝑ kyng did infringe & stoppe, as one enuiyng of his bꝛothers felicitee, oꝛ good chaunce. After that they both beryng in theyꝛ mindes moꝛtall hatred, one of the sayde duke hys seruauntes, was accused of wichcraft & charming foꝛ which offence, he was put to death. The duke seyng ꝑ, could not but speake & resist againste the kyng his cõmaundement, and therfoꝛe, was committed to pꝛison, & ther beyng was killed, and pꝛoclaimed after as a traytour to the kyng foꝛ whose death after ꝑ, the king was verye soꝛy, and whan anye man had kneled to hym, and asked pardon foꝛ an offender, he would saye. O infoꝛtunate bꝛother, that noman would aske thy pardon.

And this duke had. ii. childꝛen, one lady Margarete, that was after maried to Richard Pole, & an

1 But. 2.d.t. alt. 2 Helde. 2.d.t. alt. 3 Charles. 2.d.t. alt.

4 The other Edition adds For by that mariage he had leene Duke of Burgoyne and Earle of Flaun... 5 That doyng as he thought in iniurious and therfore &c. 6 And the other Edition adds and attainted by Parliament. 2.d.t. alt.

an other Edward, whome the kyng made earle of Warwyke, but this childe folowyng the fate and destenie of his father, was after putte in prisone, & there priuely put to death. And these thinges were doone in the yere of oure Lorde a thousand foure hundreth and foure score, and the. xix. yere of the reigne of kyng Edward. And two yeres then after folowing, the kyng died, before ỹ whiche yeres he beganne to bee very harde and couetouse in getting monye, and also very diligent in marking & attaching his lordes that did offend. In this time the kyng of Scottes willed his soone Jamy to be maried to the kynges doughter lady Cicile, which was the yonger, that should haue been maried to Charles the kyng his soonne of Fraunce. But it chaunced not, thorow Lewes the kyng that brake his promise, bothe in geuing his seruice, and payeng his raunsome the laste yere of his reigne. Likewise the kyng of Scottes seing that Lewes the kyng was false of his promise, he thoughte he might bee so bolde too, and so breaking league of amite, sette vpon the Englische men. At the which Edward was sore vexed, and entended batayl against hym, yet after that he knewe ỹ it was not by his wyll, but thorowe the councell and euell disposed mindes of his lordes, woulde haue borne it in good worthe, had not kyng James owne brother streight vpon that, prouoked hym to fighte. Furthermore, suche was the nature of the Scottische kyng that when he had sette his minde vpon a thing, no manne coulde turne hym, and because that no manne mighte reproue hym in any thing, he promoted laye people, & menne of basse bloude to his

The.xix. yere.

1 After. Edit. alt. 2 The other Edition here adds but howe he left that and fel to gentlenes. 3 priuate. Edit. alt. 4 Kyng Edward. Edit. alt. The other Edition adds the Duke of Alban.

to his counsell, putting to deathe, or banishyng euermore the nobilitee Emong whom this duke of Albanie his brother, consydering the condicyons of the king, fled to ỹ kyng of Englād at what time he was sent into Fraūce, & ther counsailed ỹ kyng to fight against hym. The king willing to reuēge his olde iniuries, vpon many consideracīōs gathered, entēded no lesse by ỹ helpe of the saied duke of Albany, then to kepe open warre. So ỹ he did send the duke of Glouceſtre, ỹ erle of Northumberlād, syr Thomas Stanley, & this duke of Albany wt a great power of men against ỹ Scottes. The king knowing of their cōming, went to Barwyke with his army to kepe theim from the borders, but perceiuing that he was not hable so resist their great power, fled backe in ỹ night to Edinbrough & ther taryed for his enemies. And ỹ duke of Glouceſtre folowing, burned and spoyled all the way, & when he was somewhat nighe his enemies, perceiuing also that none of the Scottiſhe lordes came to the duke of Albanye, mistrusted that some deceyte or crafte was wrought, & so laboured to haue peace, whiche gotten, he went backe to the castell of Barwike, that sir Thomas Stanley had wonne a lytell before. And the duke of Albany ỹ authoure of this warre, for ỹ he had but lytle thankes of Englande for his so dooing, fled into Fraunce, & there was kylled running at the tylte in Parys. After this businesse Edward assembled his counsell together, & willed theim to prepare batayle againſte the Frenche kyng, for that he had neyther payde nor woulde paye his raunsome, nor yet geue his soonne in mariage to his doughter (as he promi-

sed

1 Lord. 2 t. all. 2 kyng Edward. 2 t. all.

3 Tribute. 2 t. all.

sed)to the setting forth of ỹ which batayl, certaine mony was exacted of the prestes & religiouse men to be payde. At the which time ỹ kyng was sodēly sickened,& shortly after died at Westminster ỹ. ix. day of Apryll then being.l.yeres of age,& reigning xxiii.after the date of oure Lorde a.M.iiii.C.lxxx. and thre, whose corps was after conueyghed and had with great pompe and solempnitee to Winde sore, and there buried in saint George his chapell Whiche kyng had by his wyfe the quene ten childzen,& of theim lefte aliue behinde hym Edward prince of Wales, and Richard duke of yorke,and one bastarde called Arthure and fyue doughters, Elisabeth,Cicilie,Anne,Catherine,and Brigyde, whiche after were maryed all, sauyng that ladye Brigide was a nonne. This Edward was a goodly man of personage, of stature hyghe, of countenaunce and beautee comely,of sight quicke,brode brested, and well sette in euery other parte conformable to his bodye,of a pregnant wytte, stomake stoute,& haulte courage,of perfect memori of such thinges as he conceaued in his braine,diligent in his affaires & weighti busines,in auentures bold and hardy, againe his aduersaries fearce & terryble,to his frendes liberal & bounteous,hauing in all his warres most prosperous & lucky successe,& escheuing[1] all pleasure & sensualitee, to ỹ which he was by nature most prone vnto,for ỹ which cause and for the lowlines and humanite ỹ is in hym ingendred by nature most plētifully,he bare him self honestly amōg his priuate persons, otherwise thē the degre or dignite of his maieste required,wher fore the fame ranne, that he was poysened.

* Dyse description of Edward the fourth.

A lytle

[1] Not eschauyng. edit. alt. [2] The other Edition adds Whiche was not true.

A lytell before his death, it was saied that he gaue hym selfe to auarice, whiche before, as you see, vsed greate liberalytee. Yet the realme whiche thorowe ciuile sedityon was greatly impouerysshed, he made ryche and plenteouse at his death daye.

Also he gaue spiritual promocions to the moste excellent and famous clerkes, and made theim of his councell, other of the laye sorte, whome he loued, he did not enriche with possessions but with monye and other lyke goodes, the whiche many princes, hauyng no respecte of the honoure, dooe not alwayes obserue. By the whiche suche giftes & rewardes he had so farre wonne the hartes of the people, that after his deathe many menne dyd lamente the losse of his grace.

But. viii. alt.

Edward the fyfth.

WHEN ALMIGHTIE GOD had called to his mercye the noble prince kyng Edwarde the fourth of that name, Edward his eldest sonne (prynce of Wales) began his reygne the.ix.daye of Aprill, in ỹ yere of oure Lorde a.M.CCCC. lxxxiij. and in the.xxij. yere of Lewes the.xi. then Frenche kyng. Whiche younge prince reigned a smal space and lytle season ouer this realme, other in pleasure or libertee, for his vncle Richard duke of Gloceter, within. iij. monethes depriued hym, not only of his croune and regalytie, but also vnnaturally bereft hym his naturall life, and for the declaracion by what craftie engine he first attempted his vngracious purpose, & by what false colourable & vntrue allegaciõs he set forth openly his pretensed enterprise, & fynally by what shamefull cruell and detestable acte he perfourmed the same: ye muste fyrst consyder of whom he and his brother descended, there natures condicions & inclynacions, and thẽ you shall easely perceaue, that there could not be a more crueller tyraunt appoynted to acheue a more abompnable enterprise.

Richard duke of Gloucester

There father was Richard Plantagenet duke of Yorke, whiche began not by warre but by lawe to chalenge the croune of Englande, puttyng his clayme in the parliamẽt, holden ỹ.xxx.yere of kyng Henry

Richard Plantagenet duke of York

Henry the.vi.where ether for right or for fauoure his cause was so set forthe and auaunced that the bloodde of the sayd kyng Henry, although he had a goodly sonne was clerely abiected, and ỹ croune of the realme (by autorytee of parliamente) entayled to the duke of Yorke and his heyres after the discease of the sayd kyng Henrye the. vi. But the duke not entendyng so long to tary, but myndyng vnder the preterte of discencion growen and arysen within the realme, and of couenauntes made in the parliament, not kepte but broken, to prcuête the tyme and to take vpon hym the gouernaunce in kyng Henryes life, was by to muche hardynes slayne at the battayle of Wakefylde, leuynge behynde hym three sonnes, Edwarde, George & Richard. Al these three as they wer greate estates of byrth, so were they greate and statelye of stomake, gredy of autorite and impaciẽt parteners of rule and autorite. This Edward reuẽged his fathers death and deposed kyng Henry the.vi. and atteyned the croune and sceptre of this realme. George duke of Clarence was a goodlye and well feautured prince, in all thynges fortunate, yf ether his owne ambiciõ had not set him against his brother or thenuie of his enemies had not set his brother agaynst hym, for were it by the quene or ỹ nobles of her bloode, which highly maligned the kynges kynred (as women cõmenlye, not of malyce but of nature, hate suche as their husbandes loue) or wer it aproude appetite of the duke hym selfe, entendyng to bee kyng, at the leaste wise heynous treason was layde to his charge, and finally were he in faute or were he fauteleſſe, attaynted was he by

parliament

parliament and iudged to deathe, and thereupon haſtely drowned in a butte of malmeſey, within ỹ towre of Londõ. Whoſe death kyng Edward (although he commaunded it) when he wyſte it was done, pyteouſlye he bewayled and ſorowfullye he repented it. Richard duke of Glouceſtre the .iij. ſonne (of whiche I muſte mooſte entreate) was in witte and courage eguall with the other, but in beautee and lyniamentes of nature farre vnderneth both, for he was lytle of ſtature, euill feautered of lymmes, croke backed, the lift ſhulder much higher then the right, harde fauoured of vyſage ſuche as in eſtates is called a warlike vyſage, and amonge commen perſons a crabbed face. He was malycious, wrothfull and enuyous, and as it is reported, his mother the duches had much a doote in her trauayle, ỹ ſhe could not be delyuered of hym vncutte, and that he came into the worlde the fete forwarde, as men be borne outwarde, and as the fame ranne, not vntothed, whether that men of hatred reported aboue the truthe, or ỹ nature chaunged his courſe in his begynnyng, which in his life many thynges vnnaturally cõmytted, this I leue to Goddes iudgemẽt. He was none cuell capitayn in warre, as to whiche, his diſpoſicion was more enclyned to then to peace. Sõdry victories he had & ſome ouerthrowes, but neuer for defaute in his owne perſon, either for lacke of hardynes or polytike order. Fre he was of his diſpences & ſomwhat aboue his power lyberall, wt large giftes he gatte hym vnſtedfaſt frẽdſhip, for whiche cauſe he was fayn to borowe, pil & extorte in other places, which gat hym ſtedfaſt hatred. He was cloſe & ſecrete, a depe

The deſcripcõ of Richarde the thyrde.

Richard was vnnaturally borne with the feet forwarde and tothed

Richarde compynge in warre

vnſtedfaſt frendſhyp

ſtedfaſte hatred

depe dyſſymuler, lowly of coũtenaũce, arrogãte of herte, outwardly kamplyer, where he inwardly hated, not lettyng to kyſſe whome he thought to kyll diſpiteous and cruell, not alwaye for eiuyll wyll, but after for ambycion and to ſerue his purpoſe, frende & foe wer all indifferent, where his auaũtage grewe, he ſpared no mãnes death whoſe lyfe withſtode his purpoſe. He ſlewe in the towre kyng Henry the. vi. (ſaiyng nowe is there no heyre male of kyng Edward the thyrde, but we of the houſe of Yorke) whiche murder was done without kynge Edwardes aſſent, whiche would haue appoynted that bocherlye office to ſome other, rather then to his owne brother. Some wiſe mẽ alſo wene, ỹ hys dryft lacked not in helpyng forth his owne brother of Clarence to his death, whiche thyng in all apparaunce he reſiſted, although he inwardly mynded it. And the cauſe thereof was, as men notynge his doynges and proceadynges did marke (becauſe that he longe in kyng Edwardes tyme thought to opteyne the croune, in caſe that the kyng his brother whoſe life he loked that euyl dyet would ſone ſhorten) ſhould happẽ to diſeaſe (as he did in dede) his chyldrẽ beyng yoũg. And then ỹ if duke of Clarence had lyued his pretenſed purpoſe had been farre hyndered. For yf the duke of Clarence had kept hym ſelf true to his nephewe the yong kyng, or would haue takẽ vpõ him to be kyng, euery one of theſe caſtes had been a troumpe in the duke of Gloucęſters waye: but when he was ſure that hys brother of Clarence was dead, then he knewe that he might woorke without ieopardye. But of theſe poyntes there is certentie, and whoſoeuer deuyneth

neth or cõiectureth maye as well shote to ferre as to shorte, but this cõiecture afterward toke place (as fewe dooe) as you shall pceaue here after. But afore I declare to you howe this Rychard duke of Gloucestre began his mischeuous imagened & pretenced enterprise as apptly shalbe opened. I must a litle putte you in remẽbraũce of a louyng and charitable acte no lesse profitable thẽ amiable to ẏ whole cõmynaltie (if it had been so inwardely thought as it was outwardly dissimuled) whiche kyng Edward did lyng on his deathe bedde not long before he dyed, for in his life althoughe that the deuision emongest his frendes somewhat greued & yrked hym, yet in his helth he lesse regarded & tooke hede to it, by reason ẏ he thought ẏ he was hable in all thynges to rule bothe pties, were thei neuer so obstinate. But in his last sickenesse (whiche cõtinued longer then false & fantasticall tales haue vntruly & falsely surmised as I my self that wrote this pamphlet truly knew) whẽ he perceiued his natural strẽgth was gone, & hoped litle of recouery by the artes of al his phicysyans whiche he perceaued onely to prolong his life. Thẽ he began to consider the youth of his children, howe be it, he nothyng lesse mistrusted then that that happened, yet he wisely forseyng and considryng that many harmes might ensue by ẏ debate of his nobles while ẏ youth of his children should lacke discrecion and good counsaill of their frendes, for he knew well that euery part would woorke for their owne cõmoditee, and rather by pleasaunt aduise to wynne theim selfes fauour, thẽ by ꝓfitable aduertisemẽt to do ẏ childrẽ good, wherfore, lyng on his

death bed at Westminster he called to hym suche lordes as thē wer aboute hym whō he knewe to be at variaunce in especiall the lord marques Dorset soonne to the quene, & the lord Hastynges against whō ẏ quene especially grudged for ẏ fauor ẏ the kyng bare hym, & also she thought him familier w̄ the kyng in wāton cōpaignie, hir kynne bare hym sore, aswel for ẏ ẏ kyng made hym capitain of Caleys which office ẏ lord Riuers brother to ẏ quene claimed of ẏ kynges former promise, as of diuerse other giftes whiche he receaued ẏ thei loked for. & when these lordes w̄ diuerse other of both parties were come vnto ẏ kynges presens, he caused hymselfe to be raised vp w̄ pillous, & as I cā gesse saied thus or muche like in sētēce to theim. My lordes & my dere kynsmē & alies, in what plight I nowe lye you se & I pfectly fele, by ẏ whiche I looke ẏ lesse while to liue w̄ you, therfore ẏ more depely I am moued to care in what case I leue you, for suche as I leue you, suche are my children like to fynd you, whiche if thei shuld fynd at variaūce (as god forbid) thei theim selfes might hap to fall at werre or their discresiō wuld serue to set you at peace, you se their youth, of whiche I rekē the onely suerty to rest in your concord. For it suffiseth not all you to loue theim, if eche of you hate other, if thei wer mē your feithfullnes might hap to suffice, but childhod must be mainteined by mēnes autorite & slipp youth vnderpropted w̄ elder coūsaill, whiche thei can neuer haue except you geue it, nor you geue it except you agre, for wher eche laboureth to breake that other maketh, & for hatred eche impugneth others coūsail: ther must nedes be a lōg tract or any good

The exhortacyō of kynge Edward made to hys lordes a lytle before he dyed

good cõclusiõ can forward. And ferther, while eche ptie labozeth to be chief flaterer, adulaciõ shall thẽ haue moze place, thẽ plain ⁊ feithful aduise, of whi che must nedes ensue ẏ euill bringyng vp of ẏ prince whose myndi tẽder youth infecte shall redily fall to mischief ⁊ riot ⁊ drawe doune this noble realme to ruyne. But if grace turne hym to wisdome (whiche god sẽd hym) thẽ thei which by eiuill meanes plea sed hym best, shall after fal farthest out of fauour so ẏ at ẏ lẽgth euell drifftes driue to naught, ⁊ good plain wayes ꝓsper ⁊ flozishe. Gzeat variaũce hath euer beẽ betwene you, not alwais foz great causes Some tyme a thyng right wel entẽdid ⁊ miscõstru ed hath been turned to ẏ wooze, oz a final displea= sure dooẽ to you ether by your owne affeciõ ether by instigaciõ of eiuill toõges hath been soze agra= uate. But this I wot well, you had neuer so great cause of hatred as you haue of loue, because we be men ⁊ ẏ we be all christẽ mẽ. This I will leaue to pzechers to tell you, ⁊ yet I wot not whether any pchers wozdes ought moze to moue you, thẽ ẏ his gooyng by ⁊ by to ẏ place ẏ thei all pzeche of. But this shal I desire you to remẽbze ẏ the one part of you beyng of my blod ẏ other of my alies, ⁊ eche of you ẅ other either of kynred oz affinite, whiche is ẏ very spirituall affinitie ⁊ kynred in chzist as all ptakers of ẏ sacamentes of chzistes churche. The weight of whiche cõsanguynite if we did beare as would to god we did, then should we moze be mo= ued to spirituall charite then to fleshly cõsangui= nyte. Our lozd forbid ẏ you loue ẏ wooze together foz ẏ self same cause ẏ you ought to loue ẏ better ⁊ yet ẏ oftẽ happeneth, foz no wher fynd we so dedly

as emõgest theim whiche by nature & lawe moost ought to agre together. Suche a serpent is ambicio & desire of vanyne glory & souereingtie, whiche emõgest estates when he is once entered he crepith forth so ferre, till w deuilion & varyaunce he turneth all to mischief. First longyng to bee next to ỹ best, afterward egall w the beest, & at the last chief & aboue ỹ beest. Of whiche immoderate appetite of worship & the debate & discencion ỹ grewe there by, what losse, what sorowe, what trouble hath wõ in these fewe yeres growen with in this realme, I praye God as well to forget as we well remẽbre, whiche thyng if I could aswell haue forsene as I haue w my more pane thẽ pleasure proued, by gods blessed lady (ỹ was his commõ othe) I would neuer haue wonne the curtesyes of mennes knees with the losse of so many heddes. But sith thynges passed can not be called agayn, muche more ought we to bee ware, by what occasion we haue taken so great hurte before, that we eftsones fall not into ỹ occasion again. Nowe bee these greues passed and all is quiet thanked bee God, & likely well to prosper in welthfull peace, vnder your cousins my children, if God send theim life, and you loue and cõcord. Of whiche .ii. thynges ỹ lesse losse wer thei by whõ all though God did his pleasure, yet should this realme alwayes fynd kynges, & paduẽtur as good kynges as thei. But if you emõgest your selfes in a childes reigne fall at debate, many a good manne shall innocently perishe, & happely he & you also, or it is long fynd peace & quiet again, wherfore in these last woordes ỹ euer I looke to speake to you, I exhort and require you all, for the loue

that

that you haue borne to me, and for ỹ loue that I haue borne to you & for the loue ỹ our lord bereth to vs all. Frō this tyme forward all greues forgot tē, eche of you loue other, which I verely trust you wyll, yf you any thyng regarde God or your kyn ges affinitee or kynred, this realme your owne cou tre or your owne suretie & wealthe. And there with al, the kyng for fayntnes no longer endurynge to syt vp, layde hym downe on his right side his face toward theim. And ther was none presente ỹ could forbeare weppyng, but ỹ lordes cōfortynge hym w as good woordes as thei could, & answeryng for ỹ tyme, as they thought should stande with his plea sure. And there in his presence (as by theyr wordes appeared) eche forgaue other, and toyned theyr hā des together, when as it after appeared by theyr dedes there hartes were farre asōder. And so with in a fewe dayes thys noble prynce dyscealed at Westmynster the. ix. daye of Apryll, in the yere of our Lorde a. M. CCCC. lxxxiii. after that he had reygned. xxii. yeres one moneth and. viii. dayes, & was w great funeral pompe conueyed to Wynd sore, leuyng behynd hym. ii. soonnes, Edwarde the prynce (of whom this story entreateth) a chylde of xiii. yeres of age, Richarde duke of Yorke. ii. yeres yonger then the prince, and fiue doughters, Eliza beth, which by goddes grace was maryed to kyng Henry the. vii. and mother to kyng Hēry ỹ eyght, Cycile not so fortunate as fayre, fyrst wedded to ỹ vycoūt Welles, after to one Kyne and lyued not in great wealth, Bridget professed her selfe a close nonne of Syon, Anne was maryed to lorde Tho mas Hauwarde after erle of Surrey and duke of

Norffolke, Katheryne ỹ yõgeſt doughter was maryed to lorde Willyã Courtney, ſonne to ỹ earle of Deuõſhire, which lõgtyme toſſed in ether fortune ſomtyme in welth after in aduerſitee, tyl ỹ benignitee of her nephewe kyng Herye ỹ. viii. brought her into a ſure eſtate accordyng to her degre & pgeny. This kyng Edward was ſuche a prince of gouer-

The deſcripcio of Edward ỹ fourth.

naunce and behaueour in the tyme of peace (for in tyme of warre, eche muſt be others enemye) ỹ ther was neuer any kyng in this realme, in attaynyng the croune by warre and battayle ſo hartely beloued with the more ſubſtaunce of his people, nor he hym ſelfe ſo ſpecially fauoured in any parte of his life, as at ỹ tyme of his death, whiche fauoure and affeccion yet after his death, by the crueltie, myſchiefe & trouble of the tempeſteous world that followed, highlye towardes hym more encreaſed. At ſuche time as he died, the diſpleaſure of thoſe that bare hym grudge for kyng Henry ỹ. vi. ſake (whõ he depoſed) was wel aſſuaged & in effect quenched within ỹ ſpace of. xxii. yeres (which is a great part of a mans life) and ſome wer reconſiled & growen into his fauour (of ỹ which he was neuer ſtraũge) when it was with true harte demaunded. He was goodly of perſonage & princely to beholde, of hert couragious, politike in councell, and in aduerſitee nothyng abaſhed, in proſperitee rather ioyful then proude, in peace iuſte & mercyfull, in warre ſharpe and fearce, in the felde bold and hardie, & yet neuer theleſſe no farther then reaſon and policie woulde aduenture, whoſe warres whoſoeuer circunſpectly & aduiſedly conſidereth, he ſhal no leſſe cõmend his wiſdome & policie where he auoyded them, then

then his manhode where he vanquished theim. He was of visage full faced & louelie, of bodie mightie, stronge & cleane made, with ouer lyberall and wãtõ dyet, he waxed somewhat corpulẽt & bourly, but neuertheless not vncomely. He was of youth greatly geuen to fleshely wantõnes, from ỹ which health of bodie in great prosperitee & fortune without an especiall grace hardlye refrayneth. Thys faulte litle greued his people, for neyther coulde any one mannes pleasure stretche or extende to the displeasure of veraye many, nor a multitude bee greued by a priuate mannes fantesie or voluptepleasure
ouslesse, whẽ it was doẽ wout violẽce. And in his latter dayes he left al wild dalliaũce & fel to grauitee, so ỹ he brought his realme into a wealthie & prosperous estate, al feare of outwarde enemies were clerely extinguished, & no warre was in hande nor none toward, but suche as no mã looked for. The people wer toward their prince not in a cõstrayned feare, but in a true louyng and wylfull obedience emongest theimselfe, and ỹ commons wer in good peace. The lordes whome he knewe at variaunce, he in his death bed (as he thought) he brought to good concord, loue and amytee. And a lytle before his death, he left gatheryng of mony of his subiectes, whiche is the only thyng that draweth ỹ hartes of Englyshmẽ frõ their kynges & princes, nor nothyng he ether entreprysed nor toke in hãd, by ỹ which he shuld be dryuẽ thereunto. For his tribute out of Fraũce he had a litle before recouered & obteyned. And ỹ yere before he dyed he recouered the toune of Berwike against ỹ kyng of Scottes. And albeit ỹ all ỹ tyme of his reigne he was so benigne

courteous and familyer, that no parte of his vertues was estemed more thē those high humilitees. Yet that condycion in thende of his last dayes decayed not, in the whiche many prynces by a longe cōtinued souereingtie, declyne to a proude porte & behaueoure from theyr condicions accustomed at their begynnyng. Yet lowlynes and gentlenes so farre forth in hym encreased that the sōmer before died, he beyng at the hauerying at the bowre, sente for the mayre and aldermenne of London thyther only to hunte and make pastyme, where he made theim not so hartie but so familyer and frendlye chere, and sent also to theyr wyues suche plentie of venyson, that no one thyng in many dayes before gatte hym eyther mo heartes or more hartie fauoure emongest the commen people, whiche often tymes more esteme and take for greate kyndnes a lytle courtesye, then a greate profyte or benefyte. And so this noble prynce deceassed, as you haue hearde in that tyme when his lyfe was mooste desyred, & whē his people mooste desyred to kepe hym. Whiche loue of his people & their entiere affecciō towarde hym, had bene to his noble chyldren, (hauyng in theim selfes also as many gyftes of nature, as many princely vertues, as much good towardnesse as their age coulde receaue) a meruelous fortresse and a sure armoure, yf the deuysion and dissencion of their frendes had not vnarmed them & left them destitute, & the execrable desyre of souereingtie puoked him to their destrucciō, which if either kynd or kyndnesse had holdē place muste nedes haue beē their chiefe defence. For Richarde duke of Glouceter, by nature their vncle, by office

their

their protectoure, to their father greatly beholden and to theim by othe and allegeaunce bounden all the bandes broken and violated, that bynde manne and manne together, withoute anye respecte of God or the worlde, vnnaturally contryued to bereaue theim not onely of their dignytee and preheminence, but also of their natural lyues and worldely felicytee.

And fyrste to shewe you that by coniecture he pretended this thing in his brothers lyfe, ye shall vnderstande for a trueth that the same nyght that king Edward died, one called Mistelbrooke, long ere the daye sprange came to the house of one Potier dwelling in Redcrosse strete withoute Creple gate of London, and when he was with hastie rapping, quickely let in, ỹ saied Mistelbrooke shewed vnto Potier that kyng Edward was ỹ nighte deceased: by my trueth qᵖ Potier, then wil my master the duke of Gloucetre be kyng and that I warrãt the. What cause he had so to thinke, harde it is to say, whether he being his seruaũt knewe any such thing prepensed or otherwise had any inklingther of, but of all likelihode he spake it not of naughte.

But nowe to retourne to the trewe history, wer it that the duke of Gloucetre had of olde sore practised this conclusyon, or was before tyme moued therunto and put in hope by the tender age of the young princes his nephewes, as opportunitee and likely of spede putteth a manne in courage of that that he neuer entended. Certen it is, that he being in the Northe partyes for the good gouernaunce of the countrey, being aduertised of his brothers deathe contriued the destruccion of his nephewes

w.l.

with ỹ vsurpacion of the roiall dignitee & croune And for asmuche as he well wyste, and had holpe to maynteine, a long continued grudge and harte burnynge betwene the Quenes kynred and the kynges bloodde (either parte enuiyng others authoritee) he nowe thought (as it was in dede) a fer therly beginning to the pursute of his entent and a sure grounde & situacion of his vnnaturall buil ding, if he might vnder the pretence of remẽbring of olde displeasures abuse the ignorannce & angre of the one partie to the destruccion of ỹ other, and then to wynne to his purpose as many as he coulde, and suche as coulde not bee wonne, might bee loste or they looked therfore. But of one thing he was certaine, that if his intent wer once perceaued, he should haue made peace betwene both parties with his owne blood[illegible] but all his intente he kept secrete tyll he knewe his frendes, of ỹ whiche Henry the duke of Buckingham was the fyrste ỹ sent to hym after his brothers deathe a trusty seruaunt of his called Persall to the cytee of Yorke, where the Duke of Gloucetre kepte the kyng his brothers funeralles. This Persall came to John Ward a secrete chaumberer to the duke of Gloucetre, desirynge that he in close and couerte manier might speake with the duke his maister: wherupõ in the deed of the nyght the duke sente for Persall (all other beyng aduoyded) whiche shewed to the duke of Gloucetre that the duke of Buckingham his maister in this newe worlde would take suche parte as he woulde & woulde farther wayte vpon hym with a .M. good fellowes yf nede were. The duke sent backe ỹ messanger with great thankes and

and diuerse preuey instruccions by mouthe, which Persall did somuche by his trauaile that he came to the duke of Buckyngham his maister into the marches of Wales, & ekfsones with newe instruccions met with the duke of Gloucetre at Notingham, whiche was come oute of the Northcoũtrey with many knightes & gentylmenne to the nouin bre of .vi. C. horse & more, in his iourney towarde London. And after secrete meting and cómunicacion had betwene hym & the duke of Gloucetre he retourned with suche spede ỹ he brought the duke of Buckingham his master to mete w̃ the duke of Gloucetre not farre from Northampton with .iii. C. horsses, & so they twoo came together to Northampton where they fyrst begaune their vnhappy enterprice, and so the duke of Buckingham contynued stil w̃ the duke of Gloucetre till he was crouned kyng, as ye shall plainly perceaue hereafter.

The younge kyng at the deathe of his father kepte housholde at Ludlowe, for his father had sente hym thyther for Justice to bee doone in the marches of Wales, to the ende that by the authoritee of his presence, the wylde Welshemenne and euell dysposed persones shoulde refraine frome their accustomed murthers and outerages. The gouernaunce of this younge Prynce was cómitted to Lorde Anthony Woodvile, Earle Riuers & Lorde Scales, brother to the Quene, a wise, hardye and honourable personage, as valyaunte of hande as pollitick of counsell, and with him were associate other of the same partye, and in effecte euery one as he was nere of kinne vnto the quene so was he planted nexte aboute the Prynce.

That

That dyfte by the Quene ſeined to bee deuyſed, whereby her bloodde myghte of ryghte in tender youth bee ſo planted in the pryncees fauoure, that afterwarde it ſhoulde hardely bee eradicated oute of the ſame.

The duke of Gloucetre turned all this to their diſtruccion, and vpon that grounde ſette the foundacion of his vnhappy building. For whome ſoeuer he perceaued to bee at varyaunce with theim, or to beare toward hym ſelf any fauoure, he brake vnto theim, ſome by mouthe, ſome by writing and ſecrete meſſengers, that it was neither reaſon nor yet to bee ſuffered that the younge kyng their maiſter and kinſmanne ſhould bee in the handes and cuſtody of his mothers kinrede, ſequeſtred in maner frome their company & attendaunce, of which euery one ought hym as faithfull ſeruice as they, and many of theim of farre more honorable parte of kynne then his mothers ſyde, whoſe bloodde & the Duke of Gloucetre ſauyng the kynges pleaſure, was farre vnmete to bee matched with his, whiche nowe to bee remoued frome the kyng and the leaſt noble to bee lefte aboute hym is, & he neyther honourable to his maieſtie nor to vs, & alſo to hym leſſe ſuretye, to haue the nobleſt and mightieſt of his frendes frome hym, and to vs all no lytle ieopardye to ſuffer, and ſpecially oure well proued euel willers to growe in too too greate authorytee w̄ ths king in youth, namely whiche is light of beleke and ſoone perſwaded. Ye remembre that kyng Edward hym ſelf, albeit he was both of age and diſcrecion, yet was he ruled in many thinges by ꝑ bende more then ſtoode either w̄ his honoure or oure

1 Ed. v. 2. 2 Ed. v.

or oure profyte, or wyth the commoditee of anye manne elles, excepte onely the immoderate aduaũcemente of theim selues, whiche whether they thristed[1] sore after theyr owne wele or no, it were harde I thynke to gesse. And yf some folkes frendshype had not holden better place wyth the kynge then anye respecte of kynred, they myghte (paraduenture) easely haue trapped and brought to confusyon some of vs or thys, & why not as easly as they haue done some other or thys as nere of the blood royall, but oure lorde hathe wroughte hys wyll, and thanked be hys grace that perell is past, how beit, as greate is growing if we suffer this young kynge in his enemyes handes, whyche wythoute his wyttinge myghte abuse the name of hys commaundemente to any af[2]our vndoing, which thynges God & good prouysion forbyd, of whych good prouysion none of vs hathe any thynge the lesse nede for the late attonemente made, in which the kynges pleasure had more place then the parties heartes or willes, nor none of vs is so vnwise ouersone to truste a newe frende made of an olde fooe, or to thynke that anye onely kyndenes so sodenly contracted in an houre, contynued scantlye yet a fortnyght, shoulde be deper set in our stomackes then a longe accustomed malice many yeres rooted."

With these perswasions and wrytinges, ỹ duke of Glouceter set a fyre theim whiche wer easye to kindle, & in especyall twayne, Henry duke of Buckyngham and Wyllyam Lorde Hastynges and Lorde Chamberlayn, both menne of honour and of great power, the one by lõg succeſſiõ from his aunce-

[1] Trusted edit. [2] Of. edit.

aunceters, the other by hys offyces and the kynges fauoure. These two not bearynge eache to other so muche loue as hatred, both to the quenes bloodde accorded together with the duke of Glouceter that they would remoue frome the kyng all his mothers frēdes, vnder the name of theyr enemyes.

Wherupon the duke of Glouceter beynge aduertysed that the lordes about the kyng entended to bryng him to London to hys coronation, accōpanyed wyth such a nomber of theyr frendes that it shoulde be harde for hym to bryng hys purpose to passe wythoute the assemblinge and gathering of people and in maner of open warre, wherof the ende he wyst was doubtefull, and in the whyche, the kynge beynge on the other syde, he shoulde haue the name and face of rebellion.

He secretelye therefore by dyuers meanes, caused the quene to be perswaded that it was nether nede and shoulde also bee ieopardeous the kinge to come vp so stronge, for as nowe, euery lorde loued other and none other thynge studyed for, but the tryumphe of his coronation and honoure of ỹ kyng. And the lordes aboute the kyng, should assēble in the kinges name much people, they shuld geue the lordes betwyxte whome and theim there had bene some tyme debate, to feare and suspecte leaste they shoulde gather thys people, not for the kynges sauegarde, whom no man impugned, but for theyr destruccyon, haupynge more regarde to theyr olde varyaunce then to theyr newe attonemente, for the whyche cause they on the other part myght assemble men also for theyr defence, whose

powres

1 An occasion to feare. edit. alt.

powres she wyste well farre stretched, and thus should al the realme fall in a roare, and of the mischiefe that thereof shoulde ensue (whiche was lykly to be not a lytle) the most harme was lyke to fal where she leaste woulde, and then all the worlde woulde put her and her kynred in the blame, saiynge that they had vnwyselye and vntruely broken the amytie and peace whyche the kynge her husbande had so prudently made betwene her kinred & hys, whyche amytee hys kinne had alwaies obserued.

The quene beyng thus perswaded sente worde to the kynge and to her brother, that there was no cause ner nede to assemble anye people, and also the duke of Glouceter and other lordes of his bēd wrot vnto the kinge so reuerently and to the quenes frendes there so louyngely, that they nothing earthlye mystrustyng, broughte the young kyng toward London w̄ a sober compaignie in greate hast (but not in good spede) til he came to Northāpton, and frō thēce he remoued to Stony stratford On whyche daye, the two dukes and theyr bende came to Northampton, saynynge that Stonye stratforde coulde not lodge theim all, where they founde the Earle Ryuers, entendynge the nexte mornynge to haue folowed the kynge, and to bee wyth hym earely in the mornyng. So that nyght the dukes made to the earle Riuers frendly chere but assone as they were departed verye familier wyth greate curtesie in opē syghte and the erle Riuers lodged, the.ii. dukes with a few of theyr pryuye frendes fell to councell wherein they spente a greate part of the nyght, and in the dawning of

the

the daye they sente about prpuely to ther seruaun tes in theyr lodgynges to haste to horsebacke for theyr lordes were in maner redy to ryde, wherup= pon all theyr seruauntes were ready or the Lorde Ryuers seruauntes wer awake. Nowe had the du kes taken the keyes of the ynne in to theyr possessi on, so that none shoulde yssue oute wythout their consente. And ouer thys in the hygh way toward Stony stratforde they set certaine of theyr folkes that shoulde cause and compell to retourne again all persons that were passinge frome Nōrthamp= ton to Stony stratforde, sayinge that the dukes theim selfes woulde be the fyrst that should come to the kynge from Northampton, thus they bare folkes in hande. But when the earle Ryuers vn= derstode the gates closed and the wayes on euery syde beset, nether hys seruauntes, nether hym self suffered to goo oute, perceauinge so great a thing wythoute his knowledge, not begon for noughte, comparyng thys prsent dooynge wyth the laste nyghtes cherein so fewe houres, so great a chaūce marueleously myslyked it. Howbeit, syth he could not get awaye, he determined not to kepe him self close, leaste he shoulde seme to hyde hym selfe for some secret fear of hys owne faute, wherof he saw no such cause in him selfe, wherfore, on the suretie of hys owne consience he determyned to go to thē and to inquire what thys matter myghte meane. Whome assone as they saw, they beganne to qua rell wyth hym, affyrmyng that he prtended to set dystaunce betwene the kyng and theim to bryng theim to confucyon, whyche should not lye in his powre and when he began as he was an el oequēt

man

1 Chaunce. 2 dit a th.

manne)in godly wise to excuse hym self thei would not here his aunswer but tooke hym by force and putte hym to ward. And then he mounted on hors back and came in Stony stratford wher the kyng was goyng to horsbacke, because he would leaue ỹ lodgyng for theim, for it was to straite for bothe the compaignies. And when thei came to his presence thei alighted and their compaignie aboute theim, and on their knees saluted hym, and he theim gētely receaued, nothyng erthely knowyng ner mistrustyng as yet. The duke of Buckyng ham saied aloude, on afore gentlemenne and yomenne kepe your roumes, and therwith in ỹ kyng his presence thei picked a quarell to the lord Rychard Grey the quenes soonne and brother to the lord marques & halfe brother to the kyng, saiyng that he and the marques his brother and the lorde Ryuers his vncle had cōpassed to rule the kyng & the realme and sette varyaūce betwene thestates, and to subdewe and destroye the noble bloodde of the realme. And toward thaccomplishment of thesame, thei saied ỹ lord marques had entred into the toure of London, & thence had takē oute treasure and sent mēne to the sea, whiche thynges these dukes knewe well were dooen for a good purpose & as very necessary, appoincted by ỹ whole counsail at Londō, but somewhat thei must haue saied, vnto the whiche woordes the kyng aunswered: what my brother Marques hath dooen I cannot saie, but in good faith I dare well aunswer for myne vncle Ryuers and my brother here, that thei bee innocent of suche matters, yee my leege qᵈ the duke of Buckyngham, thei haue kepte ỹ dealyng of

these matters farre from the knowledge of your good grace, and foorthwith thei arrested the lord Rychard and sir Thomas Vaugham and sir Rychard Hawte in the kyng his presence & brought the kyng and all to Northãpton, where thei tooke ferther counsaill in their affaires. And there thei sent from the kyng whom it pleased theim, and set aboute hym suche seruauntes as better pleased theim then hym. At whiche dealyng he wept, but it booted not. And at dynner the duke of Glouce-ster sent a dyshe from his owne table to the lorde Ryuers, prayyng hym to bee of good chere and all should bee well, he thanked hym and prayed the messenger to beare it to his nephiewe the lord Rychard with like woordes, whom he knewe to haue neede of confort, as one to whom suche aduersite was straunge, but he hym self had been all his dayes ennured therwith and therfore could beare it. But for all this message, the duke of Gloucester sent the lord Ryuers, ỹ lord Rychard and sir Thomas Vaughm̃ and sir Rychard Hawte into the Northparties into dyuers prisones, but at last all came to Pountfrette where thei all foure were behedded without iudgemet.

In this maner as you haue heard, the duke of Gloucester tooke on hym the gouernaunce of the younge kyng, whom with muche reuerence he conueighed towardes London. These tidynges came hastely to the quene before mydnight by a very sore reporte, that the kyng hir soonne was taken and that her brother and her other soonne and other hir frendes were arested and sent, no manne wyst whither. With this heupe tydynges the

quene

quene bewayled her childes ruyn, hir frendes mis-chaunce and her awne infortune, curssyng the tyme that euer she was perswaded to leaue the ga-therynge of people to bryng vp the kyng with a greate powre, but that was passed, and therfore nowe she tooke hir younger soonne the duke of Yorke and hir doughters and went oute of the pa-lais at Westminster into the sanctuary and there lodged in the abbotes place, and she and all her children and compaignie were regystred for sanc-tuary persones. Theſame night there came to doc-ter Rotheram archebysshop of Yorke and lorde chauceloure a messenger from the lorde chambre-layne to Yorke place beside Westminster, the messenger was brought to the bysshoppes bed syde and declared to hym that ye dukes were gone backe with the younge kyng to Northamptō, and declared ferther, that the lorde Hastynges his ma-ster sent hym woord that he should feare nothyng for all should bee well. Well (q the bisshop,) bee it as well as it will, it will neuer bee so well as we haue seen it: and then the messenger depar-ted. Whereupon the bysshop called vp his ser-uauntes before daye light, and tooke with hym the greate seale and came before daye to the quene about whom he founde muche heuynesse, rumble, haste, busynesse, conueighaunce and carryage of hir stuffe into sanctuary, euery manne was busye to carye, beare and conueigh stuffe, chestes and fer-delles, no manne was vnoccupied, and some ca-ryed more then thei were commaunded to another place. The quene sat alone belowe on the russhes all desolate and dysmaied, whom the archebisshop

confoꝛted in the beſt maner that he coulde, ſhewynge her that the matter was nothynge ſo ſoꝛe as ſhe tooke it foꝛ, and that he was put in good hope and oute of feare by the meſſage ſente to hym frō the loꝛde Haſtinges. A wo woꝛth him qᵗ the quene foꝛ it is he that goeth aboute to deſtroye me and my bloodde. Madame qᵗ he, be of good comfoꝛte and I aſſure you, yᵗ they crowne anye other king then your ſoonne whome they nowe haue, we ſhal on the moꝛowe croune his bꝛother whō you haue here with you. And here is the greate ſeale, which in lykewiſe as your noble huſbande delyuered it to me, ſo I deliuer it to you to the vſe of your ſōne and therewyth delyuered her the greate ſeale, and departed home in the dawnynge of the daye, and when he opened his windowes and looked on the Themys, he myghte ſee the riuer ful of boates of the duke of Glouceter hys ſeruauntes watchyng that no perſon ſhoulde goo to ſanctuary ner none ſhoulde paſſe vnſerched.

Then was there great rumoure and commocion in the citee and in other places, the people diuerſly deuined vpō thys dealyng. And dyuerſe loꝛdes knyghtes and gentylmen, ether foꝛ fauour of the quene oꝛ foꝛ feare of them ſelues, aſſembled compaignies together and went flockyng together in harneyes And many alſo, foꝛ that they recompted thys demeanour attempted, not ſo eſpecyallye agaynſt other loꝛdes as agaynſt the kyng him ſelf in the dyſturbaunce of hys coꝛonat ion, therefoꝛe they aſſembled by and by together to common of thys matter, at London. The archebyſhoppe of Yoꝛke fearynge that it woulde be aſcrybed (as it

was

was in dede)to ouermuche lightnes that he so sodeynly had yelded vp the great seale to the quene, to whome the custodie therof nothyng apperteigned without especiall commaundement of ỹ kyng secretly sent for the seale agayn & brought it wyth hym after the accustomed maner to mete with the lordes.

At this metyng was the lord Hastynges, whose truthe towarde the kyng no manne doubted nor neded not to doubte, perswaded the lordes to beleue, that the duke of Glouceter was faythfull & sure towardes his prince, and that ỹ lord Ryuers, the lorde Richard and other knyghtes apprehended, wer for matters attempted by theim agaynste the dukes of Gloucetre & Buckyngham put vnder arest, for their suretie, and not for the kynges icopardye, and that they were also in sauegarde there to remayne, tyll the matter were (not by the dukes only)but also by all the other lordes of the kynges councell indifferentlye examyned, and by their discrections ordred and eyther iudged or appesed. And one thyng he aduysed theim to beware of, that they iudged not the matter to farrefoorth or they knewe the truthe, nor turnyng theyr pryuate grudges into the commen hurte, irrityng and prouokyng men vnto angre, and disturbyng the kynges coronacion, toward whiche the dukes wer cõmyng, for that then might paraduenture bryng ỹ matter so farre out of ioynte, that it shoulde neuer bee brought in fraine agayne, whiche yf it should happe as it were lykely to come to a felde, though all parties were in all other thynges eguall, yet shoulde the auoryte bee on that syde, where the

kynge is hym selfe, with these persuasyons of the lorde Hastynges, whereof parte he hym selfe beleued, and of parte he wyste well the contrarye, these commocyons were somewhat appeased. But in especiall, because the dukes of Buckyngham and Glouceter wer so nere and came on so shortly with the kynge, in none other maner, nor none other boyce or sembleaunce then to his coronacion, causyng the same to be blowen about that suche persones as were apprehended had contryued the distruccion of the dukes of Gloucetre and of Buckyngham and other of the noble bloodde of thys realme, to thentent that thei alone would rule and gouerne the kyng. And for the coloure therof, sucy of the dukes seruauntes as rode with the cartes of their stuffe which wer taken, amonge the which stuffe no maruayle thoughe some were harneyes whiche at the brekynge vp of suche an housholde muste be brought awaye or caste awaye, they shewed to the people, and as they went sayde: lo, here be the barrelles of harneyes that these traytoures hadde prively conueighed in their caryages to destroye the noble lordes withall. This dyuerse, (although it made the matter to wise menne more vnlykely) well perceauyng that thentendoures of suche a purpose woulde rather haue had theyr harnesse on theyr backes, then to haue bounde theim vp in barrelles, yet muche parte of the commen people were therewith ryght well satisfyed.

When the kyng approched nere the cytie, Edmonde Shawe Goldesmythe then Mayre of the cytie with the aldermenne and shreues in skarlet, and fyue hundreth commoners in murraye receaued

ued his grace reuerently at Harnesaye parke, and so conueighed hym to the cytee, where he entred the fourthe daye of Maye, in the fyrste and laste yeare of his reigne, and was lodged in the bis-shoppes palayce, but the duke of Goucetre bare hym in open sight so reuerently, saiyng to all men as he rode, beholde youre prynce and souereygne lorde, and made suche semblеaunce of lowlynes to his prince, that frome the greate obloquy that he was in so late before, he was sodeynly fallen in so greate truste, that at the councell next assembled he was made the onlye chiefe ruler and thoughte moofte mete to bee protectoure of the kynge and his realme, so that, were it destenye or were it folye, the lambe was betaken to the wolfe to kepe. At whiche councell the archebyshoppe of Yorke was sore blamed for delyuerynge the greate seale to the quene, and the seale taken from hym and delyue-to docter John Russell byshoppe of Lyncolne, a wyse manne and a good and of muche experyence, and dyuerse lordes and knightes were appoynted to dyuerse roumes, the lorde chamberlayn and some other kepte the roumes ẏ they were in before, but not many.

Nowe were it so that the protectour (whiche alwayes you muste take for the duke of Gloucetre) sore thristed for the acheuyng of his pretensed entrepryse and thought euerye daye a yere tyll it were perfourmed, yet durste he no ferther attempte allong as he hadde but halfe his praye in hys hande, well wyttynge that yf he deposed the one brother, all the realme would fall to the other, yf he remayned in sanctuary or should happely be

shortelie cõueyghed to his farther libertee. Wherfore incontinẽt at the next metyng of the lordes in councell, he purposed to theim that it was an heynous thyng of the quene, & procedyng of great malyce toward the kynges councelers ỹ she shoulde kepe the kynges brother in sanctuarye from hym whose special pleasure & confort wer to haue his brother w̃ hym, and that to be done by her to none other intẽt but to bryng all ỹ lordes in an obloquy and murmoure of the people, as though they wer not to be trusted w̃ the kynges brother, which lordes wer by ỹ whole assẽt of the nobles of ỹ realme appoynted as ỹ kynges nere frendes to ỹ tuycion of his royall person, the prosperitee wherof (qꝺ he) standeth not alonely frõ the keppyng of enemyes & euill dyate, but partely also in recreacion & moderate pleasure, whiche he cannot take in his tendre youth in the cõpany of old & auncient persons, but in the familyer conuersacion of those that be not farre vnder nor farre aboue his age, & neuertheless of estate cõueniẽt to accompany his maiestie wherfore w̃ whom rather then with his owne brother? and if any man thinke this cõsyderaciõ light (I thynke no man so thinketh that loueth ỹ kyng) let hym cõsyder ỹ sometyme that wout smal thynges, greater cannot stande, and verelye it redoundeth greatly to ỹ dyshonoure of the kynges highnes and of all vs that bee about his grace to haue it come in any mannes mouthe, not in this realme onely, but also in other landes (as euell woordes walke farre) ỹ the kynges brother should be fayne to kepe sãctuary. For euery mã wyl iudge that no man wil so do for nought, & such opiniõs fastened

in mennes hertes be harde to be wrested oute, and many growe to more greke then any manne here can diuine. Wherfore me thinketh it were not the worste to sende to the quene some honourable and trustye personage, suche as tendereth the kynges weale and the honoure of his counsell, and is also in credite and fauoure with her, for whiche considerations none semeth more meately to me then the reuerende father my Lorde Cardinall archbishop of Cauntourbury, who maye in this matter doo moste good of all menne yf it please hym to take the paine, whiche I doubte not of his goodnesse he wil not refuse for the kynges sake & oures and wealth of the younge duke hym selfe the kynges moost honorable brother and for the comforte of my souereigne Lord hym selfe my moost derest Nephiewe, considering that therby shalbe ceassed the sclaunderous rumour & obloquy nowe goyng abroade, and the hurtes auoyded ẏ therof myght ensue, then must reste and quietnesse growe to all the realme. And if she percase bee obstinate and so precisely sette in her owne wyll and opynion, that neither his wyse and feithfull aduertysement can moue her, nor any mannes reason satisfye her, thē shal we by myne aduice by the kynges authoritee fetche hym oute of that prysone and bring hym to his noble presence, in whose continuall companye he shalbe so well cherysshed and so honorablye intreated that all the worlde shall to oure honoure and her reproche perceaue that it was onely malyce, frowardnesse & foly, that causeth her to kepe hym there. This is my minde for this tyme, excepte that any of you my Lordes anye thinge per

ceaue

ceaue to the contrarye, for neuer shall I by Goddes grace so wedde my selfe vnto myne owne wyll but I shalbe redye to chaunge it vpon youre better aduice."

When the Protectoure had saied, all the counsell affirmed that the moeion was good and reasonable, and to the kyng and the duke his brother honorable, and a thing that shoulde ceasse great murmoure in the realme yf the mother myght by good meanes bee induced to deliuer hym, whiche thing the Archbishop of Cauntourburye, whome they all agreed also to bee moost conuenient therevnto, tooke vpon hym to moue her, and therto to dooe his vttermoste endeuoure. Howbeit yf she coulde in no wise bee intreated with her good wil to delyuer hym, then thought he and suche of the spirytualtye as were presente, that it were not in anye wyse to bee attempted to take hym oute agaynste her wyll, for it woulde bee a thyng that should turne to the grudge of all menne and high displeasure of God, if the pryuiledge of that place should bee broken which had so many yeres been kepte, whiche bothe kynges and bishoppes had graunted and confyrmed, whiche grounde was sanctifyed by sainct Peter hym selfe moze then. v hundzeth yeres agone, and syth that tyme was neuer so vndeuoute a kynge that euer enterprysed that sacred pziuyledge to vyolate, noz so holy a bishoppe that durste presume the churche of the same to consecrate, and therfoze yf the Archbyshoppe, God forbyd that any manne shoulde for any erthely enterpryse breake the immunyte and libertee of that sacred Sanctuary that hath bene

the

the sauegard of so many a good mannes lyfe, but I truste ꝙ he, we shall not nede it, but for any maner of nede I would we should not doo it, I trust that she with reason shalbe contented & all thyng in good maner obteigned. And yf it hap that I bring it not to passe, yet shal I further it to my best power so that you all shall perceaue my good wyl diligence & indeuoure. But the mothers dreade & womannysshe feare shalbe the let yf any bee."

"Naye womannish, frowardnesse ꝙ the duke of Buckingham, for I dare take it on my soule ẏ she wel knoweth ẏ she nedeth no suche thyng to feare either for her sonne or for her selfe. For as for her, here is no manne that wyll be at warre with womenne, would God some menne of her kynne wer womenne to, and then should all bee sone in rest. Howbeit, here is none of her kynne the lesse loued for that they bee of her kynne, but for their owne euell deseruing. And put the case that we nether loued her nor her kinne, yet there were no cause why we should hate the kinges noble brother to whose grace we oure selues be kynne, whose honoure yf she desyred as oure dyshonoure, and asmuche regarde tooke to his wealthe as to her owne wyll, she coulde bee as lothe to suffer hym to be absente from the kyng as anyof vs, yf she had any wytte as woulde God she had as good wyll as she hath frowarde wytte. For she thynketh her selfe no wiser then some ẏ are here, of whose feithful myndes she nothing doubteth, but verely beleueth & knowlegeth that they woulde bee as sorye of his harme as her owne selfe, and yet they woulde haue hym frome her, yf she abyde there."

And we all I thinke bee content that bothe her children bee with her if she came frome thence and bee in suche place where they maye bee with theyr honoure. Nowe yf she refuse in the deliueraunce of hym to folowe the wisdome of theim, whose wisdome she knoweth, whose approbate fidelitee she trusteth: it is easye to perceaue that frowardnesse letteth her, and not feare. But goo to, suppose that she feareth as who maye let her to feare her owne shadowe, the more she feareth to deliuer hym, the more we oughte to feare to leaue hym in her handes, for yf she caste suche fonde doubtes that she feare his hurte, then wyll she feare that he shall be fette thence, for she wyll soone thynke that yf menne were sette (whiche God forbydde) on so greate a mischief, the Sanctuarye wyll lytel lette theim whiche sanctuary good menne as me thinketh myghte withoute synne: somewhat lesse regarde then they dooe. Nowe then yf she doubte leaste he might bee fetched from her, is it not lickelye that she will sende hym some where oute of the realme? verely I looke for none other. And I doubte not but she nowe as sore mindeth it, as we mind the let therof. And if she might hap to bring that purpose to passe (as it were no great mastery to doo we letting her alone) all ỹ world would say that we were a sorte of wyse councelers aboute a king to let his brother to bee cast away vnder our noses. And therfore I ensure you feithfully for my minde, I wyll rather maugre her stomacke fetche hym awaye, then leaue hym there tyll her feare or fonde frowarde feare conuey hym awaye, and yet wyll I breake no sanctuarye, for verely sithe the

priuilege

pꝛiueledge of that place & other of ỹ ſoꝛte haue ſo long contynued I woulde not go about to bꝛeake yt, but yf they were nowe to begynne I would not be he that ſhoulde make theim, yet wyl not I ſaye nay, but it is a deede of pitie, that ſuch men as the chaũce of ỹ ſea oꝛ theyꝛ euil debters haue bꝛought into pouertee, ſhoulde haue ſome place of refuge to kepe in theyꝛ bodies out of the daũger of theyꝛ cruel credytoures. And yf it foꝛtune the croune to come in queſtion as it hath done befoꝛe thys time whyle eatch parte taketh other foꝛ traytoures, I thyncke it neceſſarye to haue a place of refuge foꝛ both. But as foꝛ theues and murtherers, whereof theſe places be full, and whyche neuer falle from theyꝛ crafte after they once fall therunto, yt is pytee that euer ſanctuarye ſhoulde ſaue theim, and in eſpecyall wylfull murtherers, whom God commaundeth to be taken from the aulter and to be putte to death. And where it is other wyſe then in theſe caſes, there is no nede of ſayntuaryes, apointed by God in the olde law. Foꝛ yf neceſſite of his owne defence oꝛ myſfoꝛtune dꝛyued hym to ỹ deed then a pardon ſerueth hym, whyche ether is grauted of courſe, oꝛ the kynge of pytee and compaſſyon geueth. Nowe looke howe fewe ſanctuary mẽ there be whom neceſſyte oꝛ myſfoꝛtune compelled together: And then ſee on the other ſyde, what a ſoꝛte there bee commonlye therin of ſuche, whom wylfull vnthꝛyftines hathe bꝛoughte to naughte what a rable of theues, murtherers and malycyous heynous traytours bee, and that in two places ſpecyallye, the one at the elbowe of the cytee, & the other in the very bowels, I dare wel avowe it

yf

yf you waye the good that they do wyth the hurte that commeth of theim ye ſhall fynde it much bet ter to leſe both, then to haue both. And thys I ſay although they were not abuſed (as they nowe bee and ſo longe haue bene) that I feare me euer they wylbe while men be a feard to ſet to theyr handes to the a mẽdement, as though God and ſaynt Pe ter were the patrons of vngratious lyuing. Now vnthryftes riot, and ronne in debte vpon boldnes of theſe places, yea, and rytch men ronne thyther with poore mens goodes, there they buylde, there they ſpende and byd theyr creditours go whyſtel. Mens wyues ronne thether with theyr huſbãdes plate, & ſay they dare not abide with theyr huſban des for beting, theues bring thether ſtollẽ goodes & lyue thereon. There deuiſe they newe robberies nightly & ſtele out & robbe, reue, & kyl men & come agayne into thoſe places, as though thoſe places gaue thẽ not only a ſauegard for the harme ẏ thei haue done, but a licẽce alſo to do more myſchiefe, howbeit, much of this great abuſion, (yf wyſe mẽ woulde ſet theyr handes thereunto) myghte bee a mended, with great thankes of god and no breche of the priuiledge. The concluſion is, ſythe it is ſo long a go I wote not what pope and what prynce more piteous then polityke, hath graunted it, & o= ther men ſence of a relygious feare haue not bro= ken yt, let vs take a payne with it, & let it ſtande a Goddes name in hys force, as ferforth as reaſon wyl, whyche is not ſo ferfourth as maye ſerue to let vs of the fetchynge forth of thys noble manne to hys honoure and welth out of that place in the whyche nether is nether can be a ſanctuary or pri

ueledged

uiledged mã. A sanctuarye euer serueth to defend the bodye of that man that standeth in daungers abrode, not of great hurt only, but of lawful hurt. For agaynst vnlawful hurtes & harmes no pope ner kynge entended to priuiledge anye one place wherin it is lawful for one man to do another mã wrong. That no man vnlaufully take hurte, that lybertye the kynge, the lawe and verye nature forbiddeth in euery place and maketh to that regard for euery man euery place a sanctuarye: but wher a man is by lawful meanes in parel, there nedeth he the tuycion of some specyall priueledge, which is the only ground of al sanctuaries, from which necessitee thys noble prince is farre, whose loue to his kyng, nature and kynred proueth, whose innocentie to al the world, hys tender youth affyrmeth & so sãctuary as for him is not necessary ner none he cã haue. When com not to sãctuary as they com to baptim to require it by his godfathers, he must aske it him self ỹ must haue it, & reason sith no mã hath cause to haue it, but whose consyence of hys own faut maketh him hauened to require it, what wyl thé hath yõder babe, which if he had discretiõ to require it yf nede wer, I dare say wold be right angry wt theim ỹ kepe him ther. And I wold thik wout any scruple of conscièce, wout any brech of priueledge to be sõwhat more homly wt them ỹ be ther sãctuary mẽ in ded ỹ yf one go to sãctuary wt another mãs goodes, why shold not ỹ king leuig his body at liberty satisfye ỹ party of his goodes euẽ win ỹ sãctuary, for nether kyng nor pope can geue anye place such a priueledge that it shal discharge a man of his debtes beynge hable to pay.

And

And with that dyuerse of the clergie that were there plēt, whether thei saied it for his pleasure or as thei thought, agreed plainly by ꝑ lawe of God & of ꝑ churche ꝑ the goodes of a sanctuary manne should bee delyuered in paymēt of his dewtes, and stollen goodes to the owner and onely lybertie reserued to hym to gette his lyuyng with the labour of his handes. Uerely qᵗ the duke I thynke ye saie very truth. And what if a mannes wife take sanctuary because she list to ronne from hir husband: I would thinke if she cā alledge none other cause he maye lawfully without any displeasure dooen to sainct Peter, take hir oute of sainct Peters churche by the arme. And if no bodye maye bee taken oute of sanctuary because he saieth he will abyde there, then if a chylde will take sanctuary because he feareth to goo to schoole, his master must lette hym alone, and as symple as that example is, yet is there lesse reason in oure case then in it, for there though it bee a chyldyshe feare, yet is there at the least some feare, and herein is no feare at all And verely I haue heard of sanctuary menne, but I neuer harde before of sanctuary chyldren, & therfore as for the concluſiō of my mynde, whoso euer maye deserue to haue nede of it, if thei thinke it for their suretye let theim kepe it, but he can bee no sanctuary manne that hath nother discresion to desire it, ner malice to deserue it, whose life ner lybertie can by no lawfull processe stande in ieoperdie, and he that taketh one oute of sanctuarye to dooe hym good, I saye plainlye he breaketh no sanctuarye.

When the duke had dooen, the temporall mēne wholy, and the mooste parte of the spirituall mēne

also

also thynke no hurte earthely mente towarde the baby, condiscended in effecte, that if he were not delyuered he should bee fetched out. Howbeit thei thought it best in aduoydyng of all maner of rumoure, that the cardynall should first assaye to gette hym with her good will. And therupon all the counsaill came to the starre chamber at Westmynster, and the cardinall leauyng the protectour and other lordes in the sterre chaumber departed into the sanctuarie to the quene accompaignied w̄ certain lordes, were it for ẏ respecte of his honour or that she should by the personnes of so many perceaue that his arrande was not onely one mānes mynde, or were it for that the protectoure entended not in this matter to trust one manne alone, or els if she finally were determined to kepe hym, some of the compaignie had paraduenture some secrete instrucciō incontinēt maugre her will to take hym and to leaue her no respyte to conueigh hym.

When the quene and the lordes were come together in presence, the Cardynall shewed vnto her that it was thought to the lord protectour and the whole caunsaill ẏ hir keppyng of ẏ kynges brother in that place highly soūded, not onely to ẏ grudge of the people and their obloquy, but also to the importable greefe and displeasure of ẏ kyng his royall maiestie, to whose grace it were a synguler cōforte to haue his naturall brother in compaignie, and it was their bothes dishonoures and theirs & hirs also to suffre hym in sanctuarye, as though the one brother stoode in daungier and perell of the other. And he shewed her ferther that the whole counsaill had sent hym to requyre of her the delyuerie

uerye of hym that he might bee brought to ỹ kyng his presence at his libertie oute of ỹ place whiche meine reconed as a prisone, & there should he bee demeaned accordyng to his estate and degree, and she in this doyng should bothe dooe greate good to the realme, pleasure to the cõsaill, profite to her self, succoure to her frendes that were in destresse, & ouer ỹ, whiche he wist well she specially tendered, not onelye greate confort & honoure to the kyng but also to the younge duke hym self, whose bothe greate wealthe it were to bee together, aswell for many greater causes as also for their bothe dysporte & recreacyon, whiche thynges the lordes esteemed not sleight, though it semed light, well põderyng ỹ their youthe without recreacion and playe cãnot endure, ner any estraunger for the conueniecie of bothe their estates so metely in ỹ poinct for any of theim as the either of theim for theother.

"My lorde (qꝑ the quene,) I saie not naye but that it were very conueniente ỹ this gentlemanne whom you requyre were in the compaignie of the kyng his brother, and in good faith me thynketh it were as greate commodite to theim bothe, as for yet a while to bee in the custodie of their mother the tendre age consydered of the elder of theim bothe, but in especiall the younger, whiche besydes his infancye that also nedeth good lookyng too, hath awhyle been so sore deseased with syckenesse and is so newlye rather a lytle amended then well recouered, that I dare putte no persone earthely in trust w̄ his kepyng, but my self onely, consyderyng there is as phisicians saie, and as we also fynde) double ỹ perell in the resylynacion ỹ was in

the

the firſt ſyckeneſſe, with whiche deſeaſe nature be-
yng ſore laboured, forweried & weaked, wareth the
leſſe hable to bear oute a newe ſurfett. And albeit
there might bee foũden other that would happely
dooe their beſt vnto hym, yet is there none ẏ ether
knoweth better howe to ordre hym then I ẏ ſo lõg
haue kepte hym, or is more tendrely like to cheriſhe
hym then his owne mother ẏ bare hym. No mãne
denieth good madame (q ẏ cardinall) but ẏ your
grace of all folke were mooſt neceſſarie aboute
your chyldrẽ, & ſo would all ẏ coũſaill not only bee
content but alſo glad ẏ it were if it might ſtand w̃
your pleaſure to be ĩ ſucheplace as might ſtãde w̃
their honour. But if you apoinct your ſelf to tarie
here, thẽ thynke thei it more cõueniẽt the Duke of
Yorke were with ẏ kyng honorably at his lybertie
to the cõforte of theim bothe, then here as a ſanctu
ary mãne to their bothe diſhonoure and obloquy,
ſith there is not alwaie ſo greate neceſſite to haue ẏ
childe with the mother, but that occaciõ ſometyme
maye bee ſuche that it ſhould bee more erpediẽt to
kepe hym els where, whiche in this well apereth, ẏ
at ſuche tyme ẏ your mooſt dereſt ſoonne thẽ prince
& nowe kyng ſhould for his honour & good ordre
of the countre kepe houſhold in Wales farre out
of your kepyng, your grace was well cõtent ther-
w̃ your ſelf. Not very well content (q the quene) &
yet the caſe is not like, for theone was then in helth
& theother is nowe ſicke, in whiche caſe I meruell
greatly why my lord protectour is ſo deſierous to
haue hym in his kepyng, where if the childe in his
ſickeneſſe miſcaried by nature, yet might he rõne
into ſlaunder and ſuſpicion of fraude. And thei

call it a thyng so sore against my childes honoure and theirs also that he abideth in this place, it is all their honoures there to suffre hym abide wher no manne doubteth he shalbe best kepte, and that is here while I am here, whiche as yet entend not to come foorth and ieopard my selfe after other of my frēdes, whiche would God were rather here in suertie with me, then I were there in ieoperdie wt theim. Why Madame (q ỳ lord Hawarde) knowe you any thyng why thei should bee in ieopardie? Naye verely (q she,) nor why thei should bee in prisone neither as thei nowe bee, but I trowe, it is no greate marueil though I feare leaste those ỳ haue not letted to put theim in duraunce wout coloure, will let as litle to procure their distrucion without cause. The cardinall made a countenaunce to the lord Hawarde that he should harpe no more vpon ỳ stryng, and thē saied he to the quene, ỳ he nothyng doubted but those lordes of her kynne the whiche remeyned vnder arest should vpon the matter examined dooe well ynough, and as toward her noble persone, was, neither could bee any maner of ieopardie. Wherby should I truste that (q ỳ quene) in ỳ I am guyltlesse, as though thei were guyltie, in ỳ I am with their enemies better beloued then thei, whē thei hate theim for my sake, in that I am so nere to the kyng, and howe ferre bee thei of that would helpe, as God sēde grace thei hurt not. And therfore as yet I purpose not to departe hence, as for this gentlemanne my soonne, I minde he shall be wher I am till I se further, for I se some mēne so gredy whthout any substanciall cause to haue hym, whiche maketh me muche more afrayd and

scrupulous

ſcrupulous to delyuer hym. Truly madame (q the cardynall) the moze afrayde that ye bee to delyuer hym, the moze other menne feareth to ſuffre you to kepe hym, leaſte youre cauſeleſſe feare, mighte cauſe you farther to conueye hym, & many thynke he can here haue no pꝛyuiledge whiche can haue neyther wyll to aſke it, noꝛ yet malyce oꝛ offence to nede it. And therfoꝛe, they recon no pꝛiuiledge bꝛoken, although they fetche hym out of ſanctuarye, whiche yf you fynallye refuſe to delyuer hym, I thynke verely ỹ councel wil enfraunchefe hym, ſo muche dꝛede hathe my loꝛde his vncle, foꝛ the tẽdꝛe loue he beareth hym, leaſt your grace ſhould ſende hym awaye. Ah (q the quene) hath he ſo tendꝛe a zele to hym that he feareth nothyng, but leaſt he ſhould eſcape hym? Thynketh he that I would ſende hym hence, whiche is neyther in the plight to ſende oute? and in what place coulde I recone hym ſure, if he bee not ſure in ſanctuarye? whereof was there neuer tyꝛaunte yet ſo deuelyſhe, that durſte attempte to bꝛeake the pꝛiuiledge, and I truſte God is nowe as ſtronge to wythſtande his aduerſaries as euer he was. But my ſoonne can deſerue no ſanctuarye (you ſaye) and therfoꝛe he cannot haue it, foꝛſothe the loꝛde pꝛotectoure hath ſente a goodly gloſe, by the whiche that place that may defend a theke may not ſaue an innocent: but he is in no ieopardye noꝛ hath no nede thereof, I woulde God he had not. Troweth the pꝛotectoure I pꝛaye God he maye pꝛoue a pꝛotectour, rather then a deſtroyer, whereunto his peynted pꝛoceſſe dꝛaweth. Is it not honourable that the duke byde here? it were confoꝛtable to theim bothe that he

were with his brother, because the kyng lacketh a playefeloe, yea bee you sure, I praye God sende hym better playefelowes then hym that maketh so hyghe a matter vpon suche a tryfleynge pre-texte, as though there coulde none bee founde to playe with the kynge, but yf his brother whiche hathe no lust to playe for sickenesse, must come oute of Sanctuarye, oute of his sauegarde to playe with hym, as though that prynces so young as they bee, coulde not playe without their peres, or chyldre coulde not playe without their kynred, with whome for the more parte they agree muche worse then with straungiers. But the chyld you saye cannot require the priuiledge, who tolde the protectoure so? Aske hym and you shall here hym aske it and so shall he if ye wyll. Howebeit this is a straunge matter, suppose he coulde not aske it and thynke he woulde not aske it, and ymagene he woulde aske to go oute, yf I saye he shall not. Note if I aske the priuiledge, but for my selfe, I saye that he that agaynst my wyll taketh out hym, breaketh Sanctuarye. Serueth thys lyberty for my personne onlye or for my goodes too? you maye not frome hence take my horse frome me, yf I stale hym not nor owe you nothynge, then followeth it, that you maye not take my chylde from me, he is also my ward, for as farre as my learned councell sheweth me, he hath nothyng by dyssente holden by knyghtes seruage, but by socage, then the lawe maketh me his garden, then maye no manne lawfully (I suppose) take my warde frome me oute of thys place, wythoute the breche of

Sanctuary

Sanctuarye, and yf my p̄yuyledge coulde not ſerue hym, no? he aſke it fo? hym ſelfe, yet ſythe the lawe commytteth to me the cuſtodye of hym, I maye requyre it fo? hym, excepte the lawe geue the infaunte a garden onelye fo? hys gooddes, dyſchargynge hym of the cure and ſauekeppynge of his bodye, fo? whiche onely, bothe goodes and landes ſerue. Wherfo?e here entende I to kepe hym, ſithe mannes lawe ſerueth the garden to kepe the infaunte, and the lawe of nature wylleth the mother to kepe ỹ chyld, and Goddes lawe p̄iuiledgeth the Sanctuarye, and the Sanctuarye p̄yuyledgeth my ſoonne, ſythe I feare to putte hym to the p̄otectoures handes, that hathe his b?other alreadye, whiche is (yf bothe fayled) inheritoure to the croune as he?e male, as he ſayth. The cauſe of my feare no man hath to dooe to examen, and yet feare I no further then the law feareth, whiche as learned menne tell me, fo?bydde th euery maune the cuſtody of theim, by whoſe death he maye enherite leſſe lande then a kyngdome, I can ſaye no mo?e, but whoſoeuer he bee that b?eaketh this holy ſanctuary, I p?aye God ſende hym ſho?telye nede of Sanctuary, when he maye not come to it, fo? I woulde not that my mo?tall enemie ſhould be taken out of Sanctuary.

The Cardynal perceaued that the quene euer ỹ lenger the farther of, and alſo that ſhe beganne to kyndle and chafe and ſpake ſo?e bytynge woo?des agaynſt the p?otectoure, and ſuche as he neyther beleued & alſo was lothe to here, he ſayd to her, fo? a finall concluſion, that he would no mo?e diſpute

the

the matter, and if she were contente to delyuer the duke to hym and to the other lordes there present, he durste laye his owne bodye and soule bothe in pledge, not onlye for his suretie, but also for hys estate, and surely he knewe nor suspected no cause but he might so dooe (but he knewe not all.) And further he saide, if she would, geue hym a resolute aunswere to the contrarye he would therewith departe incontinent, and shifte who so woulde wyth this busynesse afterwarde, for he neuer entended further to moue her in the matter, in the whiche he thought that he and all other also, saue her selfe, lacked eyther wytte or truthe. Wytte if they were so dull, if they nothyng coulde perceaue what the protectoure entended, and yf they should procure her soonne to bee delyuered into his handes, in whome they shoulde perceaue towardes the chyld any euell wyll entended, then she myghte thynke all the councell bothe euel aduysed and of lytle fydelyte to theyr prince.

The quene with these wordes stoode in a great studye, and forasmuche as she sawe the lord Cardynall more redyer to departe then the remanaũt, and the protectoure hym selfe redye at hande, so that she verelye thought that she coulde not kepe hym there, but he shoulde bee incontynente taken thence, and to conueye hym elles where, neyther had she tyme to serue her, nor place determyned, nor personnes appoynted to conueygh hym, and so all thyng was vnreadye, when this message came so sodenly on her, nothyng lesse lookyng for then to haue hym out of sanctuarye, whiche she knewe nowe menne to bee set in all places about

that

that he coulde not bee conueyghed oute vntaken, and partely as she thought, it myghte fortune her feare to bee false: so well she wist it was ether nedelesse or boteleſſe. Wherfore, yf she should nedes go from hym, she deined best to deliuer hym, & specially of ỹ Cardinalles faith she nothnig doubted nor of some other lordes whome she sawe there, which as she feared least, they might be deceaued, so well was she assured ỹ they woulde not bee corrupted, then thoughte she that it woulde make theim the more warely to looke to hym, and the more circumspectly to see his surety, yf she with her owne handes betooke hym theim by truste, and at the laste she tooke the young duke by the hande and saied vnto the Lordes, "my Lorde" qᵖ she and all my lordes, nether am I so vnwise to mistruste youre wittes nor so suspicyous to mistruste your truthes: of which thing I purpose to make such a proofe that yf either of bothe lacked in you, might turne both me to greate sorowe, the realme to muche harme and you to greate reproche. For lo, here is qᵖ she "this gentilman, whome I doubte not but I could kepe salfe if I would, whatsoeuer any manne saye and I doubte not also but there bee some abrode so deedly enemies vnto my bloodde, that yf they wiste where any of it laye in theyr owne body they woulde lette it oute, we haue also experience that the desyre of a kingdome knoweth no kynred, the brother hath bene the brothers bane, and may the nephewes bee sure of the vncle: eache of these children are others defence whyle they bee a sunder, and eache of their liues lyeth in others body, kepe one salfe and bothe bee sure, and nothing to bothe

more

more perylous, then bothe to bee in one place, for a wise marchaunt neuer auentureth all his goodes in one shyp, all this notwithstanding, here I deliuer hym & his brother in hym to kepe, to your handes, of whome I shall aske theim bothe before God and the worlde. Feithfull you bee and that I wot well, and I knowe you be wyse and of power and strength if you list to kepe hym, for you lacke no helpe of your selues, nor nede to lacke no helpe in this case, & yf you cannot elles where, then may you leaue hym here. But onely one thing I besech you, for the trust that his father putte you in euer and for the truste that I put you in nowe, that as farre as you thincke that I feare to muche, ye bee well ware that you feare not to lytle". And therwith all she saied to ỹ childe, fare well myne owne swete soonne, God sende you good kepyng, let me once kysse you or you gooe, for God knoweth whē we shall kisse together againe, & therwith she kyssed hym and blessed hym and tourned her backe & wepte, gooing her waye, leauyng the poore innocent chylde wepyng as faste as the mother.

When the Cardinall and the other lordes had receaued the younge duke, they brought hym into the starre chaumbre, where ỹ protectoure tooke hym in his armes and kyssed hym with these wordes, nowe welcome my lorde with all my very hert and he saied in ỹ of likelihode euen as he inwardly thought, and therupon, forthwith brought him to the king his brother into the bishoppes palaice at Powles, and from thence thorowe the citee honourably into the towre, oute of whiche after that daye they neuer came abrode. Whenne the Protectoure

tectoure had bothe the chyldren in his poſſeſſy-
on, yee and that they were in a ſure place, he then
beganne to thyrſte to ſee the ende of his enterpryſe
and to auoyde all ſuſpicion, he cauſed all the Lor-
des whiche he knewe to bee feythfull to the kyng
to aſſemble at Baynardes caſtell to cõmen of the
ordre of the coronacyon whyle he and other of his
complyces and of his affinitee at Croſbyes place
contriued the contrary ✠ to make the Protectoure
kyng, to whiche counſel there were adhibite very
fewe, and they very ſecrete. Then beganne here ✠
there ſome maner of muttering amongeſt the peo
ple as though all thing ſhould not longe bee well
though they wyſte not what they feared nor wher
fore: were it, that before ſuche great thinges men-
nes hertes (of a ſecrete inſtyncte of nature) miſge-
ueth theim, as ỹ ſouthwinde ſomtime ſwelleth of
hym ſelfe before a tempeſte, or were it that ſome
one manne happely perceauing, fylled many men
with ſuſpicyon, thoughe he ſhewed fewe menne
what he knewe, howbeit, the dealing it ſelfe made
to muche on the matter, thoughe the counſayle
were cloſe, for lytle and lytle all folke drewe from
the towre where the kyng was, and drewe to Croſ
byes place, ſo that the Protectoure had all the re-
ſorte, and the kyng in maner deſolate, while ſome
made ſuyte vnto theim that had the doyng, ſome
of theim were by theyr frendes ſecretely warned,
that it myghte happely tourne theim to no good
to bee to muche attendaunte on the kyng with-
oute the Protectoures apoyntmente, whiche re-
moued dyuerſe of the kynges olde ſeruauntes frõ
hym, and ſet newe in theyr romes aboute hym.

Thus

Thus many thinges comming together, partly by chaunce and partely by purpose, caused at length, not cõmon people onely whiche wauer wt the winde, but wise menne also and some Lordes to marke the matter & muse therupon, in so much as the lorde Stanley whiche afterward was erle of Derby wisely mistrusted it and saied to ỹ lorde Hastinges, that he muche mislyked these two seueral coũselles, for whyle we (q he) talke of one matter at ỹ one place, lytle wot we wherof they talke in the other place. Well (q the Lorde Hastynges, on my lyfe neuer doubte you, for whyle one man is there whiche is neuer thence, neither can there bee any thing once mynded that shoulde sounde amisse towarde me, but it shoulde bee in mine eares or it were well oute of their mouthes. This ment he by Catesby whiche was nere of his secret councell, and whome he familyerly vsed in his mooste weightye matters, putting no manne in so speciall trust as hym, sith he wiste well there was no manne to hym so muche beholdyng as was this Catesbye, whiche was a manne well learned in the lawes of this lande, and by the speciall fauoure of the lorde Hastynges in good authorytee and muche rule bare in the countrees of Leicestre and Northampton where ỹ lorde Hastinges power laye. But surely greate pitie was it that he had not had either more trueth or lesse wit, for his dissimulacyon onely, kepte all that myschiefe vp, in whome yf the lorde Hastinges had not put so special trust, ỹ lord Stanley and he wt diuers other lordes had departed into their coũtrees & broken al ỹ daunce for many euel signes ỹ he sawe, which

he nowe

he now construed al for the best, so surely thought he that there coulde be no harme towarde hym in that counsayle entended where Catesbye was. And of truth the protectour and the duke of Buckyngham made very good sembleaunce vnto the lorde Hastynges and kepte hym muche in theyre compaignie. And vndoubtedlie the protectour loued hym well, and lothe was to haue loste hym sauynge for feare least hys lyfe shoulde haue quayled theyr purpose, for the whyche cause he moued Catesby to proue wyth some wordes caste oute a farre of, whether he coulde thyncke it possible to wynne the lorde Hastynges to theyr part. But Catesby, whether he assayed hym or assayed hym not reported vnto hym that he founde him so fast, and heard him speake so terrible wordes that he durst no farther breake, and of a truth the lorde Hastinges of very truste shewed vnto Catesby the mystrust that other began to haue in the matter. And therfor, he fearyng least theyr mocyons myght wt the lorde Hastynges haue mynished his credence, wherunto only al the matter leaned, procured the protectour hastly to ryd hym, & muche the rather, for he trusted by hys death to obtayne much of ye rule whyche the lorde Hastynges bare in hys cõtree, the onelye desyre whereof, was the thynge that enduced hym to be procurer & one of the specialleste contriuers of al thys treason. Wherupon the lorde protectoure caused a counsayle to be set at the towre on the frydaye the. xiii. daye of June, were was much commonyng for the honourable solempnytee of the coronation, of the whyche the tyme appoynted approched so nere that the pageaũtes

tes were a making day & nyght at Westminster & vytayle kylled which afterwarde was cast awaye

These lordes thus sittyng commoning of this matter, the protectoure came in emong thē about ix. of the clocke salutynge theim curteously excusynge hym selfe that he had bene frome theim so longe, saiynge merely that he had bene a sleper ỹ daye. And after a lytle talkynge wyth theym he sayd to the bishop of Ely, my lorde you haue very good strawberies in your garden at Holborne, I requyre you let vs haue a messe of theim. Gladly, my lorde q̄ he, I would I had some better thyng as redy to youre pleasure as that, and wyth that he sente his seruaunte in al the haste for a dysh of strawberyes. The protectoure set the lordes faste in commonynge and thereupon prayed theim to spare hym a lytle, and so he departed and came in agayn betwene. x. and. xi. of the clocke into the chā ber al chaunged with a sowre angry countenaūce knyttynge the browes, frownynge and frettynge and gnawynge on hys lyppes & so set him downe in hys place. All the lordes were dysmayed & sore marueyled of thys maner and sodayne chaunge and what thynge should hym ayle. When he had sytten a whyle thus he beganne. What were they woorthy to haue that compasse and ymagyne the dystruccyon of me beynge so neare of bloodde to the kynge and protectoure of this hys royal realme? At whyche questyon all the lordes sat sore astonned, musynge muche by whom thys questyon shoulde be ment, of whych euery man knewe hym selfe clere.

Then the lord Hastynges as he that for the fa-

mylyaritee

familiaritee that was betwene them, thoughte he myght be boldeſt wyth hym, anſwered & ſayd that they were worthye to bee punyſhed as heyneous traytours what ſo euer they were, and all the other affyrmed the ſame, that is ꝙ he yonder ſorceres my brothers wyfe and other wyth her, meanynge the quene, at theſe wordes manie of the lordes were ſore abaſhed whyche fauoured her, but the lorde Haſtynges was better contente in hys mynde that it was moued by her then by anye other that he loued better, albeit hys hearte grudged that he was not afore made of councel in this matter as well as he was of the takynge of her kynred and of theyr puttynge to deathe, whyche were by hys aſſente before deuiſed to be behedded at Pomfrete, thys ſelfe ſame daye, in the whyche he was not ware ꝧ it was by other deuyſed that he hym ſelfe ſhoulde the ſame daye be behedded at London: then ſayde the protectoure in what wyſe that ꝧ ſorcereſſe and other of hys counſayle, as Shores wyfe wyth her affynitee haue by theyr ſorcerye and wychcrafte thys waſted my bodye, and therewyth plucked vp hys doublet cleane to hys elbowe on hys lyfte arme, where he ſhewed a weryſhe wythered arme and ſmall as it was neuer other. And thereupon euery mannes mynd myſgaue theim, well perceauynge that thys matter was but a quarell, for well they wyſte that the quene was boothe to wyſe to goo aboute anye ſuche foly, and yf ſhe woulde, yet woulde ſhe of al folke make Shores wyfe leaſte of councel whom of all womenne ſhe moſt hated as that concubine whom the kyng her huſband moſt loued

Also

Also, there was no manne there but knewe that hys arme was euer such syth the day of hys byrth Neuertheless the lorde Hastynges whyche from the death of kyng Edward kept Shores wyfe, on whom he somewhat doted in the kynges lyfe, saynge it is sayd that he forbare her for reuerence towarde hys kynge, or elles of a certayne kynd of fydelitee towarde hys frende. yet nowe his heart somwhat grudged to haue her whom he loued so hyghly accused, and that as he knewe wel vntruly, therefore he aunswered and sayde, certaynlye my lord, yf they haue so doone, they be worthie of heynous ponyshemente, what qᵈ the protectoure, thou seruest me I wene wyth yf, and wyth and, I tell the they haue doone it, and that I wyll make good on thy bodye traytoure. And therewith (in a greate anger) he clapped his fyste on the boorde a great rappe, at whych token geuen one cryed treason without the chamber, and therewyth a doore claped, and in came rushing men in harneyes as many as the chamber coulde holde. And anone ỹ protectoure sayd to the lorde Hastynges, I arrest the traytoure, what me lord qᵈ he: yea the traitour qᵈ the protectour. And one let flye at the lord Stanley, whyche shroncke at the stroake and fell vnder the table, or elles his hed had bene cleft to the teth for as shortly as he shrancke, yet ranne the blood aboute hys eares. Then was the archebyshoppe of Yorke and doctoure Morton byshoppe of Ely and the lorde Stanleye taken and dyuers other whyche were bestowed in dyuers chambers, saue the lorde Hastynges (whome the protectoure commaunded to spede and shryue hym apace) for by

saynte

ſaint Poull (ꝙ he) I will not dyne till I ſe thy hed of, it booted hym not to aſke why, but heuilie he tooke a ꝓeeſte at auenture & made a ſhorte ſhrift, for a lenger would not bee ſuffred, the protectoure made ſo muche haſte to his dyner, whiche might not goo to it till this murther were dooen for ſauing of his vngracious othe. So was he brought forth into the grene beſide the chapell within the towre, and his hed layde dowe on a logge of tymber that laye there for buyldyng of ỹ chapell, and there tyrannouſly ſtryken of, and after his bodye & hed were enterred at Wyndeſore by his mayſter kyng Edward the fourth, whoſe ſoules Jeſu pardon, Amen.

A merueleous caſe it is to here, either the warnynges that he ſhould haue voyded or the tokens of that he could not voyde. For the next nyght before his deathe, the lorde Stanley ſent to hym a truſty meſſenger at mydnight in all the haſt, requiryng hym to ryſe and ryde awaye with hym, for he was diſpoſed vtterlye no lenger for to abyde, for he had a fearfull dreame in the whiche he thought that a bore with his tuſkes ſo raſed theim bothe by the heddes that the bloodde ranne aboute bothe their ſhoulders, and for aſmuche as the protectour gaue the bore for his cogniſaunce, he ymagened that it ſhould bee he. This dreme made ſuche a fearfull impreſſiõ in his hearte, ỹ he was throughly determined no lẽger to tarye but had his horſſe readie, if the lord Haſtynges would goo with hym So that thei would ryde ſo ferre that night, that thei ſhould bee oute of daungere by the next daye. A good lord (ꝙ the lord Haſtynges) to the meſſen-

ger, leaneth my lord thy master so muche to suche trifles and hath suche faith in dreames, whiche either his awne feare fatesieth, or doo rise in ỹ nightes rest by reason of the dayes thought. Tell hym it is plaine witchcraft to beleue in suche dreames. whiche if thei were tokens of thynges to come, why thynketh he not ỹ we might as likely make theim true by our goyng if we were caught and brought backe (as frendes fayle flyers) for then had the boze a cause lykely to race vs with his tuskes, as folkes that fled for some falshed, wherfore either is their perell, nor none there is deede, or if any bee, it is rather in goyng then abydyng. And if we should nedes fall in perell one waye or other yet had I leuer that menne should se it were by other mennes falshed, then thynke it were either our awne faute or faynte and feble heart, and therfore goo to thy master and commende me to hym and I praye hym to bee mery and haue no feare, for I assure hym, I am assured of ỹ mãne he wotteth of as I am of myne owne hande". "God sende grace (qꝺ the messenger,) and so departed. Certen it is also that in rydyng toward the towre thesame morning in whiche he was behedded, his horsse that he accustomed to ryde on stombled with hym twise or thrise almost to the fallyng, whiche thyng although it happeneth to theim daylye to whom no myschaunce is towarde, yet hath it been as an olde eiuill token obserued as a gooyng toward myschief. Nowe this ỹ foloweth was no warnyng but an enuyous scorne, thesame morning ere he were vp from his bed where Shores wife laye w̃ hym all night, there came to hym sir Thomas Hawarde

warde soonne to the lorde Hawarde (the whiche sturryng that mornyng very earlye) as it were of courtesie to accompaignie hym to the counsaill, but forasmuche as the lorde Hastynges was not readye, he taried awhile for hym and hasted hym awaye.

This sir Thomas, while the lorde Hastynges stayed awhile commonyng with a preest whom he met in the towre strete, brake the lordes tale, saiyng to hym merely, what my lord I praye you come on, wherfore talke you so long with that preest, you haue no nede of a preest yet, and laughed vpon hym, as though he would saie, you shall haue nede of one sone. But lytle wist the other what he meant (but of night these woordes were well remembred by theim that heard theim) so the true lorde Hastynges litle mistrusted, and was neuer merier, ner thought his life in more suretye in all his dayes, whiche thyng is often a sygne of chaunge, but I shall rather lette any thyng passe me then the vayne suretye of mannes mynde so nere his deathe: for vpon the towre wharffe, so nere the place where his hedde was of so sone after, as a manne might well cast a balle, a pursyuaūt of his awne called Hastynges mette wt hym, & of their metyng in ỹ place he was put in remembraūce of another tyme, in whiche it had happened theim to mete before together in ỹ same place, at whiche tyme ỹ lord Hastynges had beē accused to kyng Edward by ỹ lord Ryuers the quenes brother, in somuche ỹ he was for awhile which lasted not long highly in ỹ kynges indignacion & stode in great feare of hymself, & forasmuch as he nowe

a pursuyant

met thesame pursyuaunt in thesame place the leo-
pardy so well passed, it gaue hym greate pleasure
to talke with hym therof, w̄ who̅ he had talked in
thesame place of that matter, and therfore he saied
Ah Hastynges, arte thou remembred when I met
the here once with an heuy herte? ye my lord (q̄ he)
that I remembre well, and thanked bee God thei
gatte no good ner you no harme therby, thou wol
dest saie so (q̄ he) if thou knewest so muche as I
dooe whiche fewe knowe yet, and mo shall shortly,
that meant he that the erle Ryuers and ꝯ lord Ri-
chard and sir Thomas Vaughm̄ should ꝯ daye
bee behedded at Pomfrette, as thei were in deede,
whiche acte he wyst well should bee dooen, but no-
thyng ware that ꝯ axe honge so nere his owne hed.
In feith manne (q̄ he) I was neuer so sorye ner
neuer stoode in so greate daungier of my life as
I did when thou and I mette here, and loe the
worlde is turned nowe, nowe stande myne enemi-
es in the daungier as thou mayst happe to heare
more hereafter, and I neuer in my life meryer nor
neuer in so greate suertie, I praye God it proue so
(q̄ Hastynges) proue q̄ he? dowtest thou that, ꝯ
naye naye I warraunt the, and so in maner dys-
pleased he entered into the towre, where he was
not long on lyue as you haue hearde. O lord God
the blyndenesse of our mortall nature, when he
mooste feared, he was in mooste suretie, and when
he reconed hym self mooste surest, he loste his life &
ꝯ within .ii. houres after. Thus ended this hono-
rable manne a good knight and a gentle, of great
autorite w̄ his prīce, of liuyng somewhat dissolute
plain and open to his enemie, and sure and secrete

to

to his frende, easye to beguyle, as he that of good herte and courage forsawe no perelles, a louyng manne and passyng welbeloued, verye faythfull & trustie ynough, but trustyng to much was his destruccion as you maye perceaue.

Nowe flewe the fame of this lordes death thorough the cytie and farther about like a wynde in euery mannes eare, but the protectoure immediatly after dynner (entendynge to set some coloure vpon the matter) sent in all the hast for many substanciall menne out of the cytie into the towre, and at their commynge, hym selfe wyth the duke of Buckyngham stoode harnessed in olde euell fauoured bryganders, suche as no manne woulde wene that they would haue vouchesalued to haue putte on their backes, excepte some sodeyne necessitee had constreigned theim. Then the lorde protectoure shewed theim, that the lorde Hastynges and other of his conspyracye hadde contryued to haue sodenly destroyed hym and the duke of Buckyngham there thesame daye in councell, & what they entended farther, was as yet not wel knowen of whiche their treason he had neuer knowledge before ten of the clocke thesame fornoone, whiche sodeyne feare draue theim to put on suche harnesse as came nerte to theyr hãdes for their defence, & so God holpe theim, that the mischiefe turned vpon theim that would haue done it, and thus he required theim to reporte. Euerye manne aunswered fayre, as thoughe no manne mystrusted the matter, whiche of truthe no manne beleued. Yet for the farther appeasyng of the peoples myndes, he sent immedyatlye after dynner an Heralde of armes

with a proclamacion thzough the citee of London whiche was proclamed in the kynges name, that the lozd Hastynges with dyuerse other of his treyterous purpose had befoze cõspired, thesame daye to haue slain the protectoure and the duke of Buckyngham sittyng in counsaill, & after to haue takẽ vpon theim the rule of the kyng and the realme at their pleasure, and therby to pill and spoyle whom thei list vncomtrolled, and muche matter was deuised in thesame proclamacion to the sclaunder of the lozd Hastynges, as that he was an euill counsaillour to the kynges father, entisyng hym to many thynges highly redoundyng to the minusshyng of his honoure and to the vniuersall hurt of his realme, by his euill compaignie and synister procuryng and vngracious exsample, aswell in many other thynges as in vycious lyuyng and inozdynate abusyon of his bodye, bothe with many other and in especiall with Shozes wife whiche was one of his secrete counsaill of this heynous treason, with whom he laye nyghtlye, and namely the nyght passed nert befoze his deathe, so that it was the lesse maruell yf vngracyous lyuyng bzought hym to an vnhappie ende, whiche he was nowe putte to by the commaundement of the kyng his highnes and of his honourable and faithfull coũsaill, bothe foz his demerytes beyng so openly taken in his false contriued treason, and also least the delaiyng of his execucion myght haue encoza-ged other myscheuous persones parteners of his conspiracye, to gather and assemble theim selues together in makyng so greate commocyon foz his delyuerance, whose hope nowe beeyng by hys

well

well deserued deathe politickelye repressed, all the realme shall by Goddes grace reste in good quyet and peace. Nowe was this proclamacion made within twoo houres after he was behedded, and it was so curyously endited and so fayre wrytten in parchement in a fayre sette hande, and therwith of it selfe so long aproceſſe, that euery chylde myght perceaue that it was prepared and studyed before (and as some menne thought, by Catesby) for all the tyme betwene hys deathe and the proclamacyon proclaymynge, could skante haue suffysed vnto the bare wrytynge alone, albeit that it had been in paper and scrybeled foorthe in haste at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaymynge therof, one that was schoolemaster at Paules standyng by and comparyng the shortenesse of the tyme wyth the lengthe of the matter sayed to theim that stoode aboute hym, here is gaye goodlye cast, fowle caste awaye for hast. And a marchaunte that stoode by hym sayed that it was wrytten by inspyracyon and prophesye. Nowe then by and by as yt were for anger and not for coueteous, the protectoure sent sir Thomas Hawarde to the hous of Shores wyfe (for her husbande dwelt not wyth her) whyche spoyled her of all ỹ euer she had, aboue the valure of twoo or thre thousande markes, and sente her bodye to pryson. And the protectoure had laide to her for the maner sake ỹ she entended to witche hym, and ỹ she was a coũsaill w̃ the lord Hastynges to destroye hym In conclucion, whē no coloure could fasten vpō these matters, thē he leyed heinously to her charge that

thyng that she coulde not denye, for all the worlde knewe that it was true, and that not wythstandyng euery manne laughed to here it then so sodeynly, so highly taken, that she was noughte of her body. And for this cause as a Godly continent prince clene and faultlesse of hym selfe, sent oute of heauen into this vicious worlde, for the amendement of mennes maners, he caused the byshop of London to put her to open penaunce, goynge before a crosse on sondaye at procession with a taper in her hande. In the which she went in coũtenaũce and pace so womanly, and albeit she was out of al her araye sauyng her kyrtell onelye, yet wente she so fayre and louely, and namelye when the wondryng of the people cast a comelye rud in her chekes of the whiche she before had moste myste, that her greate shame wanne her muche prayse amongest theim that were more amorous of her bodye then curyous of her soule, & many good folke that hated her lyuyng and wer glad to see synne corrected, yet petied they more her penaũce then reioysed it, whẽ they consydred ẏ the protectour dyd it more of a corrupt mynde then any verteous affection.

The description of Shores wife.

This woman was borne in London, well frended, honestly brought vp, and verye well maryed, sauyng somwhat to sone, her husband an honest & a young citezen, godlye & of good substaunce, but forasmuche as they were coupled or she were well rype, she not very feruẽtly loued for whõ she neuer longed, whiche was the thyng (by chaunce) that ẏ more easely made her to encline to ẏ kynges appetite, when he requyred her. Howbeit the respect of his royaltee, ẏ hope of gaye apparel, ease, pleasure

and

and other wantonne wealthe was hable soone to perce a softe tender harte, but when the kyng had abused her, anone her husbande being an honest manne and one that coulde his good, not presuming to touche a kynges concubyne lefte her vp to hym all together. When the kyng dyed, ỹ lorde Hastynges tooke her, which in the kynges dayes albeit that he was sore enamoured with her, yet he forbare, either for a pryncelye reuerence or for a certen frendely faythfulnesse. Prope she was & fayre, nothing in her bodye that you coulde haue chaunged, but if you would haue wished her somwhat hygher. This saye they that knewe her in her youthe, some saied and iudged ỹ she had bene well fauoured, and some iudged the contrarye, whose iudgement semeth lyke as menne gesse the bewtye of one longe before departed, by a scalpe taken oute of a chanell house, & this iudgemente was in the tyme of kyng Henry the eyghte, in the xviii. yere of whose reygne she dyed, when she had nothing but a reueled skynne and bone. Her beautye pleased not menne so muche as her pleasaunt behaueoure, for she had a prope wytte and could bothe reade and wryte, mery in compaignye, redy and quicke of aunswer, nether mute nor full of bable, sometime taunting without displeasure, but not without dispoyte. Kyng Edward woulde saye that he had thre concubines, which in diuerse properties diuersye excelled, one, the meriest, ỹ other the wiliest, the third the holyest harlot in ỹ realme as one, whom no man could get oute of ỹ churche to any place lightlye, but yf it were to his bed, the other two were somwhat greater personages thē

maistres

maſtres Shoze, & neuertheleſſe of their humilyte were content to bee nameleſſe and to forbeare the praiſe of theſe properties. But the meryeſt was Shozes wyfe in whome the kyng therfoze tooke greate pleaſure, foz many he had, but her he loued whoſe fauoure to ſaye the truthe (foz it were ſynne to lye on the deuell) ſhe neuer abuſed to any mannes hurte but to many mennes comfozte & releefe Foz where the kyng tooke diſpleaſure ſhe would mitigate & apeace his mynde, where menne were oute of fauoure, ſhe woulde bring theim into his grace, foz many that had highly offended, ſhe optey gned pardone, and of greate forfeatures ſhe gat remiſſyon, and finally, in many weightye ſutes ſhe ſtoode many mẽne in greate ſteade, either foz none oz foz very ſmall rewardes & thoſe rather gaye then ryche, either foz that ſhe was contente with the dede well done, oz foz that ſhe delyghted to be ſued vnto, and to ſhewe what ſhe was hable to doo with the kyng, oz foz that that wanton wemenne and welthye bee not alwayes couetous. I doubte not but ſome manne wyll thynke this womanne to bee to ſlyghte to bee wziten of, amonge graue & weightie matters, whiche they ſhall ſpecially thynke ẏ happely ſawe her in her age & aduerſite, but me ſemeth ẏ chaũce ſo much moze wozthy to be remẽbzed, in howe muche after welth ſhe fell to pouerte, & frõ richeſſe to beggerie, vnfrẽded oute of aquayntaunce, after great ſubſtaũce after ſo great fauoure wt her pzince, after ſo great ſute and ſeking to, as many other menne were in their times, whiche be nowe famous onlye by the infamye of theyz euell dedes, her doinges were not

muche

muche lesse remembred because they were not so euell, for none vse to wryte an euell turne in marble stone, but a good turne they wryte in the duste, whiche is not worste proued by her, for after her welthe she wente beggynge of manye that hadde begged theim selfes yf she had not holpen theim, suche was her chaunce.

Nowe was it deuysed by the protectoure and his counsayle, that the same daye that the lorde chaumberlayne was behedded in the towre of Lõdon and aboute the same houre should be behedded at Pounfret the earle Riuers & the lorde Richard the quenes soonne, sir Thomas Vaughan and syr Richard Haute, which as you haue harde were taken at Northampton and Stonye Strat forde by the consent of the lorde Hastinges, which execucion was done by the ordre & in the presence of sir Richard Ratcliff knight, whose seruice ỹ protectoure specially vsed in the councell & in the execucion of suche lawlesse enterprises, as a manne ỹ had bene longe secrete wyth hym, hauynge experyence of the worlde and shrewed wytte, shorte & rude in speche, rough and boysterours of behaueoure, bold in myschiefe, as farre from pitie as from feare of God.

Thys knyghte broughte these foure persoonnes to the scaffolde at the daye appoynted, and shewed to all the people that they were traytoures, notsufferynge the lordes to speake, and to declare theyr innocencye, leaste their wordes myghte haue inclyned menne to pytie theym and to hate the protectour and hys part, and so wyth oute iudgemente and processe of the lawe caused

theim

theim to bee behedded without other erthly gylt but onely that they were good menne & true to the kyng and to nye to the quene, insomuche as Syr Thomas Vaughan going to his deathe saied, A wo worth theim that tooke the prophecie that. G should destroy kyng Edwardes children, meanig that by the duke of Clarence lorde George which for that suspicion is nowe dead, but nowe remayneth Richard. G. duke of Gloucetre, whiche nowe I see is he that shall & wyll accomplishe the prophecye and destroye kyng Edwardes chyldren & all theyr alyes and frendes, as it appereth by vs this daye, whom I appele to the hygh tribunal of God for his wrongful murder and oure true innocencye, and then Ratclyffe saied, you haue well apeled, laye downe your hed, ye & Syr Thomas, I dye in ryght, beware you dye not in wrong, and so that good knight was beheded and ỹ other. iii. and buried naked in the monastery at Pomfret.

When the lorde Hastinges and these other lordes and knyghtes were thus behedded & ryd oute of the waye, then the Protectoure caused it to bee proclaimed that the coronacyon for dyuerse great and vrgent causes shoulde be deferred tyll the second day of Nouembre, for then thought he, that whyle men mused what the matter ment, & whyle the lordes of the realme were aboute hym, oute of their owne strengthes, and while no manne wyste what to thynke nor whome to truste, or euer they should haue tyme and space to digest the matter, and make partes, it were best hastely to pursue his purpose and put hym selfe in possessyon of the croune, or menne coulde haue tyme to deuise any

wise

wyse to resyst. But nowe was all the studye, thys matter beynge of it selfe so heynous myghte bee fyrst broken to the people in such wise as it might be well taken. To thys counsayle they tooke dyuerse suche as they thoughte metely to be trusted and lykelye to be enduced to that parte and hable to stande them in stede, ether by powre or by pollycy. Amonge whome, they made a counsayle Edmounde Shaa then mayre of Londõ, whych vpõ truste of his owne auauncement, wher he was of a proude heart, hyghly desyreous, toke on hym to frame the cyte to theyr appetite. Of spirituall mẽ they tooke suche as had wyt and were in auctoryty tee emongest the people for opynion of theyr learnynge and hadde no scrupulous conscyence. Emongest these, had they tooke Raffe Shaa clerke brother to the Mayre, and Freer Pynkie prouyncyall of the Augustyne Freers, both doctoures in diuinitee, both great preachers, both of more learning then vertue, of more fame then learnyng, & yet of more lernyng then truthe. For they wer before greatelye estemed emonge the people, but after that, neuer none of these two were regarded Shaa made a sermonde in prayse of the protectour before the coronacion, and Pynky made one after the coronation, bothe so full of tedious flatterye, that no good mans eares coulde abyde thẽ Pynkye in hys sermonde so lost hys voyce that he was fayne to leaue of and come downe in the myddest. Doctoure Shaa by hys sermonde loste hys honestye, and soone after hys lyfe, for verye shame of the worlde, into the whyche he durst neuer after much come abrode, but the Freer forced

for

for no shame, and so yt harmed him the lesse. How beit, some doubte and many thyncke that Pinkey was not of counsayl before the coronation but after the common maner fell to flattery after, namely, because his sermounde was not incontinente vpon it, but at Saynt Mary Spittle the Eastre after. But certayne it is that Doctoure Shaa was of counsayle in the begynnynge, in so muche that they determyned that he shoulde fyrst breke the matter in a sermõd at Paules crosse, in which he shulde by the authorytee of hys preachyng induce the people to enclyne to the protectoures ghoostly purpose. But nowe was all the laboure and studye in the deuyse of some conuenyent pretexte, for whyche the people shoulde be contente to depose the prynce and accepte the protectoure for kyng. In whyche dyuerse thynges they deuysed, but the chiefe thynge and the weyghte of all that inuention rested in thys, that they shoulde alledge bastardy in kynge Edwarde hym selfe, or in his chyldren, or both, so that he should seme disabled to enherite the crowne by the duke of yorke and the prynce by hym. To laye basterdy in king Edward sounded openly to the rebuke of the protectoures owne mother, which was mother to the bothe. For in that poynte coulde bee none other colour, but to pretend that hys owne mother was an auoutresse, but neuertheless he woulde that poynt should be lesse and more fynely and closely handled, not euen fully playne and dyrectlye, but touched a slope craftely, as though menne spared in that poynte to speake all the truthe for feare of his displeasure. But that other poynt concerning

the

the basterdy that they deuysed to surmise in king Edwardes childzen, that woulde he shoulde be openly declared and enforced to the vttermost. The coloure and pzetexte wherof cannot be wel perceaued excepte we repozt some thynges longe befoze done aboute kynge Edwardes maryages.

After king Edwarde the. iiii. had deposed king Henry the. vi. & was in peasyable possession of the realme, determynyng him selfe to mary (as was requisite) both foz him self and foz the realme, he set the earle of Warwike and diuerse other noble me in ambassade to the Frenche kynge to entreate a maryage betwene ỹ kyng and Bona syster to the Frenche kyng. In whych the Earle of Warwike founde the parties so towarde and wyllinge that he spedely wythout anye dyfficultie accozding to hys instruccyons bzoughte the matter to a good conclusion. Nowe happened yt in the meane season, there came to make a sute to the kynge by petycyon dame Elyzabeth Gzeye (whyche after was hys quene) then a wyddowe, bozne of noble blood specyallye by her mother, whyche was Duchesse of Bedfozde, and she was maryed to syz Rychard Wooduyle, Lozde Ryuers her father.

Howebeit, thys Elyzabeth beynge in seruyce wyth quene Margarete wyfe to kynge Henrye the syxt, was maryed to one Jhon Gzeye Esquyze whome kynge Henrye made knyghte at the last battayle of Saynte Albons, but lytle whyle he enioyed hys knyghtehoode foz at that feelde he was slayne.

Afterwarde that kynge Edwarde was kynge & the Earle of Warwyke being on his ambassad

thys

this poore ladye made sute to the kyng to be resto
red to such small landes as her husbande had ge=
uen her in toyntour, whom when the kyng beheld
and heard her speake, as she was bothe fayre and
of a good fauoure, moderate of nature, well made
and very wyse, he not alonlye pytied her, but also
wexed enamored on her, and talkynge her secretly
a syde beganne to enter into talkynge more fam
yliarly, whose apetite when she perceaued, she ver
tuously denyed him, but that dyd she so wyselye &
that, with so good maner & wordes so wel set, that
she rather kyndled hys desyre then quenched it.
And fynally, after manye a metynge and muche
wowynge and manye great promyses she well es=
pyed the kynges affeccyon towarde her so greate
lye encreased that she durste somewhat the more
boldly say her mynde, as to hym whose hearte she
perceaued more feruently set then to fall of for a
word. And in cõclusiõ she shewed hym playn ẏ as
she wyst her self to simple to be his wife, so thought
she her selfe to good to be hys concubyne. The
kyng much maruelyng of her constancy, as he ẏ
had not bene wont elles where so stykly sayd nay,
so much estemed her continencye & chastitee, that
he set her vertue in stead of possessiõ and rychesse.
And this taking councel of his owne desyre deter
myned in hast to mary her. And after that he was
thus apoĩted & had betwene thẽ twayn ẽsured her
thẽ asked he the coũcel of his secret frẽdes, & that
in such maner ẏ they myght easly perseaue ẏ it bo
ted not to say nay. Notwythstandig, the duches of
yorke his mother was so sore moued therw ẏ she di
swaded ẏ mariage as much as she possible might
alledgynge

Alledgyng that it was his honour, profite & surety to marye in some noble progenie oute of the realme, wherupon depended greate strength to his estate by that affinitee and greate possibilite of encreace of his dominions. And ỹ he could not well otherwise dooe, considerynge the erle of Warwike had so farforth entered into the matter all readie, whiche was not like to take it well if all his voyage were in suche wise frustrate & his apointment deluded. And she saied ferther that it was not princely to marye his owne subiect, no greater occacō ledyng therunto, no possessions nor other commodyte dependyng therupon, but only as a riche mā would mary his maydē onely for a litle wāton dotage vpon her persone. In whiche maryage many menne commende more the maydens fortune then the mannes wysedome, and yet she saied that there was more honestye then honoure in this maryage forasmuche as there is not betwene a marchaunt and his mayde so greate a dyfference as betwene a kyng and his subiect, a great prince and a poore wydowe. In whose persone, although there were nothyng to bee misliked, yet was there saied she, nothyng so excellent but that it might bee founde in dyuerse other that were more metely (qᵗ she) for your estate, yee and maydens also, the onely wydowhead of dame Elizabeth Grey (although she were in all other pointes and thynges conuenient for you) should suffise as me thynketh to refrayne you frō her maryage, sith it is an vnsittyng thyng and a greate blemishe to the sacred maiestie of a prince that ought as nere to approche perfectnesse in clennesse, as he dooth in dignitee, to bee defiled

I with

w̄ bigamy i his first mariage. The kyng made his mother an aūswere parte in earnest & parte in plaie merely, as he y̆ wist hym self oute of rule, & albeit he would gladly y̆ she should take it well, yet was he at apoynct in his awne mynde, tooke she it well or otherwise. Howbeit, somewhat to satisfie her he saied, y̆ albeit maryage beyng a spirituall thyng ought rather to bee made for the respecte of God where his grace encline the parties to loue toge ther (as he trusted it was in his case) rather then for y̆ regard of any tēporall aduaūtage, yet neuer theleſſe hym semed this maryage well consydered not to bee vnprofitable, for he recoued the amytee of no earthely nacion to bee so necessary for hym as y̆ frendship of his owne, whiche he thought lykely to beare hym somuche y̆ more hartie fauoure in y̆ he disdayned not to mary w̄ one of his awne land, & yet if outward aliaunce were thought so requisite, he would finde y̆ meanes to enter therunto muche better by other of his kinne where all y̆ parties could bee contented, then to marye hym selfe wherein he should neuer happely loue, & for y̆ possibilite of possessiōs lese y̆ fruyte & pleasure of this that he had alreadie. For small pleasure taketh a mān̄e of all y̆ euer he hath beſyde, if he bee wiued against his appetite, and I doubte not (q̄ he,) but ther be as you saie other y̆ bee in euery poinct comparable with her, & therfore I let not theim y̆ like theim to mary theim, no more is it reason y̆ it mislike any manne that I marye where it liketh me. And I am sure that my coulyn of Warwike, neither loueth me so litle, to grudge at y̆ that I loue, ner is so vnreasonable to look y̆ I should in choise

of

of a wife rather bee ruled by his yie then by myne owne, as though I were a waroe ỹ were boũdē to marry by a garden. I would not bee a kyng with ỹ cõdicion to forbeare myne owne libertie in choyse of myne awne maryage, as for possibylyte of more inheritaunce by newe affinite in straũge landes, is ofte ỹ occasiõ of more trouble thē profite. And we haue already title by ỹ meanes, as suffiseth to get & kepe well in one mannes daye. That she is a widowe & hath already children. By goddes blessed ladye, I am a bacheler & haue some too, & so eche of vs hath a proofe ỹ nether of vs is like to be barren. And therfore madame I praie you bee cõtēt, I trust to God she shall bryng forth a youge prince ỹ shall please you. And as for the bigamy, let the bisshop hardely laie it to my charge whē I come to take ordres, for I vnderstād it is forbiddē a preest but I neuer wist ỹ it was forbidden a prince. The duches w̄ these woordes nothing apeased & seyng ỹ kyng so set on ỹ she could not plucke hym backe, so highly she disdeined it, that vnder pretext of her dutye to Godwarde she deuised to dysturbe this maryage, and rather to helpe that he should marry one dame Elizabeth Lucye, whom the kyng not long before had gotten with chylde, wherfore the kyng his mother obiected openlye against this maryage (as it were in dyscharge of her conscyence) that the kyng was sure to dame Elizabeth Lucye and her housbande before God, by reason of whiche woordes suche obstacle was made in that matter, that either the byssh̄oppe durste not or the kyng woulde not proceade to the solempnisacion of the mariage, till this fame were

clerly purged, and the truth well and openly testi-fied) wherupon dame Elizabeth Lucye was sent for, and albeit she was by the kynges mother and many other put in good comforte to affirme that she was assured to the kyng, yet when she was so-lemply sworne to sate the truthe, she confessed that thei were neuer ensured. Howbeit she said his grace spake suche louyng woordes to her, that she verely hoped that he would haue maryed her, and ỹ if suche kynde woordes had not been, she would neuer haue shewed suche kyndenesse to hym, to let hym so kyndely to gette her with chylde. This exa-mynacion solemply taken, it was clerely proued that there was no impedyment to lette the kyng to marye, wherfore he shortlye after at Grafton beside Stonye stratforde maryed the ladye Eli-zabeth Grey verey priuelye, whiche was his ene-myes wife and had prayed hartely for his losse, in the whiche God loued her better then to graunte her bone, for then had she not been his wife. And after that she was crouned quene, and her fa-ther was created Erle Riuers and her soonne cre-ated Marques Dorset. But when the Erle of Warwike vnderstoode of this maryage, he tooke it so highly, that therof ensued muche trouble and greate bloodshed as is declared before in the sto-rye of Edward the fourth.

I haue rehersed this mariage somewhat the more at length, because it might therby the better apere vpon howe sleight aground the protectoure builded his coloure, by whiche he pretended kyng Edward his chyldren to bee bastardes, but the in-uencyon as symple as it was lyked theim to whom

whom it ſuffyſeth to haue ſomwhat to ſaye, whyle they were ſure to bee compelled to no larger proffe then theim ſelues lyſt to make.

Nowe to retourne where I lefte, as I beganne to ſhewe you, it was by the protectoure & his counſell concluded that this doctour Shaa ſhoulde in a ſermond at Paules croſſe ſignifie to the people that neyther kyng Edward hym ſelfe ner the duke of Clarence were lawfullye begotten, nor were the very children of the duke of Yorke, but begotten vnlawfullye by other perſonnes by aduoutrye of the duches theyr mother. And dame Elizabeth Lucye was the very wyfe of kyng Edwarde, & ſo prynce Edward & all the chyldren begotten on the quene were baſtardes. And accordyng to this deuyce, doctor Shaa ỹ ſõday after at Paules croſſe in a greate audience (as alwaye a greate nombre aſſembled to his preachyng) came into the pulpet takyng for his Theme. *Spuria Vitulamina non dabunt radices altos, Sapiencie quarto*, that is to ſaye: Baſtarde ſyppes ſhall neuer take depe rootes, whereupon when he had ſhewed the great grace that God geueth and ſecretlye infoundeth in right generacion after the lawes of matrymony: Then declared he that thoſe chyldren commenlye lacked that grace (and for the punyſhement of their parentes) were for the moſte parte vnhappye whiche were gotten in baſte, and ſpeciallye in aduoutrye, of whiche (thoughe ſome by the ignorauncye of the worlde and the truthe hid from knowledge) haue enheryted for a ſeaſon other mennes landes, yet God alwaye ſo prouydeth that it contynueth not in their bloodde longe, but the truthe commyng to lyght

lyght the rightfull enheritoures be reſtoꝛed, and the baſtard ſlyppes plucked vp oꝛ it can bee rooted depe. And when he had layd foꝛ the pꝛoofe and confirmacion of this ſentence, examples taken out of the olde teſtamente and other auncient hiſtoꝛyes, then beganne he to diſcende to the pꝛayſe of loꝛde Richarde duke of Yoꝛke, callyng hym father of the pꝛotectoure: and declared his tytle to the croune by inheryptaunce, and alſo by an entayle autoꝛyſed by parliament after the death of kyng Henry the ſyxte. Then ſhewed he that the loꝛde pꝛotectoure was onlye the right heire of his body lawfullye begotten, then declared he that kynge Edward was neuer lawfully maryed to the quene but his wife beſoꝛe God was dame Elizabeth Lucye, and ſo his chyldꝛen were baſtardes. And beſydes that, that neyther kyng Edwarde hym ſelfe noꝛ the duke of Clarence (amongeſt theim ỹ wer ſecrete in the duke of Yoꝛkes houſhold) were neuer reconed ſurelye to bee the chyldꝛen of the noble duke, as thoſe that by their fauoures moꝛe reſembled other knowen menne then hym, from whoſe verteous condicions he ſayde alſo that kyng Edwarde was farre of. But the loꝛde pꝛtectoure (q̃ he) that veray noble pꝛince, the ſpecyall patrone of knightly pꝛowes, alſwell in all pꝛincely behaueour as in the lyniamentes and fauoure of his viſage repꝛeſenteth the verave face of the noble duke his father. This is (q̃ he) the fathers owne fygure, this is his owne countenaunce, ỹ very pꝛint of his viſage, the ſure vndoubted ymage, ỹ playn erpꝛeſſe likeneſſe of ỹ nobble duke. Now was it beſoꝛe deuyſed ỹ in the ſpeakyng of theſe woꝛdes, the

pꝛotectoure

protectour shuld haue come in amongest ỹ people tothe sermond ward, to thende ỹ these woordes so metyng with his presence, might haue bene taken amongest the herers, as though the holye ghoste had put theim in the preachers mouthe, & shoulde haue moued the people euen there to haue cryed kyng Richard, that it might haue bene after sayde that he was specially chosen by God, and in maner by myracle, but this deuyce quayled eyther by the protectoures neglygence or the preachers ouer hasty dilygence. For whyle the protectoure founde by the waye tarynge leaste he shoulde haue preuented these woordes, the doctoure fearynge that he shoulde come or his sermon coulde come to those woordes hastyng his matter thereto, he was come to theim & paste theim, and entred into other matters or the protectoure came, whome when he beheldе cõmyng, he sodenly left the matter whiche he had in hande, and without any deduccion therunto, out of al ordre and out of all frame beganne to repete those woordes agayne. This is the very noble prince, the especyall patrone of knyghtlye prowes, whyche aswell in all pryncely behaueoure as in the lyniamentes and fauoure of his visage representeth the verye face of the noble duke of Yorke his father. This is the fathers owne fygure, this is his owne countenaunce, the verye pryntе of his vysage, the sure vndoubted ymage, the playne expresse lykenesse of that noble duke, whose remembraunce can neuer dye whyle he lyueth. Whyle these woordes were in speakynge the protectour accompanyed with the duke of Buckyngham, wente throughe the people vp into the

place where the doctors stande and there hearde they out the sermond: but the people were so farre from crying kynge Richard that they stoode as they had bene turned into stones for wonder of this shamefull sermond, after whiche once ended the preacher gate him home and neuer after durst looke out, and when he asked any of his olde frendes, what the people talked of hym, although that his owne conscience well shewed hym that they talked no good, yet whē the other aunswered hym, that there was in euerye mannes mouthe of hym muche shame spoken, it so strake hym to his heart that in fewe dayes after he wythered awaye.

Then on the tuysdaye after nexte folowynge this sermonde, beeynge the .xvii. daye of June there came to the Guylde hal of London the duke of Buckynghaim and dyuerse lordes and knightes mo then happely knewe the message that they brought. And at the east ende of the hall where the hoystynges be kepte, ỹ duke and the mayre and ỹ other lordes sate downe, and the aldermen also, all the commons of the cytee beyng assembled & standynge before theim. After silence commaunded vpon a greate payne, in the protectoures name. The duke stoode vp, and as he was well learned and of nature merueleously well spoken, he saide to the people wyth a cleare and a lowde voyce: Frendes, for the zeale and hertie fauoure that we beare you, we be come to breke of a matter ryghte great & weightie, and no lesse weyghtye then pleasyng to God and profitable to all the realme, nor to no part of ỹ realme more profitable thē to you the cytezens of thys noble cytee. For why, the

The oracion of ỹ duke of Buckyngh̄ made to the cytezens of London.

thynge

thinge that you haue longe lacked and as we wel knowe sore longed for, that you woulde haue geuen greate good for, that you woulde haue gone farre to fetche, that thyng bee we come hether to bring you, without youre labour, payne, coste, aduentnre or ieopardy. What thing is that? Certes the suretie of youre owne bodies, the quiet of youre wiues and doughters and the sauegard of your goodes. Of all whiche thinges in times passed you stoode in doubte, for who was he of you al that coulde recone hym selfe Lorde of his owne good amongest so many gynnes and trappes as were set therfore, amonge so muche pilling & polling, amongest so many taxes and tallages, of ỹ which there was neuer ende, and oftimes no nede and yf any were, it grewe either of ryot or of vnreasonable waste then any necessarye honourable charge, so that there was daily plucked and pylled from good and honest menne great substaūce of goodes, to be lashed oute amonge vnthryftes, so farforth that fiftenes suffised not nor any vsual termes of knowen taxes, but vnder an easy name of beneuolence and good will, the cōmissioners so muche of euery manne tooke, as no manne would with his goo wyll haue geuen. As though ỹ name of beneuolence had signifyed, ỹ euery man should paye, not what he of hym selfe of his good will lust to graūt, but what ỹ kyng of his good wyl lust to take, who neuer asked lytle, but euery thyng was haunsed aboue the measure, amercyamentes turned into fines, fines into raunsomes, small trespaces into misprision, misprision into treasō, wher of I thynke that no manne looketh that we shall

remembre

remẽbze of examples by name, as though Burdet were forgotten that was for a woorde ſpoken, in haſt cruelly behedded by the miſconſtruing of the lawes of the realme for the pzinces pleaſure, with no leſſe honoure to Merkam chiefe Juſtice then (whiche loſte his office rather then he would aſſẽt to that iudgement) to the diſhoneſtie of thoſe that other for feare or flatterie gaue that iudgemente: what nede I to ſpeake of Thomas Cooke Alder-manne & maire of this noble cytee, who is of you ether for negligence that wotteth not, or ſo forget full that he remẽbzeth not, or ſo heard harted that he peticth not that woꝛſhipful mannes loſſe: what ſpeke I of loſſe, his wounderfull ſpoile and vnde-ſerued diſtruccion, onely becauſe it happed theim to fauoure hym whome the Pzince fauoured not. We nede not reherſe of theſe any mo by name, ſith I doubte not ẏ here bee many pzeſẽt that either in theim ſelfes or their nyghe frendes, aſwell their goodes as perſones were greatly endaungered o-ther by fained quarels or ſmal matters aggreued with heinous names, and alſo there was no crime ſo great of which there could lacke a pzeterte. For ſith the king pzeuenting ẏ time of his inheritaũce atteined the croune by battail, it ſuffiſed in a riche manne for a pzetext of treaſon, to haue been of kin-red or alliaunce, nor of familiarite or lenger of ac-quaintaunce wᵗ any of thoſe, ẏ wer at any time the kiges enemies, which was at one time or another moze then halfe ẏ realme. Thus were nether your goodes, nether lãdes, in ſuerte, & yet they brought your bodies in ieopardie, beſide ẏ comen aduẽture of opẽ war, which albeit, ẏ it is euer ẏ well & occaſi-

on

on of much mischief, yet is it neuer so mischeuous as where any people fal in deuisiō, & at al distaūce among theim selues, & in no realme erthly so deadly and so pestylēt as when it happeneth amongest vs. And among vs neuer continued so long discēction nor so many batailes in any season, nor so cruel nor so deadly foughtē, as wer in ỹ kinges dates ỹ dead is, god forgeue it his soule. In whose time and by whose occasiō, what about ỹ getting of the garland, keping it, lesing & winning again, it hath coste more English blood then hath the twise winning of Fraūce. In which inward war amongest our selues hath bene so great effusion of ỹ auncīēt noble blood of this realme, ỹ scacely the halfe remaineth, to ỹ great enfebling of this nobleland, beside many a good toune ransaked & spoiled by thē that haue been going to ỹ feld or retourning from thence, & peace after not much surer then war. So that no tyme was there in the which riche men for theyr money, & great men for their landes or some other, for some feare or for sōe displeasure wer out of perell. For whom mistrusted he ỹ mistrusted his owne brother? Whom spared he ỹ killed his owne brother? Could not such maner of folke ỹ he moste fauoured dooe somwhat (we shall for his honoure spare to speke) howbeit, this ye wote wel all, ỹ who so was best bare euer the least rule, & more suite in his daies was to Shores wife, a vile & abhominable strompet then to all the lordes in England, excepte vnto those that made her their Protectoure, which simple woman was yet wel named & honest tyll the Kynge for his luste and synfull affeccyon bereft her from her husband, a right honest man

and

and substanciall amongest you. And in that point whiche in good fayth I am sorye to speake of, saying that it is bayne to kepe in counceli ỹ thyng that all menne knoweth, the kynges gredy appetite was insaciable, and euerye where ouer all the realme intollerable. For no womanne was there any where, younge or olde, poore or ryche, whome he set his ye vpon, whome he any thing liked eyther for persone or beautie, speche, pace or countenaunce, but without any feare of God, or respecte of his honoure, murmoure, or grudgyng of the worlde, he would importunately pursue his appetite & haue her, to the great distruccion of many a good womanne, and greate doloure to theyr huibandes and frendes, whiche being honest people of theim selues, so much regarded the clennesse of their houses, the chastitee of their wiues and childzen, that theim were leuer to loose all ỹ they haue beside, then to haue suche a vilanie done to theim. And albeit that wt this and other importable dealing, ỹ realme was in euery place anoyed, yet specially you the citezens of this noble citee, as for ỹ amongest you is mooste plentie of suche thinges as minister matter to suche iniuries, as for ỹ you wer nereste hand, sith ỹ ner e here about was his mooste cõmon abidyng. And yet bee ye people whome he had as synguler a cause well and trewelye to intrete, as any parte of his realme, not only for that the Pryncc by this noble citee, as of his speciall chaumbze and renoumed citee of this realme, muche honourable fame receaueth amongest all other nacyons, but also for that, you nowe without youre greate coste and sondzye fauoures

and

and ieopardyes in al his warres bare euer youre especyall fauoure to hys parte, whych your kynd myndes borne to ỹ house of Yorke, sith he hath no thigworthely requited you, ther is of ỹ house now whyche by Goddes grace shall make you full recompence, which thyng to shew you, is the whole somme and effecte of oure errande. It shal not, I wote well nede, that I rehersed vnto you agayne that you all redy haue heard of him that can better tell it, and of whom I am sure ye wyll better beleue it (and reason it is that it so be) I am not so proude to loke therfore, that you shoulde receaue my wordes of so greate authorytee as the preachers of the worde of God, namely a man so connyng & so wyse, that no man wotteth better what he should do & say, and thereto so good and vertuous that he would not say the thynge, which he wyst he shoulde not saye in the pulpyt, namely, in to the whiche no honeste manne commeth to lye: which honourable preacher ye wel remember, substancyally declared to you at Poules crosse on sõ daye laste past, the ryght and tytle of the most excellent prynce Rychard Duke of Glouceter nowe protectoure of thys hys realme whych he hath vn to the croune of the kingdome of the same. For ỹ worshipful man made yt perfytely and groundly open vnto you. The chyldren of kynge Edwarde the.iiii. wer neuer laufully begotten, for as much as the kynge (lyuyng hys very wyfe dame Elizabeth Lucy) was neuer laufully maried to ỹ quene they mother, whose blood sauyng he set hys voluptuous pleasure before hys honour, was ful vnmetely to be matched with his (the mynglyng of

whych

which two bloodes together hath bene the effusiō of a grete part of ỹ noble blod of this realme wher by it may well be sene, that mariage was not well made, of which ther is so much myschiefe growen For lacke of which lawfeul copulatiō & also of other thinges which ỹ sayd worshipful doctour, rather signified thē vtterly explaned, & which thing shall not be spokē for me, as the thing ỹ euery mā forbeareth to say ỹ he knoweth, in aduoiding ỹ displeasour ỹ my noble lorde protectour bearing as nature requireth a filiall reuerence to the duches his mother. For these causes before remembred I say ỹ for lack of yssue lawfully cōming of ỹ late noble prince Richard duke of yorke, to whose roial blod ỹ crownes of Englād & of Fraūce ar by high authoritee of parliament entayled, ỹ right & tytle of the same is by iuste course of enheritaūce according to ỹ comon law of this land, deuoluted & come vnto the moost excellent prince ỹ lord protectour, as to the very lawful begotten soonne of the fore remēbred noble duke of yorke, whiche thing wel cōsidered & ỹ knightly prowesse wt many vertues which in his noble person singulerly do habound: The nobles & comons of this realme, and specially of ỹ north partes, not willig any bastard blood to haue the rule of the lād, nor the abusions in the same before vsed & exercised any lēger to cōtinue, haue fully condiscended & vtterly determyned to make hygh petitiō vnto ỹ puisaunt prince the lord protectour, ỹ it may lyke his grace at our humble requeste to take vpō him the guiding & gouernaūce of this realme, to ỹ welth & increase of ỹ same according to his very right & iust title, which

thinge

thing I wote wel he wylbe loth to take vpon him as he whose wisdome wel perceueth, ỹ labour & stu dy both of mynd & body ỹ shal come therw̄ to hi, whosoeuer shal occupy ỹ rome. I dare say he wyl yf he take it (for I warrāte you ỹ that roome is no childes office) & ỹ the greate wise man wel perceaued whē he sayd *Ve regno cuius rex puer est*, wo to that realme whose king is a chylde wherefore, so much more cause haue we to thank god ỹ this noble per sonage, which is so righteously ētitled therto is of so sad age, & therto of so great wisdome ioyned w̄ so gret experiēce, which albeit, he wylbe loth to ta ke vpon hi, yet shal he to our petitiō in ỹ behalfe ỹ more graciously encline, if ye the worshipful cyte zins of this cite beyng the chefe cite of the realme ioyne w̄ vs the nobles in our sayd request, which for your owne weale we doubte not but ỹ ye wyll. And yet neuertheless, we pray you so to do, wher by ye shall do great profite to all this his realme. Beside that, in chosinge then so good a kinge, yt shalbe to your selfe a special commodite to whom his maiesty shal euer after, bear so much the more tender fauour, in how much he shal perceaue you the more prone and beneuolentlye mynded tow ard his election, wherin dere frendes, what mynd you haue, we require you playnelye to shewe vs. Whē ỹ duke had said & loked ỹ the people whom he hoped ỹ the maire had framed before, should af ter this flatering p̄posicion made haue cryed kig Richard, king Richard, all was styl & mute & not one word answered to: wherw̄ the duke was mer uelously abashed and takyng the Mayre nere to him with other that were about hym preuy to the matter

matter sayde vnto theim softelye. What meaneth this that the people be so styll? Sir qᵗ the Mayze percase they perceaue you not wel, ꝑ shal we amend, qᵗ he, yf that wyl helpe, & therwith somewhat lowder reherced the same matter again, in other order & other wordes so well and ordinately, & neuerthelesse so eupoently & plain, with voyce gesture and countenaunce so comely & so conuenient, that euery man mighe marueiled ꝑ heard hym, & thought that thei neuer hearde in their liues so euell a tale so well tolde. But wel it for wonder or for other, ꝑ eache loked that other should speake fyrst, not one worde was there aunswered of all the people that stode before, but all were as styll as the midnight not so much as rounyng emong theim, by which they might seme once to commen what was beste to do. When the Mayze sawe this, he with other parteners of ꝑ councel, drewe about the duke and said ꝑ the people had not bene accustomed ther to bee spoken to but by the recorder, whyche is the mouth of the cites, & happly to hym ther wyl aunswer. With that the recorder called Thomas Fize William a sad man & an honest, whiche was but newly come to the office & neuer had spoken to ꝑ people before, & loth was with that matter to begyn, notwithstanding, therunto commaunded by the Mayze, made reherfall to the cõmons of that which the Duke had twyse purposed hys self but the recorder so tempered hys tale, that he shewed euery thyng as the Dukes wordes were, and no parte of his owne, but all this no chaũge made in the people, whych alwaye after one stoode as thei had bene amased. Whereupon the Duke rouned

wyth

with the mayre and said, this is a marueleous obstynate scylence, and therwith turned to the people again w̄ these woordes. Deare frendes, we come to moue you to that thyng whiche paraduenture we so greatly neded not, but that the lordes of this realme and commōs of other parties might haue sufficed sauyng suche loue we beare you, and so muche set by you that we would not gladly dooe with oute you, that thyng in whiche to bee parteners is your weale and honoure whiche as to vs semeth you se not or wayt not. Wherfore we require you to geue vs an aūswer one or other, whether ye bee mynded as all the nobles of the realme bee, to haue this noble prince nowe protectoure to bee your kyng? And at these woordes the people beganne to whisper emong theim selfes secretlye, that the voyce was nether lowde nor base, but like a swarme of bees, till at the last at the nether ende of the halle a bushement of the dukes seruauntes and one Nashfeelde and other belongyng to the protectoure with some prentices and laddes that thrusted into the halle emongest the preace, began sodenly at mennes backes to crye, kyng Rychard, kyng Rychard, and there threwe vp their cappes in token of ioye, and thei that stoode before caste their heddes maruelyng therat, but nothyng thei saied. And when the duke and the mayre sawe this maner thei wisely turned it to their purpose, and saied it was a goodly crye & a ioifull to here euery manne with one voyce and no mānes saiyng naye. Wherfore frendes (qᵗ the duke,) sith we perceaue that it is all your whole myndes to haue this noble manne for your kyng, wherof we shall make

Shoode. edit. ch.

his grace effectuall repoꝛt ꝯ we doubte not but ꝯ it shall redounde to your great wealth & cõmodite. We therfoꝛe requier you ꝯ to moꝛowe ye go with vs & we w̄ you to his noble grace to make humble peticiõ & request to hym in maner beforꝛe remẽbred. And therwith the loꝛdes came downe and ꝯ cõpaignie dissolued & departed the moꝛe parte all sad, some with glad semblеaunce ꝯ were not verye merie, and some of theim ꝯ came with the duke, not hable to dissemble their soꝛowe, were faine euen at his backe to turne their face to the wall, while the doloure of their heartes brast oute of their yies.

Then on the moꝛowe the mayꝛe & aldꝛemen and chief commoners of ꝯ citee in their best maner appareled, assẽblyng theim together at Paules, resoꝛted to Baynardes castel where ꝯ ꝓtectour laye, to whiche place also accoꝛdyng to ꝯ apointement repaired ꝯ duke of Buckyngh̄m & dyuerse nobles w̄ hym, besydes many knightes & gẽtlemen. And therupon ꝯ duke sent wooꝛd to ꝯ loꝛd ꝓtectoure of ꝯ beyng there of a great honourable cõpaignie to moue a great matter to his grace. Wherupon ꝯ ꝓtectoure made great difficultie to come downe to theim, excepte he knewe some part of their errãd as though he doubted & partly mistrusted the comming of suche a noumbꝛe to hym so sodenly, wout any warning oꝛ knowledge, whether thei came foꝛ good oꝛ harme. Thẽ when ꝯ duke had shewed this to ꝯ mayꝛe & other, that thei might therby se howe litle the ꝓtectoure looked foꝛ this matter, thei sẽt again by ꝯ messenger suche louyng message, & ther w̄ so humblie besought hym to vouchesalue ꝯ thei might resoꝛte to his ꝓsence to purpose their entẽt

of

of which thei would to none other persone disclose, at the last he came oute of his chaũbre, and yet not downe to theim, but in a galary ouer theim w̃ a bi shop on euery hãd of him, where thei beneth might se hym & speake to hym, as though he would not yet come nere theim till he wist what thei meant. And therupõ the duke of Buckynghm̃ first made hũble peticiõ to him on y̌ behalfe of theim all, y̌ his grace would pardone theim & licence theim to pur pose vnto his grace thẽtent of their cõmyng wout his displeasure, wout whiche pdone obteined, thei durst not bee so bold to moue hym of y̌ matter. In whiche, albeit thei meant asmuche honoure to his grace as wealth to al y̌ realme beside, yet were thei not sure howe his grace would take it, whom thei would in no wise offende. Then y̌ pr̃otectour, as he was verie gentle of hym self & also lõged sore appa raũtly to knowe what thei meãt, gaue him leaue to purpose what hym liked trustyng for y̌ good mind y̌ he bare theim all none of theim any thing would entend to hymward wherw̃ he thought to bee gre ued. Whẽ y̌ duke had this leaue & pardõ to speake thẽ wered he bold to shewe hym their entent & pur= pose, w̃ all y̌ causes mouyng theim therto as ye be fore haue heard. And finally to beseche his grace y̌ it would like him of his accustomed goodnelle & ze= ale vnto y̌ realme nowe w̃ his yie of̃ pite to behold y̌ long cõtinued distresse & decaie of y̌ same, & to set his gracious hãd to redresse & amẽdemẽt therof by takyng vpõ hym y̌ croune & gouernaunce of y̌ re= alme accordyng to his right & title lawfully discẽ= ded vnto hym, & to y̌ laude of God, profite & surete of y̌ lãd & vnto his grace so much y̌ more honour &

lesse pain, in that that neuer prince reigned vpon any people that were so glad to liue vnder his obeysaunce as the people of this realme vnder his.

When the protectoure had heard the preposicion, he looked very strangely thereat and made aunswer that albeit he knewe partely the thynges by theim alledged to be true, yet suche entiere loue he bare to kyng Edward and his children, and so muche more regarded his honoure in other realmes aboute, then the croune of any one, of whiche he was neuer desyrous, so that he could not fynde in his hearte in this poincte to incline to their desyre, for in all other nacions were ỹ truthe not well knowē, it should paraduenture be thought that it were his owne ambicious mynde and deuice to depose the prince and to take hym self ỹ croune, with whiche infamye he would in no wise haue his honoure steyned for any croune, in whiche he had neuer perchaunce perceaued muche more laboure & pain then pleasure to hym that so would vse it, as he that would not and were not worthy to haue it. Notwithstandyg, he not only perdoned theim the mocion that thei made hym, but also thāked theim for ỹ loue and hartie fauoure thei bare hym, prayyng theim for his sake to beare thesame to ỹ prince vnder whome he was and would bee contente to liue and with his laboure and coūsaill as ferre as it should like the kyng to vse it, he would doo e his vttermost deuoyre to sette ỹ realme in good estate whiche was all readye in the tyme of his protectourship (lauded bee God,) well begonne, in that ỹ malice of suche as were before the occasion of the contrarie and of newe entended to bee, were nowe partely

partely by good policie, partely more by Goddes specyall prouydence, then mannes prouysion repressed and put vnder.

Upon this aunswer geuen, the duke of Buckyngham by the protectoures licence a lytle rounded, aswell with other noble menne about hym as with the mayre and recorder of Londō. And after that (vpon like perdon desyred & opteyned) he shewed alowde vnto the protectour, for a fynall conclusion that the realme was apoynted that kyng Edwardes lyne shoulde no lenger reygne vpon theim, bothe that they had so farre gone that it was nowe no suretie to retreate (as for that they thought it for the weale vnyuersall to take that waye, although they had not yet begon it.) Wherfore if it woulde like his grace to take the croune vpon hym, they would humbly beseche hym therunto, and if he woulde geue theim a resolute aunswer to the contrarye (whiche they would bee lothe to here) then muste they seke and should not fayle to fynde some other noble man that would. These woordes muche moued the protectoure, whiche as euery manne of small intelligēce maye wyt would neuer haue enclyned thereto, but when he sawe there was none other waye but that he muste take it, or els he and his bothe to go from it, he sayde to the lordes and commōs, sith it is we perceaue well that all the realme is so set (wherof we be very sory) that they wyll not suffre in any wyse kyng Edwardes lyne to gouerne theim, whome no manne earthly can gouerne agaynste their owne wylles: And we also perceaue that no manne is there, to whome the croune can by so iuste tytle appertayne

as to our selfe, as very right heire lawfully begotten of the body of our moste dread and dere father Rychard late duke of Yorke, to which title is now ioyned your election, the nobles & commõs of the realme, whiche we of all tytles possible take moste effectuall, we be content and agree fauourably to enclyne to your petition & request, and accordyng to thesame, here we take vpon vs the royall estate of preheminence and kyngdome of the two noble realmes, Englande and Fraunce, the one frõ this daye forwarde by vs and oure heyres to rule, gouerne and defende, the other by Goddes grace and your good helpe to get agayne, subdewe and establyshe for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of Englande, thaduauncement wherof we neuer aske of God lenger to lyue then we entende to procure and set foorth. With this there was a greate crye and showte, cryng kyng Richard, and so the lordes went vp to the kyng, and so he was after ỹ daye called. But the people departed talkyng diuersly of the matter, euery manne as his fantasie gaue hym, but muche thei merueled of this maner of dealyng, that the matter was on bothe partes made so straunge as thoughe neuer the one parte communed with the other parte therof before, whẽ they wyst that there was no man so dul that heard theim, but he perceaued well ynoughe that all the matter was made betwene theim: Howbeit, some excused that agayne, saiyng: all thyng muste bee done in good ordre, and men must sometyme for ỹ maner sake not be acknowẽ what thei knowe. For at the consecracion of a byshop, euery manne perceaueth by payment of his bulles that he entẽdeth

to

to bee one, yet when he is twise asked whyther he wilbe a byshop, he must saye naye, and at the third tyme take it vpon hym as compelled therto by his owne wyll. And in a stage playe, the people knowe right well that he that playeth the sowdane is per case a sowter, yet yf one of acquayntaunce perchaunce of lytle nurture should call hym by his name while he standeth in his maiestie, one of his tourmentours might fortune breake his hed for marryng ỹ playe. And so they sayde, these matters be kynges games, as it were staige playes, and for the mooste parte played vpon scaffoldes, in which poore men be but lookers on, and they that wise be wyll medle no ferther, for they ỹ steppe vp wt theim whē they can not playe their partes they disorder the playe and do theim selues no good.

¶Rychard the third.

RYCHARD THE THIRDE of that name, vsurped the croune of England, and opēly tooke vpō hym to be kyng the .xix. daye of June, in the yere of our Lord, a thousand foure hundreth and .lxxxiii, & in the .xxv. yere of Lewes the xi. then beyng Frenche kyng, and with greate solempnitee rode to Westmynster, and there sate in the seate royall, and called before hym the iudges of the realme, streyghtly commaundynge theim to execute the lawe without fauoure or delaye, with many good exhortacions (of the which he folowed not one) and then he departed towarde the abbaye and at the churche dooze he was met with processiō, and by the abbot to hym was delyuered the sceptre of saint Edward, & so went & offred to saint Edwardes shryne, whyle ỹ monkes sange *Te deum* with a faynt courage, and from the churche he returned to the palayce, where he lodged tyll the coronacion. And to bee sure of all enemyes (as he thought) he sent for .v. thousande menne of ỹ north against his coronacion, whiche came vp euell apparelled and worsse harnepssed, in rustie harneys, neyther defensable nor scoured to the sale, whiche mustered in fynesbury felde, to the great disdayne of all the lokers on.

The fourth daye of July he came to ỹ towre by water

Kyng Richard the thirde.

water with his wife, and the fyfte daye he created Thomas Lorde Haward, duke of Norffolke & syr Thomas Haward his soonne he created Earle of Surrey, and Willyam lorde Barkeley was then created erle of Notyngham, and Fraunces lorde Louell was then made Vicount Louell and the kynges chaumberlayne, and the lorde Stanley was deliuered out of warde for feare of his sonne the lorde Straunge, whiche was then in Lancasshyre gatheryng menne (as menne saied) and the saied lorde was made Stuard of the kynges housholde, likewyse the archbyshoppe of Yorke was deliuered, but Morton bishop of Ely was deliuered to the duke of Buckingham to kepe in warde whiche sent hym to his manoure of Brecknoke in Wales, from whence he escaped to kyng Richardes confusyon. The same nighte the kyng made. xvii. knightes of the bathe. The nexte day he rode throughe Londõ with great pompe, & in especiall the duke of Buckinghã was richely appareled & his horse trapped in blewe veluet enbroudered w̃ ỹ naues of cartes burning of golde, whiche trapper was borne by footemẽ frõ ỹ grounde, w̃ suche asolẽpne fassyon ỹ all menne muche regarded it.

On ỹ morowe being the. vi. day of July ỹ kyng came toward his coronaciõ into Westminster hal where his chapell & all the prelates mytred receaued hym. And so they in ordre of processyon passed forward. After ỹ procession folowed therle of Northumberlãd with a pointlesse sweard naked, & the lorde Stanley bare the Mace of ỹ constableship, The erle of Kent bare the second swerd on ỹ right hand of the kyng naked. The lord Louell bare an

other

other swerd on ỹ lefte hand. Then folowed ỹ duke of Suffolke with the Sceptre, and therle of Lincolne with ỹ balle and crosse. After theim folowed the newe Erle of Surrey with the swerd of estate in a riche skabard. On the ryght side of hym went the duke of Norffolke bearing ỹ croune, then folowed kyng Richard in a Circot and robe of purple veluet vnder a canabie borne by the barones of ỹ fyue portes, going betwene ỹ bisshoppes of Bathe and Duresme. The duke of Buckingham with ỹ rod of the high stuard of Englande bare the kynges traine. After hym folowed the erle of Huntingdon, bearing the quenes sceptre, and the Vicount Lisle, bearing the rod with the doue. And the erle of Wilshere bare the quenes croune. Then folowed quene Anne doughter to Richard erle of Warwike in robes lyke to the kyng, betwene two bysshoppes, and a canabie ouer her hed, borne by the Barones of the portes. On her hed a rich coronal set with stones and pearle. After her folowed the countesse of Richmond heire to ỹ duke of Somerset, whiche bare vpỹ quenes traine. After folowed the duchesse of Suffolke and Norffolke with cõtesses baronesses, ladies, & many faire gentilweme in this ordre they passed thorough the palaice & entred ỹ abbay at the west end, & so came to their seates of estate. And after diuerse sõges solẽply song they both discended to the high altare & were shifted from their robes, & had diuerse places open frõ the middle vpward, in whiche places they were anointed. Then both the kyng & the quene chaunged theim into cloth of gold & ascended to their seates, where the cardinal of Cauntourburie & other

bisshoppes

byshoppes theim crouned accordyng to ỹ custome of the realme, geuing hym ỹ scepter in the left hãd and the balle w̃ the crosse in the ryght hand, & the quene had ỹ sceptre in her right hand, & the rod w̃ the doue in the left hand. On euery side of ỹ kyng stode a duke, & before hym stode therle of Surrey with the swerd in his handes. And on euery side of the quene stãding a bishop & a ladie kneling. The Cardinal song masse, & after pax, the kyng & the quene discended, & before the high altare they wer bothe houseled w̃ one hoste, deuyded betwene thẽ After masse finished, they bothe offred at saint Edwardes shrine, & there the kyng lefte the croune of saint Edward, and put on his owne crowne. And so in ordre as they came, they departed to westminster hal, & so to their chambres for a ceasõ, duryng which time the duke of Norffolke came into ỹ hal his horse traped to the ground in cloth of gold as high mershall, and voided the hall.

About .iiii. of ỹ clocke the kyng & quene entred the halle, and the kyng sate in the middle, and the quene on the left hand of the table, & on euery side of her stoode a countesse holding a clothe of pleasaunce, when she list to drinke. And on ỹ right hãd of the kyng sat the byshop of Cauntourbury, the ladies sat all on one side in the middle of the hall. And at the table againste theim sat the Chauncelloure and all the lordes. At the table next the cupborde sate the Maire of London. And at the table behinde the lordes, sate the Barones of the portes And at the other bordes sate noble and worshypfull personages. When all persones wer sette, the the duke of Norffolke, earle Mershal, the earle of

Surrey

Surrey constale for that daye, the lorde Stanley lorde Steward, Sir willyam Hopton treasourer, and sir Thomas Percie comptroller came in and serued the kyng solemplye with one dishe of golde and another of syluer. And the quene all in gylte vessell, and the bishop all in siluer. At the seconde course came into ỹ hall, sir Robert Democke the kynges champion, making a proclamacion, that whosoeuer woulde saye that kyng Richarde was not lawfullye kyng, he woulde fight with hym at the vtteraunce, and threwe downe his gauntlet, & thẽ all the hall cried kyng Richard. And so he did in three partes of the halle, and then one broughte hym a cup of wyne couered, & when he had dronke he caste oute the drinke, & departed with the cuppe After that the heraulde cryed alargesse thryse in the halle, & so went vp to their staige. At the ende of diner, the Mayre of London serued the kyng & quene with swete wyne, and had of eche of theim a cuppe of golde with a couer of gold. And by that tyme that all was done, it was darkenight. And so the kyng retourned to his chaumbre, and euery man to his lodging. When this feaste was thus fynesshed, the kyng sente home all the lordes into their countrees that woulde departe, excepte the lorde Stanley, whome he reteyned tyll he hearde what his soonne the lorde straunge wente aboute And to suche as wente home, he gaue streyghte charge and cõmaundement to see their countryes well ordred, and ỹ no wronge nor extorcion should bee done to his subiectes. And thus he taught other to execute iustice & equite, the contrary whereof he daylye espercysed, he also with greate rewardes

des geuen to the Northrenmenne whyche he sent for to hys coronation, sente theim home to theyre country wyth greate thanckes. Whereof dyuerse of theim, (as they all be of nature verye gredye of authorite, and specyally whē they thynke to haue any confortе or fauoure,) tooke on them so hyghly and wroughte such maistreis, that ỹ kyng was fayne to ryde thether in hys fyrste yere, and to put some in execution, and staye the countrye, or elles no small myschecheфe had ensued.

Nowe after thys tryumphante coronation, there fell myschiefes thycke & thicke, as the thing euell gotten is neuer well kepte, so through al the tyme of hys vsurped reygne, neuer ceased theyre quel, murder, death & slaughter tyll his owne destruccion ended it. But as he fynished wt the best deathe and mooste ryghtwyse, that is to saye hys owne, so beganne he wyth the mooste pyteous and wycked, I meane the lamentable murther of his innocente nephewes, the yonge kynge and hys tender brother, whose death and fortune hath neuertheless so farre come in questyon that some remayned long in doubte whether they were in his dayes destroyed or not. For ỹ Parkin Warbek by many folkes malyce, & mo folkes folye so long space abusynge the worlde, was aswell wt princeis as wt poore people reputed & taken for the younger of these two. But for that also that all thynges were so couertly demeaned, one thynge pretēted and another mente, that there was nothynge so playne and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of close and couert dealyng, mē

had

had it euer inwardly suspect, as many well counterfet iewelles make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concernyng that opinion menne maye see the conueighaunce therof in the lyfe of the noble pryncē kyng Henry the seuēth, in the proceſſe of Parkyn. But in the meane ceason, for this present matter I shall reherse to you the dolorous ende of these two babes, not after euery way that I haue heard but after that waye that I haue so heard by suche menne and suche meanes as me thynketh it to be heard but it should be true.

How and after what maner the two sōnes of king Edward were destroyed.

Kyng Rychard after his coronacion, takynge his waye to Gloucestre, to visyte in his newe honoure the toune, of whiche he bare the name of olde, deuysed as he roade to fulfyll that thynge which he before had intended. And forasmuche as his mynde gaue hym that his nephewes lyuyng, men woulde not recon that he coulde haue right to the realme, he thought therfore without delaye to ryd theim, as though the kyllyng of his kynsmen might ende his cause, and make hym kyndely kyng. Wherupon he sent John Grene, whome he specially trusted, to syr Roberte Brakenburye constable of the towre, with a lettre and credence also, that thesame Syr Robert in any wise should put the two chyldren to death. This John Grene dyd his errand to Syr Robert Brakenbury knelyng before our ladye in the towre, who playnelye aūswered that he would neuer put theim to death to dye therfore. With the whiche aunswer Grene returned, recountyng thesame to kynge Rychard at Warwike yet on his iourneye, wherewith he toke suche displeasure & thought, ỹ thesame night he

he sayed to a secrete page of his. "Ah, whome shall a manne truste: they that I haue broughte vp my selfe, they that I went would haue moste surely serued me, euen those fayle me, and at my cõmaunde ment wyll doo nothing for me." "Syr" q the page, there lyeth one in ỹ palet chaumbre without, that I dare well saye, to doode youre grace pleasure, the thing were ryght heard that he would refuse," meaning this by James Tirell, whiche was a manne of goodly personage, and for the gyftes of nature worthie to haue serued a muche better prince, if he had well serued God, and by grace obteyned to haue asmuche treweth and good wyll, as he had strengthe and wyll.

The manne had an hyghe hearte and sore longed vpwarde, not rysyng yet so faste as he had hoped, beynge hyndred and kepte vnder by syr Rychard Ratcliffe and sir willyam Catesbye, which longing for no more parteners of the Princes fauoure, namely not for him, whose pride they knew woulde beare no pere, kept hym by secrete driftes oute of all secrete trust, which thing this page had well marked and knowen, wherfore, this occasion offred, of verye speciall frendshippe se his tyme to set hym forwarde, and by suche wyse to doode hym good, that all the enemies that he had (excepte the deuell) coulde neuer haue dooen hym so muche hurte and shame, for vpon the pages woordes kynge Rychard arose, for this communicacyon had he sytting on a draste, a conuenyente carpet for suche a counsaile, and came oute into the palette chaumbre, where he dyd fynde in bedde

the

the sayd James Tyrell and syr Thomas Tyrell of persone like and brethren of blood, but nothyng of kynne in condicions. Then sayde ỹ kyng merely to theim, what syrs, be you in bed so sone? & called vp James Tyrell, and brake to hym secretely his mynde in this myscheuous matter, in ỹ which he coũde hym nothyng straunge. Wherfore on the morowe he sent hym to Brakenburye with a lettre by the whiche he was commaunded to delyuer to the sayde James all the keyes of the towre for a night, to thende that he might there accomplysshe the kynges pleasure in suche thynges as he there had geuen hym in commaundement. After which lettre delyuered and the keyes receaued, James appoynted the nexte nyght ensuynge to destroye theim, deuysyng before & preparyng the meanes.

The prince assone as the protectoure tooke vpõ hym to bee kyng, and left the name of protectoure, was therof aduertised and shewed, that he should not reygne but his vncle should haue the croune At whiche woorde the prynce sore abashed beganne to sighe and sayed: "Alas I woulde myne vncle woulde lette my haue me lyfe althoughe I lese my kyngdome." Then he that tolde hym the tale vsed hym with good woordes and put hym in the best conforte that he coulde, but forthwith he and his brother were both shut vp, and all other remoued from theim, one called blacke Wyll, and wyllyam slaughter only excepte, whiche were sette to serue theim, and .iiii. other to see theim sure. After whiche tyme, the prince neuer tyed his poyntes nor any thyng rought of hym selfe, but with that young babe his brother lyngered in thought and

heuynesse

heuenysse, till their trayterous death deliuered theim of that wretchednesse.

For James Tirrell deuised that thei should be murthered in their beddes, and no bloode shed, to therecuciõ wherof he apointed Myles Forest one of the foure that before kepte theim, a feloe fleshe bred in murther before tyme: and to him he ioyned one Jhon Dighton his awne horskeper, a bygge broade square & strong knaue. Then all the other beyng remoued from theim, this Myles Forest & Jhon Dighton aboute mydnight the children beyng in their beddes, came into the chaumbre and sodenly lapped theim vp emongest the clothes & so bewrapped theim and entangled theim, kepyng downe by force the fetherbed and pyllowes heard vnto their mouthes, ỹ within awhile thei smored and stysled theim, and their brethes faylyng thei gaue vp to God their innocent soules into ỹ ioyes of heauen, leauyng to the tourmẽtoures their bodyes dedde in the bed, whiche after ỹ wretches perceaued, first by ỹ strugglyng, with ỹ panges of death, & after long lyng still to be throughly dedde, thei laied the bodyes out vpon ỹ bed, and fetched James Tirrell to se theim, whiche when he sawe theim perfightly ded, he caused the murtherers to burie theim at the stayre foote metely depe in the grounde vnder a greate heape of stones.

The murtherynge of kynge Edward his children.

Thẽ rode James Tirrell in great hast to kyng Rychard and shewed hym all the maner of ỹ murther, who gaue hym greate thankes, and as mẽne saye, there made hym knight, but he alowed not their buriall in so vyle a corner, saiyng ỹ he would haue theim buryed in a better place, because thei

were a kynges soonnes. Lo the honourable cou-
rage of a kyng, for he would recompence a detesta
ble murther with a solempne obsequy. Wherupō
a preest of sir Robert Brakenburyes tooke theim
vp and buried theim in suche a place secretly as by
the occasion of his death (whiche was verie shor-
tlye after) whiche onely knewe it, the very truthe
could neuer yet bee very well & perfighly knowen
For some saie that kyng Rychard caused ỹ preest
to take theim vp & close theim in lead & put theim
in a coffine full of holes hoked at ỹ endes with .ii.
hokes of yron, & so to caste them into a place called
ỹ Blacke depes at ỹ thamis mouth, so ỹ thei shuld
neuer rise vp nor bee seen again. This was ỹ very
truth vnknowē by reason that ỹ said preste dyed so
shortly & disclosed it neuer to any persone ỹ would
vtter it. And for a truthe, when sir James Tirrell
was in the towre for treason committed to kyng
Hēry the seuenth: bothe he and Dighton were exa
mined together of this poynte, & bothe thei confes-
sed the murther to bee dooen in thesame maner as
you haue hearde, whether ỹ bodies were remoued
thei bothe affirmed thei neuer knewe. And thus as
I haue learned of theim ỹ muche knewe and litle
cause had to lye, wer these .ii. noble princes, these in
nocēt tēdre childrē, borne of ỹ moste royall blood &
brought vp i great welth, likely lōge to liue, to rei
gne & rule in ỹ realme, by treyterous tirāny taken
& depriued of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison
& priuely slain & murderd by ỹ cruell ambicion of
their vnnaturall vncle & dispiteous tourmētours
whiche thynges on euery part well pōdered, God
gaue this worlde neuer a more notable exsample,

either

either I what vnsurety stādeth this worldes weale or what mischief worketh ỹ proud entrepryse of an high hearte, or finally what wretched ende ensueth suche dispiteous crueltie? For first to begynne wt ỹ ministres, Miles Forest, at S. Martines le graūd by peace meale miserablye rotted awaye, Jhon Dighto liued at Caleys long after, no lesse disdeined & hated then poynted at, & there dyed in great misery. But sir James Tirrell was beheded at the towre hill for treason. And kyng Richard hymselfe was slain in ỹ feelde hacked and hewed of his enemies handes, haried on a horsbacke naked beyng ded, his heare in dispite torne & tugged like a curre dogge. And the mischeif ỹ he toke wtin lesse then thre yeres, of the mischief ỹ he did in thre monethes be not comperable, & yet all ỹ meane tyme spēt in much trouble & pein outward, & much feare dread & anguish wtin. For I haue heard by credible persons of suche as were secret wt his chaūberers ỹ after this abhominable dede dooē he neuer was quiet in his minde, he neuer thought hymselfe sure where he wēt abrode, his bodie preuely feinted, his eyen wherled about, his hand euer on his dagger his countenaunce & maner like alwayes to stryke again, he toke eiuill rest on nightes, laye long wakyng & musyng, forweried with care & watche, rather slōbred thē slept, troubled wt fearfull dreames sodeinly some tyme stert vp, leapt out of his bed & and looked aboute the chambres, so was his restlesse hearte contynually tossed and toumbled with the tedious inpression & stormy remēbraūce of his abhominable murther and erreable tiraunie.

And shortely after he was vnquieted by a con-

spiracie,or rather a confederacie betwene the duke of Buckynghm & many other gentlemen against hym,as ye shall here the next yere .But the occasiõ why the duke and the kyng fell oute,is of dyuerse folke dyuerse wyse pretended . This duke as you haue heard before, assone as the duke of Gloucester after the death of kyng Edward was come to Yorke,& there had solempne funerall seruice dooen for kyng Edward , sent to hym a secrete seruaunt of his called Persall , with suche messages as you haue heard before.And after ỹ duke of Buckyngham came with thre hundred horsse to Northampton and still continued with hym,as partener and chief organe of all his deuices till after his coronacion, thei departed to all semyng verye frendes at Gloucestre . From whence assone as the duke came home , he so highly turned from hym and so highly conspired against hym,that a mãne would meruell wherof ỹ chaũge grewe in so shorte space. Some sate this occasyon was, ỹ a litle before ỹ coronacion,ỹ duke required the kyng emõgest other thynges to bee restored to the Erle of Herffordes lãdes.And forasmuche as the title whiche he claymed by inherytaunce , was somewhat interlaced with the title of Lancaster , whiche house made a title to the croune , and enioyed thesame three dyscentes, as all menne knewe,till the house of Yorke depryued the third kyng , whiche was Henry the sixte. Kyng Rychard somewhat mistrusted & conceaued suche an indignacion that he reiected the dukes request, with many spitefull and minotary woordes, whiche so wounded the dukes hearte wh hatred and mistrust , that he could neuer after endure

dure to looke ryght on kyng Rychard, but euer feared his owne lyfe, so farre forth that when the protectoure should ryde to his coronacion, feigned hymselfe sycke, because he would dooe hym no honoure. And the other takyng it in euell parte sente hym woorde to ryse and ryde or he would make hym to be caryed. Wherupō gorgeously apparelled and sumptcously trapped with burnyng carte nayes of golde embrodered, he roade before the kyng through London with an euell wyll and woorsse heart. And ỹ notwithstandyng, he roase ỹ daye of the coronacion from the feaste, feignyng hym selfe sycke, whiche kyng Richarde sayde was dooē in hate and spight of hym. And therfore men sayd that eche of theim euer after lyued cōtynually in suche hatred and dystrust of other, that the duke looked verelye to haue bene murthered at Glouceſtre, frō whiche he in fayre maner departed but surely suche as were right secrete with bothe, affyrme all this to be vntrue, and other wyse mēne thynke it vnlykely, the depe dyssymulyng nature of bothe these menne well consydered. And what nede in that grene woorld the protectoure hadde of the duke, and in what perell the duke stoode yf he fell once in suspycion of that tyrannte, that other ỹ protectoure would geue the duke occasyon of dyspleasure, or the duke the protectoure occasyon of mystrust. And surely menne thynke, that if kyng Rychard hadde any suche opynyon conceaued in hym, he would neuer haue suffred hym to aduoyd his handes or escape his power, but verye true it is, that the duke of Buckyngham was an high mynded man, & euell could beare the glorye of an-

other, so that I haue heard of some that sawe it. ¶ he at suche tyme that the croune was set vpon the protectoures hedde, his yie could neuer abyde the sight therof, but wryed his hed another waye, but men sayde he was not well at ease, and that was both to kyng Richard well knowen and well take nor any demaunde of the dukes request vncurteously reiected, but gentelye deferred, but bothe he with greate giftes and high behestes in moste louyng and trustie maner departed from the kyng to Gloucester. But sone after his comming home to Brecknocke, hauyng there by kyng Richardes commaundemēt doctour Wooxton byshop of Ely who before as you haue heard was taken at the councell at the towre, waxed with hym very familyer, whose onlye wysedome abused his pryde to his owne delyueraunce & the dukes dystruccion. The byshop was a man of great natural wyt, bexye well learned and of honourable behaueoure, lackyng no wyse wayes to wynne fauour. He was fyrst vpon the parte of kyng Henry, whyle ỳ parte was in wealth, and neyther left it nor forsoke it in no woo, but fled the realme with the quene and the prince. And while kyng Edward had kyng Henry in prison, he neuer returned but to the felde at Barnet. After whiche felde losse & vtterly subdued & al parte takynges extynguished, kyng Edward for his fast faythe and wysedome, was not onelye cōtent to receaue hym but also wooed hym to come and had hym frō thensforth both in secrete trust & specyall fauoure, whom he nothyng deceaued. For he beyng after kyng Edwardes death fyrst taken by the tyraunt for his truthe to the kynge, founde

the

meane to sette the duke in his toppe, and ioyned gentlemen together in ayde of the erle of Richemounde, whiche after was named kyng Henrye the seuenth. Fyrst deuysyng the maryage betwene the ladye Elizabeth daughter to kynge Edwarde the fourthe, by the whiche his faythfull & true seruyce declared to both his masters at once, was, wt infinite benefite to ye realme, by the coniunccion of the bloddes of Lancastre and Yorke, whose funerall tytles had longe inquyeted the realme. This manne afterwarde escaped from the duke and fled the realme, and went to Rome, neuer myndyng to medle with the worlde, tyl kyng henry the seuenth sent for hym, and after made hym archebyshop of Cauntorbury and chauncelour of Englande and after was made cardinall, and lyued well to all mennes iudgementes and dyed well. But to retourne to ye former purpose, he by the long & often alternate proffe, aswel of prosperytee as aduerse of fortune, had gotten by great experience the verey mother & mastresse of wysedome, a depe insight in pollytike worldlye driftes, whereby perceauynge nowe ye duke to cõmen with hym, fed hym wt fayre woordes and many pleasaunt prayses, and perceauyng by the grefe of their communicacions the dukes pryde nowe and then to balke oute a lytle brayde of enuye towarde the glorye of the kynge, and thereby feelynge hym easye to fall oute yf the matter were well handled, he craftely soughte the wayes to pryncke hym forwarde, takynge alwayes the occasyon of hys commynge, and also keepynge hymselfe cloose wythin hys bandes, that he rather semed to folowe hym then to

leade hym. For when the duke beganne fyrste to prayse and boaste the kyng and shewe how muche profite the realme should take by his reigne. Byshoppe Morton aunswered, surely my lorde, folye it were for me to lye, for I am sure yf I woulde swere the contrarye ye would not once beleue me, but yf the worlde would haue begone as I would haue wyshed, that kyng Henryes soonne had had the croune and not kynge Edwarde, then woulde I haue bene his true and faythfull subiecte, but after that God had ordeyned hym to lose it, and kyng Edwarde to reigne, I was neuer so madde with a dead manne to stryue agaynst the quycke, so was I euer to kynge Edwarde a faythfull and true chapeleyn, and gladde would haue bene that his children shoulde haue succeded hym, howbeit yf the secrete iudgemente of God haue otherwyse prouyded, I purpose not to spurne agaynste the prycke, nor laboure to set vp that God pulleth downe. And as for the late protectoure and nowe kyng, and with that woorde he left, sauynge that he saide that he hadde alreadye medled to muche with the worlde, and would from that daye medle with his booke and bedes, and no ferther. Then longed the duke sore to heare what he woulde haue sayde, because he ended with the kynge, and there so sodeynlye stopped, and exhorted hym familyerly, betwene theim bothe to bee bolde and to saye whatsoeuer he thought, whereof he faythfullye promysed there shoulde neuer come hurte, and paraduenture more good then he woulde were. And that he hym selfe entended to vse hys faythfull secrete aduyce and counsayle, which

he

Vane. edit. alt.

he sayed was the onlye cause for the whyche he procured of the kynge to haue hym in hys custodye, where he myghte recon hym selfe at home, or elles he hadde bene putte in the handes of theim wyth whome he shoulde not haue founde lyke fauoure. The bishoppe right humblye thanked hym and sayed, in good faythe my lorde, I loue not muche to talke of pynces as of a thynge not all oute of perell, although the woorde bee without faute, but as it pleaseth the prince to construe it. And euer I thynke on Isopes tale, that when the Lyon had proclayned that on payne of deathe there shoulde no horned beastes come into the wood, one beaste that had a bonche of flesche growing oute of his hedde, fledde a greate pace: the fore that sawe hym flye with all the haste, asked hym whether he fledde? In fayth qd he, I neither wote ne recke so I were once hence, because of the proclamacyon made agaynste horned beastes. What foole qd the fore, the Lyon neuer ment it by the, for that whiche thou haste is no horne in thy hedde. No mary qd he, I wote that well ynoughe, but yf he saye it is a horne, where am I then? The duke laughed merely at the tale & saied, my lorde I warraunte you, neither the Lyon nor the boye shall pycke any matter at any thyng here spoken, for it shall neuer come nere their eares. In good faythe syr saied the Byshoppe, yf it dyd, the thyng that I was aboute to saye taken aswell as before God I mente, it coulde deserue but thanke, and yet taken as I wene it would, myghte happen to turne me to lytle good and you to lesse.

Then longed the duke muche more to wete what

it

tt was, wherupon the byshop saied. In good faith my lord, as for the late protectoure, sith he is now kyng in possessyon I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the welthe of this realme, whereof his grace hathe nowe the gouernaunce, and wherof I my selfe am a poore membre, I was aboute to wysh that to those good habilitees wherof he hath already righte many, litle nedyng my prayse, yet mighte it haue pleased God for the better store to haue geuen hym some of suche other excellent vertues mete for the rule of the realme, as oure Lord hath planted in the, persone of your grace, & there lefte of againe. Of whiche woordes the duke perceauyng that the byshop bare vnto hym his good hearte and fauoure, mystrusted not to entre more plaine cõmunicacion with hym, so farre, that at ỹ laste the byshoppe declared hym selfe to bee one of theim that would gladly helpe that Richard who then vsurped the croune mighte bee deposed, if he had knowen howe it myghte conuenientely bee broughte to passe ỹ suche a persone as had true title of inheritaunce vnto the same, might bee restored therunto. Upon this the saied duke, knowing the bishoppe to bee a manne of prudence and fidelitee opened to hym all his whole hart and entent saying, my lorde I haue deuised ỹ waye howe the bloodde both of kyng Edward and of kyng Henry the syxte, that is lefte, beyng coupled by maryage and affinitee maye bee restored vnto ỹ croune being by iuste and true title due vnto theim both, (for kyng Richard he called not ỹ brother of kyng Edwarde the fourth, but his enemye and mortall foe). The waye that the Duke had deuysed was

this

this, that they shoulde with all spede and celerytee kynde meanes to sende for Henry earle of Richmounte (whome the rumoure wente immediatlye vpon knowledge of kynge Edwardes deathe to haue bene deliuered oute of prysone with Fraunces Duke of Brytaine) & the same Henry to helpe with all their power and strength, so that the saied Henry woulde fyrste by his feithfull othe, promise that ymmediatly vpon obteigning the croune, he woulde mary and take to wyfe Elyzabeth the elder doughter of Edward the fourth. The byshop of Ely ryghte well alowed bothe the deuyce and purpose of the duke, and also the maner and waye howe the matter shoulde bee brought to effecte, and founde meanes that Reynold Brye seruaũt with Margarete mother of the saied Henry, then maried to Thomas Stanley, came to the duke in to Wales, and the dukes mynde throughlye perceaued and knowen, with greate spede retourned to the saied Margarete, aduertisyng the same of all thinges which betwene the duke and hym concerning aswell the cõmon weale of the realme, as also the aduauncemente of her and her bloodde had been debated.

Nowe it came so to passe that the duke of Buckyngham and the ladye Margaret mother to the saied Henrye, had bene in communicacyon of the same matter before, and that the saied lady Margarete had deuised the same meane and waye for the deposycion of kynge Rycharde and bringyng in of Henry her sonne, the whiche the Duke nowe brake vnto the byshop of Ely, wherupon there rested no more, forasmuche as she perceaued ỹ duke

nowe

nowe willyng to prosecute and further the sayed deuice, but that she should fynde the meanes that this matter myghte bee broken vnto Quene Elizabeth the wyfe of kyng Edwarde the fourthe then beynge in the Sanctuarye. And hereupon she caused one Lewes that was her physicyan in his owne name, and as thoughe it came of hym selfe to breake this matter vnto the quene, saying, that yf she would consent and agree therunto, a meane might bee founde howe to restore agayne ỹ blood of kyng Edwarde and kyng Henrye the syxte vnto the croune, and to bee aduenged of kynge Richarde for the murther of kyng Edwardes chyldren, and then declared that there was beyonde ỹ see Henry Earle of Richemounte, whiche was of the blood of Henry the sixte, whome yf she woulde be content ỹ he marye Elizabeth her eldest doughter, there shoulde of his syde bee made righte many frendes, and she for her parte myghte helpe in lyke maner, wherby no doubte it shoulde come to passe that he shoulde possesse the croune by moost rightfull inheritaunce. Whiche matter when she heard it, it liked her excedingly well, in somuch as she counceled the saied phisicyan to breake ỹ same vnto his maistresse the ladye Margaret & knowe her mynde therein, promisyng vpon her woorde that she would make all the frendes of kyng Edwarde to take parte with the sayed Henrye yf he woulde be swoorne that when he came to the possessyon of the croune, he woulde immediately take in maryage Elyzabeth her eldest doughter, or elles yf she lyued not that tyme, that then he would take Cicile her yongest doughter

Wherupon

Whereupon the sayde Lewes retourned vnto the ladye Margarete hys maystresse declarynge vnto her the whole mynd and entent of the quene So that thē it was shortly agreed betwene these two wemen, that wyth al spede thys matter shold be set forwarde, in so much that the lady Margarete brake thys matter vnto Reynolde Bray wyllynge hym to moue and set forwarde the same wt all suche as he shoulde perceaue eyther hable to doo good or wyllynge thereunto. Then had the quene deuysed, that one Chrystopher (whome the foresayde Lewes the Physicyan had promoted into her seruyce) shoulde bee sente into Brytayne to Henrye to geue hym knowledge of theyr myndes here, and that he shoulde prepare and apoynt hym selfe redye and to come into Wales, where he shoulde fynde ayde and helpe ynough ready to receaue hym.

But then shortly after yt came vnto her knowledge that the Duke of Buckingham had of him selfe afore entended the same matter, whereupon she thoughte yt should be mete to sende some messenger of more reputacyon and credyte then was thys Chrystopher, and so kepte hym at home, and then sente Hughe Conewaye wyth a greate some of monye, wyllynge hym to declare vnto Henrye all thynges, and that he should hast hym to come and to lande in Wales as is aforesayde. And after hym one Rycharde Guilforde oute of Kente sente one Thomas Ramey wyth the same message, the whyche two messengers came in maner bothe at one tyme into Brytayn to the Earle Henrye, and declared vnto hym all theyr commyssiōs

The

The whiche message when Henry had perceaued and throughly heard, it reioysed his harte, and he gaue thankes vnto God fully purposyng with al conuenyente spede to take his iourney towardes England, desiryng the aide and helpe of the duke of Bryttayne, with promise of thanckfull recompence when God should sende hym to come to his ryghte. The duke of Britayne notwithstanding that he had not longe after been required by Thomas Hutton purposely sent to hym from kyng Richard in message with monye efte sones to imprisone the saied Henry erle of Richemoũt, and there continually to kepe and holde the same frome cõminge into Englande, yet with all gladnesse and fauoure inclined to the desyre of Henry and aided hym as he might with menne, monye, shypes and other necessaryes. But Henry whyle he might accordynglye appoynte and furnyshe hym selfe, remayned in Bryttayne sendyng afore the foresayde Hughe Conеway and Thomas Ramney, whiche two were to hym very trewe and faithful to beare tidynges into Englande vnto his frendes of his commynge, to the ende that they myghte prouydentlye ordre all thynges aswell for the commodyous receauynge of hym at his commynge, as also foreseynge suche daungers as myghte befalle, and aduoydinge suche trappes and snares as by Rycharde the thyrde and hys complyces myght bee sette for hym and for all his other company that he should bryng with hym.

In the meane tyme, the frendes of Henrye with all care, studye, and dilygence wroughte all thynges vnto their purpose belongynge.

And

And thoughe all this were as secretlye wrought and conueyed as emonge so greate a nombre was possible to be, yet prpuye knowledge therof came to the eares of kyng Rychard, who althoughe he were at the firste hearynge muche abasshed, yet thought best to dyssemble the matter as thoughe he had no knowledge therof, whyle he myghte secretly gather vnto hym power and strengthe, and by secrete spyall emonge the people get more perfyght knowledge of the whole matters and chiefe autoures & contryuers of thesame. And because he knewe be chiefe & princypal of theim, as vnto whō his owne conscience knewe that he hadde geuen moste iust causes of enemytee, he thought it necessary first of all to dyspatche thesame duke oute of the waye. Wherfore, vnto the duke he addressed letters enfarced and replenyshed with all humanytee, frendshippe, kamplyaritee and sweteneſſe of woordes, wyllyng and desyryng thesame to come vnto hym with all conuenyent spede. And ferther gaue in commaundemente to the messenger that caryed the letters that he shoulde in his behalfe make many high and gaye promyses vnto ỹ duke & by all gentle meanes persuade thesame to come vnto hym. But ỹ duke mystrustyng ỹ fayre woordes & promyses so sodenly offred of hym, of whose wylye craftes and meanes he knewe sondrye examples afore practised, desyred ỹ kynges perdon, excusyng hym self that he was desealed & sicke, and that he might be assertened ỹ if it possyble wer for hym to come, he would not absent hym self frō his grace. Thys excuse the kyng would not admitte, but eftsones directed vnto ỹ duke other letters of

a more

a more roughe sorte, not wythoute manacynge and threatenynge onlesse he woulde accordynge to hys dutye repayer vnto hym at hys callynge whereunto the duke plainely made aunswer that he woulde not come vnto him whom he knewe to be hys enemye. And immedyatelye the duke prepared hym selfe to make warre agaynst hym, and perswaded all hys complyces and partakers of hys intente wyth all possyble expedycion some in one place and some in another to sturre agaynste kynge Rycharde. And by thys meanes in maner at one tyme and houre, Thomas Marques of Dorcester reysed an armye wythin the countrye of Yorke, beyng hym selfe late come forthe of sanctuarye and by the meanes and helpe of Thomas Rowell preserued and saued frome perel of death Also in Deuonshyre, Edwarde Courtenay wyth hys brother Peter byshoppe of Excetter reysed in lyke maner an armye, and in Kent Rychard Guylford accompanied wyth certayn other gentylmen rayled vp the people as is aforesayde, & all thys was done in maner in one moment. But the kyng who had in ỹ meane tyme gathered together gret power & strẽgth thynkyng yt not to be best by pursuyng euery one of hys enemyes to dysparkle hys cõpaygnie in smal flokes, determyned to let passe all the others, & withal his whole puissaunce to set vpon the chiefe heade, that is to saye the Duke of Buckynghm̃, so takyng his iourneye from Londõ he went towardes Salisbury to thentent that he might sette vpon ỹ said duke in case he might haue perfight knowledge that ỹ same laye in any felde embatailed. And nowe was the kyng wythin twoo

dayes

dayes iourney of Salisbury when ỹ duke attemp
ted to mete hym, beyng accompaignied with great
strength of Welshmen, whom he had therunto en
forced & coherted, more by lordly commaundement
then by lybetall wages and hyre, whiche thyng in
deede was ỹ cause that thei fell from hym and for=
sooke hym. Wherfore beyng sodenly forsaken of
his menne, he was of necessite constrained to flee
in whiche dooyng, as a manne cast in sodeine, and
therfore greate feare, of this the sodeine chaunge
of fortune, & by reason of thesame feare, not know=
yng where to become, nor where to hyde his hed
nor what in suche case best to dooe, he secretly con=
ueighed hym self into the hous of Homffraye Ba=
nastar, in whom he had conceaued a sure hope and
confidence to finde faithfull and trustie vnto hym
because thesame had been & thē was his seruaunt,
entendyng there to remayne in secrete, vntill he
might either reise a newe armie or els by some me=
anes cōueigh hym self into Bryten to Henry erle
of Rychemount. But assone as theothers whiche
had attempted thesame entrepryse against ỹ kyng
had knowledge that the duke was forsaken of his
compaignie and fled and could not bee foūde, thei
beyng stryken with sodein feare, made euery māne
for hym self suche shift as he might, and beyng in
vtter despayre of their health and life, either gotte
theim to sāctuaryes or deserte places or els assaied
to escape ouer sea, & many of theim in deede arry=
ued sauely in Britain, emong whom were these
whose names ensue. Peter Gurteney bishop of
Exceter with his brother Edward erle of Deuon=
shire, Thomas marques of Dorcestre with his

Wm soonne

soonne Thomas beyng a verye yoũg chylde, Jhõ Bourshere, Jhon Welche, Edward Wooduyle a stoute manne of armes and brother to Elizabeth the quene, Robert Willoughby, Gyles Dawbeneye, Thomas Harondell, Jhon Cheiny with his twoo brethren, Wyllyam Berkeley, Wyllyam Brandõ with Thomas his brother, Rychard Edgecome, and all these for the moste parte knightes Also Jhon Halwell, Edwarde Poyntz an excellẽt good capitain & Chrystopher Urswicke, but Jhon Wooxton bishop of Ely at theself saine tyme together with sondrye of the nobles and gentlemen sailed into Flaundres.

But Richard the kyng, who was nowe come to Salisbury and had gotten perfight knowledge that all these parties sought to flie the realme, with all dyligence and hast that might bee, sent to all ỹ porte tounes theraboute to make sure steye that none of theim might passe vntaken, and made proclamacion ỹ whosoeuer would bryng hym knowledge where the duke of Buckynghm were to bee had, should haue for his rewarde, if he were a bõdeman, his fredome, and if he were fre, his pardon and besydes that, a thousand pounde of moneye.

Furthermoze because he vnderstode by Thomas Hutton newely retourned oute of Britein, of whom afore is mencioned, that Fraunces duke of Brytain, would not onelye holde Henry Erle of Rychmount in prisone for his sake, but also was readie to helpe thesame Henry with menne, money and shippes in all that he might against hym, he sette dyuerse and sondry shippes in places conuenyent by all the seacostes to Brytain ward, that if

Henry

Henry ſhould come that waye, he might either bee taken before his arriuall or els might bee kept frō landyng in any coaſte of England. And furthermore in euerie coaſte and corner of ỹ realme, laied wonderfull wayte and watche to take partely any other of his enemies, and ſpecially the ſaid duke of Buckynghm̄. Wherupon the ſaid Homfrey Banaſter (were it for mede or for loſyng his life and goodes,) diſcloſed hym vnto the kynges inquyſytours, who ymediatly tooke hym and foorthwith all, brought hym to Saliſbury where kyng Rychard was. The duke beyng dylygently examined confeſſed without any maner refuſall or ſtyckyng all ſuche thynges as he knewe, truſtyng that for his plain confeſſion he ſhould haue lybertee to ſpeake with the kyng, whiche he made moſte inſtaūt and humble petition that he might dooe. But aſſone as he had cōfeſſed his offence towardes kyng Rychard, he was oute of hande behedded. And this death ỹ duke receaued at the handes of kyng Rychard whom he had before holpen in his affayres and purpoſes beyonde all Gods forbode.

Whyle theſe thynges wer in hand in England Henry Erle of Richmount made readye his hoſte and ſtrength to the nombre of fiue thouſand Bretones and fiftene ſhippes, ỹ daye apoynted of his departure beyng nowe come, whiche was ỹ twelfe daye of the moneth of Octobre in the yere of our lorde God a thouſand foure hundred. lxxxiiii. and the ſeconde yere of ỹ reigne of kyng Richard and hauyng a fayre wynde, hoyſed vp the ſayles & ſetforwarde, but towarde the night came ſuche a tempeſt that thei were diſperſed one from another

some into Britain and some into Normandy. But the ship in whiche Henry was with one other ship, tossed all the night with the waues of the sea and tempest, when the morning came, it waxed somewhat calme and faire weder, and thei were come toward the South parte of England by a hauen or porte called Poole, where the said Henry sawe all the shores or bankes sette full of harnessedmen whiche were souldyours apoynted there to wayte, by kyng Rychard as we haue saied before, for the comyng & landyng of the erle. While Henry there abode he gaue commaundement, that no manne should land before ỹ comyng of theother shippes. And in the meane tyme that he wayted for theim, he sent a litle bote with a fewe in it a lād to knowe what thei were that stoode on the shore, his frēdes or enemies. To whom those souldyours beeyng before taught what thei should saie, aunswered that thei were the frendes of Henry and were appoynted by ỹ duke of Buckynghm̄ there to abide his commyng and to conducte hym to those castelles and holdes where his tentes, pauylyons and artillary for the warre laie, and where remayned for hym a greate power that entended nowe with all spede to set vpon kyng Rychard while he was nowe fled for feare and cleane without prouision, and therfore besought hym to come alande.

Henry suspectyng this to bee but fraude, after that he saw none of his shippes apered, hoysed vp the sailes, hauyng a meruelous good wynde euen apoynted hym of God to delyuer hym from that great ieopardy, and sayled backe agayn into Normandy. And after his landyng there, he and his

compaignie

compaignie after their labours, arested theim for the space of iii. dayes, determynyng to go from thence afoote into Brytayne, & in the meane while sent messengers vnto Charles the Frenche kynge the sonne of Lewes that a lytle before departed, besechyng hym of lybertee and lycence to passe thorough Normãdy into Brytayn. The young kyng Charles beeyng sory for his fortune, was not onlye ready and well pleased to graunt his passage, but also sent hym moneye to helpe hym foorthe in his iourneye. But Henry before that he knewe the kynges mynde (not doubtyng of his great humanytee and gentlenes) had sent awaye his shippes towardes Britayne and had set hym selfe forwardes in his iourneye, but made no greate haste tyll the messengers retourned, whiche greate gentlenes when he receaued from the kyng, reioysed his hearte and with a lustye stomacke and good hope set forwarde into Brytayne, there to take ferther counsayle of his affayres.

And when he was in Brytayn, he receaued frõ his frendes out of Englande knowledge that the duke of Buckyngham was behedded, and that the Marques of Dorcestre with a greate nombre of ỹ noble men of Englande had bene there a lytle before to seke hym, and that they wer now in Venett a cytie in Brytayne. The whiche thynges beynge knowen to the erle, he on the one parte did greately lament the death and cuel chaunce of his chiefe and principyall frende, but yet on the other parte he greatlye reioysed in that he had so many a noble menne to take his parte in the battayll. And therfore conceauynge a good hope and opinion

that his purpose shoulde well frame and come to passe, determyned with hym selfe with all expedycion to set foorthwarde, and therupon wente to a place in Brytayn called Rhedon, and from thence sent to the Marques with all the other noble men that they should come vnto hym. Then when they hearde that Henrye was safe returned into Brytayne reioysed not a lytle, for thei had thought he had landed in Englande, and so fallen into the handes of kyng Richarde, and they made not a lytle haste tyll they wer come vnto hym. The whiche when they met, after great ioye and gladnesse aswell of their parte as of his, they began to talke of their prepensed matters, and nowe was Christmasse come, on the whiche daye they altogether assembled in the churche and there sware fayth and truthe one to another. And Henry sware first, promysyng that assone as he should possesse ỹ croune of England, that he woulde marye Elyzabeth the doughter of Edward the.iiii. and afterwarde they sware feaultie & homage vnto hym euē as though he had already bene kyng, and so from that tyme foorthe dyd take hym, promysyng hym that thei would spende bothe their lyfes and goodes with hym, & that Richard should no lēger reigne ouer theim. When this was dooen, Henry declared all these thynges to the duke of Britayne, prayinge & desyryng hym nowe of helpe, and that he woulde ayde hym with a greater nombre of menne, & also to lende hym a frendly & honest somme of moneye that he might nowe recouer his right and enheritaunce of the croune of England, vnto ỹ which he was called & desyred by al the lordes & nobilitee of

Parkyd rouis
ned bi ofyce

the

the realme, & whiche (God wyllyng) he was moste assured to possesse, and after his possessiō he would moste faythfully restore the same again. The duke promysed hym ayde, vpon the truste wherof, he beganne to make redye his shippes that they might with all expedicion bee redy to sayle that no tyme should be loste. In the whiche tyme kyng Richard was agayn retourned to London, & had taken dyuerse of theim ỹ wer of this conspyracy, ỹ is to say George Browne, Roger Clyfforde, Thomas Selenger, knyghtes. Also Thomas Ramme, Robert Clyfford and dyuerse other whom he caused to be put to death.

After this he called a parliament wherin was decreed, that all those that were fled oute of the lande should be reputed and taken as enemyes to the realme, and all their landes and goodes to bee forfayte and confiscate. And not content with that preade which was no smal thyng, he caused also a great taxe and some of monye to be leuyed of the people. For ỹ large giftes and lyberalytee that he first vsed to buye the fauoures & frendshippes of many, had now brought him in nede. But nothing was more like then ỹ Thomas Stanley shoulde haue bene reputed & takē for one of those enemies because of the woorkyng of Margarete his wife which was mother vnto Henry erle of Richemoūt the which was noted for ỹ chiefe hed & worker of this cōspyracy. But for asmuch as it was thought that it was to small purpose that wemen coulde dooe: Thomas beynge nothyng fauty was delyred and cōmaūded that he should not suffre Margarete his wyfe to haue any seruaūtes about her,

Hym tiii neyther

neither ỹ she should not go abroad but be shut vp and ỹ from thence forth she should sende no message neyther to her soonne nor to any of her other frendes, wherby any hurte mighte be wrought agaynst the kyng, the whiche commaundemẽt was accomplyshed. And by the authorytie of thesame perliament, a peace was concluded with the Scottes, whiche a lytle before had skyrmyshed with the borderers. Which thyng brought to passe, ỹ kyng supposed all conspiracye to bee clene auoyded, for asmuche as the duke with other of his compaignie were put to death, and also certen other bannyshed. Yet for all this, kyng Richard was daylye vexed and troubled, partelye mystrustynge his owne strength, and partely fearyng the commyng of Henrye with his compaignye, so that he lyued but in a myserable case. And because that he would not so continue any lenger, he determyned with hym selfe to put awaye the cause of this his feare and busynesse, either by pollecye or elles by strength. And after that he hadde thus purposed with hym selfe, he thought nothyng better then to tempte the duke of Britayn yet once again eyther with money, prayer or some other speciall rewarde because ỹ he had in keppyng the erle Henry, & moste chiefly, because he knewe ỹ it was only he ỹ might delyuer hym from all his trouble by delyueryng or imprisoning the sayed Henry. Wherfore incontinentlye he sente vnto the duke certein Ambassadoures, the whiche should promesse vnto hym besyde other greate rewardes that they broughte with theim, to geue hym yerely all the reuenues of all the landes of Henry and of all the other lordes

there

there beyng with hym, yf he woulde after the receyte of the ambassadoures put theim in pryson. The Ambassadoures beynge departed and come where the duke laye could not haue communicacion with hym, for asmuch as by extreme sickneſſe his wyttes were feble and weake. Wherfore one Peter Landoſe his Treasourer a manne bothe of pregnaunte wytte and of greate authoritee, tooke this matter in hand. For whiche cause he was afterwarde hated of all the lordes of Britain. With this Peter the Englishe ambassadoures had communicacion, & declaring to hym the kynges message desyred hym instantlye, for asmuche as they knewe that he might bring theyr purpose to passe that he woulde graunt vnto kyng Richardes requeſt, and he shoulde haue the yerely reuenues of all the landes of the sayed lordes. Peter considering that he was greatly hated of ỹ lordes of his owne nacion, thoughte that yf he myght bring to passe thorough kyng Richarde to haue all theſe greate poſſeſſyons and yerely reuenues, he should then bee hable to matche with theim well ynough and not to care a ruſhe for theim, whereupon he aunſwered the ambassadoures that he would doo that Richard dyd desire, yf he brake not promeſſe with hym. And this did he not for any hatred that he bare vnto Henry, for he hated hym not, for not longe before he saued his lyfe where the earle Henry was in greate ieoperdye. But ſuche was the good fortune of Englande, that this craftye compacte tooke no place, for whyle the letters and meſſengers ranne betwene Peter and kyng Richard, John Bishoppe of Ely beinge then in Flaunders

was

was certifyed by a preest whiche came out of England whose name was Chriſtopher Urſwicke of all the whole circumſtaunce of this deuyce & purpose. Wherupon with all ſpede the ſayed byſhop cauſed the ſaied preeſt the ſame daye to cary knowledge therof into Britayn to Henry erle of Richemounte willing hym with all the other noble men to dyſpatche theim ſelues w̄ all poſſible haſte into Fraunce, Henry was then in Veneti whē he heard of this fraud, without tariaunce ſent Chriſtopher vnto Charles the Frenche kyng deſiring lycence that Henry with the other noble men myght ſafely come into Fraunce, the which thing being ſone obteigned, the meſſenger retourned with ſpede to his lorde and Prince.

Then the earle Henry ſetting all his buſineſſe in as good ſtaye & ordre as he might, talked lytle and made fewe a counſail herof, & for the more expedicyon hereof, he cauſed therle of Penbrucke ſecretly to cauſe all the noble men to take their horſes, diſſembling to ride vnto the duke of Britain, but when they came to the vttermoſt partes therof, they ſhould forſake the waye that led theim toward the duke, and to make into Fraunce with all that euer they might. Then they dooing in euery thing as they were biddē loſte no tyme but ſo ſped theim that ſhortely they obteygned and gate into the coūtie of Angeou. Henry then within. ii. dayes folowyng, being then ſtyll at Veneti tooke. iiii. or fyue of his ſeruauntes with hym, and feigned as thoughe he woulde haue ryden therby to viſyte a frende of his, and forasmuche as there were many Engliſhmenne lefte there in the toune, no manne

ſuſpected

suspected any thynge, but after that he had kepte the ryghte waye for the space of fyue myles, he forsooke that and turned streyghte into a woode that was thereby, and tooke vpon hym his seruauntes apparell, and putte his apparell vpon hys seruaunte, and so tooke but one of theym with hym, on whome he waited as thoughe he had bene the seruaunte and the other the maister. And with all conuenyente and spedy haste so sette forthe on theyr iourney that no tyme was loste, and made no more tariaunce by the way then one lye the baitynge of theyr horses, so that shortly he recouered the coastes of Angeou where all his other companye was.

But within foure dayes after that the Earle was thus escaped. Peter receaued from kyng Richard the confirmacion of the graunte and promises made for the betreiyng of Henry and the other nobles. Wherfore the saide Peter sente oute after hym horses and menne with suche expedicion and spede to haue taken hym, that scacely the erle was entred fraunce one houre but they were at his heles. The Englyshe menne then beyng aboue the noumbre of thre hundreth at Veneti, hearing that the Earle and all the nobles were fled so sodeinly and withoute any of their knowledge, were astonyed and in maner despaired of theyr lyues.

But it happened contrary to theyr exspectacyon for the duke of Britaine taking the matter so vnkyndely that Henry should bee so vsed with hym that for feare he shoulde bee compelled to flee his lande, was not a lytle vexed with Peter, to whom (althoughe that he was ignoraunte of the fraude

and

and crafte that had been wrought by hym) yet he layed the whole faute in hym, and therfore called vnto hym Edward Poynynges & Edward Wood vile, deliuering vnto theim the forsayde monye, ℔ Henrye before had desyred the Duke to lende hym towarde the charge of his iourney, and commaunded theim to conuey and conducte all the Englishmenne his seruauntes vnto hym paying theyr expenses, and to deliuer the sayde some of monye vnto the earle. When the earle sawe his menne come and hearde this comfortable newes, he not a lytle reioysed, desiring the messengers that returned to shewe vnto the duke, that he trusted ere long time to shewe him selfe not to bee vnthankeful for this greate kyndnesse that he nowe shewed vnto hym. And within fewe dayes after, the earle went vnto Charles the French kyng, to whome after he had rendred thankes for the great benefites and kindnesse that he had receaued of hym, the cause of his comming fyrste declared, then he besought him of his helpe and ayde, whiche shoulde bee an immortall benefite to hym and his lordes, of whome generallye he was called vnto the kyngdome, forasmuch as they so abhorred the tiranny of kyng Richard. Charles promised hym helpe and bade him to be of good chere & to take no care, for he would gladly declare vnto hym his beneuolence. And the same tyme Charles remoued and tooke with hym Henry and all the other noble menne.

Whyle Henry remained there, John Earle of Orenford (of whome is before spoken) which was put in prisone by Edward the fourth in the castell of Hammes with also James Blounte Capteine

of

of that castell, and John Forskewe knyghte Porter of the towne of Caleies, came vnto hym. But James the capitain, because he lefte his wife in ỹ castell, dyd furnyshe the same with a good garison of men before his departure.

Henry when he sawe thertle, was out of measure glad ỹ so noble a man and of greate experience in battayl, and so valiaunt & hardie a knight, whom he thought to bee moste feithfull and sure, for somuche as he had in the time of Edward ỹ fourth, continuall battail with hym in defending of Henry the syxte, thought that nowe he was so well appointed that he coulde not desire to bee better, and therfore cõmunicated vnto hym all his whole affaires, to bee ordred and ruled only by hym. Not longe after Charles the Frenche kyng remoued again to Paris, whome Henry folowed, and there againe moued and besoughte the kyng as he had moste fauourably & kindely entreteigned hym all this time, not only in wordes, but also in dedes ỹ it would lykewise please hym yet so much further to extend his fauoure & beneuolence vnto hym that nowe he woulde ayde and helpe hym forwarde in his iourney, ỹ not onely he, but also all the lordes and nobilytee of Englande myghte iustely haue cause to knowlage and confesse that by the meane of his fauoure and goodnesse they were restored againe to the possessyon of their enheryptaunces, whiche withoute hym they coulde not well bryng to passe.

In the meane while, his fortune was suche, ỹ many Englyshe menne came ouer daylye oute of Englande vnto him, and many whiche then were

in

in Paris, amonge whome were diuerse studentes that fell vnto his parte bothe moze and lesse, and specially there was one, whose name was Richard Fore a Preest, beyng a manne of a synguler good wytte and learning, whome Henry streyght waye reteigned and cõmitted all his secretes vnto hym and whome also afterward he promoted to many hyghe promocyons, and at the laste he made hym bishop of Winchester.

Richarde then hearyng of all this conspiracye and of the greate ayde that dayly wente ouer vnto Henry, thought yet foz all this, that if he might bzing to passe that Henry should not couple in mayage with the blood of king Edwarde, that then he shoulde dooe well ynoughe with hym and kepe hym from the possessyon of the croune. Then deuysed he with hym selfe all the wayes and meanes that myghte bee howe to bzyng this to passe. And fyrste he thoughte it to bee beste with fayze wooides & large promesses to attempte the quene whose fauoure obteygned, he doubted not but shoztelye to fynde the meanes to haue bothe her doughters oute of her handes into his owne, and then rested nothynge but yf he hym selfe myghte fynde the meanes afterwarde to marye one of the same doughters, whereby he thought he shoulde make all sure and safe to the vtter dispoyntinge of Henrye. Wherupon he sente vnto the Quene then beynge in the Sanctuarye dyuerse and sondrye messengers that shoulde excuse and pourge hym of his facte afoze dooen towardes her, settynge foxthe the matter with pleasaunte wooides and hye promyses bothe to her and also her sonne

Thomas

Thomas lorde Marques of Dorset, of all thynges that coulde be deuyzed. These messengers beyng men of grauitee, handled the quene so craftly that anone she beganne to bee alured and to herken vnto theim fauourably, so that in conclusion she promysed to be obedient to the kyng in his request (forgettyng the iniuries he had dooen to her before, and on the other parte not remembryng ỹ promesse that she made to Margarete Henryes mother.) And first she delyuered both her doughters into the handes of kyng Rychard, then after she sent preuely for the Lorde Marques her sonne beyng then at Paris w̄ Henry (as ye haue heard) wyllyng hym to forsake Henrye with whome he was, and spedely to returne into Englande for all thynges was perdoned and forgeuen, & she again in fauoure and frendship of ỹ kyng, and it should be highly for his aduauncement and honoure.

Kyng Richard (whē quene Elizabeth was thus brought into a fooles paradyce) after he had receaued al his brothers doughters from the sanctuary into his palayce, thought there nowe remayned nothyng to be dooen, but only the castyng awaye and destroiyng of his owne wife, whiche thynge he had wholy purposed and decreed within hym selfe. And there was nothyng that feared hym so much from this mooste cruell & detestable murder as the losyng of the good opynion ỹ he thought the people had conceyued of hym, for as ye haue heard before, he faigned hym selfe to be a good mā and thought the people had estemed hym euen so. Notwithstandyng shortly after, his forsaide vngracious purpose, ouercame al this honest feare.

And

And first of all, he absteyned from beddyng or lyeng with her: and also found him self greued with the barrēnesse of his wife, that she was vnfruteful and brought hym forth no chyldren, complaynyng therof very greuously vnto ỹ nobles of his realme and chiefly e aboue other vnto Thomas Rotherame then archebishoppe of Yorke (whome he had delyuered a lytle afore oute of pryson) the whiche byshop did gather of this, that the quene should be rid out of the waye, ere it were long after (suche experience had he of kyng Richardes complexiō who had practised many lyke thynges not longe before) & thesame tyme also he made dyuerse of his secrete frendes preuy of thesame his coniecture.

After this, he caused a rumoure to ronne amōg the commen people (but he woulde not haue ỹ autoure knowen) ỹ the quene was dead, to thentent ỹ she hearyng this meruelous rumour, should take so greueous a concept that anone after she should fall into some great disease, so that he would assay that waye, in case it should chaunce her afterward to be sicke, dead or otherwyse murdred, that then ỹ people might impute her death vnto ỹ thought she tooke or els to ỹ sickenesse. But whē ỹe quene heard of so horryble a rumour of her death sprōge abroade among the commen people, she suspected the matter and supposed the worlde to be at an ende with her, and incontinently, she went to the kyng with a lamentable countenaunce, and with wepyng teares asked hym, whether she had dooen any thyng whereby he might iudge her worthy to suffer death. The kyng made answere with asmylyng and dissimulyng countenaūce and with flatteryng

teryng wooꝛdes, byddyng her to bee of good comꝛoꝛte and to plucke vp her heart foꝛ there was no ſuche thyng toward her that he knewe. But howe ſo euer it foꝛtuned, either by ſoꝛowe oꝛ els by poyſonyng, within fewe daies after, the quene was dedde and afterwarde was buryed in the abbay of Weſtminſter. This is the ſame Anne, one of Rychard the earle of Warwikes doughters whiche once was cõtracted to pꝛince Edwarde kyng Hẽry the ſixt his ſoonne.

The kyng beyng thus delyuered of his wife fantaſied a pace ladye Elizabeth his nice, deſiryng in any wiſe to mary with her: but becauſe that all menne, yee and the mayden her ſelf abhoꝛred this vnlawfull deſire, as a thyng mooſte deteſtable, he determined with hym ſelf to make no greate haſt in the matter, chiefly foꝛ that he was in a pecke of troubles, fearyng leaſt ẏ of the noble menne ſome would foꝛſake hym & runne vnto Henry his part, the other at the leſte would fauoure the ſecrete conſpiracy made again hym, ſo that of his ende there was almooſt no doubte. Alſo the moꝛe parte of the commen ꝓple were in ſo greate diſpeare, that many of theim had rather to bee accompted in the noumbꝛe of his enemies, then to put theim ſelfes in ieopardy bothe of loſſe of body and goodes in takyng of his parte.

And emongeſt thoſe noble menne whom he feared, firſt was Thomas Standley and Wyllyam his bꝛother, Gylbert Talbote, & of other a greate noũbꝛe, of whoſe purpoſe though kyng Rychard was ignoꝛaunt, neuertheleſſe he truſted not one of theim, and leſt of all Thomas Standley, becauſe

he had maryed Henryes mother, as it maye well appeare by this that followeth. For when the sayd Thomas woulde haue departed from the courte vnto his owne mansion for his recreacion (as he saide) but ỹ truthe was, because he woulde bee in a readynesse to receaue Henry and ayde hym at his commyng into the realme. But the kyng did let hym, and would not suffer hym to departe, vntyll suche tyme he had left in the courte behynde hym George Straunge his soonne and heyre for a pledge. And whyle kynge Richarde was thus wrapped in feare and care of ỹ tumulte that was to come, lo, euen then tydynges came that Henrye was entred into the lande, and that the castell of Hammes was prepared to receiue Henry, by the meanes of the erle of Oxenforde whiche then was fled with James Blunte keper of the castell vnto Henry.

Then kyng Rychard, thynkyng at the begynnyng to stey all this matter, sent forth with all hast the greater parte that were then at Calyce to recouer the said castell again. Those that were in the castell, when thei sawe their aduersaries make towardes theim, spedely thei armed theim selfes to defence and in al hast sent messengers to Hery, desyryng hym of ayde. Henry forthwith sent the erle of Oxenforde with a chosen sorte of menne to assist theim, and at their first commyng they laid siege not farre from the castell. And whyle kyng Rychardes menne turned backe hauyng an yie towardes theim: Thomas Brandon with thirty valeaunt menne of the otherside gate ouer a water in to the castell, to strength theim that were

with

within. Then thei that were within laid heard to their charge that were without, on ỹ otherside, the erle of Oxenford so valiantly assayled them of the backeside that thei were glad to make proclamacio to theim that were within, that if thei would be content to geue ouer the castell, thei should haue free liberte to departe with all that euer thei had. The erle of Oxenforde hearyng this, whiche came onely to saue his frendes from hurte, and namely James Bluntes wife, was contented with this condicion and departed in saufgarde with all his frendes returning backe to Henry, whiche was at Paris. After this, kyng Rychard was informed ỹ the Frenche kyng was wery of Henry & his compaignie, and would doo nothyng for hym, wherby Henry was nowe not hable in maner to helpe him self, so that it was not possible ỹ he shuld preuaile or goo forwarde in thenterprise that he thoughte to haue taken in hande agaynst kynge Rychard.

Kynge Rychard beeyng brought thus into a false paradice, thought hym selfe to bee out of all feare, and that there was no cause why he should beynge so sure, ones to wake oute of hys slepe or trouble hym selfe anye furder, and therefore called backe hys naupe of shyppes that then was redy vpon the sea, whyche was fullye furnyshed to haue scoured the seas. But yet for the more suretie least he should bee sodenly oppressed, he gaue commaundemente to the greatte men dwellynge by the sea syde (and specyally the Welshemen) to watche nyghte and daye, leaste his aduersaries shuld haue eny oportunitee to entre into the lande. As the fashyon is in time of warre that those that

dwell by the sees side should make bekyns in the highest places there about, whiche might bee sene afarre of, so that when it should chaunce their enemyes to aryue towarde the lande, by and by they should fyre theyr bekyns and rayse the countreye, to thentent that quickely from place to place they might be ascerteyned of all the whole matter and also to arme theim selfes spedelye agaynste theyr enemies.

And so to come to our purpose agayn, kyng Richard thorough the aforesaide tydynges, beganne to bee more careless and recheless, as who saye, he had no power to withstand the destenye that honge ouer his hedde. Suche is the prouydent iustyce of God, that a manne dooeth leste knowe, prouyde & beware when the vengeaunce of God is euen at hande for his offences. And to go forth, at ỹ tyme when Henry the earle of Richemounte remayned in Fraunce entretyng and suyng for ayde & helpe of the frenche men, many of the chiefe noble men, which had the realme in gouernaunce (because of the young age of Charles the kyng) fel somewhat at dissencion, of the whiche variaunce, Lewes the prynce of Orlyaunce was the chiefe and hedde, whiche because he had maryed Johanne the kynges syster looked to haue bene chiefe gouernoure of all the realme. By the which meanes it came to passe, that no one man had the princypall gouernaunce of the realme. And therefore Henry the erle was constraigned to sue vnto all the nobles seuerallye one after another desyrynge and prayynge theim of aide and helpe in his purpose, and thus the matter was prolonged. In the meane tyme

Thomas

Thomas the Marques of Dorcet (of whome we spake afore) was preuely sent for to come home by his mother, partely mystrustynge that Henrye should not preuayle, and partly for the greate and large promesses that kyng Richard had made to her for hym before. Whiche letters when the sayd Marques had receaued, he beleuyng all thynges that his mother wrote vnto hym, and also thynkyng that Henry should neuer preuayle, and that the Frenchemen did but mocke and daylye with hym: he sodeynly in the night tyme conueyed hym selfe out of Parys and with great spede made towardes Flaūders. The whiche thyng when ȳ erle and other of the Englishe lordes heard of, thei wer sore astonned & amased, & with all spede purchased of Charles the kyng a lycence and commaundement that the Marques might by steyed whersoeuer he wer found win the dominion of Fraūce chiefly for that he was secrete of their councel and knewe all there purpose. The cōmaundemēt was quickly obteyned & postes made forth euery waye, emōgest whom one Humfrey Cheyney plaiyng ȳ parte of a good blooddehounde so truely, smelled out and folowed the trace, that by and by he found out and toke the Marques: and so handled & persuaded hym with gentle and good woordes, that shortely after he was content to retourne.

Then Henry beyng delyuered of this chaunce, thought it best to prolonge the matter no farther least he should loose both the present opportunytee and also wery his frendes that looked for hym in Englande. Wherfore he made haste and set forewarde with a small army obteyned of the Frenche

kyng, of whom he also borowed some money, and some of other of his frendes, for the whiche he left the Marques and Jhon Burchere behynde for a pledge. And so setting forward came to Roan, and whyle he taryed there and prepared shippyng at ỹ hauen of Seyne, tydynges cam to hym ỹ kyng Richardes wyfe was deade, & purposed to mary with the lady Elysabeth, kyng Edwardes eldest doughter being his nice, & that he had maried Cycile her syster to a mannes sonne of the lãde far vnderneth her degre. At the whiche thyng, Henry was sore amased and troubled, thynkyng that by this meanes al his purpose was dashed, for that there was no other waye for hym to come to the kyngdome but only by the maryage of one of kyng Edwardes doughters. And by this menes also, he feared least his frendes in Englande would shrynke frõ hym for lacke of an honest title. But after thei had consulted vpon the matter, thei thought it best to tary a lytle to proue if they might gette more helpe and make mo frendes. And among all other, they thought it best to adioyne the lord Harbarte vnto theim, whiche was a mã of great power in Wales and ỹ should be brought to passe by this meanes, for that the lorde Harbarte had a syster maryable, whõ Henry would be content to mary, if he would take their part. And to brig al this matter to passe messengers were sent to Henry the erle of Northumberlande, whiche had maryed the other syster so that he should bryng this matter about, but the wayes were so beset that the messengers could not come to hym.

And in the meane season, came veray good tydynges

dynges from Jhon ap Morgan a tempozall lawyer, whiche signified vnto theim that syz Rycc ap Thomas a noble and valiaunt man and Jhon Sauage, fauoured his parte earnestlye and also syz Reynolde Brayc had prepared a greate summe of mony to wage battayl on his parte and to helpe hym, and therfore he woulde they should make hast with all that euer they could, and make towarde Wales.

Then Henry spedely prepared hym selfe because he would lynger his frendes no lenger. And after that he had made his prayer vnto almightye God that he might haue good successe in his iourney, only with two thousande menne and a fewe shyppes in the calendes of August he sayled from the hauen of Seyne, and the seuẽth daye after whiche was the.xxii.daye of August, he aryued in Wales aboute sonne set & lãded at Milforde hauen, & in ỹ parte whiche is called the Dale, where he heardc ỹ there was dyuerse layde in wayte for hym, to kepe hym backe. From thence, in the morning betymes he remoued towarde a towne called Harford with in tẽne myle of the Dale, where he was very toyfully receyued. Here he had contrarye tydynges brought to that he hearde in Normãdy afore, that syz Rycc ap Thomas and Jhon Sauage wythal that euer they coulde make, were of kyng Richardes parte.

Notwithstandynge, they had suche tydynges sent theim frõ the menne of Pembruche by a valiãt gentleman, whose name was Arnold Butteler, that it reioysed all their heartes, whiche was, that

yf all former offences might bee remitted, they woold bee in a redynesse to sticke vnto there owne Gespare the erle. Then Henryes company by this meanes beeyng encreased, departed frō Harforde fyue myle towarde Cardygane, and then while he refreshed his menne, sodenly came a rumoure vnto hym that the lorde Harbarte whiche dwelled at Carmerdyne was nye at hande with a greate armye of menne. At the whiche rumoure there was a greate sturre amongeste theim, euerye manne tooke hym selfe to his weapon and made theim selfes redye if nede were, to fight, and a lytle while they were all afrayed, tyl such tyme as Henrye had sent out horsemen to trye ỹ truthe, whiche when thei came agayn, declared that all thynges was quiet and that ther was no suche thyng. But moste of all master Gryffythes a verye noble man did confort theim and gladden their heartes, whiche although before he had joyned hym self to the lorde Harberte, at that very tyme he cleued to Henry with suche companye as he had, although they were but fewe, and thesame tyme came Jhon ap Morgā vnto hym. Henry went styll forward & taried almoste in no place, because he would make suer woorke and the better spede, he inuaded suche places afore that thei were armed against hym, ỹ whiche places he bette downe w̄ very litle strēgth But afterward hauyng knowlage by his spyes ỹ the lorde Harbert & syr Ryce were in a redynes to geue hym battail he determyned to set vpō theim, & either to put theim to flight orels to make theim sweare homage and feaultee vnto hym, & to take theim w̄ hym in his hoste against kyng Richard.

And because he woulde ascertayne his frendes in Englande howe all the matter went forwad with hym, he sent of his mooste trustye frendes to ladye Margarete his mother, to Standely, to Talbot, and to other of his moste especial frendes with certain commaundementes. The effecte of the commaundementes were, that he intended with the helpe of hys frendes to passe ouer Seuerne and by Shrewesbury to make toward London. Therfore he desyred theim with those that were of their councell in tyme & place conuenient to mete hym. So the messaungers going forth with these commissyons: Henry went forward toward Shrewesbury, and in the waye mette with syr Rice ap Thomas with a great noumber of menne which came vnto hym and was of his parte. For two dayes afore Henry promysed hym to bee chiefe ruler of all Wales as soone as he came to the croune (yf he would come vnto hym) which afterward he gaue to hym in dede. In the meane time the messengers executing the message, diligētly returned back agayne with large rewardes of theim, to whome they were sent and came to Henry the same day he entred into Shrewesburye and shewed howe all his frendes were in a redynesse to dooe the vttermoste that laye in theim. This tidynges put Henry in suche greate hope, that he went forth with a courage and came to the towne of Newporte and there set vp his tentes vpon a lytle hyll, and there laye all night. That night came to hym syr Gylberte Talbot with aboue two hundreth menne. After that they went forthe to Staffordе & whyle they were there, Willyam Standley came to hym

with

with a fewe after hym, and when he had talked a litle with him, retourned backe again to his hoste whiche he had prepared. From thence he went to Lichfelde, and that nyght laye without the toune, but in ꝑ morning betime he entred into ꝑ citee and was receiued honourably. A daye or .ii. afore, Thomas Standley was there with fyue. M. men armed, whiche when he knewe of Henries cõming, forthwith went afore to a village called Aderstone there to tarye tyll Henrye came. This he dyd to auoide suspicion, beyng afraid least kyng Richard knowing his intent would haue put his soonne to deathe, whiche as I telled you before was left w hym as a pledge for his father. But kynge Richard in the meane tyme, which then was at Nottingham, hearing that Henry with a fewe more of banished men was entred into Wales, so lightly regarded the matter, that he thoughte it was not muche to bee paste vpon, for that he came in with so fewe in noumbre, and that the lorde Harbart & sir Rice, which wer rulers of all Wales, would other kyll hym, or elles take hym and bring hym aliue. But afterward, when he remembred him self that oftentimes a smal matter in batel if it bee not looked vnto betymes, would make at the laste a great sturre: he thought it best to remedy the matter betimes and commaunded Henrye the earle of Northumberlande with other of the nobles of the realme (whome he thoughte had set more by hym then by their owne goodes) to rayse vp an army & to come to hym with speede. Also he sente dyuers messengers with letters to Robert Brakenburye keper of the Towre of London, commaundynge

hym

hym to come vnto hym in all haste, and to bryng with hym as felowes in battell, Thomas Burschere, Walter Hungerforde and dyuerse other knyghtes, whome he dyd not a litell suspecte.

In this tyme it was shewed that Henrye was come to Shrewisburye without any hurte. With the which tidinges, ỹ kyng beganne to rage and made exclamacion againste theim, that contrary to their faithes they had vtterly deceiued hym, & then he beganne to mistrust all menne, and wiste not whome he mighte truste, so that he thoughte it best to sette forthe hym selfe ageinst his aduersaryes. And forthwith he sent out spies to knowe which waye Henry did take. They when they had doone their diligence retourned backe again and shewed hym howe that Henry was come to Lichfeld. The which thing after he knew, because now there was a greate noumbre of souldyours come together, by and by his menne set in araye, he commaunded theim forwarde, and to gooe foure and foure together, and by that waye which they kept they hearde saye, their enemies were commynge. The suspecte persones he putte in the myddes, he hym selfe with those he trusted came behind, with winges of horsemen running on euery syde. And thus keping their order, aboute sonne sette came vnto Leicestre.

When Henrye in the meane season had remoued from Lichefelde vnto the nexte village called Tamworth, in the mydwaye he mette with Walter Hungerforde, Thomas Burschier and many other more which had promised to aide hym afore And forbecause they perceyued that they were sus

pected

spected of Richard, & least they should be brought violentlye vnto hym beyng their enemye they forsooke Robert Brakenbury their capitaine, and in the nyghte tyme stale priuely awaye and wente to Henry. Unto whome there chaunced by the waye that was worthy to bee marked, whiche was that Henry, althoughe he was a manne of noble courage and also his companye dyd dailye encrease, yet for all that he stoode in great feare because he was vncertayne of Thomas Standly whiche as I telled you before, for the feare of puttynge his soonne to deathe, inclyned as yet vnto no parte, & that the matter was not so sléder of kyng Richard as reporte was made to hym of his frendes.

Wherfore, as all afrayde withoute a cause, he tooke onely twenty menne with him, and steyed in his iourney as a manne in dispaire and halfe musynge with hym selfe what was beste to bee dooen, and to aggrauate the matter, tidinges was broughte hym that kyng Richard was comming nere to mete hym with a great and houge hoste of menne. And while he thus lyngered for feare behinde, his hoste came afore to the toune of Tham worth, and because it was then darke night, he lost bothe his company and also his waye, then wandryng frome place to place, at laste came to a lytle village. iii. myle from his hoste being full of feare and leste he should fall into the daunger of scoute watche he durste not aske a questyon of any man, and partly for the feare that was presente, partely for that was to come he laye there that nyght and tooke this for a sygne or a prognosticacyon of some greate plage that was to come, and of the other

parte

parte his hoste was no lesse abashed seyng his absence for that tyme. When in the morning Henry came to theim in the light of the daye he excused ȳ matter that he was not absent because he had lost his waye but rather of purpose, because he would commen wᵗ his preuy frendes which would not be sene in the daye. After ȳ he went priuely to Derstone where Thomas Standley & Willyam his brother dyd dwell. Here Henry, Thomas, & Willyam mette and tooke other by the hande with louing salutacions and were glad one of an other. Then after, they counceled together of their metyng with kyng Richard whome they perceyued then not to bee farre from theim. That day when it drewe toward night, in the euening Jhon Sauage Brytanne Sanforde, Simon Digby with many other had forsaken, kyng Richarde & came to Henry wᵗ a great power of men, whiche thyng both with power and strengthe sate Henry alofte again. In the meane season kyng Richard which purposed to goo thorow thicke and thinne in this mater came to Bolworthe alitell beyond Leicestre where the place of batell should bee (as a manne would saye the hye iustice of God, whiche coulde not bee auoided hanging ouer his hed, had called hym to a place where he should suffer worthy punyshemente for his detestable offenees) and there he sette vp his tentes and rested that night. Afore he went to bed he made an oration to his companye with greate vehemence, perswading & exhorting manfully to fight. And afterward, as it was saied he had a terrible dreame in his slepe seming that he sawe horrible deuilles appere vnto hym & pulling

pulling and haling of hym that he coulde take no rest, which vysyon fylled hym full of feare & also of heuy care when he waked. For by and by after, being sore greued in his minde, he did prognosticate of this dreame the euill luke & heuy chaunce that after came to hym, and he came not with so cherful a countenaunce vnto his company as he was wonte to dooe. Then leest they should thinke that he had this heauinesse for the feare of his enemies he stoode vp & rehersed vnto theim all his dreame. But I thinke that this was not a dreame, but rather his conscience pricked with the sharpe stynge of his mischeuous offences, which although they dooe not pricke alwaye, yet most cõmenly they wil byte moste towarde the latter daye, representyng vnto vs not onely them selfe, but also the terryble punyshement that is ordeined for the same, as the syghte of the deuill tearyng and haling vs, so that therby (if we haue grace) we may take an occasyon to bee penitẽt, or elles for lacke of the same dye in desperacyon. Nowe to come to my purpose again, the nexte daye after, kyng Richard hauing all thynges in a redynesse went forthe with the army oute of his tentes, & beganne to sette his men in araye: fyrst the forward set forth with a meruelous lengthe bothe of horsemen and also of footemen, a veray terrible companye to theim ỹ should see theim a farre of: and in the formost parte of all he ordered the bowmen as a stronge fortresse for theim that came after, and ouer this John ỹ duke of Norffolke was hedde capitaine. After hym followed the kyng with a mightye sorte of menne.
And in this while, Henry beyng departed from ỹ
cõmunicacion

communication of his frendes without any tarry-
yng pytched his tentes nere his enemies and laye
there all nighte and cõmaunded his men to bee in
a redinesse, in the morninge he sente also to Tho-
mas Standley being then in the middes, betwixt
bothe hostes that he should come nere with his ar
mye. He sent hym woorde again that he should set
his menne in an ordre tyll he came, with the which
answer otherwise then he had thought or then the
mater dyd require, he was not a litel abashed and
stoode as it were in doubte. Yet for all ỹ he taryed
not but with all spede set his menne in an ordre, ỹ
forward was but slender, because his noũber was
but fewe, the archers were set in the formost parte
Ouer theim John the earle of Oxford was hedde
capitain. In the ryght wing he sette Gilbert Tal-
bot. In ỹ lefte he put John Sauage. And he him
selfe with ỹ helpe of Thomas Standley folowed
with one companye of horsemen and a fewe foote-
men, for all his whole company were scãt fyue. M
besides ỹ bothe Stanleys with their company, of
the which Willyam Standley had thre. M. The
kinges army was double to all this. And so when
bothe armyes were all in a redinesse and beganne
for to come within the sight of other they bragged
forth theim selfes of bothe parties, looking onely
for the sygne and token of striking together. Be-
twyxte bothe hostes, there was a marresse whiche
Henrye lefte on his ryghte hande purposelye as a
defence of his menne, he found the meanes also to
haue the bryght sunne on his backe, that it myght
dasyll the eyes of his enemyes.

But the kyng when he sawe Henry passe ouer
the

the marras cõmaunded his men with all violence to set vpon theim. They by and by with a sodein clamour lette arrowes flee at theim. On the other syde they paied theim home mankully again with the same. But when they came nere together they laied on valeauntly with swerdes. The earle of Oxforde fearing least in the meane time kyng Richardes multytude should haue compassed in his menne whiche wer but a fewe, he cõmaunded theim by kyues they should not moue forwarde paste ten fote the whiche cõmaundement knowen when they knitte theim selfes together and sealed not in fyghting: their aduersaries beyng afrayed suspected som crafte or guyle & began to breake of and many of the same parte wer not much greued therwith, because they wer as glad ỹ king should be loste as saued, & therfore they fought with lesse courage. Then the erle of Oxford with his menne thicke together stroke on more freshlyer. The other of the other parte dyd likwyse the same. And while the firste wardes of the batell had fought so mankully. Richard perceiued by his spies Henry a farre of with a fewe companye of armed menne. Afterward, cõming nere, Richard knewe hym by sygnes and tokens, then being inflamed with anger, furiously stroke the horse with the spurres and ranne out of the one syde of the hoste, and like a Lyon ranne at hym. On the other syde, Henry perceiuing hym commyng, was very desyrous to mete hym. Richard at the fyrste setting forth, kylled diuers that stode, again he threwe doune Henry his banner and William Brandon the bearer also, he ranne at Cheyny a manne of great mighte

whiche

stode before him. Edit. alt.

whiche came for to mete hym, and with greate violēce ouerthrewe hym to the grounde, and this he made hymself awaie through theim, for to come to Henry. But Henry kept better tacke with hym thē his men would haue thought, whiche thē was allmoste in despayre of the victory. And cuē at ỹ tyme lo there came Wyllyam Stanley to aide theim wt .iii.M. mēne, and euen at the verie same tyme the residue of kyng Richardes men were put to flight Thē Richard fightyng alone in the middest of all his enemies was ouerthrowne & slain. In ỹ meane tyme therle of Oxēford in ỹ forewarde after he had fought mānfully a litle while, put ỹ residue to flight of whō he slewe a greate nōbre. But agreate nombre more whiche folowed Richard more for feare then for loue, helde their handes from fightyng & went awaie without hurte, for that thei loked not for his safegard, but rather for his destruccion. There were slain at this conflicte not many more then one thousand, of the whiche these were noble menne. Jhon duke of Norffolke Walter Ferris Robert Brachyngbury, Richard Radcliffe and many other more. And within twoo daies after Wyllyam Catisby lawyer with certain other of his felowes was put to death at Leicestre, and emonges those ỹ ranne awaie, was Fraunces Louell, Humfray Stafford, with Thomas his brother and other more that ranne into sanctuary at Colchestre in Esser. There was of the captiues a greate nombre, because that when Richard was slain, euery manne cast doune his wepon and yeld hymself to Henry, of ỹ whiche ỹ more parte would haue dooen so at the begynnyng, if it had not been

for feare of kyng Richardes spies, whiche thē wā-
dered in euery place. And emongest these the no-
bles, were the erle of Northumberlande the erle of
Surrey of the whiche therle of Surrey was put
in prisone, this other as a frend was receiued in to
fauour. Henry at that felde loste not aboue an hū-
dred menne, emongest whom the chief was Wyl-
lyam Brādone whiche bare Henryes bāner. This
battaill was fought in the .xxii. day of the moneth
of Auguste, in the yere of oure Lorde a thousand
cccc.lxxxvi. ȳ conflict indured more then .ii. howres
Richard might (as the fame went) asaued hymself
if he would afled awaie, for those that were about
hym when thei sawe his menne from the begyn-
nyng fight but faintly and that some were ronne
awaie vnto the other parte, suspected treason and
willed hym to flie and when the mater was mani-
fest that all hope of victory was past, thei brought
hym a swifte horse. He puttyng a fied all hope and
trust that was in fleiyng, made (as it was saied)
this aunswere that this daie he would haue ether
an ende of battaill orels of his life, suche was his
greate audacite and manfulnes whiche because
he did se certainly that in this daie he should ob-
tain the kyngdome quietely all daies of his life or
elfs lose bothe for euer, he entred in emōgest theim
as it was declared before intendyng vtterly ether
to lose all orels to wynne all. And so the wretche
dyed hauyng the ende that all suche were wont to
haue whiche in the stede of lawe, honestie, and all
godlynes folowe their owne appetite vyllanye
and all wyckednes. And plainly this is an exam-
ple whiche cannot be expressed, to feare theim whi-
che

the will not ſuffer one howre to bee otherwyſe ſpēt then in cruelte miſchief and all deuiliſhe faſchiōs Henry when he had thus obtained the victorye he fell downe on his knees and with many prayers & thankes, referred all to the goodnes of God. Thē after he ſtode vp beyng wounderfully repleniſhed with ioye, & went vp vpō a litle hill and there gaue two greate comendacions to his ſouldyours commaundyng theim that were hurte to be heled and the dede to bee buryed, afterward he gaue immortall thankes to his noble capitains promiſyng theim that he would neuer forgette their benifite The multitude in ȳ meane tyme with one voyce & one mynd proclaimed hym kyng. Whē Thomas Stanley ſawe ȳ, he toke kyng Richardes croune whiche was founde emongeſt the ſpoyle, and by & by putte it vpon his head as though he had been then created kyng by the election of the people as it was wonte to bee in the olde tyme, and this was the firſt token of his felicite. After this, kyng Hēry with his compaignie and carriage went to Leceſtre toward night to bed, whether after he had refreſſhed his compaignie well for the ſpace of twoo daies, that thei might the better goo toward London: kyng Richardes bodye was brought naked ouer a horſe backe, the hed and the armes hāgyng on the one ſide and the legges on ȳ other, & caried in to the grey freres of Leceſter, and ſurely it was but a myſerable ſight to loke vpō, yet it was good inough cōſideryng his wretched leuyng, and there without any ſolempnite was buryed twoo dayes after. He raygned twoo yeres twoo monethes & one daie, he was but of a ſmall ſtature hauyng

Do ii but

[1] Lewes edit. alt. [2] When ... alt.

but a deformed bodie, ỹ one shoulder was higher then the other, he had a short face & a cruell looke whiche did betoken malice, guyle and deceite. And while he did muse vpō any thing stāding, he would byte his vnder lippe continually, whereby a māne might perceiue his cruell nature within his wretched bodie striued and chafed alwaie with in hym selfe, also the dagger whiche he bare aboute hym, he would alwaies bee choppyng of it in and out he had a sharpe and pregnaunt witt, subtill and to dessimule and fayne verie mete. He had also a proude and cruell mynde, whiche neuer went from him to the houre of his death, whiche he had rather suffer by ỹ cruell sworde, though all his compaignie did forsake hym then by shamefull flight he would fauoure his life, whiche after might fortune by sickenes or other condynge ponyshemēt shortely to perishe.

Henry the seuenth.

HENRY THE SEVENTH OF that name kyng of England.

First after ỹ he had obteined his kyngdome and heritage by force of armes, entended to stablisshe all thynges & extynguish sediciõ, and before he departed from Leycester, caused ser Robert Willoughby knight to bryng ỹ yoũg erle of Warwike ỹ duke of Clarẽces soõne before his presence (whom kyng Richard to that tyme had kept at Sherhuttõ in Yorke shire) feareyng muche, least that by this young erle some occasiõ might bee taken of renuyng battaill, whiche entended nothyng more then to liue in peace and quietnes. And so this erle was brought to hym, & at his commaundement conueighed to London, and there cast in holde,

In the selfsame place also of Yorke shire, was Ladie Elizabeth eldest doughter to the foreamed kyng Edwarde, whom kyng Rychard her vncle would haue maried fore against the mynde and consent of ỹ same ladie. In so muche also that the people were fore against it, and accompted it not onely as a reproche & infamie to the kyng hymselfe, but also to his counsaill ỹ did agre to his naughtie purpose. Albeit, God of his infinite mercy preserued the ladie, whiche shorte tyme after was brought to London to her mother.

In this time the kyng drawing nighe to London, was there accepted of his citezens streyghte after his cõming moste rotally, & of all parties saluted after the moste louing fassion ỹ they could deuyse geuing thankes to God with solempne procession for ỹ he had sent theim a king to gouerne ỹ realme which before was ruled by a cruel & hateful Tirãt

After this gratulacion and thankesgeuing, ỹ kyng at a daye appointed assembled his counsail, to the ende he mighte marie the Ladie Elizabeth, thorowe the which mariage aswell ỹ nobilitee as cõmunes of ỹ realme wer brought in good hope ỹ all thinges should bee redressed, & an end made of all sedicion and strife for euer. And at this Parliament holden & kept at Westmister he was created kyng the .day of October, in the yere of oure Lorde a.M.foure C.lxxxvi. Whiche kyngdome he enioyed as of god enointed, for as menne doo reporte aboute seuen hundreth foure score and seuentene yeres paste [Cadwallader laste kynge of Englande prophecied that his progenye shoulde beare rule and dominion again. [So that by this meanes, men did fully perswade theim selfes that he was pdestinate to it. And ỹ rather also they did beleue it because that kyng Henry ỹ sixte did foresaye the same, and in like maner prophesy of hym. Therfore he being thus proclaimed as true enheretour of the crowne, and at the same Parliament created kyng, did first cause to bee published, that all suche should bee pardoned that would submit theim selfes to his grace, & as faithful people doo to hym due allegiaunce, other that absented theim selfes, to bee takē as rebelles & traitours. After the

whiche

[1] Apointed. edit. alt. [2] It was reuelled vnto Cadwalader laste kyng of Britones. edit. alt. [3] And the other. edit. alt.

whiche proclamacion hard, many ꝯ were in holde and sanctuaries, came for pardō and safetie of life to him, which persones so submitting theim selfes wer pardoned & enhaunced to honoure, euery man after his owne deserte as the kyng & his counsaile thought best. And first considering his chiefe frendes and nyghe kinsemen, made Galpar his vncle Duke of Bedforde, sir Thomas Stanley knight Earle of Derby, Giles Dabeney, sir Robert Willoughby, and Robert Brooke Lordes, & Edward his eldest sonne duke of Buckingham, restoringe wholy all that king Richard had depriued hym of at what tyme he with other wer banished. Also actes, & statutes stablished & confirmed by Richard as thought expedient and veray necessary at that time for the publike weale, wer by hym aboundoned & infringed euery one. After these thinges doen he prouided w̄ all scelerite and expedicion to redeme the Lorde Marques Dorcet, & John Bursher, whome he had lefte at Paris as a pledge & suertie for certaine money ꝯ he had borowed there and John, bishop of Ely for like det out of Flaunders. Furthermore, to the ende ꝯ his realme might bee in a better staye, he cōmaunded that if any mā had iniury shewed at any tyme, the same persone shoulde putte vp his matter to hym, of whome he should both haue and finde redresse. And for these matters and causes to bee hearde, he made of his councell the Erle of Orford, the duke of Bedford therle of Derby, the Lorde Strange w̄ his sonne and william the lorde his brother chief of the priuie chaumber, the lorde Broke chief steward, and lord graund maister of his house Renould Braye

1 Eldest sonne for. Wt. alt 2 he w. forf. edit. alt.
3 To alt. Wt. alt 4 All actes. Wt. alt 5 he was. Wt alt
6 Abandoned. ed. t. alt. 7 chief chamberlain, Edit. alt.

John Morton Byshoppe of Ely, Richarde Fore John Dinham, whome after he made treasourer of Englande, Giles Dabeney, Richarde Gildeforde, Lorde Cheiny, Richarde Tunstall, Richard Edgecombe, Thomas Louell, Edwarde Poninges, with other wise men, as Richard ap Thomas a Welsheman, aswell circumspecte as wise, Morgane Kidnel, Lord Gray Marques Dorcet, Lord Talbot, Erle of Shrewesbury, John Risley, lord Thomas Earle of Ormonde, an Irisheman, Henry Warney, William Say, William Ody, Gilbert Talbot, Willyam Vdall, Thomas Troys, Richarde Naufaute Capitaine of Calis, Roberte Point, James Hubert, Charles Somerset, Thomas Hawarde Earle of Surrey, a manne of wisdome, grauitee, and constantnesse most cõmendable, The earle of Esser descending of an high and noble parentage, Lorde William Blounte, John Burscher, John Fineur, Peter Edgecombe, Hew Conuey, Thomas Terell, Sir Henry Wiat, Robert Throgmorton, Thomas Brandon, sir John Winkefelde, sir Edmond Dudley, Edward Belknape, Richarde Hemson. Also bishoppes, Henry Deney bishoppe of Cauntourbury, Oliuer kyng byshoppe of Bathe and Welles, William Barõs bishop of London that dyed shortely after he was bishoppe. Also William that succeded nexte after, Henry Archebyshop of Cauntourbury, Richarde of London, and Richarde Bishop of Norwiche.

When the kyng had taken these menne to bee of his councell for ẏ wealth of his realme, he maried Ladye Elizabeth doughter to kyng Edward as he had promised for the which, he had the hear-

tes

1 Blounte.

tes of many menne. So that afterwarde he had no nede to feare the assaultes of any persones or ye conuuracions of rebelles. Neuertheleſſe, conſidering the chaunce he had before, and the falſhode ye is in many menne from their youth, made yomen of the garde for his bodye, the whiche he firſte of all Englyſhe kynges cauſed to bee, and as it is thought he did take it of the Frenche kyng. Alſo after this he cauſed a parliament to bee had, wher in was made and decreed certayne lawes, actes & ſtatutes for the wealthe of his realme.

The garde fyrſte ordeined by kyng henry the vii.

In this yere a newe ſickeneſſe did reigne, and is ſo ſore and painfull, as neuer was ſuffered before, the whiche was called the burning ſweate. And this was ſo intollerable, that men coulde not kepe their beddes, but as lunatike perſons & oute of their wittes ranne about naked, ſo that none almoſte eſcaped ye wer infected therwith. At ye length after the great death of many a thouſande menne they learned a preſente remedye for the ſame dyſeaſe, that is, yf he were ſycke of that ſweate in the daye, that he ſhould ſtreyghte lye downe with his clothes and veſtures, yf in the nighte, ye he ſhould not riſe for the ſpace of. xxiiii. houres, and eate no meate at all, yf he coulde forbeare, and drinke as litle as he mighte.

The ſweating ſickeneſſe.

This diſeaſe reigned throughout all England wherof alſo enſued a plague, as a token, and as ye people iudged, a plaine argument that kyng Henrye ſhoulde neuer bee oute of feare and dreade of ſome miſchaunce, ſeing that he was in ſuche great veracyon at the ſedicyous tumulte that was ryſen at the claimynge of the crowne.

When

[1] That. [2] It, ſcil. at.

Whē all thynges wer apeaced in London, and ordered after his owne mynd, he rode Northward in progresse to pacifie all his realme, and especially those partes where the firste commocion was, and where also wer priuie and cloked frendes of his aduersaries. But because it was nigh Easter, he tooke his waye to Lincolne, and there tarieng was certified that the Lorde Louell and Humfre Stafforde were gone from the sanctuary in Colchester, but to what place or whether, no mā could tell, whiche message the kyng litle regardyng, wēt forth as he apointed to Yorke, and when he came there, it was shewed hym that the lorde Louell was at hand with a strong power of menne, and woulde inuade the cytie, also that the said lorde Stafforde and his brother wer in Glocestre, and there had made an insurreccion, and set menne on euery parte to defende the gates and walles of the citie.

The cōmocion made by the lord Louell and the lorde Staffor de.

At the first hearyng of this, the kyng was but litle moued, but after that he was certified by the letters of his frendes that it was true, he was in greate feare, for that he had neyther an armye prepared, nor harnyes for theim, but because the mattier required haste, least that by long tarieng, his aduersaries power might bee encreased and multiplyed, he commaunded the Duke of Bedforde to mete theim with three thousande mēne, whiche were harnysed but barely, for their breste plates were for the moste parte lether. And he hym selfe in ỹ meane tyme would gather vp an hoste, where he might in euery place. The duke hauyng his mē nigh to ỹ tētes of his enemyes, cōsulted w̄ certain

of

of his cõpaignie, by what waye he mighte traine theim to peace, withoute bloodde shedyng. After the whiche deliberation & aduisement had, it was decreed that certaine shoulde proclaime openly, þ all thei should haue their pardonne, that woulde leaue battaile. The whiche proclamation auayled muche,, for the Lorde Louell, eyther for some feare, or mystrust that he had in his people,, or feryng hym selfe of his owne behalfe, fledde pryuely in a night from his compaignie, to Lankeshire & ther remained a space with syr Thomas Broghton knight. And when hys army had knowledge therof, thei also submittyng theim selfes all to the Duke, asked pardonne for their heinous offence. The Lorde Stafforde also hearyng this, was in a great agony, and for feare dyd take sanctuarye at Colname. ii. miles from Abindon. But because that sanctuary was not a defence for traytours, he was taken from that place and behedded, and his brother was pdoned because he was thought not to haue done it of his owne will, but thorowe the counsaill and perswasion of his brother.

After this businesse was asswaged and Yorke shyre set in peace and quietnes, the kyng went to London, and shortelye after that to Wynchester, where the Quene his wyfe, was deliuered of a Pryncе called Arthure, and from Wynchester he retourned agayne to London.

Sone after it chaunsed that one syr Richard Symond preest, borne by nature to be a traytour and sedicious persomne, and yet well learned, had a chyld called Lambert Symenel to bee hys scholar, by whome he inuented this crafte and disceat

that

that he woulde make the chyld kyng of England and hym selfe archebyshoppe, or some hygh potestate in the realme, for he knewe verely, that many menne supposed kyng Edwardes chyldren to bee fled into some straunge place, and that Edwarde the Erle of Warwyke, sonne to the Duke of Clarence ether was or should bee put to death shortly And to the ende he myght ỹ better bryng hys purpose about, he taught the chyld bothe learnyng & good maners, and also to order hym selfe, as one lineally descendyng from a hygh progenie. Sone after the rumoure was, that the younge Earle of Warwyke was dead in prysonne. And when the preest heard of this, he intendyng therby to bring his matters aboute, chaunged the chyldes name and called hym Edwarde, after the younge Earle of Warwyke, the whiche were boothe of one age, and then sayled into Irelande, there opening his mynde to certain of the nobilitee, whome he knew to beare but lytle fauoure to kyng Henry, where he was promysed ayde of the Lorde Gerardine chauncellour of all that countree, and all that he coulde dooe. Whyche Lorde, fyrst callyng all hys frendes and louers together, desyred their helpe in restorying the yong Earle to his herytage. And dyd sende certain into Englande to desire theym that were kynge Rychardes frendes to continue in their loue and faythfulnes towardes hym, and helpe hys nephtewes chylde to his ryghte.

And that hys power myghte bee the stronger to ouercome hys enemyes, he desyred Lady Margarete syster to kynge Edwarde, and wyfe to the Duke of Burgondy, to further hys purpose with

her

her helpe, whyche lady beyng then in Flaunders, promised him by the messaungers, that she would not onely maintaine his entente with large mony and substaunce, but with all the laboure and peynes that she myght occasion other, to be of ỹ same conspiracie.

When kynge Henrye was certified of thys, he was sore greued, that by the meanes of suche a myscreaunte personne, so great sedicion should bee, neuertheless, the kynge consideringe that it shoulde bee to the destruccion of manye menne, yf that he shoulde fyghte with his enemies in open feelde, called hys counsayle together at the Charter house besyde Rychemounde, and there consulted to pacifie thys matter wythoute anye moze dysturbaunce. Where fyrste it was decreed, that all thei shoulde bee pardoned foz their offences and treasons latelye committed, whiche hath frome that tyme, bozne theim selfes vpryght towardes their kinge, leaste that syz Thomas Bzogh ton whyche kepte the Lozd Louell from the king a great tyme, wyth other despeyzing of theyz pardon shoulde haue made some sodaine insurrection agaynst hym. Further moze, that men shoulde not thyncke, but that the Duke of Clarence was in Englande, it was appoynted that he shoulde showe hym selfe abzode, wherby the oppnion that he was in Ireland myghte bee frustrate, and accompted as a lye. Also it was further determyned that the Ladye Elysabeth wyfe to kyng Edward the.iiii. shoulde lose al her landes, because she had submitted her selfe and her doughters wholye to the handes of kynge Rychard, contrary to the pzo

myse

myse made to the Lordes and nobles, whyche at her desyre lefte al that they had in Englande and fledde to kynge Henrye in Brytayne, and there dyd sweare hym to marye her eldeste daughter, as she wylled theim to dooe.

But her purpose did not fraime as (God would) Thys quene buylded a Collage in Cambrydge, and gaue landes to the maynteyning of the same whiche at thys houre is called ỹ quenes Collage.

When thys order and determynacion of the kynge was ended, he wente to London, and the nexte Sondaye folowynge he caused the young Earle to bee broughte out of the Tower through the strectes to Poules. And there to shewe hym selfe to euerye bodye, and talke with the chiefe and noble menne that were thoughte to haue conspyred agaynste kynge Henrye, for thys cause that they myghte perceaue the Iryshe menne to moue battayle vnaduysedly, and cause stryke vpon no iuste occasion, howebeit, all thys nothyng auayled, for the Earle of Lyncolne, the Duke of Suffolkes soonne, and nephewe to kynge Edwarde, coulde not suffer kynge Henrye thus to reygne, but as a traytoure sayled into Flaūders to the Ladye Margarete, takynge wyth hym Syr Thomas Broghton, with certayne other, Where also, the Lorde Louell landed twoo or three dayes before.

And there they beynge all together, determyned that the Earle of Lyncolne and the Lorde Louell shoulde goo to Irelande, and there attend vpon the counterfeyte Earle, and brynge hym to Englande with all the power they myghte agaynste

ynste kynge Henrye.

So that yf their dooynges had good succesſe that then the foreſayde Lambarte (miſnamed the Earle) ſhoulde by the conſente of the counſayle be depoſed, and the true Earle to bee delyuered oute of pryſon and enherite his right, and iuſte tytle of his dominion. But the kyng, not miſtruſting any man to bee ſo foolyſh hardy as to fyght in ſuch a cauſe, or anye ſo vndyſcrete (eſpecially of hys realme) as to beleue it, dyd onelye mynde the ſuppreſſynge of the Iryſhe menne, and theyr enterpryſe to ſubdue. Yet hearynge that the Earle of Lyncolne with other were fledde, and gooen to hys aduerſaries, he cauſed the borders to bee dilygentlye kepte that none other myghte eſcape or geue theym ſocoure, and commynge to the abbaye of Sayncte Edmundes Burye, it was certified that the Lorde Thomas Marques was come to excuſe and pourge hym ſelfe before hym, for certayne thynges that he was ſuſpected, to whome the kynge dyd ſende the Earle of Oxford to take him commynge, and conueyghe hym to the Towre of London, for thys cauſe, that yf he were hys frende, as he was in dede, that he ſhould not bee myſcontented to ſuffer a lytle impryſonmente for the ſafetie of hys kynge, yf he were not hys frende, there to tarye that he myghte haue no damage or hurte by hym.

And ſo the kynge wente forthe to Norwyche and tarynge there Chriſtemas daye, went after to Walſingham and from thence to Cambridge and ſo ſtreyght to London. In this tyme the erle of Lincolne, & the lord Louell had got about two thouſand

thousande Germaynes, wyth Martyn Swarte to be theyr captayne, and so saylynge to Ireland came and made the foresaid Lambarte kyng of Englande at Deuelynge. And so wyth the greate multitude of Irysshe menne aswell naked and vnarmed personnes, as other that the Lorde Gerardyne had vnder hym, they sayled into Englande, and landed for a purpose wythin a lytle of Lancastre, trustynge there to bee ayded of Syr Thomas Broghton the chiefe authoure of thys conspiracie.

The kynge not sleppynge hys matters, but mystrustynge that such thynges shoulde chaunce sente certayne Knyghtes, throughe all the Easte parties to attende the commynge of hys enemyes, and gatherynge all hys hooste together, went hym selfe to Couentree, where he beynge, it was certified hym that the Earle of Lyncolne was landed at Lancastre wyth the newe kynge. Whome the kynge appoynted to meete after the consente and agremente of hys counsayle, and to goo vppon theym wythoute anye farther delaye least that theyr power by long sufferaunce should bee augmented and multiplyed.

And so after suche aduisemente taken, he went to Notingham, and there by a lytle woodde called Boures he pytched hys tentes. To whome shortelye after came the Lorde Talbote Earle of Shrowesburye, the Lorde Straunge, the Lorde Cheiney wyth a greate armye of menne, and manye other noble menne, whose names here after ensue.

Raufe

Rauff Longforde
Jhon Montigomery
Henry Vernone of Pek
Rauff Shurley
Godfrey Folgehan
Thomas Gryffey
Edwarde Sutton
Humfrey Stanley & an other Humfrey Stãley,
Wyllyam Hugton
Wyllyam Meryng,
Edward Stanope
Geruase Clifton
Brian Stapulton
Henry Wylloughby
Wyllyam Perpoyntes
Jhon Babyngton
Wyllyam Bedyll
Robert Brundell
Jhon Markhaṁ
Wyllyam Merbury
Edwarde Aborogh
Wyllyam Tyrwite
Jhon Hussey
Robert Shefilde
Wyllyam Newporte
Roger Ormeston
Thomas Tempest
Wyllyam Knyuett
Henry Wyllaybet
Lord Edward Hastyng-
ges. Jhon Dygby
Stinõ Digby Haringtõ

Richarde Sacheuerell
Jhon Vyllers
Edwarde Fyldyng
Thomas Polteney
Nicholas Vaux
Thomas Gryne
Nicolas Griffin
Edmund Lucy
Edwarde Belknap
Robert Throgmarton
George Graie of Ruthin
Guide Wolstone
Thomas Fynderye
Dauid Phillips
Thomas Cheiney
Robert Cotton
Jhon Saint Jhon
Jhon Mordant
Thomas Terell
Jhon Raynsford
Robert Paynton
Robert Danyell
Henry Marney
Edmunde Aroundell
Also there came frõ ẏ ferdest partes of his realme other noble men, as these.
George Dglye
Rauff Neuill
Richard Latemere
Wyllyam Bulmere
Jhon Langforde
Wyllyam Norrys

1 Grene. 1st. alt. 2 Qre. 1st. Qt.

Jhon Neuill of Thorntinbridge and Jhon Wyl-lyams.

The erle of Lyncolne in the meane season went forth softely with his compaignie into Yorkeshire without hurte or discommoditie of any mãne that dwelt therabout, trustyng partely therby, & ptely also bycause he was well knowen and acquainted emong theim, that he should get greate ayde and socour there. But when he perceiued very few or none to folowe hym, and that he could not (seyng his enemies were so nigh hand and he also so far entred) in safegard with his hoste returne bacward yet he thought it best to abyde & taste the chaunce of battaill, and so muche ȳ rather, because he sawe Henry within twoo yeres before accompaigned but with a fewe and small sorte of souldiers ouercome kyng Richard whiche brought with hym a greate hoste of well armed menne. Wherfore he, beeyng now in a greate hope of victory, toke his iorney thens towarde Newarke, there to sette his souldyours in araye and mete the kyng, whom he knew well inough not to bee paste.ii.dayes iorney from hym. But before he could come thither, kyng Hēry whiche was surely certified of all thynges ȳ he did or wēt about, came to Newarke a litle before the euen that thei should fight on ȳ morowe other wyse then the erle loked for, and there tarying not long, went forth three myles ferther and sette his tentes and tarved all night. Of whose commyng although therle knewe, yet he went forth lustely of his iourney and came that night to a village nigh to his enemies, which is called Stooke, and there pitched his tentes.

The

'Stoke. sd.f. alt.

The next daie, the kyng so sone as he had sette his souldyours in due ordre and araye, went forwarde w̄ all spede to the place where the erle with all his laye. To the whiche place, when he was come, & had appointed the felde, which was moste mete for the battaill to bee fought in, by & by gaue place for his enemies to come forth and prouoked them to battaill. But as ready as he was to prouoke, so readie wer thei of their owne courage to come forth: so that of bothe parties thei ranne to battaill and fought moste egerly, in whiche tōflicte it did euidently appere that the Germaines whiche were sette in the forewarde, whose capitain was Martine Swarte, were nothyng woorse in manlynesse and cheualry (which thei gotte chiefly by daily and long exercise) then the Englishemen. And the Irishmen although thei fought verie lustely, yet by the reason that thei ware not harnes (accordyng to their fashiō and custome) were discomfeited and beate downe bothe more in nōbre, and soner then all the other. Yet was this battaill so earnestlie, & boldly fought for a whyle of bothe parties, that it could not bee wel discerned to whiche syde the victorie would incline. But at the last, the kynges forewarde which there abode all ieoperdie, so lustely & couragiously ranne vpon their enemies, ꝑ they were none hable to resist or abyde their power: so ꝑ all aswell Germaines as Irish men were there slain orels made to flie, of ꝑ whiche none at all could escape awaie. Whiche battaill, whē it was thus dooen, all mēne might se of what boldnes & audacitie these rebelliōs were. For their capitaines Jhon erle of Lincolne, Frācis Louell

Thomas Broghtō, Martine Swart, & Thomas Gerardine neuer gaue backe one foote but were slaine all in the same place where thei began first to fight. There were kylled at that battaill with their fiue capitaines spoken of euen now of that partie about foure thousand. Of the kynges part there were not halfe of theim whiche fought in ȳ forewarde slain.

Thē was Lambert, the child whiche was falsly reported to bee the Dukes soonne of Clarēce, and his maister sir Richard Simond preest, both taken, but neither of theim putte to death, because Lambert was yet but a child and did seme to dooe that, more by compulsion of his maister thē of his owne will, and the other was a preest whiche for his defaulte was cast into perpetuall prisone. But this Lambert was taken into the kynges kechin and after was made one of the kynges faukeners and is yet a lyue. And thus was all ȳ Margarete went about at this tyme, turned to naught and to nonē effecte, whiche thyng whē she heard tell of in Flaūders, she was verie sory at the hearte & made greate mone. And yet could she not bee contēt, but immediately after, inuēted an other thyng to vere and trouble kyng Henry, as it shalbe shewed here after.

Kyng Henry when he had all thynges brought thus to passe, and vtterly vanquished these his enemies, thought hymself at one tyme deliuered from twoo euils together, that is to saie, from bothe feare that was present, and also that was to come. For it was not to bee thought ȳ thei whiche were so fewe in nombre durste bee so bold to entre

into

into the realme and make battaile against ỹ kyng whom they knewe wel ynough would bryng with hym a great and well armed hoofte, but that they had other felowes of thefame coniuracion whiche would mete and ayde theim all that they could in tyme and place conuenient. Therefore when the kyng fawe the hofte of his enemies manifeftly before his eyes, he commaunded that no mã fhoulde kyll the earle of Lincolne, but that he fhould bee brought to hym alyue, to the entent that he might fhewe and bewraye all the other whiche were of ỹ conſpiracie. But that the fowdyers would not do, leaft the fauyng of hym, fhould bee the deſtrucciõ (as it fhould haue been in dede) of many other. This battayle was fought in the yeare of oure Lorde a thoufande foure hundreth, foure fcore, & the fecõde yere of this Henryes reigne. In ỹ whiche yere alfo Thomas Burfcher archebyfhop of Cãterburye died, into whofe roume fucceded Johñ Morton late bifhop of Ely, whome Alexander of that name the fixte bifhop of Rome made Cardinall. Now to retourne to my purpofe.

After this, the kyng, when he had gathered al the prayes and fpoyles together, and had buryed theim that there wer flain, went forth to Lincolne and there taryed three dayes, and had euerye daie one procefſion to thanke God almightie that he had the ouerhande of his enemies. And incontynently fent his banner to Walfyngham to be conſecrate to our Lady, there to bee kepte for a perpetuall monument of victorie. Then did he execuciõ of fuche rebellions as were there taken, & fhortely after tooke his iorneye forth to Yorke, and there

likewyse suche as were founde gyltye dyd he punyshe strayghtlye. When all this was doone, he wente vnto Newcastle, and frome thence sente into Scotlande Richarde Fox whiche not longe before was made bishop of Exeter, and Richarde Edgecombe knight as Ambassadoures to kynge James for a league of peace. For this Henrye thought it a great pleasure and cõmoditee, to bee in peace and concorde with kinges & gouernours whiche laye aboute this his realme, and specially and before all other with kyng James, because ỹ there no rebellions might trust (whiche otherwise perchaunce woulde haue trusted) to haue ayde or succoure at his hande: so that thereby there durste none againe take weapon against hym. The ambassadoures, when they wer come into Scotland to the kyng, were of hym both gently and after the moste louing fashion receiued and heard, and then dyd he plainlye declare and open to theim ỹ he hym selfe loued kyng Henrye and his, no man better: but that ỹ moste parte of his Scottes and subiectes could in no case agree with the English menne. Wherfore, excepte that he should offend or displease theim, he desired ỹ legates to bee contẽt with truce for .vii. yeres in promesse, but in dede, he sayed, that peace betwene theim on his parte shoulde neuer bee broken, and or euer those seuen yeres should bee passed, that he would geue truce for seuen yeres lenger: so that kyng Henry and he would euer bee in peace and moste assured amytie And this did kyng James, because he knewe that no facte of his people, shoulde bee alowed. When the Ambassadoures hearde this, they tooke the

yeres

[1] kyng Henry. [2] Procede. Edit. all.

peres that were offered theim, as concernynge peace, and by and by retourned home to kyng Henry againe, and shewed hym all the mattier in order. With the whiche tydynges he was verye well contented.

Shortely after, the kyng departed thence towarde London, and in the waye at Leicetre mette hym Ambassadoures from the Frenche kyng which shewed hym, that their kyng Charles had recouered many tounes and cyties, whiche before were possessed of kyng Maximilian, and that he kepte battayle nowe with Fraunces the duke of Brytayne, because he kepte and socoured in his dominion certaine that were traytours and rebellions against hym, of the whiche the chief was Lewes duke of Orlyance, and therfore he desyred hym of his frendship & familiaritie, that either he would helpe hym otherwise medle of neyther partie. But kynge Henrye, althoughe he had founde muche frendship at the Frenche kynges hande, yet for as muche as he spyed whereof this stryke beganne, with this message was not well contente. For the cause that the Frenchemenne tooke battayle, was because they sawe that the Duke was an olde manne and had neuer a chylde, and thereby that they myghte brynge that Dukedome into their subiection.

When kyng Henrye perceiued this, and also howe louyng the Brytaynes had been euer to Englande, and finally remembred the tendre loue which was betwene the duke and hym, thought it best, if nede wer, to helpe the Britaynes, yet for as

muche as he had founde the Frenche kyng verey kynde in tymes past, and had partely by his helpe recouered his kyngdome, he was verey lothe to medle: in so muche that he coulde not well tell what was best in this mattier to bee dooen. But at the laste he fully purposed, if necessitie shoulde require, to helpe the duke in all that he might. Yet, least he should make of his highe frende hys extreme enemie, his aunswere was to the ambassadoures, that he did intende to make their kyng and the duke frendes again. Wherfore assone as the Frenche kynges ambassadoures were dimissed, he sent on message Christopher Urswycke to Charles the kynge of Fraunce. Firste to certifye hym, that he was verey glad of the victorye that he had vpon Maximilian, secondarely what tumulte and insurreccion was made here in Englād thyrdly and especially to desyre hym to bee at one againe with the Duke of Bryttayne. And then he commaunded this Urswycke, that if the kyng of Fraunce shoulde bee so contente, to go forthe immediatlye to the Duke, and desyre hym lykewyse of thesame.

But when the kyng was come againe to London, there was ioye and myrthe for the victorye ỹ he had on euery syde. For not onely the kyng, but also euerye one of his cytezyns reioysed verye muche. Wherfore the kyng shewed hym selfe both verye humane and courteous toward all menne, and also rewarded all theim that tooke payues in that battaile moste bountefully. And not long after delyuered Lord Thomas Marques out of the toure, and loued hym verye well.

In

In the meane season Christofer Urswicke was come to the frenche kyng, & of hym, after the most louing fassion ỹ coulde bee, receiued. And as sone as he had shewed his message, ỹ kyng shewed him selfe to bee therew̃ veray well pleased. Then went ỹ ambassadour streight thence, as it was cõmaunded hym, into Britain, and shewed the duke what kyng Henry would haue dooen. But the duke (because hym selfe had been sicke a great while, & ther by his memory & wit was decaied) called to hym to heare the message bothe Lewes the duke of Orleaunce and other of his councell, whiche Lewes in no wyse woulde haue any peace to bee made, but saied that it was more mete that kyng Henrye (seing he had founde suche kyndnesse at the Dukes hande, and Britaine was suche a good defence to England) to helpe to kepe battayle all ỹ he might against the frenchmen. Then retourned this Christofer againe into Fraunce, & declared to the king Charles what aunswer was made of ỹ Britains, and shortely after came into Englande againe.

But still in the meane time, ỹ Frenche kyng went aboute busely to ouercome the Brytains, and the more he was nigh of his purpose, so much ỹ more did he exhorte & desire kyng Henry to make peace betwene theim, wherfore he sẽt Bernarde Daubeney knighte in all the haste to kyng Henrye to desire hym in any wise to make some ende of this cõtrauersy. And therupon the kyng being desirous of the same, chose thre oratours, ỹ Abbot of Abindon, John Lilie the bishop of Romes collectoure and Richard Tonshal a knight and a veray wise man, to gooe firste to the Frenche kyng, and then

to

Tonstal, Dr. alb.

to the duke to make amitee and frendshyp againe betwene theim. But or euer these ambassadoures proceded on their iourney, John Lilye fell sicke of the goute: therfore for hym was chosen Christofer Urswycke, and they together wente (as they were cõmaunded) firste into Fraunce to the kyng, and thence without delaye into Britain. But Fraunces the duke in no case would take suche condicyons as wer there offered, wherfore they came back againe into Fraunce without their purpose, and there tarieng, signified to kyng Henry by their letters all that was dooen. But or their letters came to the kynges handes, Edward Wooduile, a bold Champion came to hym & delired verye earnestly that he myght haue an host of men to helpe the Britains, and leaste it should cause any dissencion betwene the Frenche kyng and hym, he saied that he would gooe priuely and without a pasporte, to thentent it might bee thought that he stole out of the land. But the kyng, for as much as he trusted that peace shoulde bee made, woulde in no wyse graunt his peticion. Wherfore this Edward wēt streight into the yle Ueches, which was in his dominacion, & there so sone as he had gathered his meme together about foure. C, sayled ouer to the Britaines, & ioyned hym selfe with theim against the Frenchmē, whiche thing when it was knowen in Fraunce, made ỹ ambassadours greatly afraid of their liues. But whiles they were in this feare, and the Frēchemen thought it dooen maliciously of Kyng Henry, there came other Ambassadours frome hym to the Frenche kyng, certifieng hym & declaring (by most euident tokēs) that it was nothing

thing in dede as it was thought to haue been. To the which message, albeit ỹ kyng had lytle credēce yet he made as thoughe he had not bene angry at all. So ỹ Ambassadours renewed peace betwene their king & hym for. xii. monethes and retourned home again, & shewed the kyng all such thinges ỹ they had either heard or sene there, wherof he gathered that ỹ Frenchmen did nothing lesse entend then to haue peace made. Wherfore without delay he called a parliament & there consulted of the aidyng of the Brytains: then of the expence that should bee therin made, & after of other matters.

And assone as the parliament was broken vp, he caused musters to bee taken in euery toune thorowoute his realme. Yet leaste peraduenture he might seme willingly to breake the amitee whiche was betwene the Frenche kyng and hym, he sent Ambassadours into Fraunce to certifye the kyng that of late he had kepte a parliament, and there ỹ it pleased all the nobles that he should sende helpe to ỹ Britains, because they at all times had dooen more benefites to Englande then all other naciōs and therfore that he should either leaue of battail or elles that he shoulde not bee greued if he dyd obey ỹ mindes of his Lordes and prelates, and yet that he woulde promise hym this one thing, ỹ his should medle wt hym no lēger then he was in Britain & kepte battaile vpon theim. With these commaundementes ỹ ambassadours went forth and declared to ỹ French kyng all the minde and wyll of their kyng which thyng he litle cared for, and thought as it came to passe in dede, that the Englishemen there coulde lytle auayle.

In

In the meane season the Britains fought one felde at a place called sainte Albanes & there sped verey euel. For of theim Lewes duke of Orleaūce with many mo were taken, and Edwarde Woodeuile, James Galeot an Italian and a verey good warryer, with diuers other noble menne slaine. Whiche thing when kyng Henry heard tell of, he thinking it tyme to make haste, sente spedely Roberte Brooke Lorde, John Cheinye, John Nidelton, Rauke of Helton, Richarde Corbet, Thomas Leightō, Richard Lacon, & Edmond Cornewell, all lustye capitaines with. viii. thousand wel armed men to ỹ Britains to helpe theim in theyr nede, whiche by reason ỹ wind serued theim, came thither so sone as they could desire. But when the Frenche menne knewe of their comming (whome they knewe so longe as they were fresshe and lusty to bee in a maner inuincible) at ỹ firste wer blanke all, and durste scarsely looke oute of their tentes, but afterwarde trusting ỹ they might wery theim they went many of theim together into diuers places, and kepte many bikeringes with the Englisshe menne, but they theim selfes euer bare the worste away, howsoeuer the Englishmen sped, they sped naught. Whiles they this kynde of warre did exercise, the Duke Fraunces died, and then was all dasshed. For the chyefe rulers of the Britains being some of theim corrupted with money, & some sturred vp with ambicyon, fell into deuisyon amonge theim selues, and semed nomore to endeuoure to defende their commune weale, but rather to destroy and vtterly extinguisshe it. Which thing the englisshe menne perceiuing, and also suffering

muche

muche colde, were compelled of necessitee within fyue moonethes that thei wente thyther, to come backe agayne into Englande.

Then Charles the French kyng maried Anne the Dukes doughter, and gat al Brytayn by that meanes into hys hãdes. But of this it shalbe spoken more here after.

It was decreed here in Englande before there were any souldyours sent into Brytayne, that for the expence of that warre, euery man should paye as thei were hable, a tribute, whyche the mooste parte of theim that dwelte in the byshoprykе of Durhã and Yorke shyre, dyd vtterly refuse to pay, and complayned of the matter to their Lorde the Earle of Northumberland. And he immediately signified to the kyng by his letters that the people dyd greatly lament and was sory saiyng, that thei were neuer put to so muche coast, as thei had been of late dayes, & nowe that ther was so much requyred of theim, that neither thei were hable to pay so great a summe, nor would pay it. Yet for al that the kyng cõmaunded the Erle to get it on thẽ and make theim pay it whether thei would or not least peraduenture it myght be a cause, that yf at any time a tribute agayne should bee requited of thẽ, to make an insurreccion. Which thyng when the people heard of, by and by they ranne vnto the earle and as the authoure of the tribute paying kylled hym out of hande. And when thei had so done, thei chase Jhon Egremonknight a verey dicious personne to bee their captayne, and so arraied them selfes, and went agaynst the kyng, making cries in euery towne, that thei came to fight for

Themurderyng of the erle of Northũberland

for no nother cause but to defēde ỹ cōmon libertie.

But when the mattier shoulde come to blowes thei wared colde all the sorte of theim, and euery one wished that this tumulte wer retracted which was nowe alredy begonne, so that at the cōclusiō not one scacely scaped without his great discommodite. For the kynge assone as he hearde of this insurrection, went downe with an hooste to Yorke wherof these slaues and traitours beyng greatly afraied, fledde some hether and some thether and durst not abide and sustaine the power of ỹ kynges army. Wherfore thei wer sone taken and punished greuously, accordyng to their deseruyng euery one of theim. But Jhon Egremont whiche was their captain fledde into Flanders to Margarete of whome we spake before.

And the kyng so sone as this busines was quēched, tooke his iourny back again vnto London and committed the tribute whiche was in Yorke and about Yorke to bee taken vp, holy to Richard Tonstal. And this was ỹ yere of our lord a thousand foure hundred. xc. and the fourth yere of the reigne of this kyng Henry.

The .iiii. yere of Henry the .vii.

And in thys yere also the kynge of Scottes was sore vexed. For his subiectes roase agaynst hym and made his sonne James whiche was as yet but a chylde, their capitain. Wherfore, he sent to the kynge of Englande, to the Frenche kyng, and to the byshoppe of Roome Innocentius to desire theim to make some end of thys ciuile battayle and contencion whiche was betwene hys people and hym. Whiche afterwarde sente theyr ambassadours as they were desired, but all in vayne

bayne. For ỹ rude sort would nedes fight onlesse he would resygne his crowne, wherfore shortely after, thei fought, and in that battayle kylled the kyng and gaue his sonne James whiche was the fourth of that name the crowne. The kyng of Scottes slain of his subiectes.

But the byshoppe of Romes legate Hadrian came to late. For whyles he was in Englande w̃ kyng Henry, worde came that the kyng of Scottes was slayne in battayle and hys soonne made kyng. And therfore, he taried here in England for a space, and was veray muche made of, and hygh ly commended to the kyng by Jhon Morton̄ arch byshop of Canterburie. Whereby he came into so high fauour with kyng Henry, that he made him bishoppe of Herforde, and shortly after, that least gaue hym the bishoppryke boothe of Welles and Bathe. And not longe after he retourned w̃ these honours to Roome, and there of Alexander was made Cardinall.

There beganne also of freshe, certayne busi-nesse as concernynge Brytaine before this geare was appeased: whiche was, that Maximilian be-yng at that tyme without a wyfe, would haue ma ried the duke of Bryteines doughter, and had one that wowed for hym, which lady promisyng hym fayth & trueth, to the entent that she might not go from her word, he vsed this way w̃ her, when she went to her bed the night after, as to the bedde of wedlocke, the wower that was hired, putte one of his fete into ỹ bed to the knee in ỹ sight & cõpany of many noble matrõs & ladies, for a token & testi mony ỹ the mariage was consũmate, & thei. ii. as mã & wife. But this did nothing auaile, for Char les the

the Frenche kyng was desireous to marye her / hearyng that Maximiliã was sure to her, dyd the more busely set vpon the Britaynes, to thentent he might both haue the ladye and the countree also at his wyll, for he estemed that mariage to bee of no strength or force. Neuertheless, he feared kyng Henry muche, least that he would stoppe his purpose, whiche kyng had made a league, and Ferdinande also the kyng of Spayne, had made ỹ same with the Britaynes, to assist theim in all their iooperdies and perilles that should chaunce to theim by forein countrees, wherfore he sent in al post hast Francese Luxemburgense, Charles Marignane and Roberte Gaguine, to kyng Henry for a peace to bee confirmed and hadde, desyrynge hym, that their kyng might ordre the mariage of the Ladye Anne as wer thought best without any let or hynderaunce of it by hym, but kyng Henry would not agree to theim, that the lady should bee maried to hym, consyderyng she was made sure to the kyng Maximilian, for that it was against all right and lawe bothe of God and manne. Albeit the kynge would gladly make a peace betwene theim bothe, and so demissyng ỹ kynges Ambassadoures with a large and ample rewarde, sent Thomas Goldestone abbot of Cantorbury and the lord Thomas of Ormondye ambassadours streight after theim.

In this meane space, Alexander B. of Rome the sixt of that name after Innocẽtius sent the bishop of Cõcordiense legate to the Frenche kyng for certayne mattiers, and emong other for a peace and vnitee to bee confederate betwyxt hym and kyng Henry, the whiche when he had easely obteyned,

he

he came to Englande and there beyng entretained moste rotally of the kyng, had his purpose and desire of hym. The Englishe ambassadours then beyng with the Frenche kyng, purposed to haue a peace concluded, whiche first demaunded certain thynges of the kyng ere that it should bee made, albeit the kyng would graũt theim nothyng, and was sore moued with their request & askyng. So ẏ shortly after, the Frenche kyng sent to the noble menne of Britain greate giftes and rewardes to the entent thei might moue the ladie Anne to giue her troweth to hym, and also sent to herself many princely giftes & tokens, ẏ she would beare loue to hym. And ẏ she might not feare but that she might lawfully marie to hym, certified her ẏ the promise was of none effecte ẏ she had gyuẽ to Maximiliã for ẏ it was geuẽ & made wout his cõsent whiche had ẏ gouernaunce & domi[illegible]on ouer all ẏ countre And this was the cause that no concorde or peace could bee kept betwixt theim. And where as that the kyng had taken Maximilians doughter ladie Margaret to bee his wife, he saied that it might bee lawfully dissolued because ẏ ladie was vnder age, and not ripe to bee maried. This ladie Anne of Britain through the persuasion of many noble menne of that countree, was contented to bee his wife and ladie. And when the kyng was certified of this, he hastened the mariage with all the expedicion and celeritee that he could. So that the Englishe ambassadours returned again to their countree, and nothyng dooen or agreed vpon in their matter. When the kyng was certified of this by his ambassadours, he purposed to make bat-

taill against hym, and to reuenge the naughtie entent of his, with the swerde, and assemblyng his counsaill together, showed theim the matter, and the iuste cause he had to fight, desiryng theim for the maintenaunce of thesame warres to helpe hym with money, neuertheless that menne should not thynke it to bee extorte of theim, he willed euery mãne to gyue as muche and as litle as he would, and theim to bee esteemed and taken as his moste beste and assured frendes that gaue ỹ most money When this somme was gatheryng and preparaunce made for battaill, Maximilian the kyng warred sore with the Frenchemen, whiche kyng was taken a litle before at a certain brunt and skirmishe made, and cast in prisone, after the whiche tyme kyng Henry sent to hym Giles Dabeney capitain of Calais to aide hym with three thousãd harnissed mẽne. At ỹ length Maximilian hauyng the better hand of the Frenchemen, entẽded to reuenge hymself of the Frẽche kyng, for that he had repudiate his doughter ladie Margarete, and taken to hym as wife quene Anne, but because he was not fully hable of hymself to sustein that battaill, he sent James Contibalde ambassadour to kyng Henry for helpe, whiche James when he had dooen his message, the kyng promised that he would dooe for hym all that he could in mainteinyng his warres.

In this tyme, Charles the Frenche kyng maried ladye Anne, chalengyng by this mariage the dominion and gouernaunce of ỹ Brytaines. Maximilian the kyng beyng certified of this, was greately moued, for that he did not onely forsake

and

and repudiate his doughter ladye Margarete, but also receiued in mariage ỹ ladye and quene Anne to his wife, and in this furie he sent to kyng Hēry desieryng hym to prepare an armie, for he would goo vpon the Frenche menne, and kepe open battaill with theim, whiche kyng Henry gathered an hoste of menne, and proclaimed battaill in all his realme, after the whiche proclamacion there came to London an houge armie of menne, with their capitaines, whiche herafter ensewe and folowe.

Rycharde Thomas dyē.
with a greate compaignie of Welshe menne.
The erle Thomas of Derbie.
George erle of Shrowesburie.
Thomas erle of Harundell. Edmunde duke of Suffolke.
Edwarde erle of Deuenshire w̄ his noble young soonne.
Thomas erle of Ormō-
George erle of Kent.
Lorde Thomas Dorset Marques.
Jhon Cheyney.
Gyles Dabeney
Richard Gylforde
Jhon Rayulforth
James Terell
Jhon Sauage
Thomas Baro of Heltō
Wyllyam Bulmerey
Edwarde Stanley, with other.

After that all this armie was arated, the kyng sent sir Christopher Urswycke, and sir Jhon Kyseley knyghtes to the kyng Maximilian, to certifye hym that thei were all in a redynesse to kepe battaile when he would haue theim. When they had dooen their message thei returned backe a-

gain to their kyng, certifiyng hym, that Maximiliã was so poore and nedye of monye and menne, that he could not be hable to susteyne any battaile neuertheless his mynde and will was good, if his power and habilitee had been correspondent to it. The kyng after the receipte of these letters, was displeased muche with hym, albeit consyderyng he had gooen so farre in it, and had suche furnyture of all thynges prepared, least that menne shoulde impute it to hym as cowardnesse to faynt frõ battaile, he proceded forth towarde Fraunce, and about ỹ. vi. daye of Septẽbre he landed at Calise, & there rested his armye. Wher worde was brought to all the hoste (for thei did not knowe of it before) that Maximilian could make no preparaunce for lacke of mony. At ỹ whiche thei marualed greatly, consideryng that he had suche vilanye shewed hym not longe before at the kynge of Fraunce hand. Yet thei wer neuer discouinfeyted at it, but like stoute and valiaunt warryars had great confidence in their owne power and strengthe, wyth whõ the kyng of Fraunce (after ỹ he perceaued it best for his profite & ease) would gladly haue been reconciled, although he had a ready hoste to fight against theim & withstãde their power. And especially he desyred peace for this cause, ỹ he might haue the loue of his neighboures, to the entent his realme might bee in better sauegarde and quietnes, whẽ he should warre against Ferdinãd kyng of Napels, at ỹ desyre of Ludouike Sforcia duke of Millayn, whiche at that present tyme did inuite hym to it, wherfore he did sende Philip Desquerd chief of Annonye to desyre kyng Henrye of peace,

whiche

whiche Philip did send ỹ letters to hym, before he came into the countre hymself, wherin he signified that he would take suche paines in bryngyng his purpose about, that he would if it should so please his grace, reconcile bothe hym and their kyng to loue eche other as thei haue dooen heretofore, and saied that it should bee for his honour to take thesame condicion, whiche condicion if he would send certain of his capitains to mete with hym in any parte of Fraunce, and there to determine of it he should haue it there promised & hereafter duely to bee performed. The kyng after he had red these letters, did send the bishop of Exceter, and Giles Dabeney to the forenamed Philip for peace to be agreed vpon & concluded, the whiche after a space determyned vpon certain condicions whiche here after shalbee shewed, that peace should bee had on bothe parties. When thei were thus consultyng, ỹ kyng hauyng his hoste at Caleis, remoued from that place to Bononye, & there pitchyng his tētes beseeged the toune with all the power he might, whiche toune because it was strongely defended & furnished with all thynges necessarye for warre, it could not bee ouercome without greate labour, & before ỹ he either could or did ouercome any parte of it, woord was brought, that a peace was cōclu-ded and made, whiche heard, as it was pleasure to the Frenchemen, so it was sorowe to the Englishe men, for thei cried out of the kyng and saied it was not for his honour so to dooe, but the kyng as a wise manne & moste prudent prince, saied it should be the death of many noble & puissaunt capitaines if he should continue thesame battaill, & therefore

it might be to his sore reproche, if it wer in his power, not to tendre alwell the health of his cõmons as his owne, whiche saiyng did somewhat coule & pacifye their grief. And after this dooen, the kyng returned backe to Calise, for because it was enformed hym ỹ one Richard ỹ named hym selfe ỹ sonne of kyng Edwarde had made an insurreccion in Flaũders, through ỹ counsaill of lady Margarete ỹ quene, to fight against hym, which thyng, kyng Henry consyderyng did the more spedely hasten to conclude a peace. And the condicion of this peace to bee made was this, ỹ the Frenche kyng should paye to kyng Henry, a certain summe of mony, the whiche was leauyed by the ambassadours, for the cost and charges that the kyng was put to in that battayll, and also should yerely for a certain space paye or cause to bee payde to the kyng of Englãd for a full recompence. xxb. thousand crounes. The whiche Frenche kyng after that beyng in warre with the Italians, payd the said tribute to ỹ most noble prince and our souereigne lorde kyng Hẽrye the. viii. sonne to Henry the seuenth, for a full recõpensacion and frendshyp to bee had for euer. This was the yere of our Lorde a thousand foure hundreth foure score and thirtene, and the seuẽth yere of his reigne. Also in this inuadyng & besiegyng of Bonony[1] (whiche we spake of before) there was none killed, sauyng onely syr Jhon Sauage, whiche goyng out of his tent w̃ syr Jhõ Riseley, was taken priuely rydyng about the walles of ỹ toune and there because he would not yelde was slain of the Frenche men, albeit the other syr Jhon Ryseley fled and escaped their daunger.

The. viii yere.

After

[1] Boleyne. edit. alt.

After this the kyng went frō Calis to England again, & yet that he might not be wout some trouble or busynes, quene Margaret of Spaine (whiche euer watched to do hym a displeasure) perceauyng ỹ the erle with his cōpaignie could not haue suche successe in their businesse as she would haue wished theim, she inuented a new way to worke treason against him. There was a certain yōg mā of Tornace, very beautiful & faire in coūtenaunce, & of a pregnaunt witte, whiche yōg mā was called Peter & surnamed Warbecke, & for his cowardnes nycknamed of the Englishe men & called Perkyn, which yōg mā trauaylyng many countrees could speake many lāguages & for his baasenes of stocke & birth was knowen of none almost. Therfore ỹ quene thynkyng this yōg man to bee mete whō she might feigne to be the duke of Yorke, and sōne to her brother kyng Edward, kept hym a certain tyme wt her priuely, and tellyng hym what he should be, ỹ he might the rather persuade mē to be the kynges sonne did send hym into Irelād, after what time she knewe that kyng Henry had apointed to fight against the Frenche kyng, where he was honorably receaued & taken of euery manne as a prynce, for whose right, they promysed all to fight, and helpe hym in all ỹ they could. After this it came to ỹ Frēche kynges eare ỹ such an one was in Ireland, for whō the kyng did send to see & caused hym to be brought before him, & when he came into his pūsence, ỹ kyng accepted hym gladly, & after a princely fashiō intreteined hym. But after ỹ he came in loue wt the kyng of England, the sayd Charles did dimisse ỹ yōg mā, & would no lōger

Perkyn warbeck.

Lady Margaret of Burgoyn. Edit. alt.

Duches. Edit. alt.

kepe hym, least that some inconueniencie or cause of strife should chaunce thorough it. Wherfore ỹ young manne went to Flaunders agayne to the quene Margarete, whiche quene did receaue hym with suche gladnesse, that she coulde not well rule her selfe, & for this cause onely she dyd shewe her selfe so ioyfull and merye, that menne mighte perswade theim selfe that this was Richard the kynges soonne, and vpon that cause truely, men did ỹ more reuerence to the younge manne, and ỹ more firmely beleue hym to bee the righte heire & sonne to kyng Edwarde. Also after this rumour blased abrode, aswel in England, Fraunce, as Flaundres there beganne great sedicion to spryng, and firste they that were long in sanctuary for the greate offences that they had commytted, and other that wer cast in pouertie, gathered a compaignie of mẽ and sayled ouer into Flaunders to the counterfaicte Edwarde, otherwise named Peter, also many of the noble men conspired together, and to the entent they might bryng their purpose wel about, they did send certain to the Quene Margarete, to knowe when thesame Edwarde might come conueniently into Englande, ỹ thei beyng certified of thesame might ỹ more easely receaue & bryng hym into ỹ realme. So ỹ by the consent and agreement of theim all, syr Robert Clyfforde knight & Wyllyam Barley wer sent to shewe all their myndes & aduyce as concernyng the newe founde duke, to the Quene Margarete. Whome the Quene did accepte gladlye, and persuaded theim, that it was true that was publyshed of Rycharde the duke, and streight vpon shewed theim thesame

Peter

[1] Lady. W.I. alt. [2] Richarde. W.I. alt.

[3] Duches. W.I. alt. [4] She. W.I. alt.

Peter, whiche was muche lyke Richarde, prayssyng his vertues and qualitees that he had, wonderfullye.

The said Robert, whē he had seen theſame yoūg manne, beleued surely that he was of the kynges bloode, and wrote to Englande to his coumpaignye and felowes of his conspiracie, that he knewe hym to bee the kynges soonne by his face & euery proporcion of his body. And when these letters came vnto Englande, the chief capitaynes of this businesse did openly diuulgate and publysshe, that it was trewe that was spoken and saied abroad of the Duke, but it was dooen by suche a crafte, that no manne coulde tell who was the authoure of that rumoure.

When the kyng perceiued that many men did geue credence to his vaine fable, he thought beste for his owne safegard to prouide a remedy for it, & also mystrusting that some conspiracye had bene made bicause that sir Robert Clifford had fled priuely into Flaundres, commaunded certain knightes that were chosen and piked menne of warre w̄ a bonde of menne to kepe the borders surely ꝑ no manne might escape or saple ouer the sea without a pasporte or licence geuen by hym. Also that men myghte not continue in the false perswasion and beleefe that they had conceyued of the duke, he caused certain spies to search in all the cities of Belgike, to knowe of what progenie this mysnamed Richarde was, and to geue theim highe rewardes that would shewe the verite and truth of the same matter. So that they sailynge into Fraunce, euerye manne dyd gooe into a contraye quarter,

and

and enquired diligently for hym, and at ỹ length, certain of theim came to a towne called Tornace and there were certifyed by the testymonye of many honest menne that he came but of a lowe and courle parentage, and he was named Peter Warbecke, whiche thing also the kynges frendes certified hym by their letters and writynges to hym more plaine and euidentelye. Therfore when the kyng had knowen the matter wholy, alwel by his frendes as by his spies sent foorth purposelye for the same, he caused it to bee proclaimed openly alwell in other regions & countrees as in England that the diseate and deuelish crafte might appere eudent to euery manne. And firste he sent ambassadours to Philyp the chiefe capitaine in Flaundres, and to his councell, because he was but of a younge age, whiche were sir Edward Ponynges knight, and sir William Warame preest and lawyer, that they might shewe euidently howe falsely the younge manne hath vsurped the name of Richarde duke of Yorke whiche was kylled with his brother Edward in the Towre of London, at the cõmaundement and will of kyng Richard his vncle, as euery man coulde testifye and affirme most surely.

Also that he was borne of a poore stocke, and an obscure famulie in Tornace, and there named Perkin Warbecke, and therfore that it woulde please hym & his councel not to suffer theim selues to bee blynded or seduced with suche mere impostures and craftie illusions, nor yet to aide hym at any hande to cause sedicion or strife, considering that he had no iuste title to the enheritynge of the

same

same. And that they would the rather bee his frendes nowe, because ỹ he helped Maximilian theyr kyng the yere before againste the power and violencye of the Frenche menne, where as he of hym selfe was not hable to resyste theyr myghte and stronge power. When the Ambassadours had dooen their message, they were gentely entretayned of hym, and had their request, that he woulde not (for the loue that he oughte vnto the kynge) no nor any of his counsaile helpe thesame Perkin any thinge at all.

Neuertheless, yf the quene Margaret would persiste and continewe in her malice towardes the kyng, (whome the Ambassadour sir William Uarame had reproued and checked sore, for bringing vp of suche monsters and commune plagues, to the publike weale in his oration that he made vn to Philippe and his counsayle) it was not in their power to withstande it, for because that she might doo in her owne heritage all thinges at her owne wyll and pleasure. Whiche quene entended fully to arme this Perkin with a stronge compaignye of menne against kyng Henry.

After that kynge Henrye dyd heare of this, he purposed to pacyfye all this busyneste that was like to chaunce, by wytte and policye, and streight dyd sende foorthe certaine spies, whiche shoulde fayne theim selfes to haue fledde vnto the Duke, and by that meanes searche foorthe and knowe the whole entente of theyr coniuracion, and after what waye they framed theyr matters.

Other also shoulde promyse a pardon and remyssyon vnto syr Roberte Clyfforde, and Willyam Barley

Barley for their offence cõmitted to the kyng. And when they had so dooen, many of theim returned to Englande, and broughte the names of certayne that were chief of the same conspiracye, Other tarted vntyll suche tyme that sir Robert Clifforde came to Englande agayne. And when the kyng had knowen the chief capitaines of this tumulte by his spyes that were there with theim, he caused all them to bee attached & brought to London before his presẽce, whose names wer sir John Ratclyffe, syr Simon Monforde, syr Thomas Thwarte knightes, William Dabeney, Roberte Ratcliffe, Richard Lesey, w̃ many other. Also certaine preestes and religious menne, as sir William Richeford, and Thomas Poynes bothe monkes of sainct Dominikes order, sir William Sutton, sir William Vyseley Deane of Poules, & Robert Layborne. Other that were giltie of the same crime, hearing that many of their compaignie wer taken, fledde and did take sanctuarye. And the other that were taken wer condempned all of treason, of ỹ whiche there was heded sir Simon Monford, sir Robert Ratcliffe, and William Dabeney as authours & chiefe capitaines of this busines. The other were pardoned, and the Preestes also for their order that they had taken. Also sir John Ratcliffe was pardoned of his lyfe, but after that he came to Calisse, & there caste in prisone, he was behedded, because he corrupted the kepers w̃ many promises to haue escaped out of the same.

Shortly after, sir Robert Clifford trusting to find fauour & grace at the kynges hande, came to England, of whose cõming when ỹ kyng was certified he

1 Procero. edit. alt.

2 sir Robert Ratcliffe Lord Fitzwater. edit alt.

ed he went streight to ỹ towre of London, & there taryed tyll suche tyme ỹ syr Robert Clyffoꝛd came whiche thyng he vsed vnder this pretence, that yf sir Robert Cliffoꝛd had accused any man to hym of ỹ treason, that then euerie suche person mighte bee called thether withoute anye suspectiõ of anie euel, and there streight to bee cast in holde, but before I goo furder, I wyll shewe the opinion that many men conceaued of the knightes goynge to Flaunders. Some men helde this opinion, that kyng Henrye dyd sende hym as a spye to Flaunders, and therfoꝛe he came the soner into his fauoure. Neuertheless, this is not lyke to bee true by diuerse reasõs. Fyrst that it tourned to ỹ great infampye and hurt, both of hym selfe and his frendes. Secondarly that he was not in so greate fauoure with the kyng, as he had ben in tymes past foꝛ because that he was giltie in that part. Therfoꝛe the saied sir Robert now comming to the king after his retourne into England, kneled mekelye downe at his feet, and desired pardõ of his grace and after that beyng enquired of the coniuration and examined who wer the authours of this mischiefe, he pronounced & saied that William Stãly whome the kynge made Earle, was one of the chief, when he had so saied, the kyng was greatly dismayed & greued, that he should offend, whõ he had made chief of his priuie chamber, considering also that he had founde great kindenes hertofoꝛe at his hande, and that he dyd ouercome kyng Richard chiefly by his helpe and meanes. So that the kyng coulde not bee perswaded, that he was any suche offender, had not it bene shewed him af

ter

ter by manifest tokens and apparēt argumentes ꝑ it was true as he saied. Whom the king thē caused to be taken and examined of the matter, after the which examinacion he was proued to be an offender. Then the kynge doubtynge what to dooe with him, dyd consult and breath a lytle with himselfe, for he feared, that his brother lord Thomas by whom he had shewed great kyndnesse woulde take it greuously, also & yf he shoulde remitte that faulte, other would abuse his lenitee, and trespace more highly. Albeit, at the laste he wylled that he shoulde suffer for his offence, and so caused hym to bee behedded. The cause that their loue (as mē reporte) dyd chaunge into hatred was this. The lorde Wyllia̅ considerynge that he saued the kyng and brought hym to this realme to be gouernour thought he could neuer bee recompensed for hys so doyng, and wher as the kyng also remembring this benefyte, dyd make hym his chiefe chamberlayn, and gaue hym the hyghest promocions that he had, he lytle regarded them and loked for some greater rewarde, wherfore, the king perceauynge that, was sore greued with hym, and so thei bothe dyd fall at debate and hatred eche wyth other.

Also at this time the king thought best to vse some asperite in correcting the offēces of his subiectes, because ꝑ some had taken suche heart and audacitee to them, ꝑ thei feared not to speake euel of his maiestie with most spiteful and contumeleous wordes, trusting euer that ꝑ fayned Rychard duke of Yorke, now lately ryssen from death to lyfe on gods name, should claime the crowne, & enheret his counterfeted fathers possessions, & when

suche

such persõs had suffered due ponishment for their offences, other learning by their neighbours mischaunce to beware, dyd frome ỹ tyme beare theim selfes as true & faithfull subiectes, & assysted him with al their power, at what time he rẽquired help of thẽ. After the death of this William Stanley, Giles Dabeney was chosen and made chicke chãberlain. And now ỹ kyng was in a good staye for his realme, sauyng ỹ Ireland was not wel weded of the pernicious sede ỹ was sowed by the young mã Perkin Warbeck and his secte. Wherfore, he sent sir Henry Deny late abbot of Lanktõ abbey thither, & made him chauncellour ouer al that Ile and Edward Ponyng to serch all places that the forenamed Perken was in, to punish thẽ extremely in the example of other, ỹ were giltie of ỹ crime but when thei heard of this, thei fled for the most part into woddes & marysh places for the defence & safgard of them selfes, there consultyng to kepe open warre agaynst hym, whiche Edwarde after that he persued theim many times, and coulde neuer try it wyth them because thei wer so disparsed as foren and wilde people, he returned backe, and suspectinge that the earle of Kyldare was the occasion of this, attached him at the counsayl of the erle his euel willers, and brought him as prisoner to England. Wher when he was arained, and certain matters of treason laied to his charge, he auoided thẽ all, & clerly quite him selfe: whome the kynge dimissed, and sente hym to Irelande there to bee gouernour and captayne ouer theim as he was before. So that now the kyng beeyng oute of all feare of battayle, dyd take hys progresse to

Lankyshyre

shyre, there to recreate his spirites and solace him selfe with his mother lady Margarete, wyfe and countesse to the Earle of Darby. Yet when ỹ king was thus delityng hym selfe, Perken Warbecke could not moderate or rule hym selfe, although so manye suffered and were put to execucion for his mischife but to proue again the chaunce of battel gathered a great armye of men aswell prisoners, slaues, sanctuary men as other & came into Kent, because the wind so serued, & ther caused certayne to land, & to enquire yf ỹ Kentish men would beat with him, with whō the Kentish mē working guiles promised ỹ thei would assist him, yf he & his cō panie would land ther. Albeit, the same Perkē fearing ỹ thei meaned falshode and craft, would not descende him selfe, but caused certain of his souldiours to lande, whiche persones beynge a pretye way from their shippes, wer sore beatē and put to flight, and many of theim taken prisoners & after wer condempned to dye. Wherfore Perkē failing of his purpose fled backe to Flaunders, and there consulted with his frendes vntyll suche time he had been better prepared bothe of men and counsayle. The kynge herynge that hys enemyes had made ētraūce into his realme, left of his progresse & purposed to go to London, but beynge certified the next day after, how wel thei had sped, continued & went forth of his progresse, sendyng to theim Richard Gilford, to geue thankes and promise of a good turne herafter, for ỹ good seruice that thei had done him in those tumultes and assaultes of his enemies. Also that thei might not haue any accesse herafter into those parties the king commaū

ded

ded ỹ lordes to bee defēded strōgely wᵗ bulwarkes & other sure muniniēt es & fortresses, of the whiche this same Perken beyng certified, hastened ỹ more to reuue battaill against the kyng, ỹ he might not haue longer space, through his delaye, to doue all these thynges for the defence of his realme and so came to Irelande with all his armie, and there tariyng a space, sailed to Scotlande for ayde and succour of kyng James, trustyng to finde grace at his hand, to whom he spake after this maner. I thinke it is not vnknowē to you moste noble kyng in what ruine the stocke of Edwarde the fourth of that name is now of late, whiche if you doue not know, and it please your grace so to take me I am his soonne, & by the power of God, preserued a liue at this houre from the mightie hand of a tiranne. For my father when he died, apointed his brother Richard duke of Gloucestre to bee our gouernour & ptectour. Albeit he was rather a destroyer of our progenie then a mainteiner of it, for he wyllyng to be kyng hymself, and depriue vs of our right and title, commaunded that we should bothe bee slain, and dispatched out of this worlde. Therfore he hauyng then full power to order vs at his will, did cause my brother to bee destroyed, and because ỹ he might bee without some parte of that offense, and not shewe hymself all a tirāne, he caused me to bee conueighed to some straunge and forein countree, and there to bee desolate of all comforte and helpe. And so kyng Richard did hold his croūe by dispatchyng away of vs two, so that I could not tell by the reason of my tender age, what I was, vntill now of late that myne aunte ladie Marga-

1 King Edward. 5. L.

rete beyng in Flaūders did shewe me what I was after she had seen me, and to the entent I might recouer again my fathers possessions, she hath geuen me for her power a bonde of mēne, wyllyng me ẏ I should desire the helpe of externe nacions and countrees. And so I am come to you for succoure, whō as it is reported will helpe at all tymes euery manne in his right, and in case bee I shall finde you fauorable to me, you shall binde me and all myne, neuer to thynke ourselfes hable to make you amendes. When he had thus sated, the kyng promised hym that it should neuer repente hym of his commyng to hym, and bad him to take a good hearte, & after this the kyng assemblyng his counsaill together, asked what thei thought best in that matter, and whether any deliberacion should bee takē of it, or no. To whom some of theim that were wisest, aunswered that it were folishenes to go further in suche a matter, consideryng that he was but a painted and feigned duke and had no right to England. Other also sated that it was for diuerse causes moste profitable to the cōmen wealth, partely that this Perkyn, if his matters goo well forwarde, would rewarde theim, as thei would desire and enriche their realme moste plentefully by his liberalite, partely also that Henry the kyng perceiuyng their kyng to assist hym, would gladly pate tribute to hym for a peace and concord to bee had. When this counsaill was gyuen, the kyng did gladly folowe it, and that his loue might bee more apparent to the people, he caused ladie Katherine doughter to therle of Hūtley, his nigh kinsemā, to be maried to hym. After this was dooen, the kyng

wyllyng

willyng ỹ this Perkyn should reigne in Englãde, hastened his iourney towarde the boyders, & there cõmyng, proclamed openly ỹ all should bee pardoned ỹ would beare with the duke of Yorke, & fight in his quarell: and that mẽne might for feare submitte theim selfes, thei burned, spoyled, & killed wt out all mercie as ferre as thei did go, but the kyng perceiuyng ỹ no Englishemen came to aide this young duke, & that his souldiours wer so loden wt praies & spoiles ỹ thei would not gladly go further he returned backe to Scotlãd caryng wt hym infinite goodes & riches. And when this duke came to Scotlande again, consideryng the greate distruccion and losse of the Englishmen, & that none came to aide hym, to the entẽt that his iuglyng of his countrefeict dignite might not be perceiued, he saied verie craftely with a loude voice. Oh wretch and stonte hearte, that I am not moued with the losse and death of so many Englishemen of myne, and at that woorde he desired the kyng ỹ he would not molestate his realme herafter with suche cruel tormentyng, and fieryng. To whom the kyng shaped hym this aunswere right shortely. Truely sir me thynke you take charge and thought of an other mannes realme and not of your owne, because that I coulde se no manne that woulde take your parte, and helpe you with his power, whẽ you were now last emong theim. And for this cause ỹ kyng did litle esteme hym after that tyme, countyng hym incõstant, vnstable, and speakyng woordes not agreyng to his promise. When ỹ Englishe lordes and captaines hearde of this busines thei wer in greate feare, & fled for safegarde of their

likes euery manne to his castell and holde, and gatheryng an armie to withstand their enemies certified the kyng in all post haste of the Scottes enterpryse, whiche hearyng, prepared an armie in all the hast to fight against theim. But the Scottes beyng lodē with their praies and spoiles that thei had, were gone backe to their countre, ere the Englishemenne could bee readie. And this was the first commocion & business of the Scottes against the Englishemen. When the Scottes were thus gone, and the kyng certified of it, he thought not to suffer theim lenger, leste that by long tariyng & deferryng of ỹ matter, thei should take heart, and so with more fearsenes inuade the realme again.

And assemblyng his counsaill together, shewed theim that it was for the proffite of the publique weale to warre against his enemies, to whom thei all agreed right gladly, and for the mainteinyng of this battaill, there was leuyed a certain summe or tribute to be paid on euery mannes hed, whiche paiment although it was but easie and small, yet many of the commen people grudged to paie it. At this parliament also and conuocacion there was certain lawes, actes and statutes confirmed and made, as thought moste expediēt for the publique weale. And after this was dooen, the kyng prepared to fight in all the haste, and gatheryng an armie, made Giles Dabeney graund capitain ouer theim, and in his goyng to Scotlande, there beganne sodenly ciuile battaill in the realme, whiche was for the paiment of this money, for that ỹ Cornishemen, (whiche made this insurreccion) beeyng but poore, could not well paie this tribute.

And

And so they gatheryng all together, one Michael Joseph Smyth and Thomas Flãmoke, did take vpon theim the gouernaunce of all this compainie. And seyng theim greued soze that they should paye so muche, did moze and moze incense theyz myndes againste their pzynce. Albeit they layde this faulte, and cause of exaction, to Jhon Mozto̅ bishoppe of Cãtozbury, and Ruigenald Bzaye because they were chief of the kynges houle.

* The blacke Smyth.

Thus they pzeparyng theim selues to warre, whe̅ they had aswell sufficiente viandzye as all other thynges ready, they tooke theyz iourney to Welles, and from thence entended to go to London, When the kyng was shewed of this by his auditours, that they wer vp, and that the lozde Twychet, and the lozde Audely with other of the nobylitee had taken their partes, he thought fyzste to scoure his realme of suche rebelles and traytours ere he would fight againste the Scottes. And therfoze he caused Giles Dabeney to returne backe agayn then goyng vpon the Scottes, whose armye he encreased and multiplyed with many pzycked and freshe warryers, that he might the better with lesse laboure ouercome these rebelles. Also least that the Scottes might nowe (hauyng good opoztunite) inuade the realme again (in this time of ciuile battyle) he caused lozde Thomas erle of Surrey, a puissaunt and most redoubted warryer whome he had taken pzysoner, at the ouerthzowe of kyng Richard, and a litle befoze that, had set at libertie, and made treasourer of Englãde, after the death of Jhon Dynham, to gather a bond of men at Durham, & there to kepe of ỹ Scottes, yt they

And. fol. xlv.

should chaunce to come, vntyll suche tyme that ỹ Cornyshe menne beyng pacified and subdued, he might send to theim the forenamed Giles agayne with all his power and armye. When as the nobles heard of this busynes, they came to London euery mã, with as many as they could make, to ayde the kyng, yf nede shoude be. In the which compaignie there was the erle of Essex, the lorde Mongey, the erle of Suffolke, Richard Thomas, William Say, lorde Haward the erle of Surrey his sonne a noble young man & of stoute courage

Robert Lytton
Thomas Bande
Robert Clyfforde,
Wyllyam Dauers,
George Uerye,
Thomas Terell,
Richard Fizlewes,
Jhon Raynsforth
Thomas Mõtigomery,
Jhon Wyngfilde
Roberte Brougthon,
James Terell,
James Huberte,
Jhon Wyndham,
Robert Fenys
Wylliam Carye
Robert Burye,
Jhon Audely,
Robert Wyngfild with his brother Richarde,
Robert Brandon,
Thomas west de lauare
Thomas Fenis Dacres
Dauid Owen,
Henry Rolfe,
Jhon Deuenysse,
Henry Selenger,
Jhon Paulet
Jhon Burshere
Thomas Woode
Mathewe Broune,
Thomas Troys,
Wylliam Sandes.
Edmũde Graye of Wiltone,
Jhon Uerney
Thomas Brian
Richard Poole,
Thomas Harecourte,
Jhon Hampden
Edward Barkeley
Willyã Bolongue with his sonne Thomas.
Henry Haydon,

Robert

Robert Clarence, Ihon Shaye
Philip Calthorpe, Thomas Frouwike with
Robert Louell, many other of lower degree that wer moste noble & cunnyng warryers.

In this meane space, Charles ỹ Frenche kyng commyng from the warres that he had at Naples with Ferdinande, sente Ambassadours to the kyng for a peace and league of amitee to bee confirmed. When the kyng was enformed of their cõmyng, and that they were at Caleis, he sente certayn of his nobilitie to mete theim commyng, and to kepe theim purposely at Douer, vntyll suche tyme that this busyneſſe were ended, that they might not knowe of it in any wise.

And nowe the Cornyshemenne gooynge from Welles (where they had their graunde capitayne lorde Audeley) went to Saulisbury and frõ thence to Wynchester, and so to Kent, where they looked for helpe, but they were deceaued, for the earle of Kent, and the lorde of Burgone Poole, the lorde Cobham, Thomas Burcher, Edwarde Bonyng, Richard Gilforde, Wyllyam Scotte, Jaines Cromer, Ihon Peche, John Darel, Henry Wyat Rychard Haulte, Ihon Fogge, and other were ready to withstande their power, and to cause the people to beare trewe heartes to their kynge. For the whiche, many of the Cornyshe men fainted and had lesse mynde to fight, and for feare fled priuely in the nyght from their compaignie. But the captaynes perceauyng they coulde haue no helpe at their handes, trusted to their owne power, and brought theim to Blackeheath feld nigh London, and there pytched their tentes in the

playn to byd battail to the kyng, if he would mete theim, or els to inuade the cytie, whome the kynge perceauyng to be there readye to fight, he caused Henry Burlchere erle of Eſſex, Edmunde Polam erle of Suffolke and Richard Thomas, three noble warryers to beſiege theim on both ſydes wyth two wynges, and ſo came hym ſelf in the myddeſt ſendyng before, Giles Dabeney with a greate power. And after his commyng thus to the felde, bothe the erles and Richard Thomas ſette vpon theim violently, and at the firſt brunt put theim to flight and killed aboute two thouſande that reſiſted, and tooke priſoners more then could bee told and emonges theim ỹ Captaynes which ſhortely after wer put to death. But this Michael Joſeph was a mã of ſuche ſtoute courage & valiaũtneſſe, ỹ he neuer fainted or once gaue backe vntyll ſuch tyme he was ſtryken downe, and kylled openly.

When this battaile was ended the kynge loſte but three hundreth in all his compaignye that wer kylled at that preſente. Alſo the pryſoners that were taken he pardoned, ſauyng the captaynes and firſt autours of that miſchief, whoſe quarters he would haue to bee put on ſtakes and ſet in dyuerſe places of Cornewell, that theyr naughtie dooynges and fooliſhe entrepryſes might bee a document for other hereafter to beware: but becauſe there were many of that coũtree that would gladly haue renewed battaile, yf they might haue had ſome Capitayn, and ỹ they wer nothyng abaſhed for ỹ ouerthrowe of theyr late inſurreccion, he turned his mynd, ſo ỹ thei wer not had thither nor their quarters ſet vpõ any ſtakes there. Whẽ this

buſines

businesse was in hãd, ỹ kyng of Scottes being certified of it by certain spies, thought best to inuade Englande againe, and burned all the waye as he did before, lest that the kyng should prouoke hym to it of force, because he had dooen so muche hurte to it before, and thus came to Durham and there burned all aboute, entending also to wynne Norham Castle, whiche the Bishoppe had furnished a litle before with menne and vitaile sufficiently, so that he coulde haue none accesse into that castell. And this was the bishop Fore, that was bishop of Exeter, and for his godlines and verteouse liuing after that, made bishoppe of Welles and Bathe. Whiche bishop nowe being in this businesse, certified the kyng of it in all the haste, and also therle of Surrey, that was then in Yorke shyre with a greate army of menne. To whome the Erle came shortly after, with his compaignye, and after hym folowed other noble menne of all quarters, euery one bringig for his habilitee as many as he could to aide the bishop, and fight in the defence & quarell of theyr kyng. And in this compaygnie was there many Lordes therle of Westmerland, Thomas Dacres, George Graunge, Rafe Neuel, Richard Latimer, George Lumley, John Scroppe, George Oglie, Thomas Baron of Hilton, Henry Clifford, William Coyners, Thomas Percy.

Also knightes.

Sir william Percy, and thre other of ỹ name as Bulmery, Gascogne, Penington, [Percy.]
Sir Rauffe Bigot,
Sir Rauffe Bowes
Sir Rauffe Elaker,
Sir Thomas Appar,
Sir thomas Thwarton

Sir

Sir Thomas Stranguishe,
Sir Jhon Constable
Sir Jhon Ratcliffe
Sir Jhon Sauell
Sir Jhon Gouer
Sir Mulgraue
Sir John Waller
Sir John Aloder
Sir John Euerinham
Sir Bzian Stapelton
Sir Thomas Boztell
sir Warduke Constable
Sir Chzistopher Pikeringe,
Sir Chzistopher ward
Sir Walter Stringlande,
Sir Roger Bellingham
Sir William Heron
Sir Raufe Graye
Sir Nicholas Ridley
Sir Walter Gzisfit
Sir Jhon Heron
Sir Raufe seneuike
Sir Thomas Graye
Sir Chzisto. Curwen
Sir Robert Barcoppe
Sir Rouland Tempest
Sir James Medcalfe

With many other Capitaynes, althoughe not so noble in degree, yet as baliaunte in martiall feactes and pzowesses of warre. The Scottes hearing of the Earle of Surrey that he was cõming and at hande with a greate power, then beseging this forenamed Castell, whiche they coulde by no meanes ouercome, they fledde streighte backe to Scotlande, whome the Earle folowed as longe as his vyttailles serued, and after that returned backe to Durham, theyr abiding vntyll such time he knewe furder of the kynges pleasure.

And in this meane space, one Henrye Hailes was sente Ambassadoure frome Ferdinand vnto the kyng of Scottes foz a generall peace to bee had with hym and the kyng of Englande, foz he loued hym well, and kyng Henrye also to whose sonne the younge Pzynce Arthure, he woulde haue geuen his doughter Ladye Katheryne in

mariage

mariage that by affinytee and kyndered of blood their loue might continue for euer.

So this Henrye entreated hartelye the King of Scottes for a peace, and when he had some hope in it, he wrote vnto the kyng of Englande, that it would please hym to sende one of his nobles to helpe to conclude this matter with hym and the Scottes. The kyng because he had been in greate trouble and then verye desierous of peace, he sent the byshoppe of Durham to hym in all the haste. So that this Henrye and the bishop reasoned with the Scottyshe ambassadours as concernyng this peace to be had, albeit thei could not agree, because that kyng Henrye desiered to haue Perkyn Warbecke that was the cause of all this busynes, and had so greatly disquieted his realme, whome the kyng woulde not deliuer, although he might of ryghte, consideryng his falsehode and decepte that he had vsed with hym.

Therfore, after that they had reasoned much of this matter, & could bring it to no ende, yet a truce was taken for certain yeres of this condicion, that the same Perkin Warbecke should bee conueyghed oute of Scotland, & not to tary there longer. Whyle this was dooinge, kyng Henry caused the Ambassadours of ỹ Frenche kyng to bee brought to hym, which as it is shewed before, wer stopped at Douer of their iourney, vntill suche tyme ỹ the insurreccion of the Cornish men was ceassed, and hearing ỹ they came for a peace and league to bee made, graũted theim it right gladly. So ỹ nowe beig reconciled .ii. kynges, & thesame his neighbours, he thanked Fernand & his wife Elizabeth

for

for ꝑ they caused this peace to bee made betwixte hym and the Scottes, and rewarded the Ambassadoure moste worthely after a princely maner. And the tyme that this vnitee and concorde was made, it was the yere of oure Lorde a thousande foure hundreth foure score and eighten, and ꝑ. xii. yere of kyng Henry his reigne.

The. xii. yere of Henry the. vii.

And the kynge of Scottes kepte his promesse well ynoughe. For when he perceiued manifestly that he was deluded, he called vnto hym Perkin Warbeck, and first declared his benefites & pleasures that he had dooen vnto hym, and then counsailed hym to gette hym vnto some place where he mighte byde in safegarde, and come againe another time when he shoulde haue more opportunitee But neuer after to looke for any helpe at his hãd, partely because he had made peace with the kyng of Englande, and partely because he sawe that no Englishemen came to take his parte, wherfore he desired hym not to bee misgreued that he did thus leaue hym, & also counsailed hym to goo into some other place or regyon, wherfore this Perkin was verye sorye & (as the kyng had counsailed hym) departed thence with his wife, and went into Ireland, determining with hym selfe if he might haue no helpe of the menne of Cornewale, to retourne thence as faste as myghte bee home to his greate mastres & aunte Margaret into Flaundres. But he was no soner come thither, then he heard by diuers messengers ꝑ they of Cornewale were as redy to fyght against kyng Henry as euer they wer before, of hoope of the whiche he went streyght into Cornewall & there dyd sturre vp their heartes with

with gyftes and promyses, that all immediatelye called him their capitain & saied that thei woulde folow hym and in all thinges obey promptly hys commaundementes. The was Perkē in as good hoope as euer he was, and (because he would do nothynge rashelye and withoute aduisemente) he purposed fyrste to ouercome citees and all wel defēded places that lay in his way, and so to get as many as he coulde to folowe hym and to take his part, and incontinently, to buckle with ỹ kynges hoste. Whē he had thus deliberate, he wēt streight to Exeter which was the next citee that he coulde come vnto and besieged it, and because he had no gunnes to breake downe the walles, he laboured all that myght bee to breake the gates, but when he saw that thei could not easely be betten downe with any thyng, streight with he set fyre on theim.

Whereof, the citezins were verey sore afraied and priuely in the night let downe diuerse ouer ỹ walles with ropes to go certifie the kyng of their trouble, and in the meane tyme whē thei saw that their enemies had almost brēt vp the gates of the one side, tooke great blockes and set them on fyre on the other side, for none other cause but that aswell their enemyes therby might be excluded, as thei them selfes included. And thei not trusting to this only, made also wīn great ditches & other thinges to defend thē from the inuasiō of the rebelles When Perkē saw this, he got ladders, and would by that meanes haue come into the citee, but they came not so sone vp, but thei were beate downe again, and by this meanes many were there slayne yet would he not thence depart, but trusted surely

at the laste that thei should be glad to yelde theim selfes al that wer within for lack of viandzie. But as sone as the kyng hearde of this, he hasted with his hoost toward Exeter as faste as was possible and sente dyuerse souldiours beefore to certifie all menne of his commyng and preparaunce, for at that tyme there was set forth to helpe theym of Exeter, Thomas Trencherd, William Courteney Walter Courtney, Edmond Carre, Jhon Halemel Peter Eggecomb Thomas Fulford, Jhō Crook William Saintmaur, with a great host whose capitain was Edward Courteny erle of Denshire, & his sonne William, whiche was a young man of moost noble courage, whiche thyng when Peter heard tell of, he left besiegyng of Exeter and went to ỹ nexte towne whiche is called Taũtun & there vieued his hoost and set it in aray redye to fyght, howbeit,, he had but lytle affiaunce in the same, because many of his souldiours were so slenderly harneisse d, and no better skylled in warre. When the kyng sawe he was gone to Taũtun he hasted thither after him with all spede. Thether came also Edward ỹ duke of Buckingham a young mã verey valiaunt and of lustie courage, and hym followed a greate compaignye of noble men as Giles Brigge, Alexander Brayhã, Morysshe Barkeley, Robert Tame, Jhon Sapcot, Jhon Wadhã, Hugh Lutrel, and Nycholas hys sonne, William Storton, Thomas Lyndé, Jhon Semar, Wylliam Norris, Thomas Blunt, Jhon Guyse Roberte poynte, Harry Vernon, Jhon Mortimer Jhon Speke, Rychard Beaucãp, Fraunces Chenie, Roger Tokete, Roger Wenburg Henry Roger,

ger, Edwarde Darell, Jhon Langforde, Richard Lacon, Thomas Tremaile, Edwarde Sutton, Amis Paulet, Jhon Byknell, Wyllyam Sayntemaur, Thomas Longe, Nycholas Latimer, Jhon Turbaruyll, Wyllíam Wartyne Walter Hungerforde, Wyrylhe Barons, Rycharde Corbet Thomas Cornuall, and many other beſydes theſe.

But the king when he came nygh to the towne ſente before to begynne battayle, Roberte Broke, Lorde Rycharde Thomas, and Giles Dabeney with a great and ſtronge hooſt, to the entent that he hym ſelfe with his ſouldiours myght ſet vpon them behynd. But this deuiſe and purpoſe of the kyng was al ſuperfluous. For Perkin, ſo ſone as he eſpyed that the kyng was redie to fight, fledde priuely in the nyght into a ſanctuary at Bellyo abbey, and there lurked. But whether this Perke ſo dyd for feare leaſt his men ſhould forſake hym or for the timeditie of hym ſelfe, it is as much vncertayne, as it is probable and ſure that the kyng tooke by hys flyght greate commoditee.

For the Cornyſhe menne were ſurelye purpoſed eyther to wynne and ouercome theyr enemies or elles not one of them to haue lyued anye daye lenger. When kynge Henrye knewe that Perkin was gone, he ſente after hym many horſe menne that yf it myght bee, they ſhoulde ouertake hym in hys iourney and bryngе hym backe.

But Perkyn Warbecke made ſuche ſpede, that he was not ſeene before he came into the Sanctuarie, but his petie capitaines coulde not ſcape ſo clene. For of theim, the mooſt part were ta

ken

ken and brought backe againe to the kyng. The residue of the souldiours when thei vnderstode ỹ Perkyn their chief capitain was fled & ỹ other taken, gaue vp theim selfes by and by to the king without any more bulines, and of hym most gently wer forgeuen. When all was dooen, the kynge went again to Exeter and there both gaue great thankes to such as wer worthy, and punished the authoures and sturrers vp of this insurrection moost straitlye. And in ỹ meane tyme many of the souldiours road to S. Mighels mounte & there (as chaunce was) found Katherin Perkins wife, and brought her streight like a bond woman and captiue to the kyng. And the kyng sent her by and by accompanied with a goodly sort of matrons (because she was so goodly a young woman) to London to the quene as a true and sure token of victorie. And whiles he taried there at Exeter supposyng with him selfe, that he could haue no perfect victory vntyl he had gotté Perkin him self, which was the beginner of all this sedicion and strife, sent forth two companies of menne to besiege the sanctuarye wher Perkin was, that by no meanes he myght scape away, and sent him worde also by certain trustie messengers that yf he would humblie submit him selfe, he should be forgeuen of all that was committed. Wherfore, Perkin now seynge and ponderynge the state of miserie, that he was in, wêt voluntarily out of the sanctuary and commytted hym selfe to the kynges pleasure.

Then was the kyng werey glad and toke his iourney immediatly after towarde London, not without the great metyng of people whych came

out

out of euery quarter to se this feloe as he were a monstre, because he beyng but an aliente durst bee so bold to come in to this so noble a realme to make battaill, and delude noble menne after suche a fassion. But whē the kyng was come to London he appointed certain menne to kepe hym bothe night & date verie vigilantly, to thentent that he might neither conueigh hymself out of the lande, ner goo any whether within this realme to make any like perturbacion and disquietnes.

After this the kyng perceiuyng ỹ there were many as well in Somerset as in Deuēshire, whiche were helpers of the rebelles greatly, bothe goyng forth & commyng homeward, thought it good to punische them also, least peraduenture thei might be ỹ more bold to dooe a like thyng after. And therfore he committed this busines to Amis Paulet knight, and Robert Sherburne deane of Poules to be dooen. Which in serchyng out all suche thorowout bothe the shires, wer verie exacte and diligent, but thei wer fauorable to al such as did it for feare or compulsion. Yet were thei to none so fauorable but thei were thought for their default indifferently to be punished. So that equitie therin was verie well executed.

In the same yere of a small matter befell greate strife betwene kyng Henry and Jaines kyng of Scotlande, whiche strife begaune of this fassion. Certain younge menne of ỹ Scottes came armed vnto Dureline castell, & beheld it wonderous circumspectly as though thei had been desierous to know what was there dooen. But whē the kepers of the castle could not perceaue ỹ thei went aboute

any hurte or displeasure, & seing theim go awaie of
their owne accorde, thei made no woordes but let
theim alone. But when thei came again the nexte
daie & vieued it likewise, the kepers of ỹ said castel
demaunded of theim what was their intent. Thei
aũswered theim (like rude and vnmanerlie ientle-
menne) as frowardly as could bee thought, in so
muche ỹ at the laste throughe muche altercation of
bothe parties, thei fell together by the eares, and
there were some of the Scottes slain & the residue
put to flight. Which whẽ thei came home certified
their kyng of thesame. Wherwith he beyng sore
moued to angre, sẽt woorde to kyng Henry that he
would wout doubt reuenge his querell, wherfore
kyng Hẽry being verie sorie, not so much forfeare,
as for to liue in quietnes & peace in his age, made
him aũswere ỹ it was not doẽ throughe his default
or coũsaill, but rather by the rashenesse of his sub-
iectes whiche if thei could bee ꝓued guiltie should
be accordyng to the faulte punished. Wherfore he
desired him moste louingly to be cõtẽted. But this
was not hable to mitigate or swage the Scottes
angre & outrageousnesse. For the whiche cause Ri
chard bishop of Duresme whiche was more heuie
then all other, because his seruũates were ỹ begin-
ners of this discord, wrote many letters to kyng
Iames to desire hym to kepe peace & bee at quiet.
With the whiche letters the kynges rage was so
quenched, ỹ he bothe sent verie kynd letters again
to hym, and desired hym hartely to come ouer and
talke with hym. Of ỹ whiche tydynges the bishop
was verie glad, and went streight to kyng Henry
to shewe hym the matter and had leaue of hym in-
continently

continenly to go ouer to hym.

When he came into Scotlãde, he was receiued as louyngly as coulde bee thought of the kyng hymselfe, at an abbey called Melrose, and there after that he had complained muche of the crueltie that was vsed toward his menne here in Englãde he beganne to commen secretly of other matters, and especially of the amitie betwene kyng Henry and hym, the whiche to bee for euer stablished and confirmed, he desired ỹ kinges doughter Margaret in mariage. Of the whiche thyng albeit the bishop was glad in his heart, yet he would make no perfect aunswere or shewe forth any sure hope of ỹ same, but saied that when he came home, he would dooe the best in the matter that laie in hym. Wherfore the kyng shortly after dimissed hym, and desired hym ernestly to breake ỹ same matter to kyng Henry. And whẽ he was come home, so he did, and ỹ proffer pleased ỹ kyng verie well, because he was a manne whiche was alwaies more delited w̃ peace & quietnes, then w̃ the troublesomnesse of battaill.

And now did approch ỹ death of Perkin Warbeck, and of Edwarde erle of Warwicke whiche had so long lyen all readie in the tower. But Perkẽ thought that he would saue hymselfe, and therfore on a tyme he tooke his leggues and ranne awaie, but so sone as the kyng harde tell therof, he made menne after hym with all the spede ỹ might bee, w̃ whose clamours and shoutes Perkyn was so feared, ỹ of necessitie he was compelled to go to an abbate which was called Bethelẽ, & ther intreacted ỹ abbot of the place to desire the kyng of his pardon that he might not dye. Whiche thyng the

abbot did for hym and obteined it. Wherfore Perken was brought bounde & fettered, to Westminster and there stoode an whole daie in the sight of all menne, to the great shame and repproche of hym self. And after (partely because the kyng had promised hym his life, and partely because he should no more renne awaie) he was cõmitted to ỹ towre. Where his wickednes boylyng so hote within his brest, would not suffre hym to escape the vẽgeaũce & punishemẽt of God, but shortly after was moste iustly & worthely put to deathe as herafter shalbe shewed. Then it chaunsed ỹ a monke whose name was Patricke had a scholer, whome he promised if he would folowe his counsaill, should easely come to the kyngdome of Englande. Whiche scholer when he had ones heard his maisters mynd, was verie instaunte in the matter and desired his maister, not to forget his purpose, but rather begynne it as sone as was possible. Wherfore, when thei be twene theim selfes had taken deliberacion and counsailled of the thyng how it should be brought to passe, thei went bothe together into Kent. And there beganne this young felow to tell priuely to many that he was the erle of Warwicke, and had gotte out of the tower by the helpe of this monke. To the whiche, when he perceiued credence geuen he declared it openly, and desyred al men of helpe.

But or euer this sedicion beganne to goo forewarde, the heddes and principalles of thesame wer taken and caste into pryson. Of whiche the one was condempned to death, and the other condẽpned to perpetuall pryson and darkenesse. For at that tyme here in Englande was so muche attry-

buted

buted to prestes, and al religious mē, that though they had committed felonie, murder, yea or treason, they should not haue bene therfore condempned to death. Moreouer, whosoeuer could reade, though it wer neuer so lytle, what crime soeuer he had committed (saue treason) should by his booke bee saued, and therfore it was inuented, that if the default wer so great, that another manne shoulde suffer death for thesame, he should onely be burnt in the hande, wherfore he ỹ had committed theste, should bee marked in the hand with this letter T. if he had committed murdre, with M. and after that, yf he were deprehended in lyke crime, then there should no fauour at all, more then to other menne, bee shewed. Whiche acte was made and confyrmed, by this kyng Henry in the second yere of his reigne, and takē of the Frenchemen, whiche are wonte if thei take any suche, to cutte of one of his eares and let hym go. Whiche priuiledges of bookes made theues both bolde & plentie thorowe out all the coastes and parties of this his realme of Englande.

But nowe to my matier again. Perkyn, of whom we spake muche before, whyles he was in ỹ towre corrupted many of the kepers, partly with giftes and partely with fayre promyses, so that they were all agreed (saue the leuetenaunt, whome he fully determined to kyll) that he and the erle of Warwike should gooe theyr waye out of the toure and afterwarde to make the best shyfte that they could for theim selfes. But this his purpose came not to full effecte. For it was knowne within shorte tyme after, for the whiche he and his felowes all of the

same counsayle were hanged by the neckes. And the earle of Warwike, because he was founde gyltie in thesame defaulte, was behedded, whiche was dooen in the yeare of oure Lorde a thousand foure hundreth and .xciy. and in the.xiii. yeare of this kyng Henry his reigne.

The xiii yere. The nexte yere after, was here in Englande a a greate plague wherof menne died in many places verye sore, but especiallye and mooste of all in London. For there died in that yere aboue thyrtye thousande. Wherfore the kynge sayled ouer to Caleis and there tarved a greate while. In his beyng there came ouer to hym Philippe Erle of Flaunders, and was receaued of hym as louyngly as could bee thought, and also or euer they departed, the league whiche was made betwene them two not longe before was renewed.

Sone after, when the plague was slaked, the kyng returned agayne into Englande, and was no soner come thyther, but there met him one Gasper Pons sente from Alexander the byshoppe of of Roome, which brought with hym indulgences and perdones whereby he made the kyng beleue that he and his should flye streight to heauen, but those could not bee graunted withoute a greate somme of money, the whiche the rather that he might obteyne, he promysed parte of it to the kyng hymselfe, so deceauyng both ỹ kyng and ỹ people. In this same yere was burnt a place of ỹ kynges, whiche he after buylded vp againe and named it Richemount.

Aboute this tyme died three bisshoppes here in England, Jhon Morton bisshop of Cantourbury

Thomas

Thomas Langton bishop of Wynchester, and Thomas Rotherham bishoppe of Yorke.

Also in this yere, there were greate maryages made, for kyng Henry had geuen his doughter ladye Margarete to the kyng of Scottes, and his sonne prince Arthur to Ladie Katherine doughter to Ferdinande kyng of Spayne, whiche mariages were made specially for this cause that he might liue in peace with those kynges in his olde age.

After this, prynce Arthure that came to Londō purposely to bee maryed, went to Wales agayne with his lady and wife to ouersee all thynges well there, and to the entente he might not miscarye or go out of the waie in rulyng his dominion, he had with hym many noble mē, as first Richard Poole his nighe kynsman which was made chief of his priuie chaumbre, and Dauid Philippe husher of his halle. Also he had of his counsaill certayne knyghtes as Wyllyam Udall, Richarde Croft, Peter Neuton, Henrye Varnam, Thomas Englefelde. And other besides theim, as Jhon Walsstone, Henry Marine, Wyllyam Smyth preest chief of his coūsayle late bishop of Lincolne, & syr Charles Booth a lawer, then byshop of Herforde.

A litle before this mariage, Edmūd Poole erle of Suffolke sonne to ladye Elizabeth the syster of kyng Edward, was accused for killyng of a mā, & although the kyng pardoned hym, whō he might iustely haue condēned for that offence, yet because he was rayned at the barre, whiche he thought a great main and blemishe to his honoure, tooke it heuely, and shortely after fled to Flaunders Wout

1 Marstre. Dit. alt.

2 Main.

any passeporte or licēce of the kyng, to quene Margarete his aunte, but he returned again, & so excused hymselfe before the kynge, that he was founde fauties in any thyng ỹ was obiected vnto hym. Also when this mariage was kepte at London, with great pompe & solēnitee, this Edmunde fled again to Flaunders w̄ his brother Richard, either for ỹ he had been at great charges at thesame mariage and so farre cast in debte that he was not hable to paye, either because ỹ quené Margarete his aunte had allured hym, or els for euill will & enuie that the kyng should prosper so well. Whē it was knowen ỹ he was gone, & the kyng certified there of, he feared ỹ some busynes should rise by his meanes & was sory ỹ he had pardoned hym for his offēce lately cōmitted. But sone after, ỹ the erle came from Flaunders, syr Robert Cursone knight & capitaine of Hāmes castel, feignyng hym selfe to bee one of that conspiracye, wente purposely to espye what the quene[2] entended against kyng Henrye, whyche afterwarde for his so doynge was in greate fauoure wyth hym. For the kynge was so bigplaunte and circumspecte in all his matters, that he dyd knowe theim namelye that either bare hym euill will, or wooryed any in theyr mynde, whom he caused to bee attached and caste in holde. And emong theim Wyllyam the erle of Deuonshyres sonne, whiche maried ladie Catheryne daughter to kyng Edward was taken, and another Wyllyam brother to Edmonde earle of Soffolke, James Tyrell, Jhon Wyndham. But these two wylliams were taken rather of suspection then for any offence of gyltines. Wherefore

[1] Ladr. Edd. alt. [2] Duches. edd. alt

for Wylliam this Earles sonne of Deuonshyre after the death of kynge Henrye, was deliuered & had in great fauour wyth the kinges sonne Henrye the eyght, but shortly after whan he beganne to exercyse hym selfe agayne in marciall feates of warre, he sickened of a dysease called (*Plureses*) and died therewith, whyche because it was straunge and vnknowen to the phisiciãs, it was incurable. He lefte one sonne behynde hym alyue to vphold the name of that auncetree. The other Wyllyam brother to Edmunde the earle of Suffolke had also greater fauoure showed hym in pryson, then he had before. And as for James Terel, and Jhõ Wyndham, because they were traytours, and manifestly accused of the same, wer put to death, and beheded. But when the earle of Suffolke heard of thys, he was in great despayre wyth hym selfe that he should neuer frame hys matters wel, and so wente all aboute Germanye and Fraunce for ayde and socour, prouyng yf he coulde fynde any helpe at their handes, whom when he perceaued to showe no token of loue towardes him in that behalfe, he made hym subiect to ỹ prynce of Flaũders, but hys brother Rychard beyng an experte man, dyd so wysely order and behaue hym selfe in that businesse, that he was not greatlye founde gyltie in any poynt of that matter. The kyng not yet beyng out of all feare of his enemyes, perceauyng that many sanctuary men loked for a fayre daye, desired of Alexander byshop of Roome that all traytours and banished men should not be saued by any sanctuary, and that such as were ther in holde, should take theim herafter as no refuge

and

(Kyng Henry 22. a.H.

and socoure to them, yf thei once goe out, whych thyng, after the byshoppe had graunted it, was to the ease and quietnes of al the realme.

When the kynge had all hys busines so well ended, and brought in a good staye. Prynce Arthure dyed halfe a yeare or lesse, after that he had maried ladie Katheryn, for whose death ther was great lamentynge. It is reported also that ladye Katherine feared suche lyke chaunce euermore, for because ỹ after she had taken her leaue of her parentes, and sayled towardes England, she was tossed lōg in ỹ sea, wyth the violence of the water & the wynd, ere the shyppe coulde haue any lādyng

Not longe after, the quene was brought ni bedde with a doughter, and died vppon the same, which daughter also taried but for a season after her mother. Ther departed also within short space after, Reynalde Bray, a man for iustice so commē dable, that yf any thyng had bene done agaynste good lawe or ryght, he would strepghte repproue ỹ kyng for it. Of the same vertue was Jhon Morto bishoppe, & would do in al thinges as he did in repprouing the kinge for the reformation of thinges amisse, which bishop died. ii. yeres before. About ỹ tyme also dyed Henry bishop of Cāterbury whose roome Willia Warra bishop of Lōdon supplied, and in the byshop of Londons place was elected William Barons, after whose deathe succeded Rychrde Fiziames byshop of Chichester

The. xvi. yere

In this yere, which was the. xvi. of hys reygne and of our lorde. M. cccc. and. ii. yeres, the kynge dyd kepe his parliament, wherin manye thynges were decreed, and made for the publike commody-

tee

tee, and emong other thynges it was determyned that theues and murderers duly conuicted by the lawe to dye, should be burned in ỹ hand and quit yf thei could read on the booke any one wozde

Furdermoze, it was decreed ỹ the people should paye certain mony to the kyng, and that the goodes of theim that were banished and fled, should be disparsed and set to sale. Also the pzeestes were commaunded to pay mony foz the maintenaunce and sustentacion of the common weale.

And now the kyng dzawyng nigh to age, and considerying the great battayles that he had in tymes past, which (as it was thought) came of ouermuche welthines, pzouided a remedy ryght shozt ly foz it. And to the entent that menne shoulde not thynck ỹ he would oppzesse them oz do thẽ wzong foz of all people he hated oppzessours, therfoze he deuised with hym selfe, by what honeste meane he might do it, & thus deuising called to minde ỹ Englysh mẽ dyd litle passe vpõ the obseruaciõ of any lawes ỹ were made, in so much, ỹ yf such a thynge should be called to accompte, he thoughte manye men as well lozdes, as other of the lay fee, would bee founde fautie. And so searchyng ouer the statutes that he had made, punished them a lytle by the purse that had transgressed theim. After that he appoynted two commyssioners to receaue the fozfeytes, the one Richarde Hempson, and the other Edmunde Dudley booth lawers of the temporaltee, whiche personnes foz the desire to please their king had no respect how thei got the monye so thei myght haue it ether by ryght oz wzong. Albeit, ỹ kyng hauyng pitee of his people, after that

he

he perceaued they were sore punyshed and polled vnknowyng to hym restored to them their mony, of whom it was exacted vniustlye, and depryued thē of their office that had so vniustly executed it

In this yere, dyed quene Elisabeth of Castell wyfe to Ferdinand kyng of Aragone without any yssue of mā chyld, so that the heritage dyd fall to lady Johan her eldest daughter (by Ferdinand) whiche after was maried to the Earle of Flaunders, thē made by this mariage also chiefe gouernoure ouer all that countree.

Shortly after about the .xiii. day of January which was the yere of our lord .M.cccc. and fyue thys Earle hauyng a nauye prepared sayled out of Flaunders with his wyfe to Spayne, but he had not set forth longe, ere the wether beganne to chaunge, and tempestes to ryse so, that at the last fearsenes of the wynde, dyd dryue them to the coastes and borders of Englande, wher he landed at an hauē or porte called Wymmouth, fore againste the mynd and consent of all his companie, which knewe well that the same landyng should bee the occasion of long tarryng there. When it was knoen that he was thus landed, there came agreate nomber of harnisshed men to proue yf he were the kynges frende or no, whiche when thei perceaued hym to bee his frende, and entended nothing but loue and frendeshippe, Thomas Trenchārde the chiefe of that compaignie went to the kyng, desyring hym (yf it would witesalfe) hym to take a lodging at his house, whiche was euen nigh at hand trusting therby to haue thāke of ỹ kyng his master whom he certifyed in al the haste of his commyng

Also

Philippe Duke of Austrik and Burgoyne. edit.

alt. 2 Waymouthe. ed. Edwalt

Also John Caroe desired hym that he woulde not gooe vntyll suche tyme that he had spoken w the kyng his louing and feithfull frende, considerynge that he was within two or thre dayes iourney of hym. So that at length although he layde many excuses to haue been gooen and departed, at their instance taried there with theim. And when ỹ kyng was enfourmed of his cõminge, he reioyced highly and sente certaine of his nobilitee to bring hym where he was. Wherfore this Erle seing no remedy but ỹ he must nedes tary, he went streight to Windesore where the kyng dyd lye. And shortlye after folowed his wife quene Johan. After they two had cõmoned of many thinges together at the laste they beganne to treate of a league and perpetuall amitee to bee had.

And firste kynge Henrye desired to haue Edmonde Poole banished man vnder his captiuitee and bondage. To whome the Earle aunswered & saied that it was not in his power to restore hym, yet after muche entreating and prayeng, the kyng graunted at the laste that he shoulde bee sente to hym righte shortly. After thus for prolonginge of time ỹ he might haue his desyre, he brought Philyp the Earle to London, and there shewing hym his citie, retourned frome thence with hym.

Then Edmonde Poole, seyng that there was no more hope to bee had in forein Princes, and trusting that kyng Henry would put hym at libertee came to Englande willingly to proue his gentlenes, that yf vpon this expectacyon and hope, he were deceiued, yet he might at the laste dye and be buryed in his natiue countree.

It

It was not longe after ꝑ the Earle Philyp departed frome England, but he died, being of thirtye yeres of age, which had by his wife .vi. childre two men childre as Charles and Ferdinande, & .iiii. doughters, Eleonar, Elizabeth, Marie & Catherin, a man for his cõlines of body right comendable, of a meane stature, a liberal countenaunce, corpulẽt, full of flesche, quicke witted & bold harted This tempest ꝑ the earle Philyp suffred on ꝑ see: was greately wõdered at of many men, because it stroke downe an Eagle of brasse from a pinacle of Poules church, & with that falle, ꝑ same eagle did breake another Eagle ꝑ was sette for a sygne at a tauerne doze. For vpon this, men did take an opinion ꝑ the Emperour Maximilian whiche at that time gaue an Eagle for his armes, should haue a great losse, whiche was ꝑ he should lose his sonne Philippe Earle of Flaundres.

Also shortly after ꝑ departing of the earle Philippe, George Neuel Lorde of Burgeny, and syr Thomas Grene knight, were suspected to bee giltie of the treason ꝑ Edmond Poole had wrought, and so casteln prison, but shortly after, when they had pourged theim selfes, of that suspicyon and crime, they were deliuered. Albeit, this knight sir Thomas Grene died in prison. The other Lorde for his sobrenes of liuinge, & true hart ꝑ he bare to his Prynce, was had in greater estimacyon then euer he was before.

After this, the kyng had peace, aswell w forein princes as also of ciuile battail for the space of .iii. yeres, but then the kyng being deseased with a certain infirmitee & weakenes of bodye, thrise euery

yere

1 kyng. 2 J. L. alt.

yere about ỹ spring tide was againe sturred vp by the reason of a great plague of ỹ sweate ỹ reigned throughe the whole realme, howbeit by ỹ reason of the remedy ỹ was inuẽted for it ỹ laste time before it dyd ỹ lesse hurte. Another mischyefe chaunsede, that many ryche men & of greate possessions were caused to leaue their countree by the reason that ỹ commissioners of the forfeictes had delt falsely wt theim & exterminated theim by their naughty meanes. So ỹ had not the kyng been gracious to many of theim, they had been vndoẽ for euer. In this meantime Alexãder bishop of Rome departed out of this world, after whõ Fraunces Pius nephiew to Pius the second was made and stalled byshop, whome kyng Henry had made gouernoure ouer his realme, and reioysing gladly of his highe promotion, sent sir Gilbert Talbote knight, Richard Beare abbot of Glastinbury, and Robert Sherburne to bee glad of his honoure in his behalfe, & make a promise ỹ he would doe hym obeysaunce hereafter. At this same time also dyed Giles Dabeney chiefe of ỹ kynges priuete chaumbre, whose office Charles bastarde sonne of John brother to Edmund laste duke of Somerset had geuen to hi Sone after ỹ kyng caused Guide Ubald duke of Vrbin to be made knight of ỹ garter, ỹ which honour & dignite he desired to haue, ỹ he might haue some parte of the nobilytee that his father Fredericke had, whiche was receaued & chosen also into that order by kyng Edwarde. And because it was blased ỹ Julius the seconde was bishop of Rome after the deathe of Pius, the kyng sente a goodly vesture by his Ambassadoure, for this Guyde to weare

[1] Lorde Chamberleyne. rd. alt.

[2] Henry. rd. alt.

weare, when he had receyued this garment, he did send Balthesar Castillo a Mantuan borne vnto kyng Henry, whiche receiued of ỹ knightes a garter, in token ỹ he should be a knight of the same ordre. When this busines was dooen, Lewes the Frenche kyng mistrustyng that he shoulde neuer haue manchild, maryed his eldest doughter Lady Anne to Frances Valese Dolphine Duke of Engolye, which was sure a litle before to Charles the kyng of Castell. And when kyng Henry knewe of this, he thought beste to mary his doughter Lady Mary to this Charles kyng of Castell which mariage was confirmed and made at Calise by ỹ bysshop of Winchester & the ambassadours of Flaunders, the Ladye beyng but.x. yeres of age.

And now were the thre yeres expired, at whiche tyme kyng Henry thought his fatal daye to drawe nyghe. Therfore to the entente that the people myghte wysshe and praye for hym after his deathe for his kindnesse that he shewed to theim, he caused a generall pardon to bee geuen vnto all offendours, sauinge onely theues and murderers, because that they dyd not offende hym, but another manne. For this goodnesse shewed to the people, processyon was in euerye place of the Realme for the safegarde of the kyng.

A generall pardone.

Neuertheleſſe his time was come, ỹ God would haue hym, so that he died the.xxi. daye of Apryll, in his palaice of Richemoũde, the whiche was the yere of oure Lorde a thousand fyue hundreth and eyght. His corps was buryed at Westminster in a chappell the whiche he caused to bee buylded. He reigned thre and twentye yeres, and more then seuen

seuē monethes, & liued. lii. Also he had by his wife the quene. viii. childzen. iiii. menchildzen, & iiii. women childzen, of ỹ whiche. iii. remained aliue, Hēry pzince of Wales, ladie Margaret, & ladie Marie. He was a manne of bodie but leane & spare, albeit mightie & strong therwith, of personage & stature some what higher then ỹ meane sozte of menne be, of a wondzefull beautie and faire complexion, thzough al his bodie, of a merie & laughyng countenaunce, especially in his cōmunicacīō, thinne tethed, & thinne heared, of witte in all thynges like Salomon, of a pzincely & redoubted stomake, and in greate affaires and matters of weightie impoztaunce verie wittie Foz suche thynges as he went aboute, he did theim warely & not without greate deliberacion & bzeathyng. Besides this, he was sobze, moderate, burome, & bounteouse, & without all pzide & highnes of stomake, in so muche, ỹ he was hard & rough with theim ỹ were noted of ỹ crime foz no man had so great autozite with him, ỹ either durst oz could dooe any thyng as his owne fātasie did serue hym, without ỹ consent & agrement of other. Yea he kept this point so wel, ỹ he would not suffre his owne mother to haue her will. Foz this was his saiyng * ỹ a kyng was a ruler that should rule & not be ruled. He was also verie iust, & defended ỹ matters & causes of many pooze people frō the power of greate menne. And so liuyng all his tyme in vertue, renowne, glozie, and valiauntnes of merciall pzowesses, gaue vp his ghoste at the laste, whiche vndoubtedly is in that place, where euerlastyng ioye and gladnes remaineth foz euer and euer.

The noble & wise saiyng of Hēry the seuenth.

Henry the eyght.

OVRE MOSTE GRACIOVS souereigne lorde kyng Henry the eyght, the soonne of Henry ỹ seuenth, beganne his reigne the .xxiiii. daie of Appryll, in ỹ yere of our Lorde .M. cccc. lx & was crouned at Westminster in the feast of the natiuite of sainct Jhon Baptist then nexte folowyng.

Aboute the midle of the moneth of Juyn the kynges highnes was maried, and the .xxi. daie of thesame moneth he came frō Grenewiche by land, & so roade through Graschurch strete to the towre with whom came many noblemen and gentlemen well apareled, but specially the duke of Buckynghaṁ whiche roade in a goune of goldsmythes worke, a thyng of greate richesse, and so the kyng rested there from Thursdaie till Saterdaie, in the whiche season he created certain knightes of the Bathe.

And vpon Saturdaie aboute foure of ỹ clocke at after noone, the kyng came ridyng throughe cornehill in moste honourable wise, before whom roade thesaid knightes of the Bathe in blewe lōg gounes with hoodes vpō their shoulders, spreade after the maner of masters of arte, and tasselles of white and blewe silke fastened vpon one of their shouldres. The duke of Buckynghaṁ roade next before the kyng, except the mayre of London & certain sergeauntes and heraulde. The whiche duke

[1] Kyng Henry the eyghte. edit. alt. [2] kyng Henry. edit. alt.

duke roade in a long goune of nedle woorke right costly and riche, & bare a litle white staffe of siluer in his hand in signe and token ỹ he was high and chief steward of ỹ feast of coronacion. And the said duke had aboute his necke a broade and flat close chein of a newe deuise not before vsed, fret w̄ precious great rubies and other stones of greate value. And ouer the kyng was borne a riche canapie by the foure barones of the foure portes, and there folowed seuen folcers, wherof the first was trapped in the armes of sainct Edwarde, the second in the armes of sainct Edmond, the third in ỹ armes of. S. George, the fourth in the armes of Englād, the fifth in the armes of Fraūce, the sixth & the. vii in sondry trappors of riche cloth of gold w̄ costely deuices. After the folcers came a gentlemā ledyng a spare horsse moste richely garnisshed. And after hym sir Thomas Brandon then maister of ỹ kynges horsse, right well & goodly apointed and well horssed and richely trapped, the whiche horsse with the apparell was to the kyng belongyng.

And when ỹ cōpaignie was thus w̄ all honoure passed, ymediatly ensued a goodly compaignie of gentlemen & well apointed. And after theim came the quene sittyng in a horsse litter alone, clothed in a riche mantell of tissue in her heare w̄ a circulet of silke, golde and perle aboute her head. But whē her grace was a litle passed the signe of the cardinalles hat in corneyll, suche a sodein showre there came, & fell w̄ suche force & thicknesse, ỹ the canapy borne ouer her was not sufficient to defend her frō wetyng of her mātell & furre of powderd ermines w̄in ỹ same, but ỹ she was fain to be cōueighed vn

der the houell of the Drapers stalles till ỹ shower were ouer passed whiche was not long. And then she passed on her waie, whō folowed. vii. chariotes with ladies. In the first was two ladies, & vpon ỹ chariot waited. vii. gentlewomē ridyng on palfreyes, ỹ is to saie, foure in one suyte & thre in another And vpon ỹ secōd chariot waited also seuen gentlewomen. And vpon ỹ other thre sixe, whiche all wer clothed in silke, and. iiii. of the first chariottes were couered w̄ cloth of gold, & all ỹ horsses trapped in sondrie couloured veluettes to ỹ heard pauement. And after all thefoꝛsaid chariottes & gentlewomē, came ridyng vpon a bushement. ccc. of the garde, ỹ moꝛe parte of theim hauyng bowes & arowes and theother hawberdes & other weapōs. And ye shall vnderstand ỹ all the side of Coꝛnehill, from sainct Mighelles to the stockes was hanged w̄ greined clothe of sondrie coloures, as scarlettes, crimosins sanguines, murries, light & browne, & beutics and violetes. And vpon theotherside, all w̄ riche tapettes & clothes of arras. And as foꝛ Chepe was garnisshed with clothes of golde, of veluet & of silke in moste richest wise, wheron was dooen no litle hurte with thefoꝛsaid showꝛe.

Upō the moꝛow, beyng Midsomer daie, ỹ kyng & the quene, about. viii. of ỹ clocke in the moꝛnyng on foote, came frō their palaies through ỹ greate hall & the palais courte vnto the churche of Westminster. In whiche pꝛogresse, passed befoꝛe theim eight and thirty bishopes & abbottes mitered in pꝛocession, and so were conueighed to a space betwene ỹ high aulter and the quere, where, by ỹ Bishop of Cauntourbury, the kyng & the quene were

sette

set in honorable seates vpon a scaffold in the forenamed place, made of a competent heigth, & there of the archbishop was gloriously crouned to the great comforte of all ỹ laude. And after that longe and honorable solempnizatiõ was done, the kyng and quene wer again cõueighed vnto Westmynster hall, & there set to dynner, where was that daie holden a tryumphant & plenteous feast w̃ all honorable seruyce to suche a feaste apperteignynge. And for the ordre of ỹ settyng, the kyng sate in the myddle of the table, & the quene vpon his lift hãde by the space of two yardes length from hym. And vpon the right hand, at ỹ tables ende sate ỹ archebishop of Caũtourbury alone, & no mo at ỹ table. After whiche thre estates thus set, all their.iii. seruyces wer brought together till they came vnto ỹ steppes of the deyse, where a while rested ỹ quenes and archebishoppes seruyces, till ỹ kyng was serued, and then the quenes and tharchbishoppes set forwarde together, but the quene was first serued and her seruyce set downe before the other.

Here I wyll passe ouer the orderyng of the hall with the offyciers & garnyshyng of the side tables with many noble menne & women, & many other ceremonyes executed there that day by lordes and other hed officers, as the lorde stewarde the duke of Buckyngham, the chief buttler the erle of Arũdell, the lorde marshall with many other. The exceadyng rychesse of the cupboorde garnished with weightie & massy flagonnes, pottes and cuppes of golde, syluer & gilte, with the gifte of.ii. cuppes of gold geuẽ by ỹ kyng & the quene vnto ỹ Mayre of Londõ, as his accustomed fee at euery coronaciõ.

Al ỹ which actes with many mo I here passe ouer

Then vpon the tuesdaye next ensuyng was begonne a mercial iustes, within ỹ paleys of Westmynster. Of ỹ which ỹ lord Haward & sir Edward his brother, w sir Richard brother to ỹ lord Marques & Gyles Capel & two other wer chalẽgours. And syr Jhũ Pechy, Master Carre, Master Charles Brandõ & syr Rowland with other.ii, wer defẽdours. Upõ the which day, two of ỹ chief of ỹ said chalengers enclosed in a moũtayne goodly & curtously garnished, wer by a lyon made of glitteryng golde conueighed out of Westmynster hall into ỹ paleys, & so led about the tylt, tyll they came right agaũt ỹ kyng & quenes stãding. And there ỹ moũtain opened, & the said two chief chalẽgoures road forthe, clene armed vnto ỹ tiltes ende with ỹ other foure folowyng theim, wher they houed til the defendours wer set in. The which sone after came in at the gate by the kynges strete, but syr Jhon Pechy as chiefe defendour, came enclosed in a castell drawen with a lyoneſſe garnished with glytteryng syluer. And vpõ the forpart of this castel was set a pomegranate tree wel & curiously wrought, and so cunnyngly ỹ it semed to ỹ people to be very pomegranades that honge on ỹ tree. And vpon ỹ toppe of this sayd castell stoode a fane, w the armes of Saynt George theron paynted. The which castel was so drawen about ỹ tilt, & whẽ it came right agaũ ỹ kynges tent, it was opened by a vyce, & out roade ỹ said defẽdour, & after his obeysaũce made to the kyng & quene, & in like maner did all his feloes, then he roade vnto ỹ ende of the tilt nexte the gate wher he entred before, & then ỹ said syr Jhon

Pechy

and al.iiii.chalengeours had cotes beneth ỹ wast of blewe sylke garnished with portcolyes of Uenise gold without difference, saynge the kynges graces coate was of blewe veluet, and the other were of blewe satin. And where the kynges awayters were in coates of whyte and grene, the other wer in iackettes of blewe satyn. And after the chalengeours had thus offered vp their scochiõs and made their obeysaũce vnto the quene. The kinges grace with ỹ other roade vnto the ende of the tylt ouer agaynst Westmynster hall gate, and there houed tyll ỹ defẽdours were brought into ỹ place

Then the forsayde gentylmen whyche before had brought in the kyng, road for the defendours the whyche anone came in at the weste gate of the palais in sondry pageauntes and goodly deuices whyche here I wyll ouerpasse, for as much as the daye folowyng they ferre exceded, wherof the declaration wyll aske a long leysoure. Wherfore to procede further, when the sayd defendours accordyng to the lawe of armes had bene conueighed about the tylte, and were come to their standynge nere vnto the west ende of ỹ tylte: Anone the kynges maiestee called for a speare, and so ranne .vi. courses before he lefte, and brake in those .vi. courses .iiii. speares as well and as valyantly as any man of armes myght breake theim, & such as wer broken vpon hym, he receaued thẽ as thoughe he had felt no dynt of anye stroke. In so muche, that where at ỹ beginnyng, in ỹ felde was many a fearfull & timerous heart for him, consideryng his excellencie and his tendernes of age. After thei had sene the sayde courses ronne and his manfull de-

lyuer

liuer chargynge and dischargynge, he reioysed so the peoples heartes that a man myght haue sene a thousande weppyng iyen for ioye And then suche as were in moost feare sawe by his marcial feates that by the ayde of God, he was in no daunger

And whē the other chalēgeours had rōne a few courses, he wēt to it a fresh, & thē ran. x. or xii. courses instātly or he would ceasse, & brake many speares, & gaue so many teintes, ẏ euery man maruayled at his wōderfull feates. For none ẏ there was chalēgeour or defēdour, might attain to halfe the ꝑwesse ẏ he accōplished ẏ daye, so ẏ the pryce was geuē to him of all mē, aswell of thē ẏ were deputed iudges of those feates of armes for ẏ day, as of al other. And whē he had thus passed his time to his great laude & honour, he then at ẏ request of sōdry lordes, which ẏ daye gaue their attendaunce vpō his grace, went into a pauilion whiche nere vnto the tiltes ende at ẏ tyme was prepared for hym, & there taried while the other chalēgeours ranne a certain courses wt such of the defēdours as had not bene assaied ẏ day, the which demeaned theim right valiantly & knightly, & made full marciall dispoꝛt. And whē this had cōtinued vpō an houre or moꝛe. The king came then out of his pauiliō ryding vpon a graye courser, betrapped wyth a trappoure of clothe of golde, and wꝛoughte wyth goldsmithes wooꝛke, which was litle ouer an hād bꝛeadthe, and garnysshed in sondꝛye places wyth white roses made of fine gold. And vpon the paitrell of the hoꝛsse bꝛeste, stoode a rose of a greate bꝛedth, and another like vpon the crupper behind Which .ii. roses as a goldsmith repoꝛted that had

the

ȳ ouerſight of ȳ making of ȳ horſſe harneiſſe, ſaid that theiweied either of thē aboue.l. onces in gold

The kynges maieſtee was in a ſtreight coate of moſte rycheſt clothe of golde made cloſe vnto his bodye and ſtreighte ſleues, after the proportion of his armes, and in two or thre places the ſaied ſleues were cut and faſtened together againe with a plunket ryband, thewhiche garment became hym wonderouſly well. And thus beyng apointed with his legge harneys being ſtyll vpon his legges he rode vnto the tyltes ende, and there houed whyle the Heraulides made their monicion and cryng a *ſtill*, a *lhoſtill*, and conueyghed the defendours oute at the gate whiche they firſte came in at. And that dooen, the gentlemen firſte ſetting forwarde next vnto the trompettes, and then knightes, barnes, and Lordes as they wer of degrees folowing in their goodly apparelles: laſtly next vnto ȳ king came the Lord Hawarde, bearing vpon a tronchion the kynges helmet. After whom the kyng then cōming, tooke vp his horſe in ſo ſemely and luſty maner, that ſhortly to conclude, no man could doo better nor ſytte more cloſe nor faſter, nor yet kepe his ſtiroppes more ſurely. For notwithſtandinge that the horſe was verye courageous and excellente in leaping and tornyng and excedyngg flinging, he moued no more vpon hym, then if he had helde a plain and ſofte trot. And thus paſſyng the compaſſe of the felde, when he came ouer againſte the quenes Tent, he then beganne of newe, & leaped and courſed the horſe vp and downe in wonderful maner. And finally, he turned the feete of ȳ horſe againe the tylt, and cauſed hym to fling and

beate

beate the boordes with his kete, ꝑ it redounded a-boute the place as it had been shotte of gunnes. And when he had thus with all comendacion and honoure perfourmed this lustye and courageous feacte, he turned hym vnto the quene and made a lowlye obeysaunce, and so passed in a demure maner into Westminster hall.

Upon the daye nexte foloyng, being thursdaye and the .xiii. daye of February was holden a more excellent iustes, not for the more valiaunt actes ꝑ daye done of armis, but for ꝑ inestimable richesse and costely apparell whiche that daye was worne wherof I entende to touche a parte, for the whole passeth my conning and memory. But for a note after the capacite of my dul witte. Aboute the season of halfe an houre after one of the clocke, the quenes grace being in her tente. Immediatly issued oute of Westminster hall the trompettes, and after theim the Heraldes, the Trompettes being clad in red cloth, & the Heraldes in scarlet, all on horsebacke. Next after theim came riding gentlemen in right proper and goodly deuises of apparell, and their horses decked with sylke & brodering woorke right costly. Next whome a compaignie of knightes in more costly apparel folowed, amonge the whiche sir Edward Gilford then mershal, & hauing the rule of thorderig of the felde w̄ his manifold tipped staues was bothe those daies right goodlye and richely appareled. And also sir Norice Barkeley & sir Fraunces Cheiney roade those .ii. daies in one liuerey, both of their owne aray & also of their horses, which .ii. knightes vpon the first day road in cotes parted halfe on crimosin

velues

veluet, and ỹ other halfe of grene veluet, ỹ crimosin veluet side being ouerlaid w̃ flat beaten siluer like vnto flat wire, hanging in length ỹ the veluet was litle or nothing seen. And ỹ grene veluet syde was fret w̃ plates of gold of goldsmithes woorke in righte sumpteous wise. And their horses were garnished in one sute, not withoute clothe of gold and other costly deuices.

Upon the second day, or this thursday, their cotes wer halfe clothe of gold, & thother halfe of purple veluet. The veluet garnished w̃ skalop shelles and pilgrimes staues of massy golde, & their horse trappours of ỹ same. Thē came Banerettes, Barones & Lordes, eache of theim more richely appareled then other. For ỹ lordes, many of theim road in long gounes of cloth of gold exceding riche of ỹ newe making, wherin is moste substaunce of gold and litle silke. So ỹ where of old time they wer vsed to buye of ỹ beste & richest tissue for. v.li. a yard now thei pay. x.l. & .xx. marke for ỹ best. And beside this, their horses, some trapped in cloth of gold to the grounde. Amonge thewhiche were specially noted the Lorde of Burgeinie and the Lorde Fitzwater, whiche were in one suyte of clothe of golde with their trappers lyke, & .ii. large & massy bauderikes about their neckes, whiche wer estemed at a. M. marke a pece. There was also sir Henry Bolein & another Baneret, which ỹ daye road in purple veluet, garnyshed with plates of golde of exceding value. And emonge theim roade also sir Nicholas Vaus in a gowne of goldesmithes woorke to the knees, and therein a furre of ryght browne and fyne sables of greate value.

Then

Then emong theim that roade nexte to ỹ kyng came my Lorde Henry of Buckinghm̃ in a goune of nedle werke, which was more costly thē some of clothe of golde & more alowed for the curiositee of ỹ werke therof. And though here I make no memory of the lustye leaping, bounsyng, mounting and singing of the iolye and lusty foreryders, no man thynke the contrarye but there was alwell doyng horse as any might bee, and alwell wer they tasted and proued, to the great comforte of many a noble manne and woman that day. Then when all this lusty compaignie was thus passed by, Immediatly ensued a paulion or tente of blewe & purple satine paled, and after that two other of ỹ same fassyon, all thre beyng garnished with letters of brodery werke. And laste of all came in the fourth tēt made of clothe of golde and purple veluet paled, whereof the panes of veluet were poudered with these two letters H. and K, as H. for Henry, and K for kyng, and the skirtes of the said paulion was borne vp rounde aboute with. xxxvi. or. xl. gentlemē, as esquiers for ỹ body, all beyng clad in short Jackettes of blewe and purple sylke, the whiche were conueighed aboute the tylte, tyll they came before the quenes tent. Where euery chalengeour according to their roomes rode oute of their tentes, & after obeisaunce made vnto the quene, roade vnto the tiltes ende, and there taried the cōminge of the defendours. Howbeit, the kynges highnesse roade into the paulyon, where the daye before he chaūged his apparell, and there taried their comming. The whiche shortely after were brought in, but or I procede any ferther, I must of a conueni-

encye

:ency, bring in a matter necessary to be reherced, ye~ which negligētly I haue ouerpassed, and that is this.

When the kynges pauilion was as is aforsaid come out of the hall, immediately folowed the said pauilion nyne folowers or henchemen, all clothed in clothe of golde and purple veluet parted, the veluet side being garnished with the forsaid letters of golde as the pauilion was. Of the whiche folowers, the first courser was trapped with the armes of Englande, the second with the armes of Fraunce, the third with the armes of Castell, the fourth with a riche trapper poudered with red roses and white, the fifth with cloth of golde furred wth poudered armines, the sixte with cloth of siluer and purple veluet parted, the seuenth of purple veluet garnished with massy plates of gold, a parte whereof was an arme from the elbowe armed with an hearte of golde whiche was of greate weight and value, the which arme, and heart were sette upon either side of the brest of the horse, and again in ye trapper upō both sides of the crupper. The eight with a trappoure of chaungeable sarcenet after bleue and white full of gold belles. The nynthe and last was trapped in cloth of gold and blew veluet paled. After which followers, ensued the yoman of the horse upon a faire double horsse ledyng in his hande the self same horsse whiche the kyng rode out of the felde upō, as before I haue reherced, and then as last and hyrenoost came rydyng upon a lustie courser Sir Mathew Baker as maister of the kinges henchemenne, right woll, and sadly apointed and like a manne of good age and sadnes, and thus repaired through the felde with suche

demeanour as before is reherced.

Then to retorne unto the defendoures. Trouth it is that Sir Charles Brando as first came into the felde enclosed in a towre and led by a iaylour holdyng a greate keye in his hande, the whiche page auntwhen it came ouer against the quenes standyng, the iaylour with his keye made a countenaunce as though he had opened the gate of the towre, oute of the whiche issued a manne on horsebacke clad in a long course and prisoners weede, with a pylgrymes long staffe in his hande and a pylgremes hat upon his heed with a long and forgrowen beardle reachyng to his sadell bowe. He also had hangyng upon the hooke of his staffe a payre of bedes of gold, and upon the top of ỹ staffe was fastened a lettre, the whiche staffe with the bedes and letter were sent and delyuered unto the quenes grace, upon the whiche when she had a while looked, she sent suche aunswer that the prisoner cast from hym hastely his clothyng beard and hat, and shewed himself in bright harneys, and forthwith smote his horse with the sparres, and roade a lustie pace unto the tiltes ende, and from thence tooke his course and ranne aboute the tilt in most lusty wise.

And after the said Charles was thus come in, there ensued tenne mo of the said chalengeoures, of the whiche if I should wryte all the apparell and circumstaunce of their cundite unto their place assigned, it would aske a long tracte of tyme, but shortely to procede to the effect of this matter. So sone as all the defendours were come unto their place assigned. The kynges grace issued oute of his

his pauilion and called for a spere, the which when he had receiued, he ranne, and brake right vigorously and so ranne seuen courses more or he would stynt, in the whiche at euery course he brake a speare or gaue a taynt. And one thing was greately noted in him, that at euerie course that he ranne he would neuer charge hym with his speare in the rest, till he came nere unto the copying. Then by exhortacion of suche lordes as were aboute hym he rested for a season. And when the other chalengeours had disported them a while with suche defendours as the kyng had not before tasted: The kyng then came forth agayne and ranne many and sondry courses, the whiche he performed to his greate laude and honoure. And albeit that the other chalengeours did full knightely and well and likewise the defendours, as the lorde Marques, sir Charles Brandon and other, yet the feates of the kyng so ferre excelled them that none was spoken of but his alone, whiche so continued durying the tyme of their disporte till foure of the clocke at after none, at which season, so sone as the defendours were conueighed out of the felde, he called for a spoare, the whiche he settyng upon his thigh, roade w^t his hed peece upon his head rounde aboute the tylt, and at twoo tymes when he came ouer against the quenes stadyng, he made as lowe obeysaunce as his sadle would licence hym, and so roade into his pauylion & there unarmed hym. And anone after came out of the same pauilion sittyng upon the same spare horsse whiche the yoman of ye horsse brought in his hand into the feld when ye kyng first entred. And then he was chaunged into a de-

my gowne of clothe of golde furred with sables the
whiche when they were shewed defaced so the o-
ther that sir Nicholas Vaus ware, that thei seemed
maryns in comparison of the other.

Then the gentlemenne sette forward, and after
folowed the three chalengours rydyng bare he-
ded, and their three helmettes borne before theim
by three lordes, and last of all came the kynges
grace whose helmet was borne by the lord of Bur-
geyny. And in like maner as his folowers folo-
wed hym into the feelde, so in likewise they folo-
wed him in his goyng oute, at whiche seasons
as then he stured his horsse nothyng, but suffered
hym to goo a softe trot through all the felde. And
at the twoo tymes that his grace came before the
quene, his grace forgate not his humble obey-
saunce to the erudicion, and learnyng of all well
nurtered, and gentle wedded menne. And thus
all honour, ioye, and triumphant actes, to the prin-
cipall laude of this our moste excellent, and chri-
sten prince, and after to yᵉ worshipp of all the other,
as well chalengeours as defendoures, and great
comforte of all the beholders, ended these moste
excellyng iustes that euer was before that daie
seen in Englande, and that for twoo causes speci-
ally, as first the present deede of the excellencie of
the kynges personne, whiche neuer before that daie
as I thinke was seen in propre personne. And se-
condarely for the excedyng coste of apparell whiche
those twoo daies was shewed, with other ma-
nifolde charges of pageauntes and other sumpte-
ous thynges, the whiche by wise mennes estima-
cions coste not so litle by the space of these twoo

dayes

dayes as xx.M. li. Whiche two marciall dayes were accomplished by the actes of these foure chalengeours, y is to saye: The moste redoubted prince Henry the eyght of that name, kyng of Englande Fraunce & Irelad. &c. Syr Thomas kneuet, lorde Wyllyam of Deuonshire, and Master Edward Neuell. And of the defendours there were .x. in nombre, whose names came not al into my handes and therfore haue I omytted theim.

After these royall iustes, was made a solompne and sumpteous banket, the order of whiche I ouerpasse because it would bee too long to reherce.

The xxiiii day of Februarii next folowyng dyed at Richemounte Henrye the kynges soonne whiche was borne there, upon newe yeres day last past as before is shortelye touched.

In the thirde yere of his reigne, about the Monethes of June, and Julij, the Scottes made sondrie entres upon the borders of England, and had out certain shippes well manned and uitayled and kepte with theim the narowe sees, to the great displeasure of the kynges grace, and hurte of some of his subjectes, specially of his merchauntes, the. whiche rouers were named to be bannyshed men. But the kynges highness considerynge the daylye hurte that thei did unto his subjectes and frendes as takyng of uitaile at Sandwich & other places apō the see coastes, and that no remedy was pur-ueyed by the kyng of Scottes to call theim home. His grace in all goodly haste manned, and uitayled certain shippes and under the gouernaunce of the lorde Hawarde as hed and chief capitain sente the said shippes to scoure the see, the whiche in

The. iii. yere.

shorte processe after aboute thende of Julij mette with the said Scottes, and gaue unto theim a sharp and fearce fight, in so much that in the ende thenglyshe menne drowned one of the Scottishe shippes and tooke two of the chiefest shippes of that flote and in theim one hundreth and fourtie Scottes with their hedde capitayne named Hob of Barton. The whiche Scottes with theyr sayd capitayne were caste into sondrye prysonnes, and as the same wente in the forsayde fighte was slayne as many of the saide Scottes as were taken prysoners, and of thenglyshe menne seve or none. And upon the seconde daye of August ye forsayde two Scottish shippes brought unto the blacke walle within Thamys. But afterward the saide Scottes were by the kynges commaiendement brought into thArchbyshoppes palays beside Westminster, and there kept at the kynges coste.

Aboute this season or lytle before, the Frenche kyng that had most parte of this yere kepte warre agaim Julius the secound of that name Byshop of Rome, forced the said bishop to forsake the cytie of Bonony, and to fle for his safegarde toward Rome, not without losse of some of his people. This Bishoppe had deputed one Jherome Bonuise a Lukener borne, and before tyme had bene a merchaut and factoure for merchauntes of his nacion in London, the whiche by his insolencie and exercysyng of dice with lordes and other, he brake and came so behynde the hande that he was compelled to auoyde the citie, and also the realm. In the tyme of whiche absence he purchased suche grace of the

forenamed

forenamed bishop yᵗ he made hym a lorde, and after sent hym into this lāde as his proctour hauyng a trayne after him like unto a byshop: & by the fauourable letters which the byshoppe wrote for hym unto the kyng, his grace had hym in good fauoure, and dayly resorted unto his grace for matters touchyng the bishoppe, by meane whereof he had knowledge of the bishops councell and also of the kynges.

In this time also were here certeyne ambassadours of the Frenche kynges, the which lay here a long season for matters concernyng their prince to whom this forenamed Jherome secretly dreve by nyght tyme, and innaturally, and falsely dyscouered unto theim all the byshoppes, and kynges cōunceil. For the whiche he was awaited and lastly taken in the companie of one of the said ambassadours upon London wall about mydnyght, and so brought unto the counter of the pultrye, frome whence by the kynges cōmaundement on the morowe he was remoued unto the Towre, where he remayned still as a prysoner.

In this time also was wonderfull warre betweene the byshop of Rome Julius the seconde of that name, and the french kyng, in so muche that he wanne from the said B. the citee of Bonony, and put the B. to flight, & layed such articles agayne hym that he entended to put hym downe & make another bishop the circustance whereof I passe ouer cōsideryng yᵗ many folde tales and writynges sente unto the merchaut straungers of the same in the which letters were uariable and diuerse reportes.

In the later ende of this yere, the Scottes be-

fore taken by the knyghtly prowes of the lord Howarde and Syr Edward his brother were delyuered free and franke to whome the kyng of his bounteous largesse gaue unto euery of theim competet sammes of money to conueigh theim home to their owne countrey.

In this yere also was holden a parlyament at Westmynster the iiii. day of February, wherein were made, and ordeined dyuerse statutes and ordynaunces. Duryng the whiche parlgament a seruaunt of the kynges yomanne of the crowne and one of his garde named Newbolt slewe within the palayce of Westmynster a seruaunt of one master Willowghby, in the begynnyng of the moneth of Marche. For the which offence, notwithstandyng that the kyng had hym in his synguler fauour for that he was a speciall archer of all other, yet for his heynous and detestable murder, the kynges grace commaunded a newe pagre of galoes to be set up in the same place, wher the said seruaunt left his life, and upon the same shortly after was there put to death, and to the feare of other suffred hym to hange there by the space of two dayes, and two nightes after, for whiche iudgement the kyng wanne greate honoure and fauoure of his commons.

By the auctoryte of this parlyament was graunted unto the kyng two fyftenes of the temporaltee, and by the conuocacion holden by the clergye two desmes. Upon good friday which this yere fell upon the ix. daye of April was a cruell and sterne battaile betweene the bishoppe of Romes hoste & the frenche kynges partie, which contynued from the said fryday by sondry encoū-

tres

tres and metinges, by occasion whereof much peo-
ple on bothe parties were distressed and taken pri-
soners, and aboue the nombre of thirty M. slaine.

In the iiii. yere was Edmond de la Poole, behed- The iiii.
ded, and aboute the moneth of Auguste Syr yere.
Thomas kneuet beynge chyefe capytaine of the
kynges greate shippe called the regent, and a few
shyppes mo, sette upon a greate Caricke and other
shippes of the Frenche kings liyng then nere unto
a towne of Britaine named Brest, where after a
longe and cruell fight, the saide Caricke and regent
beyng clasped together with hookes and cheynes
(as the maner of fightinge upon the see betwene
enemies is), so deynly the saied shippes with other
were set on fyre, and brent so feruently, that before
they might be losed or disseuered, the shippes with
the men upon bothe parties were consumed with
violence therof so that few escaped whiche were
of the perayll. But the saide sir Thomas kneuet
with many other gentlemen of this land and also
of Fraunce were brent, on whose soules Jesu haue
mercye.

This yere also after harueste, wheate rose so- The v. yere.
deinly of pryce, for where for the more parte of the
yere it was not solde aboue sixe shillinges. viii. d.
a quarter. After harueste for so muche as wheat was
so sore blasted and striken, & was of so smal yelde,
it was solde for xii. s. and xiii. s. iiii d. a quarter.

In the v. yere the kyng besieged Turwin and
discomfited the power of Fraunce at Boemy, and
tooke the citees of Turwin, and Turney.
But in the meane season, the kyng of Scottes es-
piyng his tyme, muad England with an hoste

of

of an hundred thousande menne, with whome the Earle of Surraye, beynge the kynges Leuetenaunte encountred, and by the helpe of the Lorde Hawarde his soonne slewe the sayde kynge with a leuen Earles, and wanne the felde. For the whiche noble facte, the kynge created hym afterwarde Duke of Norfolke, and his soonne Earle of Surrey.

The vi. yere. In the vi. yere a peace was concluded betwene Englande, and Fraunce. And on Saincte Denis daye the Frenche kyng maried the Lady Mary the kynges sister. And he died on newe yeres daye after. And therfore the kyng sente for her againe by the Duke of Suffolke and other.

The vii. yere. In this yere, in the moneth of Februarye was borne Lady Mary the kynges doughter at Greenewiche.

In Aprill the Frenche Quene came into Englande, and was maryed to Lorde Charles duke of Suffolke.

This yere Ladye Margarete quene of Scottes and syster to the kynge fledde into Englande, and laye at Harbottell. And she was deliuered of a doughter named Margaret. And came to London in Maye, and taried there a hole yere.

The viii. yere. In this yere was suche a froste, that all menne myghte passe with cartes betwene Westmynster and Lambeth.

This yere on Maye euen was an insurreccyon of yong persones against Aliens, of whiche diuers were put to execucion, and the residue came to Westmynster Halle with halters aboute their neckes and were pardoned.

And

And the xviii. day of Maye ỹ quene of Scottes retourned into her countree againe.

This yere in Octobre the Admirall of Fraunce came into England, and Tourney was deliuered to the Frenche kyng: The ix. yere.

In this yere at Frankforde Charles the fyfte was chosen Emporoure. The x. yere.

And the Earle of Surrey was sent to Ireland.

In this yere, the kyng and the Frenche kynge met at the campe betwene Ardes Guines, where were greate triumphes. And after the kyng and the Emperoure mette, and the kyng went to Graueling with the Emporoure. And the Emperoure came to Caleys with the kyng & had greate chere and the kyng retourned. The xi. yere.

This yere the duke of Buckyngham was beheaded at the toure hyll the xvii. day of Maye. The xii. yere.

And in Iune, the Cardinall wēt to Calays to entreate a peace betwene the emperoure & the French kyng, and taried there to December, without anythinge concluded.

This yere the fridaye before Lenthecoste, that is to wyt the sixte daye of June, Charles the emperoure was honourably receiued into the cytee of London of the Maire, Aldermenne, and cominaltye, oure said souerayigne Lorde accōpaignēeng hym. And fro London he went to Wmdesore and sat in his stall of the garter. And from thens went to Hampton, and sayled into Spaine. The xiii. yere.

During whiche tyme, the Earle of Surrey Lorde Admirall brent Morleys in Brytaine, and after landed at Caleys, and entred Picardye, and brent townes and castelles, and besyeged Hesdyn,

but

but because of wynter he reysed his syege and re-
tourned.

This somer, the duke of Albany was entring
England with a greate armye, but when he heard
that the Earle of Shrewisburye was commynge
to fyghte with hym, he tooke a truce for vi. mo-
nethes.

The xiiij. yere. In this xiiij. yere, Christian Kynge of Den-
marke came into Englande in June.

Also the Earle of Surrey brent Jedworth and
many other townes in Scotlande.

This yere also the Turke besieged the Rhodes
and on Christmas day he tooke it.

The xv. yere. The Duke of Suffolke wente into Fraunce with
tenne thousand menne, and passed the water of
Some without battayle, and tooke, and destroy-
ed many townes, and in Decembre retourned.

The same yere, the duke of Albanye besieged ye
Castell of Warke, and hearing of therle of Sur-
reys comming with a greate armye he cowardely
fledde.

The xvi. yere. In the xvi. yere, there came out of Scotlande
the Byshop of Dunkell, and other ambassadours
unto the kynges Majestie. And on saynt Mathews
day was the Frenche kyng taken by themperour.
A mutyny in Norffolk and Suffolke for payment
of mony. A peas concluded betwene Englād and
Fraunce. And the French kyng was deliuered in
Marche. This yere was the coyne enhaunced.

The xviii. yere. In the xviii yere, was the citee of Rome by the
viceroy of Naples, and the duke of Burbon (the
same duke being firste slaine) was taken, and al-
most destroied. And Clemēt the vii. then Byshop

of

of Rome & diuerse Cardinalles there found were taken and broughte in captiuitee, and under the rule of Charles the Emporoure. This yere also the Cardinall went into Fraunce with greate pompe. In October the great Master of Fraunce came to London with great triumphe.

The xix. yere. In this xix. yere was the sweatyng sickenesse for ye which cause there was no watch at midsomer.

The xx. yere. In the xx. yere was the Cardinall deposed of the chancellourshyp, and a peace betwene the Emperour and the kyng concluded.

The xxi. yere. In the xxi yere was holden a parlyament wher was reformed diuerse enormitees of the clargye.

The xxii. yere. In the xxii. yere was a man boyled in Smithfeeld for poysonyng. The Cardinal dyed on Saynct Andrewes euen.

The xxiii. yere. In the xxiii. yere, Gryffeth Rice was behedded for treason. In October the kyng wente ouer the sea, and met the Frenche kyng at Caleis.

The xxv. yere. In the xxv. yere, in Apryll was a Nonne called the holy mayde of kent, ii. Monkes, and two Freers hanged and behedded for treason, blasphemye, and ypocrysie. This yere a peace was concluded wyth Scotlande.

The xxvi. yere. In this xxvi. yere was holden a Parlyamente at Westmynstor, wherin emong other moost godly and necessary statutes, it was ther decreed and enacted, that the kynges maiestie should be from thensforth accordyng to the law of God, taken and reputed as supreme heed of this his realme, nexte and immediatly under Chryst. This yere ye erle of kyldare died in the towre, and his sonne rebelled and slewe the byshop of Dubelyn wherfore the

kyng

kyng did send sir William Skeuynton thether. This yere was granted to the kyng the first frutes, and the tenthes of all spirituall possessyons. In June was the Bysshoppe of Rochester and sir Thomas Moore beheded, for denyng the kyng to be supreme hed of the church of England. This yere wer iii. Monkes of the Charter house executed for the same offence.

The xxvii. yere. In this xxvii. yere, in January dyed lady Katheryn princesse dowager, and is buryed at Peterborowe. This yere, quene Anne was attaynted of treason, and was beheded. And the kyng maried tady Jane Seymer. And in October begane a fodolyshe commocion in Lyncolnshyre, & another in Yorkeshyre, by ye meanes of Lord Darcy, Lord Husey, sir Robert Castable, & Robert Aske. Whiche only by the kynges wisedom, and his discrete counsayle were appeased withoute bloode shedynge.

In this xxviii. yere the Thamys was ouer frose in December, wherfore the kyng and the quene rode throwe London with a goodlye companye.

The xxviii. yere. This yere also, Syr Fraunces Bygott, lord Darcy, Syr Robert Constable, and other begane a newe conspiracie, and thei were attaynted, and putte to death in June. In February was Thomas Fytzgarred, and fyue of his uncles hanged drawen, & quartered. And on saynt Edwardes euen Prince Edwarde was borne at Hampton cowrt. The xxiii daye of October dyed quene Jane, and is buryed at Windesore.

The xxix. yere. In this xxix yere in Maye was Frere Forestehanged and brente in Smithfeelde for treason and heresy, with the Image of Daruell Gathern. In

this

thys yere, all ydolatry was forbydden. And diuerse ymages that had engynnes to make their eyes, and other lymmes to styre, with many other disceates were destroyed. And all Freers and Monkes chaūged their garmentes.

In this xxxx. yere in Decēber was the Marquis of Exceter, the lord Montacute, and syr Edward Neuell beheded for hyghtreasō duly proued. In May the cytesyns of Londō mustered al in bright harneisse with coates of whyte clothe, and whyte sylke, wyth chaynes of golde, in thre great armyes to the great wonder of straungers.]1.

The xxxx. yere.

Nowe for a fynal cōclusiō as touchīg this most noble & excellēt prince, and for the closing up of this presēt werke. If that his highnes had by al ye space of his reigne heretofore, whiche hath bene xxxiiii. yeres done no more but only these three thynges (as in dede[2] his grace hath done a great and infinite nōbre of moste prudente, and beneficial thynges, bothe for the quietnes of his realme, and wealth of his subiectes) yt is to saie: the extirpyng and abholyshyng of the usurped authoritee of the B. of Rome out of all his dominicons, and restoryng unto us the holy & most blessed worde of God, that is to saie the whole scripture in our English tongue, to thentent chiefly that we mighte knowe our dutie to almightie God, oure obedyence to our prince and hys successours kynges of this Realme, and liue a godlye, and christen life one with another. Secondarely, in takynge awaye all supersticion and ydolatrye whiche was a thyng moost detestable in the sight of God. And thirdlye and last of all the dissoluynge of cloisters [3] and suppressynge all counterfete and false

2 moste true it is that. Edit alt.

3 omitted Edit alt.

4 counterfete sacred Edit. alt

beyng against Edwarde euen. —

1 Instead of the Paragraphs within the brackets between p. and this page, but one sentence occurs in the Edition. And in the xxviii yere of his most gracious reigne was borne this most noble and vertuous Prince Edward at Hampton house the xii. daie of the moneth of October

false religion[1] which so long as they continued were not only teachers & preachers of false and superstitious doctryne, but also were euer the autours & begynners of all mischiefes & commocions. For reformacion I saye of which thynges, who is hable to rendre woorthy thankes and prayses to his highnes? And therefore to conclude infinite thankes be giuen to almighty God if so hath wrought by his special grace in the hearte, and mynde of his highnes, & let earnest prayers and supplicacions incessantly be made of all his faythfull subjectes for the preseruacion of his highnes in moaste triumphant honour and wealth, and ouer us longe to reigne and rule. And that[2] when nature shall geue place to death in his grace that then the same gifte[3] of prudence, pollecie, and godly iudgement that his highnes is so plentifully endewed with may yet be planted in ye[4] personne of that goodly ympe and mooste florishyng brauche prynce Edwarde, that the same maye finishe & mainteine that whiche his noble father and our souereigne lord kyng Henry ye eyght hath moste graciously begone. To this all true Englishe heartes saie Amen.

LONDINI.

In officina Richardi Graftoni. Cum priuilegio ad imprimendum solum per septennium.

[1] Religions. Edit. alt. [2] Who were. [3] Omitted. Edit alt.
[4] Noble person. Edit. alt

DA
130
.H35
1543
c.1
B.b Fict

for mfl. SR 1977

c/++.

31.X.29

7/x01

AF

12,503